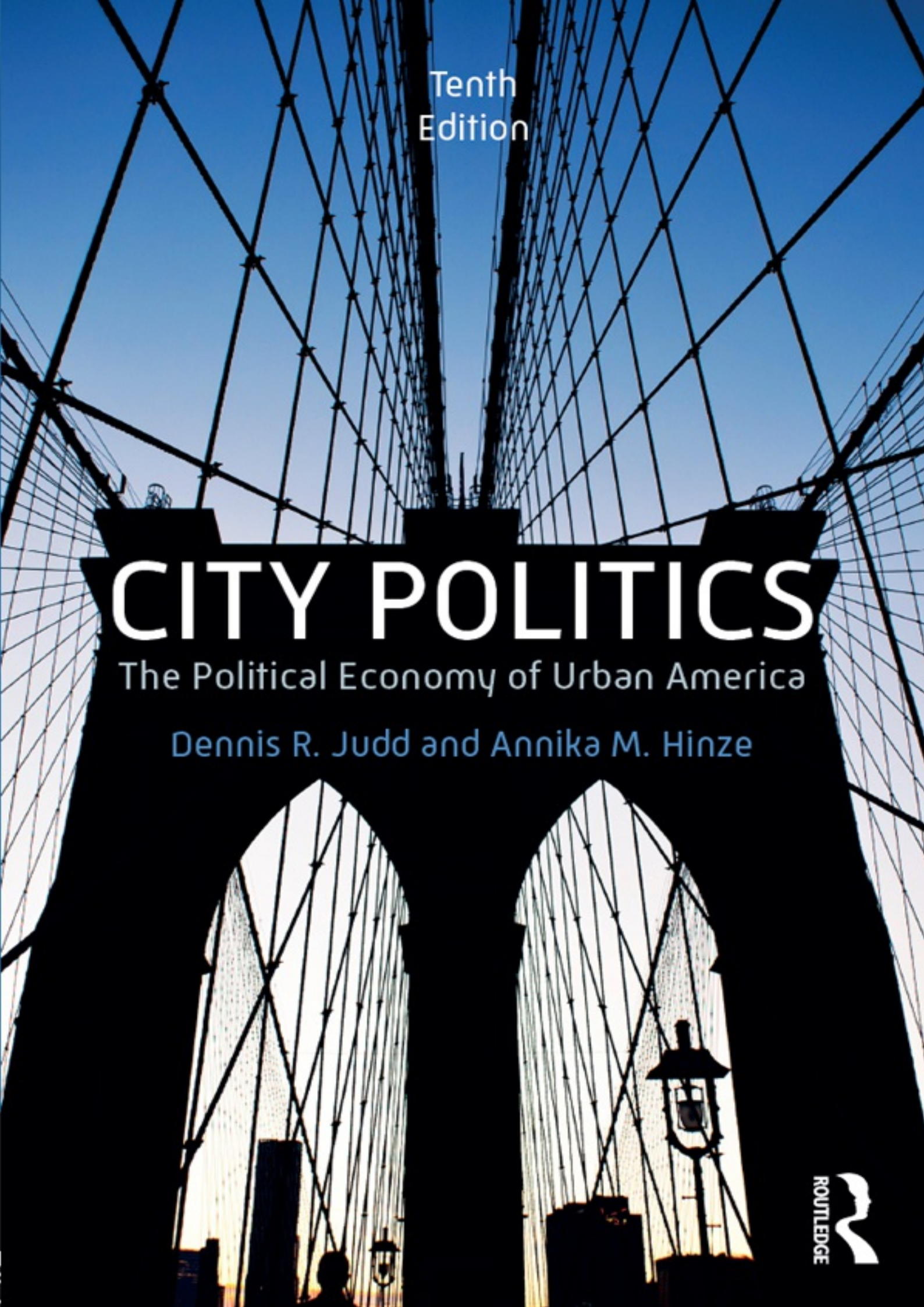
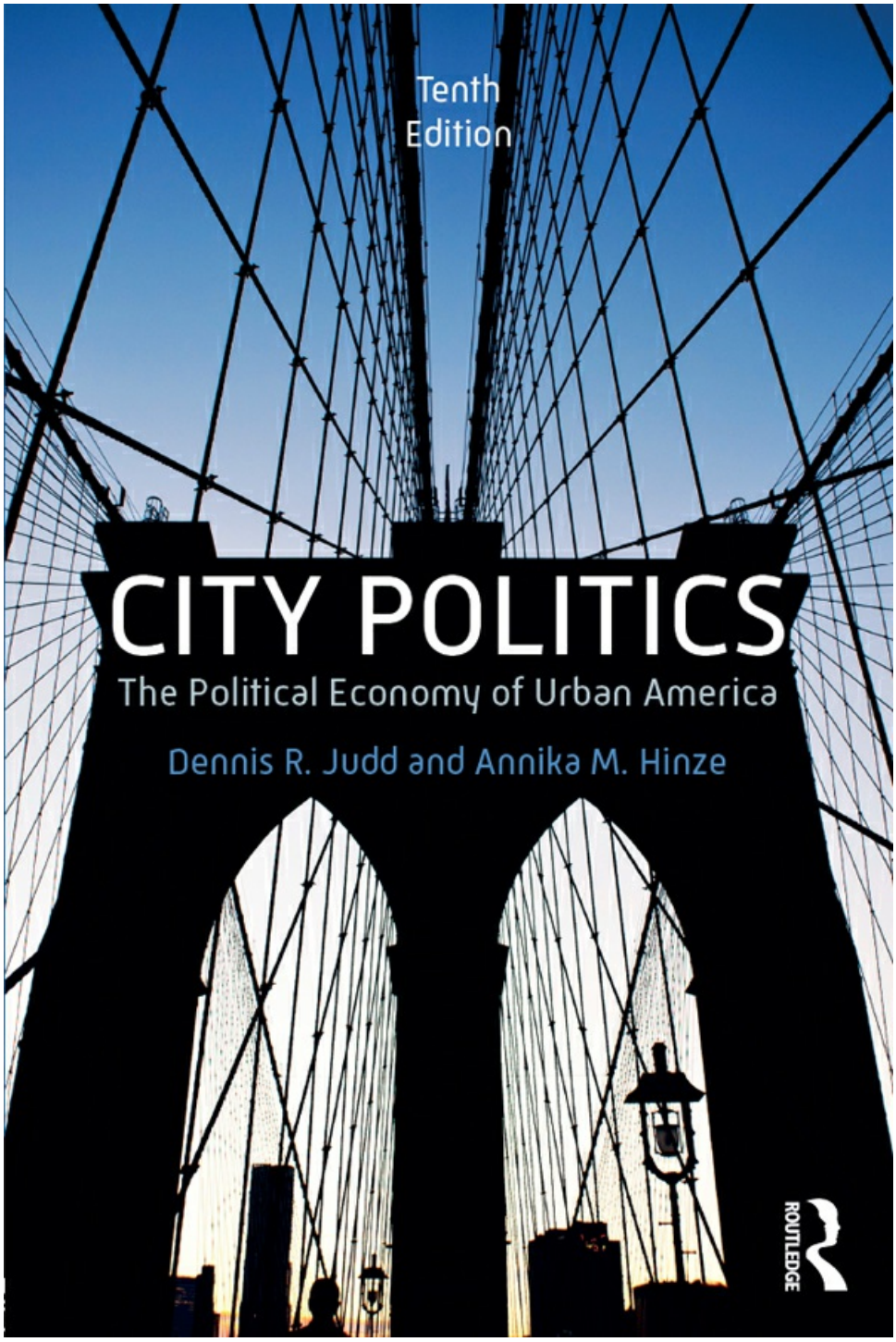

Tenth
Edition
CITY POLITICS
The Political Economy of Urban America
Dennis R. Judd and Annika M. Hinze
ROUTLEDGE


Tenth
Edition
CITY POLITICS
The Political Economy of Urban America
Dennis R. Judd and Annika M. Hinze
ROUTLEDGE

City Politics

Praised for the clarity of its writing, careful research, and distinctive theme—that urban politics in the United States has evolved as a dynamic interaction between governmental power, private actors, and a politics of identity—*City Politics* remains a classic study of urban politics. Its enduring appeal lies in its persuasive explanation, careful attention to historical detail, and accessible and elegant way of teaching the complexity and breadth of urban and regional politics which unfold at the intersection of spatial, cultural, economic, and policy dynamics. Now in a thoroughly revised tenth edition, this comprehensive resource for undergraduate and graduate students, as well as well-established researchers in the discipline, retains the effective structure of past editions while offering important updates, including:

- All-new sections on immigration, the Black Lives Matter Movement, the downtown condo boom, and the impact of the sharing economy on urban neighborhoods (especially the rise of Airbnb).
- Individual chapters introducing students to pressing urban issues such as gentrification, sustainability, metropolitanization, urban crises, the creative class, shrinking cities, racial politics, and suburbanization.
- The most recent census data integrated throughout to provide current figures for analysis, discussion, and a more nuanced understanding of current trends.

Taught on its own, or supplemented with the optional reader *American Urban Politics in a Global Age* for more advanced readers, *City Politics* remains *the* definitive text on urban politics—and how they have evolved in the US over time—for a new generation of students and researchers.

Dennis R. Judd is Professor and Acting Head of the Department of Political Science, College of Liberal Arts and Sciences at the University of Illinois, Chicago, USA.

Annika Marlen Hinze is Assistant Professor of Political Science and Director of the Urban Studies Program at Fordham University, USA.

Tenth Edition

City Politics

The Political Economy of Urban America

Dennis R. Judd and
Annika M. Hinze

Routledge
Taylor & Francis Group
NEW YORK AND LONDON

Tenth edition published 2019
by Routledge
711 Third Avenue, New York, NY 10017
and by Routledge
2 Park Square, Milton Park, Abingdon, Oxon, OX14 4RN
Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group, an informa business
© 2019, 2015, 2012, 2010 Taylor & Francis.
The right of Dennis R. Judd and Annika M. Hinze to be identified as authors of this work has been asserted by them in accordance with sections 77 and 78 of the Copyright, Designs and Patents Act 1988.
All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilized in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publishers.
Trademark notice: Product or corporate names may be trademarks or registered trademarks, and are used only for identification and explanation without intent to infringe.
First published 2015, 2012, 2010 by Pearson Education, Inc.
[Ninth edition published by Routledge 2014]
Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data
Names: Judd, Dennis R., author. | Hinze, Annika Marlen, author.
Title: City politics: the political economy of urban America /
Dennis R. Judd and Annika M. Hinze.
Description: Tenth edition. | New York, NY: Routledge, 2018. |
Includes bibliographical references and index.
Identifiers: LCCN 2018004317| ISBN 9781138055223
(hardback: alk. paper) | ISBN 9781138055230 (pbk.: alk. paper) |
ISBN 9781315166018 (ebook)
Subjects: LCSH: Municipal government—United States. | Urban policy—United States. | United States—Economic policy. | Sociology, Urban—United States.
Classification: LCC JS331 .J78 2018 | DDC 320.8/50973—dc23
LC record available at https://lccn.loc.gov/2018004317
ISBN: 978-1-138-05522-3 (hbk)
ISBN: 978-1-138-05523-0 (pbk)
ISBN: 978-1-315-16601-8 (ebk)
Typeset in Sabon
by Florence Production Ltd, Stoodleigh, Devon, UK

BRIEF CONTENTS

Preface

1 City Politics in America: An Introduction

PART I THE ORIGINS OF AMERICAN URBAN POLITICS: THE FIRST CENTURY

2 The Enduring Legacy

3 Party Machines and the Immigrants

4 The Reform Crusades

5 Urban Voters and the Rise of a National Democratic Majority

PART II THE URBAN CRISIS OF THE TWENTIETH CENTURY

6 The City/Suburban Divide

7 National Policy and the City/Suburban Divide

8 Federal Programs and the Divisive Politics of Race

9 The Rise of the Sunbelt

PART III THE FRACTURED METROPOLIS

10 The Rise of the Fragmented Metropolis

11 Governing the Fragmented Metropolis

12 The Metropolitan Battleground

13 The Renaissance of the Metropolitan Center

14 Governing the Divided City

15 City and Metropolis in the Global Era

Index

CONTENTS

Preface

1 City Politics in America: An Introduction
Three Themes
The Politics of Growth
The Politics of Governance
The Fragmented Metropolis
The Challenge of the Global Era

PART I THE ORIGINS OF AMERICAN URBAN POLITICS: THE FIRST CENTURY

2 The Enduring Legacy
National Development and the Cities
OUTTAKE: City Building Has Always Required Public Efforts
A Century of Urban Growth
Inter-Urban Rivalries
Industrialization and Community
The Immigrant Tide
The Capacity to Govern
The Limited Powers of Cities

3 Party Machines and the Immigrants
Machines and Machine-Style Politics
OUTTAKE: Machines Had Two Sides
The Origins of Machine Politics
Did Machines "Get the Job Done"?
Were Machines Vehicles of Upward Mobility?
Did the Machines Help Immigrants Assimilate?
The Social Reform Alternative
Ethnic Politics in Today's Cities

4 The Reform Crusades
The Reformers' Aims
OUTTAKE: Municipal Reform Was Aimed at the Immigrants
The Fertile Environment for Reform
The Campaigns against Machine Rule
"Efficiency and Economy" in Municipal Affairs
The Business Model
Commission and Manager Government
Did Reform Kill the Machines?
The Reform Legacy
The Battles Continue

5 Urban Voters and the Rise of a National Democratic Majority
City and Nation in the Twentieth Century
OUTTAKE: Urban Ethnics Became a Mainstay of the Democratic Party
A New Political Consciousness
The Changing Political Balance
The Depression and the Cities
Cities Gain a Voice
The Urban Programs of the New Deal
The New Deal Legacy

PART II THE URBAN CRISIS OF THE TWENTIETH CENTURY

6 The City/Suburban Divide
A Century of Demographic Change
OUTTAKE: Anti-Immigrant Passions Have Reached a Fever Pitch
Streams of Migration
Racial Conflict in the Postwar Era
The Emergence of a New Kind of Poverty
The Suburban Exodus
The Romantic Suburban Ideal: 1815–1918
The Automobile Suburbs: 1918–1945
The Bedroom Suburbs: 1946–1970s
The Rise of the Multiethnic Metropolis
Has the Urban Crisis Disappeared?

7 National Policy and the City/Suburban Divide
The Unintended Consequences of National Policies
OUTTAKE: Highway Programs Contributed to the Decline of the Cities
The Politics of Slum Clearance
How Local Politics Shaped Urban Renewal
Racial Segregation and "The Projects"
National Policy and Suburban Development
Suburbs, Highways, and the Automobile
The Damaging Effects of National Policies

8 Federal Programs and the Divisive Politics of Race
The Brief Life of Inner-City Programs
OUTTAKE: Racial Divisions Eventually Doomed Urban Programs
The Democrats and the Cities
The Republicans and the New Federalism
President Carter and the Democrats' Last Hurrah
Republicans and the End of Federal Assistance
Political Reality and Urban Policy
The Cities' Fall from Grace
The End of Urban Policy
A War on Cities

9 The Rise of the Sunbelt
A Historic Shift
OUTTAKE: The Electoral College Favors the Sunbelt
The Concept of the Sunbelt
Regional Shifts

Why the Sunbelt Prospered
The Changing Politics of Sunbelt Cities
Regional Convergence and National Politics

PART III THE FRACTURED METROPOLIS

10 The Rise of the Fragmented Metropolis
Metropolitan Turf Wars
OUTTAKE: There Is a Debate about Gated Communities
How the Suburbs Became Segregated
The Imperative of Racial Segregation
OUTTAKE: Integrating Levittown, PA: The Trauma of Deepgreen Lane
Walling Off the Suburbs: Incorporation
Walling Off the Suburbs: Zoning
The Challenge to Exclusionary Zoning
The New Face of Enclave Politics

11 Governing the Fragmented Metropolis
The Byzantine (Dis)Organization of Urban Regions
OUTTAKE: The Costs of Sprawl Are Hotly Debated
The New Urban Form
The Concerns about Sprawl
A History of Metro Gov
The New Regionalism
Smart Growth
The New Urbanism
The Prospect for Reform

12 The Metropolitan Battleground
The Competition for Fiscal Resources
OUTTAKE: Hundreds of Little Hoovers Make the Economic Crisis Worse
Cities in the U.S. Federal System
Where the Money Goes
Where the Money Comes From
The Municipal Bond Market
The Rise of Special Authorities
Fiscal Gamesmanship

13 The Renaissance of the Metropolitan Center
The Unexpected Recovery of the Central Cities
OUTTAKE: Baltimore's Revival Is Debated
The Decline of Downtown
Globalization and the Downtown Renaissance
OUTTAKE: City of Glass: The Condo Boom in Downtown Areas
The New Urban Culture
Tourism and Entertainment
OUTTAKE: Money out of Thin Air:The Blessing or Curse of Airbnb
Convention Centers
Sports Stadiums
Malls, Entertainment, and Lifestyle Complexes
Casino Gaming
The Politics of Tourism

Old and New Downtowns

14 Governing the Divided City
A Delicate Balancing Act
OUTTAKE: Black Lives Matter: Moving Beyond a Moment and Creating a Movement
OUTTAKE: Multiethnic Coalitions Are Hard to Keep Together
The Recent Revolution in Urban Governance
The Benefits of Incorporation
The Sanctuary Movement
Striking a Balance
The Decisive Turning Point
The Racial and Ethnic Future

15 City and Metropolis in the Global Era
Urban Politics in a Time of Change
The New (but Actually Old) Growth Politics
The Delicate Art of Urban Governance
The Politics of the Patchwork Metropolis

Index

PREFACE

The first edition of *City Politics* was published in 1979, and since that time the book has undergone changes as profound as the subject matter with which it deals. To keep it current and relevant, we have always taken care to describe significant new developments both in the "real world" and in the literature of the field; in this tenth edition, for example, we include material on the recent debates over race and immigration policy, voting rights, the continued fiscal problems that cities face, and the urban impacts of inequality. In making these changes, we have included enough citations so that students will be able to conduct further research of their own.

Over the years, *City Politics* has been used in college courses at all levels, from community colleges to graduate courses in research universities. *City Politics* has reached across disciplines, too; it has found its way into courses in urban politics, urban sociology, urban planning, urban geography, and urban history. We have relied upon three elements to make it relevant to such a broad audience: a strong and original thematic structure with a blending of the vast secondary literature with primary sources and recent scholarly materials, new data, and our own original research. To make the complex scholarship of the field as accessible and interesting as possible, we build the book around an admittedly sweeping narrative. As far as possible, each chapter picks the story up where the previous one left off, so that the reader can come to appreciate that urban politics in America is constantly evolving; in a sense, past and present are always intermingled.

Three threads compose the narrative structure of the book. From the nation's founding to the present day, a devotion to the private marketplace and a tradition of democratic governance have acted as the twin pillars of American culture. All through the nation's history, cities have been forced to strike a balance between the goal of achieving local economic prosperity and the task of negotiating among the many contending groups making up the local polity. An enduring tension between these two goals is the mainspring that drives urban politics in America, and it is also at the center of the narrative that ties the chapters of this book together.

The governmental fragmentation of urban regions provides a third dynamic element that has been evolving for more than a century. A complete account of American urban politics must focus upon the internal dynamics of individual cities *and* also upon the relationships among the governmental units making up urban regions. Today, America's urban regions are fragmented into a patchwork of separate municipalities and other governmental units. With the rise of privatized gated communities in recent decades, this fragmentation has become even more complicated. In several chapters of this edition of *City Politics,* we trace the many consequences that flow from this way of organizing political authority in the modern metropolis.

We divide the book into three parts. Part I is composed of five chapters that trace the history of urban America in the first long century from the nation's founding in 1789 through the Great Depression of the 1930s. This "long century" spans a period of time in which the cities of the expanding nation competed fiercely for a place in the nation's rapidly evolving economic system. At the same time, cities were constantly trying to cope with the social tensions and disruptions caused by wave after wave of immigration and a constant movement from farm to city. These tensions played out in a struggle between an upper- and middle-class electorate and working-class newcomers. They also made the cities, over time, into different social contexts that stood apart from the growing nation. The New Deal of the 1930s brought the immigrants and the cities in which they lived into the orbit of national politics for the first time in the nation's history, with consequences that reverberated for decades.

In Part II, we trace the arc of twentieth-century urban politics. Over a period of only a few decades, the old industrial cities went into a steep decline, the suburbs prospered, and a regional shift redistributed population away from the industrial belt to other parts of the country. For a long time, urbanization had been driven by the development of an industrial economy centered in a few great cities. But the decline of industrial jobs and the rise of a service economy profoundly restructured the nation's politics and settlement patterns; as a result, by the mid-twentieth century the older central cities were plunged into a social and economic crisis of unprecedented

proportions. In the years after World War II, millions of southern blacks poured into northern cities, a process that incited a protracted period of social unrest and racial animosity that fundamentally reshaped the politics of the nation and of its urban regions. Affluent whites fled the cities, carving out suburban enclaves in an attempt to escape the problems of the metropolis. The imperative of governance—the need to find ways of brokering among the contending racial, ethnic, and other interests making up the urban polity—became crucially important.

Part III of the text focuses on the urban politics produced by the deindustrialization and globalization processes of the 1980s and beyond. The emergence of a globalized economy is one of its defining features. Older central cities and entire urban regions that had slipped into decline began to reverse their fortunes by becoming major players in the post-industrial economy. At the same time, the fragmentation within metropolitan regions has taken on a new dimension because cities fiercely compete for a share of metropolitan economic growth. Today, central cities and their urban regions are more prosperous, but at the same time more fragmented than ever, and one consequence is that social and economic inequalities are being reproduced on the urban landscape in a patchwork pattern that separates urban residents.

These developments can best be appreciated by putting them into historical context. As in the past, urban politics continues to revolve around the two imperatives of economic growth and the task of governance. As in the nation's first century, cities are engaged in a fierce competition for new investment. The great tide of immigration that took off in the nineteenth century shaped the politics of cities for well more than a century. The intense period of immigration that began in the 1970s has yet to run its course, and it, too, will reverberate through all levels of the American political system for a long time to come. Any account of urban politics in the present era will be greatly enriched if we recognize that we are a nation of immigrants, and always have been. Furthermore, since the advent of private television networks and social media, the nation has been growing increasingly more fragmented. This has had a strong impact on politics at all levels of the federal system, and will be consequential for national, state, and local politics in the years to come—as states and municipalities pit themselves against federal mandates they fundamentally disagree with. The several new features incorporated into this tenth edition include:

- A comprehensive discussion of the bitter debates over immigration policy and the sanctuary movement
- A closer look at the resurgence of racial tensions in the country, as well as the Black Lives Matter Movement
- An expanded discussion of the controversies over voting rights
- A discussion of the new role many cities across the nation find themselves in under the Trump administration
- An updated discussion of recent trends in inequality
- Incorporation throughout the text of recent data from the U.S. Census Bureau.

Dennis R. Judd would like to thank Sam Bassett and Anahit Tadevosyan for their valuable research assistance and intellectual companionship.

Annika M. Hinze would like to thank Dennis R. Judd for his collaboration and his inspiration. She would also like to thank the Center for Metropolitan Studies at the TU Berlin for providing her with a place to work over those summer (and sometimes winter) months she spent away from her Fordham office, as well as all the special people and *Lieblingsmenschen* (those large and those still relatively small) in her life, who encourage, support, challenge, and inspire her daily to be the best academic and human being she can be.

We also want to thank Misha Kydd, editorial assistant at Taylor & Francis, for keeping the book on track.

CHAPTER 1

City Politics in America: An Introduction

Three Themes

The political dynamics of America's cities and urban regions have remained remarkably similar over time. From the nation's founding to the present, a devotion to the private marketplace and a tradition of democratic governance have been the pivotal values defining American culture. Finding a balance between these two imperatives has never been easy; indeed, the tension between the two is the mainspring that energizes nearly all important political struggles that occur at the local level. The *politics of growth* becomes obvious when conflicts break out over public expenditures for such things as airport construction, convention centers, and sports stadiums. Projects like these are invariably promoted with the claim that they will bring prosperity to everyone in the urban community, but such representations do not lay to rest important concerns about whether these are the best or the most effective uses of public resources. The fact that there is conflict at all lays bare a second imperative: the *politics of governance.* Public officials and policymakers must find ways to arbitrate among the many contending groups and interests that demand a voice in local government. The complex social, ethnic, and racial divisions that exist within America's cities have always made governance a difficult challenge. A third dynamic has evolved in step with the rise of the modern metropolis over the past century: the *politics of metropolitan fragmentation.* During that period, America's urban regions have become increasingly fragmented into a patchwork of separate municipalities. One of the consequences of the extreme fragmentation of political authority within metropolitan regions is that it helps perpetuate residential segregation, and makes it nearly impossible to devise regional solutions to important policy issues such as urban sprawl.

The growth imperative is so deeply embedded in the politics of American cities that, at times, it seems to overwhelm all other issues. Urban residents have a huge stake in the continued vitality of the place where they live; it is where they have invested their energies and capital; it is the source of their incomes, jobs, and their sense of personal identity and community. Because of the deep attachments that many people form for their local community, its continued vitality is always a high priority. Throughout American history, "place loyalty" has driven civic leaders to devote substantial public authority and resources to the goal of promoting local economic growth and prosperity. In the nineteenth century, for instance, cities fought hard to secure connections to the emerging national railroad system by providing huge subsidies to railroad corporations. Today, the details are different, but the logic is the same: since the 1970s, cities have competed fiercely for a share of the growing market in tourism and entertainment, the "industry without a smokestack." To do so, they have spent huge amounts of public money for such things as convention centers, sports stadiums, cultural institutions, and entertainment districts. These kinds of activities, all devoted to the goal of promoting local economic growth, are so central to what cities do that it would be impossible to understand urban politics without taking them into account.

One factor in the inter-urban competition for growth and investment that has definitely changed today is the detachment of business leaders from the local environment through the forces of globalization. While throughout the first half of the twentieth century, businesses were firmly rooted in the local context, and business leaders saw the health of the downtown business district as a vital context for their economic success, corporations in a global world no longer have these local attachments. The borderless flows of capital, goods, and services (though not of people) have made it easy for transnational corporations to uproot themselves and choose the most fiscally and economically convenient location for their business headquarters. This means that inter-urban competition has not only grown much fiercer, but it has also moved from a national to a global scale. It has also led local leaders and policymakers to more actively bargain for business investment, not only by creating greater incentives for

businesses (by offering tax breaks, or clearing favorable parcels of land through the use of eminent domain), but also by actively inviting private actors to partake in the urban development process, introducing more "public-private partnerships" as ways to implement major projects. Of course, private actors will not invest in development projects out of the goodness of their hearts. Instead, they look out for profits to be made, and they may decide to abandon projects that do not meet their expectations. Some scholars have also complained that the focus of state and local governments on attracting private actors and aestheticizing the urban environment, takes away attention from the needs of poorer segments of the urban population.[1]

The imperative of governance arises from the social, racial, and ethnic differences that have always characterized American society. America is a nation of immigrants, and for most of the nation's history, anxiety about the newcomers has been a mainstay of local and, for that matter, national politics. Attempts to curb immigration can be traced back to the 1830s, when the Irish began coming to American shores in large numbers. Episodes of anti-immigrant reaction have flared up from time to time ever since, especially during times of economic stress. Ethnic and racial conflicts have been such a constant feature of American politics that they have long shaped national electoral and partisan alignments. This has been as true in recent decades as at any time in the past. At the metropolitan level, bitter divisions have often pitted central cities against suburbs, and one suburb against the next.

The extreme fragmentation of America's metropolitan areas has its origins in the process of suburbanization that began unfolding in the late nineteenth century. For a long time, the term "urban" referred to the great cities of the industrial era, their diverse mix of ethnic groups and social classes, and their commanding national presence as centers of technology and economic production. The second "urban" century was very different. Increasingly, the cities of the industrial era became surrounded by rings of independent political jurisdictions—what came to be called suburbs. Beginning as early as the 1920s, the great industrial city centers went into a long slide even while the suburbs around them prospered. Ultimately, an urban geography emerged that was composed of a multitude of separate jurisdictions ranging from white and wealthy to poor and minority, and everything in between. Recently the central cities have begun to attract affluent (and especially younger) residents and the suburbs have become more representative of American society as a whole. Even so, a complicated mosaic of governments and even privatized gated communities continue to be important features in the daily life of urban residents: where people live greatly influences whom they come into contact with, their tax burdens and level of municipal services, and even their political outlook. Within metropolitan areas there is not one urban community, but many.

The three strands that compose city politics in America—the imperative of economic growth, the challenge of governance, and the rise of the fragmented metropolis—can be woven into a narrative that allows us to understand the forces that have shaped American urban politics, both in the past and in our own time. Reading a letter to the editor of the local newspaper protesting a city's tax subsidy for a new stadium (a clash of values typical of the politics of growth); walking down a busy city street among people of every color and national background (which serves as a reminder of the diversity that makes governance a challenging task); entering a suburban gated community (and thus falling under the purview of a privatized governing association, still another of the many governing units that make up the metropolis): all of these experiences remind us that there are consistent patterns and recurring issues that shape the political dynamics of urban politics in America.

The Politics of Growth

Local communities cannot be preserved without a measure of economic vitality, and this is why growth and prosperity have always been among the most important priorities for urban residents and their civic leaders. Founded originally as centers of trade and commerce, the nation's cities and towns came into being as places where people could make money and find personal opportunity. From the very beginning, European settlement in North America involved schemes of town promotion. The first colony, Jamestown, founded in 1607, was the risky venture of a group of English entrepreneurs who organized themselves into a joint stock company. Shares sold in London for about $62 in gold. If the colony was successful, investors hoped to make a profit, and of course the colonists themselves had gambled their very lives on the success of the experiment. Likewise, two centuries later, when a flood of people began spilling beyond the eastern seaboard into the frontier of the new nation, they founded towns and cities as a way of making a personal bet on the future prospects of a particular place. The communities that grew up prospered if they succeeded in becoming the trading hub for a region and an export platform for agricultural and finished goods moving into the national economic system. For this reason, the

nineteenth-century movement across the continent placed towns at the leading edge of territorial expansion:

> America was settled as a long, thin line of urban places, scattering outward and westward from the Atlantic seaboard. The popular imagination has it that farmers came first and villages later. The historian's truth is that villages and towns came first, pulling farmers along to settle the land around and between urban settlements.[2]

Each town was its own capitalist system in miniature, held together by the activities of entrepreneurs in search of profit and personal advancement. The restless pursuit of new opportunities encouraged the formation of what urban historian Sam Bass Warner has called a national "culture of privatism," which stressed individual efforts and aspirations over collective or public purposes: "[The] local politics of American cities have depended for their actors, and for a good deal of their subject matter, on the changing focus of men's private economic activities."[3] The leading philosophy of the day promoted the idea that by pursuing their own individual interests, people were also contributing to the welfare of the community.

On the frontier, the founders of cities and the entrepreneurs who made their money in them recognized that in order to ensure their mutual success, they would have to take steps to promote their city and region. Local boosters promoted their city's real or imagined advantages—a harbor or strategic location on a river, for example, or proximity to rich farming and mining areas. They also boasted about local culture: music societies, libraries, and universities. And they went further than boasting; they used the powers of city government to promote local growth. Municipalities were corporations that could be used to help finance a variety of local undertakings, from subscriptions in railroad stock to improvements in harbors and docks. There was broad support for such undertakings because citizens shared in the perception that local economic vitality was absolutely necessary to advance the well-being of the urban community and everyone in it.

Today, support for measures to promote the local economy continues to be bound up with people's attachments to place and community. Without jobs and incomes, people simply cannot stay in the place that gives life to family, neighborhood, and local identity. The environmental and social effects of the oil spill in the Gulf of Mexico in the spring and summer of 2010 illustrate this point. As the disaster unfolded, it seemed certain that thousands of jobs would be lost in a long arc stretching from southern Louisiana to the Florida coast. At the time, tourism was expected to drop by half on Florida's Gulf Coast, costing the state at least 200,000 jobs.[4] In Louisiana, fishing, shellfish, and other industries seemed to be on the verge of being wiped out. When people talked about the disaster to news reporters, they spoke not only of the loss of livelihood, but also, with great emotion, about its effect on family values and community traditions—about the loss of a "way of life."

No matter how calamitous, the oil spill was not likely to make coastal communities disappear overnight, no matter how hard it may have been to recover (fortunately, the long-term consequences of the spill were not as severe as many feared). People identify with the community within which they live, and they are often reluctant to move even in the face of genuine hardship. The resilience of community was illustrated in the 1970s and 1980s when massive losses of businesses and jobs hit the industrial heartland of the Midwest and Northeast. The rapid deindustrialization of a vast region threatened the existence of entire communities. The Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, region experienced a 44 percent loss in manufacturing jobs from 1979 to 1988, three-quarters of them related to steel. Unemployment levels reached as high as 20 percent, not only in Pittsburgh, but also in Detroit and several other cities of the industrial belt.[5] Some people fled for more prosperous areas of the Sunbelt, but a great many of them elected to stay. Rather than giving up, in city after city public leaders took measures to rebuild their economies; indeed, in most places the cause of local renewal took on the character of a permanent crusade. After the 2008 economic crisis, Detroit was essentially declared dead. In 2013, Detroit declared bankruptcy, becoming the largest American city to take this step.[6] Public buses drastically cut down service to only serve the most essential routes; trash collections were skipped, and the grid of streetlights was cut to only about 60 percent of its capacity.[7] There was even talk of consolidating the city, condensing its neighborhoods into a smaller grid, in order to cut down costs. By 2017, the city has come back from the dead. In 2010, the mortgage lending company Quicken Loans moved its offices to downtown Detroit, where real estate was cheaper than ever before.[8] Artists have transformed abandoned buildings, young millennials are flooding some of the city's downtown neighborhoods. While it is clear that the creative class alone won't save Detroit, it is also the resilience of those residents of Detroit, who stayed behind when others left, through disinvestment and bankruptcy, because, after all they were Detroiters, who staved off the demise of the city. Communities of the Gulf Coast reacted in a similar way. People resisted leaving; instead, they put their efforts into regenerating their local economies and strengthening their communities because they were not willing to abandon the traditions and cultures that

brought meaning to their lives.

It might seem that the intimate connection between material well-being and community identity would leave little room for disagreement over the premise that cities must do everything they can do all the time to promote local prosperity. But this commitment does not always translate into support for every politician and developer's bright idea or ambitious proposal. Disputes break out because policies to promote growth cannot benefit everyone equally; they are not always sensible or plausible; and there are always winners and losers. For renters and low-income residents, the gentrification of their neighborhood may bring higher rents and home values that ultimately force them to move. Growth in the downtown corporate and financial sectors may create some high-paying jobs for educated professionals but leave many central-city residents with low-paying jobs or on the unemployment rolls. A downtown that encroaches on nearby neighborhoods may benefit the businesses located in the new office towers but may also compromise the quality of life for nearby residents. People who do not care about sports may resent helping to pay for a new football stadium. Different perspectives such as these explain why there is frequent disagreement about how to promote growth, even though everyone believes that local prosperity is a good thing.

The use of eminent domain by local governments illustrates the kinds of disputes that can divide communities. All across the nation, cities have aggressively used their power to take private property for "higher uses" to make way for big-box stores, malls, condominium projects, sports stadiums, and a great many other initiatives. For most of the nation's history, local governments have possessed the authority to take property without the owners' consent if it serves a legitimate public purpose.[9] Public officials have liberally interpreted this power as a useful tool for economic development, but homeowners and small businesses who find their property condemned so that it can be sold to a big developer look at it with a skeptical eye. On December 20, 2000, a group of homeowners led by Sussette Kelo filed a suit challenging a decision by the city of New London, Connecticut, to cede its eminent domain authority to a private corporation that wanted to raze their homes. The Pfizer Corporation had expressed interest in expanding its office campus into a waterfront footprint in New London, which was largely occupied by single-family homes. Things came to a head on June 23, 2005, when the U.S. Supreme Court upheld lower court rulings in favor of the development corporation, arguing that private development was in the "public interest," as it could serve as a way to attract revenue and economic development. The Court's decision ignited a firestorm of protest that swept the nation. In response to the public furor, by the fall of 2006, state legislatures in 30 states had enacted legislation to restrict the use of eminent domain, and hundreds of towns and cities had done likewise. In the fall elections of 2006, voters in 12 states passed referendums prohibiting the taking of property for private development if it did not serve a clear public purpose.[10] In a twist of irony, after the City of New London had bought up all private properties and cleared the footprint, the Pfizer Corporation lost interest in the development, and moved out of its adjacent office complex to nearby Groton, CT, taking 1,400 jobs with it.[11]

The lesson from the *Kelo v. New London* case is that despite the fact that almost everyone embraces the goal of local economic growth, sometimes the policies to promote it clash with other values, such as individual property rights, the health of a neighborhood, or a preference for less governmental intrusion. Everyone may seem to share the same interest in promoting the well-being of the urban community, but they frequently disagree over how to make that happen.

The Politics of Governance

International migration is transforming societies around the globe, and the United States is no exception. More immigrants came to the United States in the 1990s than in any previous decade in the nation's history, and the flow has continued into the twenty-first century. The social and political effects of large-scale population movements are often on display in big global cities such as Miami, New York, Chicago, and San Francisco, and in many smaller places as well. For this reason, in the global era, as in the past, city politics often pivots around issues of racial and ethnic identity and feelings of community solidarity at least as much as around issues of economic development.

Until the mid-nineteenth century, when colonial-era values still prevailed, men of wealth and high social standing made most of the decisions for the urban community. In the cities, "leadership fell to those who exercised economic leadership. All leadership, political, social, economic, tended to collect in the same set of hands."[12] Business owners, professionals, and aristocrats ran municipal affairs without challenge. The members of this social and political elite shared a mistrust of what Thomas Jefferson called "mobocracy," a word he used to signify his opposition to rule by popular majority. Governance was remarkably informal. Local notables served on

committees formed to build public wharves, organize town watches, and build and maintain public streets, and even the most essential services, such as crime control and fire prevention, generally relied on the voluntary efforts of citizens. Such a casual governmental structure fit the pace of life and the social intimacy of small communities.

By the industrial era of the 1850s, cities were growing at breakneck speed, and they were also becoming socially stratified and ethnically complex. Waves of immigrants were crowding into densely packed neighborhoods. They came from an astonishing variety of national cultures, from England, Ireland, Germany, the Scandinavian countries, and later from Italy and a broad swath of eastern European countries. From time to time, ethnic tensions rose to a fever pitch, and tipped over into violence time and again. In the industrial cities, the colonial-era style of politics could not survive the change, and in time, a new generation of urban leaders came onto the scene. They came from the immigrant precincts and entered politics by mobilizing the vote of the urban electorate. Their rise to power set off decades of conflict between wealthy and middle-class elites and the immigrants and their leaders, a story we tell in Chapters 3 and 4.

In the twentieth century, large movements of people continued to flood into the cities, but the ethnic and racial composition of these urban migrations changed dramatically. The immigrant flood tide ended in the early 1920s, when Congress enacted legislation that nearly brought foreign immigration to a halt. By then, however, a massive internal population movement was already picking up speed. In the first three decades of the twentieth century and again in the years following World War II, millions of African Americans fled the hostile culture of the South for jobs and opportunity in the industrial cities. They were joined by successive waves of destitute whites fleeing the unemployment and poverty of Appalachia and other depressed areas, and by Mexicans crossing the border to escape violence and poverty in their own country. These streams of migration virtually guaranteed that twentieth-century urban America would be riddled with violent racial conflict. One consequence of the rising tensions in the cities was that millions of white families left their inner-city neighborhoods and fled to the suburbs. A social and racial chasm soon separated cities from suburbs, and echoes of that period continue to reverberate to this day.

A vivid example of the continuing racial divide was on display in New Orleans in the late summer of 2005. When the storm surge from Hurricane Katrina breached the dikes surrounding New Orleans on August 29, 2005, 80 percent of the city was flooded and nearly 100,000 people were left to deal with the consequences. Wrenching images of human suffering filled television news programs: 25,000 people trying to live under impossible conditions in the Superdome, 20,000 more in the Convention Center, residents fleeing across bridges and overpasses and desperately waving from rooftops. More than 1.5 million people were displaced, 60,000 homes were destroyed, and 1,300 people died.[13] African American neighborhoods located on the lowest and least desirable parts of the city bore the brunt of the destruction. The racial segregation that made this possible is a legacy of New Orleans' past, and despite the civil rights advances that protect the rights of minorities to live where they choose to, it is a pattern that has not disappeared—in New Orleans or anywhere else.

In the meantime, bitter conflicts have, once again, broken out over foreign immigration. The massive flows of immigrants in recent decades have made cities culturally and socially dynamic places, but they have also meant that ethnic identity has continued to fuel conflict in national and city politics. The passage of Senate Bill 1070 by the Arizona Senate on April 23, 2010, provoked a furious reaction across the country. The Arizona law authorized police officers to detain anyone stopped for "any lawful purpose" if they suspected the person of being in the country illegally. The legislation brought an outcry of opposition from many quarters, including calls for boycotts of Arizona products and travel. President Obama decried the legislation, indicating that his administration would protect the civil rights of all U.S. citizens if they were subjected to state laws on the basis of their race or ethnicity.[14] In cities with substantial Hispanic populations, protests broke out against the Arizona law. The Los Angeles and Chicago city councils passed resolutions supporting an Arizona boycott, and other cities considered doing the same. On the opposite end of the political spectrum, the controversy energized Republicans and conservatives. Almost everywhere, the immigration controversy exposed a deep national division that continues today.

During the 2016 election campaign, immigration was a major topic, and it has been at the forefront of President Trump's political agenda. After he passed two executive orders and one proclamation banning citizens of certain, mostly Muslim-majority countries from entering the United States, and promised to build a wall on the U.S.–Mexico border and to crack down on undocumented immigrants, it has been states and municipalities who have taken up protective positions regarding immigrants. The sanctuary city movement, which existed long before Trump took office, has resulted in major tensions between the Trump administration and urban governments, as

laid out in Chapter 14.

The racial and ethnic complexity of metropolitan areas guarantees that the art of arbitrating among the contending groups making up the local political system will be hard to master. In the multiethnic metropolis of the global era, effective governance takes on real urgency. Governmental authority springs from the obligation of public institutions to make decisions that are binding upon all members of society. To retain the legitimacy to govern in a democratic system, the government must seem sufficiently responsive to a large enough proportion of the electorate, and at the same time there must be opportunities for the political losers to seek redress. The ethnic and racial complexity of cities makes this a daunting challenge.

The Fragmented Metropolis

Any account of city politics over the twentieth century must be located, in some part, within an often-rehearsed narrative that traces the decline of the central cities and rise of the suburbs, a period brought to a halt only recently by the unexpected revival of core cities. The process of suburbanization created the modern American metropolis, which is made up of a multitude of political jurisdictions large and small, wealthy, middle-class, and poor. For decades, the basic urban pattern involved an extreme racial segregation, with most blacks living in central cities, and most whites—especially the affluent ones—living in the suburbs. More recently, the geography of the American metropolis can be more accurately described as a mosaic, with ethnic and racial groups scattered across the urban landscape. Despite the significant changes, however, suburban jurisdictions still differ sharply from one another, and the gap between the richest and the poorest is as great as ever. The fracturing of politics creates a dynamic in which central cities and suburbs compete with one another across many dimensions.

Today's metropolitan regions are typically fragmented into hundreds of governmental jurisdictions. By 2012, there were 90,106 governments in the United States. In addition to the federal government and the governments of the 50 states, there were 38,910 local governments: 3,031 county and 35,879 sub-county governments, including 19,519 municipalities and 16,360 townships. The remainder, comprising over one-half of the total, is composed of special-purpose local governments, including 12,880 school districts and 38,266 special districts,[15] each of them established at some point in time to take on particular tasks, such as the running of toll bridges or the building of sewer systems, or the financing of new suburban developments. In addition, special authorities by the hundreds have been created to finance and manage such things as convention centers, sports stadiums, entertainment districts, and waterfront developments. Every year more are added to the list.[16]

The consequences of metropolitan fragmentation are too numerous to fully describe. Perhaps the most basic is that people tend to identify themselves with a local place rather than as regional citizens. Except when their team wins the Super Bowl or the World Series, most people have no connection to anything as abstract as a metropolitan community. This tendency is encouraged by the fact that political fragmentation and the local identity that comes with it serves some practical ends, and is especially advantageous for affluent suburban residents. Within all metropolitan regions, a vigorous competition takes place among jurisdictions for people and businesses capable of helping the local tax base. The winners in these metropolitan sweepstakes see the public revenues go up, which allows them to finance a higher level of services and more public amenities even if tax rates go down. This system of incentives prompts every local government to adopt policies that benefit their own citizens at the expense of neighboring communities. Cities fight hard to outbid one another for big-box stores, retailers, and malls. They typically retain consultants to help them negotiate deals with developers, which may include a combination of eminent domain for land acquisition, land improvements and public services, tax abatements, and even direct payments. If successful, these efforts bring in tax revenues that support schools, police and fire departments, and other services and amenities, and they leave less for everyone else.

Another reason urban residents tend to identify with their local community (the "home team") is that by keeping government close to home, they are able to make critical decisions about taxes, services, land use, and other important public policies. Historically, residents of suburbs have been especially concerned about maintaining the "character" of their communities, and frequently this concern has been expressed as a desire to exclude people based on race, ethnicity, and social class. In the history of urban America, strategies of exclusion have been aimed at a remarkable array of different groups. In the twentieth century, the desire to maintain racial segregation prompted suburban jurisdictions to enact policies meant to protect their communities from change. More recently, privatized, gated communities have become important means for accomplishing the same goal. These residential developments, which are often defended by gates, walls, and other physical barriers, are governed

by homeowners associations that assess fees for maintenance, services, and amenities; in this way, the residents are able to separate themselves from surrounding neighborhoods and even from the municipalities that surround them. Affluent homeowners manage to achieve a remarkable degree of separation from the less well-off, and by doing so they have changed the contours of local politics almost as much as the suburbs did a generation ago.

The proliferation of condominium developments and gated communities has had a paradoxical effect. On the one hand, it has made it possible for people to live in extreme isolation from one another even when they are close by. On the other hand, it has facilitated a patchwork pattern of urban residence that breaks down the large-scale pattern of racial and ethnic segregation that once divided inner-city "slum" from affluent suburb. It is difficult, however, to tell if these spatial patterns make all that much difference to anyone except middle-class and affluent urban residents. A prominent urban scholar, Peter Marcuse, has proposed that a retreat into geographic isolation and fortification erodes a shared sense of community and citizenship.[17] This is, perhaps, the inevitable consequence of the fragmented metropolis no matter what geographic form it may take.

The Challenge of the Global Era

Successive waves of immigration from all over the world have created the fragmented and multiethnic metropolis of the twenty-first century. Spatial fragmentation interacts with racial and ethnic diversity in complex ways. In cities closely connected to the global economy, symbols of corporate power, personal wealth, and luxury consumption stand in stark contrast to neighborhoods exhibiting high rates of poverty, violence, and physical dereliction. Frequently, shocking levels of inequality are visible on the same block, a fact driven home when office workers walk by homeless people or stop to eat at an expensive restaurant staffed by minimum-wage employees. Highly paid professionals working in the global economy drive up the price of downtown real estate to stratospheric levels and lead the gentrification of nearby neighborhoods, leaving run-down areas behind. Gentrification and renewal have helped revive the fortunes of central cities, but these processes have also had the effect of fragmenting the urban landscape.

Likewise, metropolitan areas are fractured by a geography that reflects the inequalities and demographic processes of the twenty-first century. Political fragmentation facilitates a pattern of segregation that sorts people out according to racial and ethnic identity and social class differences. A historical analysis would suggest that there is nothing new about this. All through the twentieth century, the white middle class escaped the cities by moving to the suburbs. Now, however, the city/suburban divide inherited from the past is breaking up into a much more complicated metropolitan pattern. Ethnic and racial groups are widely distributed throughout metropolitan areas. The 2016 census revealed that the country's most diverse counties were not the urban cores, or "inner cities," but in fact the counties just outside those centers.[18] Many more suburbs than before are ethnically diverse. The 2016 Census found that higher-density suburbs and lower density suburbs in large metros had the comparatively highest percentage decline of the average share of the largest ethnic or racial group—2.2 percent and 2.7 percent, respectively.[19] This means that, increasingly, the suburbs directly surrounding large metros are diversifying. The problem is that ethnic and racial diversity of this sort does not add up to a more coherent metropolitan community. Achieving effective governance in such a circumstance remains as one of the unfinished challenges of this century.

Endnotes

1 Jamie Peck, Nik Theodore, and Neil Brenner, "Neoliberal Urbanism: Models, Moments, Mutations," *SAIS Review* 29, no. 1, pp. 49–66.
2 Lawrence J. R. Herson and John M. Bolland, *The Urban Web: Politics, Policy, and Theory* (Chicago: Nelson-Hall, 1990), p. 43.
3 Sam Bass Warner Jr., *The Private City: Philadelphia in Three Periods of Its Growth* (Philadelphia, PA: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1968), p. 4.
4 Douglas Hanks, "Oil Spill Disaster Could Cost Florida 200,000 Jobs," *Miami Herald* (June 9, 2010), www.miamiherald.com/2010/06/09/167269/oil-disaster
5 Dennis Judd and Michael Parkinson, "Urban Leadership and Regeneration," in *Leadership and Urban Regeneration: Cities in North America and Europe,* ed. Dennis Judd and Michael Parkinson (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications, 1989), pp. 13–30.
6 Reif Larsen, "Detroit: The Most Exciting City in America?" *New York Times* (November 20, 2017). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2017/11/20/travel/detroit-michigan-downtown.html?_r=0
7 Ibid.
8 Ibid.
9 For a history and full discussion, see Wikipedia, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eminent_domain
10 See Institute of Justice, www.ij.org/private_property/connecticut/index; William Yardley, "Anger Drives Property Rights Measures," *New York*

Times (October 8, 2006), www.nytimes.com

11 Patrick McGeehan, "Pfizer to Leave City That Won Land-Use Case," *New York Times* (November 12, 2009). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2009/11/13/nyregion/13pfizer.html

12 Herson and Bolland, *The Urban Web,* p. 46.

13 Louise Comfort, "Cities at Risk: Hurricane Katrina and the Drowning of New Orleans," *Urban Affairs Review* 41 (March 2006): 501–506.

14 Peter Baker, "Obama and Calderón Decry Ariz. Immigration Law," *New York Times* (May 19, 2010), www.nytimes.com/2010/05/20/world/americas/20prexy.html

15 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Government Organization Summary Report: 2012. Governments Division Briefs* (September 2013), www2.census.gov/govs/cog/g12_org.pdf

16 Nancy Burns, *The Formation of American Local Governments: Private Values in Public Institutions* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1994).

17 Peter Marcuse, "The 'War on Terrorism' and Life in Cities After September 11, 2001," in *Cities, War, and Terrorism: Towards an Urban Geopolitics,* ed. Stephen Graham (New York: Blackwell, 2005), pp. 274–275.

18 Jed Kolko, "40 Years from Now, The U.S. Could Look Like Las Vegas. Demographically at Least," *FiveThirtyEight* (June 22, 2017). Accessed online: https://fivethirtyeight.com/features/40-years-from-now-the-u-s-could-look-like-las-vegas/

19 Ibid.

PART I

The Origins of American Urban Politics: The First Century

CHAPTER 2

The Enduring Legacy

National Development and the Cities

When the U.S. Constitution was ratified in 1789, the cities of the new nation were perched on the edge of a ragged coastline of a vast, mostly unexplored continent. Only five of these cities—Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and Charleston—had reached a population of 10,000 people. In the decades to follow, the social and economic development of the nation depended as much on the growth of its cities as on the expansion into the continental interior. A little more than a century later, 40 percent of Americans lived in towns and cities, and the nation's economy had become more industrial than agricultural. The symbols and the reality of the industrial age—belching smokestacks, wave after wave of foreign immigrants, social disorder, and racial and ethnic strife—all were concentrated in the cities. Although most Americans were recently descended from immigrants themselves, many of them soon developed a fear and distrust of cities and the people who lived within them. The anti-urban attitudes formed in this turbulent century became a defining feature of American culture that has endured right up to the present day.

The industrial economy required a constantly growing supply of cheap and plentiful labor. A flood of foreign immigration began to surge into the country in the 1840s, and it did not ebb until Congress passed legislation to curb it, in 1921 and 1924. Most of the immigrants settled in crowded urban neighborhoods close to the factories. Social and cultural differences divided the newcomers from the people who had arrived earlier, and sometimes the tensions escalated into violence. The new immigrants—poor, often illiterate, unfamiliar with the language and customs of their new country, and unaccustomed to city life—struggled to cope with miserable conditions in overcrowded slums. Those who had come to America at an earlier time generally viewed those who came later as culturally and morally inferior. The mixture of runaway urban growth, the industrial revolution, and the successive waves of immigration guaranteed that the nineteenth-century urban experience would be tumultuous.

This history is relevant because the same dynamics still energize urban politics today. Through all of the nineteenth century and in the first years of the twentieth century, waves of foreign immigration provoked anxiety and conflict, and often this became expressed in a rejection of the city and of the distinctive urban culture it nurtured.[1] Similarly, massive demographic movements have brought turmoil over the last half century or more. In the years after World War II, at the same time that millions of southern blacks poured into the cities of the North, millions of white families fled to the suburbs. One consequence of these historic movements was that those living in the suburbs came to think of the cities they had left behind almost as enemy territory. More recently, a wave of foreign immigration has set off a clash of cultures and fueled political conflict in both national and local politics. In some states and cities, the anxiety about the newcomers has been expressed in legislation intended to make it impossible to rent housing or provide jobs to illegal immigrants, and to reduce social spending and require English-only instruction in the schools. Understanding that these kinds of conflicts have a long history in urban America helps to put today's political controversies into a useful context.

OUTTAKE

City Building Has Always Required Public Efforts

In the nineteenth century, the intense competition among cities ignited a "struggle for primacy and power" in which "like imperial states, cities carved out extensive dependencies, extended their influence over the economic and political life of the hinterland, and fought with contending places over strategic trade routes." In the American

West, local boosters sometimes faced a daunting challenge in promoting their towns because many of them were, in fact, hard, isolated places in which to live. Promoters bragged about any positive feature, and just as frequently they invented fanciful tales because they had a lot at stake: "Questioning a place's promise affected not just those doing the questioning but also all who had put stock, mental and material, in the place." Everyone living in a place, from town councils to realtors and chambers of commerce, was vigilant in discouraging any negative information from leaking out. Instead, local boosters made the smallest places seem like centers of high culture and the most desolate deserts sound like fertile land waiting for the plow.

But town promoters did not rely upon marketing alone. After midcentury, when a national railroad network began to emerge, it became clear that in order to prosper or even survive, cities would have to find a way to connect to it. To do so, civic boosters aggressively employed the power and resources of local government. To induce railroad companies to make connections to their city, they raised private subscriptions to buy railroad stock, paid for local stations and offloading facilities, gave away free land, and sometimes offered direct cash subsidies. The railroads raised much of their capital for building new rail lines by striking good bargains with cities, and ultimately secured more public subsidies from cities than from state governments or from Congress. The competition for rail connections became so frenzied that railroad companies were building new lines just to obtain subsidies from local governments. When a lot of these lines failed to generate enough freight and passengers to make them pay, hundreds of rail companies went belly up, leaving towns and cities with big debts but nothing to show for them, and no way to pay.

There are striking parallels with the intense inter-urban competition that goes on today. In recent decades, huge public resources have again been devoted to the cause of boosting local economic vitality. As in the nineteenth century, civic boosters are fired with the conviction that their own prospects and the fate of their cities hangs in the balance. Since the 1970s, cities have engaged in a virtual arms race to revitalize waterfronts and build stadiums, convention centers, malls, and entertainment centers. Cities compete to host events like auto races, music festivals, and special museum exhibits. All of this activity is inspired by the idea that cities must replace the smokestacks of an earlier era with an economy revolving based on services as well as tourism, entertainment, and culture.

People who support such efforts make the argument that public expenditures benefit everyone because they form the basis of a healthy local economy. Obviously not everyone agrees. Heated debates regularly erupt over questions about what should be built, who should pay for it, and who really cashes in. Many people have a nagging suspicion that taxpayers foot the bill while well-connected developers and the business elite reap the rewards. When the controversies of the 1870s are compared to those of today, one can get a distinct feeling of déjà vu.

Source: The two quotations are from Richard C. Wade, *The Urban Frontier: Pioneer Life in Early Pittsburgh, Cincinnati, Lexington, Louisville, and St. Louis* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1959), p. 103; David M. Wrobel, *Promised Lands: Promotion, Memory, and the Creation of the American West* (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 2002), p. 71.

A Century of Urban Growth

In the industrial age, cities grew at a frantic pace that had no historical precedent. In 1800, London was the only city in the world to approach a population of 1 million people, and Paris, with a population of 547,000, ranked second among the cities of continental Europe.[2] At the time, just over 60,000 people lived in New York, which made it more than one-third larger than the second, Philadelphia, with its 41,000 people, and more than twice the size of the next in line, Baltimore. Astonishingly, only 100 years later, 11 cities had topped the million-person mark, including London at 6,586,000, Paris at 2,714,000,[3] New York at 3,437,000, and Chicago at 1,698,575. Over the span of the same century, the percentage of the population living in towns[4] and cities in England and Wales increased from 25 to 77. Never before had cities grown so big or so fast, and never before had such a high proportion of the population lived in cities. The urban historian Eric Lampard has noted that, "the period c. A.D. 1750–1850 [is] one of the crucial disjunctions in the history of human society. Whatever constraints had hitherto checked or moderated the growth and re-distribution of population were suddenly relaxed."[5] Commenting on the growth of cities in 1895, the *Atlantic Monthly* pointed out that, "The great fact in … social development … at the close of the nineteenth century is the tendency all over the world to concentrate in great cities. This tendency is seen everywhere."[6]

The American experience paralleled these developments. In most of the decades between the first national

census of 1790 to the census of 1920, the urban population (defined by the Census Bureau as people living in cities and towns of 2,500 or more) grew more than twice as fast as the U.S. population as a whole. The only significant exception to this trend showed up between 1810 and 1820, when homesteaders and farmers streamed across the Appalachian Mountains to settle the Old Northwest (now western Pennsylvania, Ohio, and Indiana). Soon, however, even the expanding frontier could not absorb enough people to keep up with the rate of growth in the cities. Urban change on this scale was an entirely new and often shocking experience. As late as 1840, a full half century after the nation's founding, only one American in ten was officially classified in the census as "urban." In the two decades leading up to the Civil War, however, cities began growing at an astonishing rate. Foreign immigrants began pouring into the industrial cities in search of jobs in the factories; and a steady migration from farm to city picked up speed for the same reason. As late as 1840, only 11 percent of the American population lived in cities and towns, but by 1860, the Census Bureau officially classified 20 percent of the American population as urban, and this proportion doubled to almost 40 percent by century's end (see Figure 2.1). Twenty years later, the national census revealed that more than half of all Americans—51 percent—lived in cities or towns. In much less than a century, the United States had gone from a mostly rural to one that was rapidly becoming more urban.

Because they were important centers of finance and trade, right from the beginning the cities perched on the eastern seaboard benefited from national development even when it was occurring on the distant frontier. New York maintained its supremacy as a financial and commercial hub, and its status as the nation's premier city was ensured in 1825, the year the Erie Canal was completed. The canal linked the city directly to the Great Lakes, which placed it at the end of a giant funnel that gathered the resources of a vast hinterland into New York harbor, where they could be placed into a worldwide trading system. After the Civil War, New York consolidated its position when it became a great manufacturing city. Jostling throngs of immigrants passed through the port of New York, and many of them decided to go no further. From just 369,000 people in 1840, the city's population exploded to over 3.4 million by 1900—a shocking 10-fold increase in only 60 years! By 1920, when its population reached 5.6 million, New York had firmly consolidated its position as a leading global center of finance, trade, and manufacturing.

Yet, despite its incredible growth, New York's share of the nation's urban population fell steadily throughout the century. This is because thousands of new towns and cities sprang up as the nation expanded westward, and these places often grew much faster even than New York—although, it must be emphasized, none of them were destined to challenge its supremacy. In 1800, 18 percent of the nation's urban population lived in New York City, but by the century's end, this proportion had fallen to 7 percent.[7] New York City remained the largest by far, but over time other cities assumed prominent places in an increasingly integrated national and international urban network. The data in Table 2.1 help tell this story. New York grew from a city of 137,388 in 1820 to a multi-million-person metropolis a century later, but over the same period other cities were also bursting at the seams. Philadelphia had a population of 64,000 in 1820, topped 565,000 by 1860, and grew to a city of more than 1.8 million by 1920. Boston increased its population from 43,000 in 1820 to nearly 178,000 in 1860, and to almost 750,000 by 1920. Meanwhile, a great many places, large and small, experienced a similar transformation.

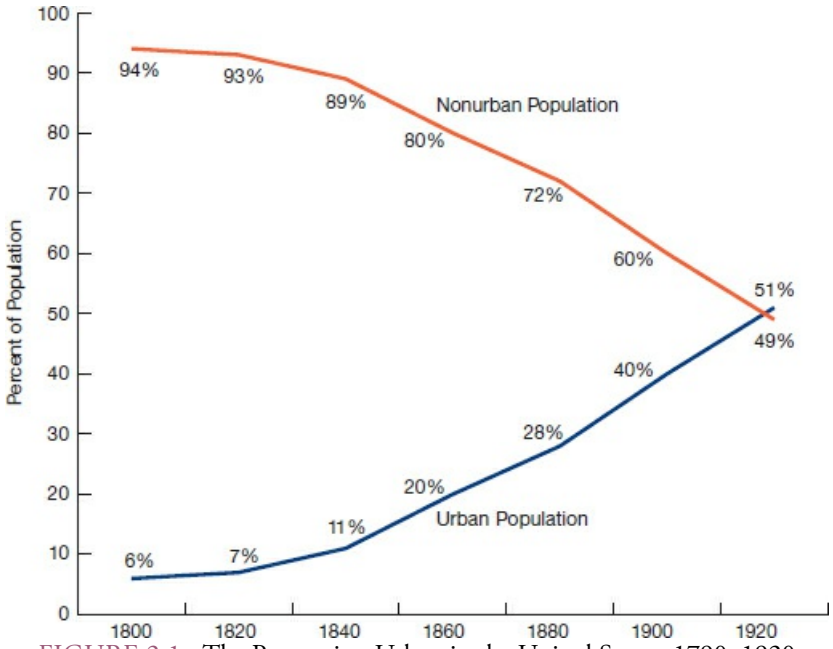


FIGURE 2.1 The Proportion Urban in the United States, 1790–1920

Sources: U.S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics of the United States, Colonial Times to 1970,* pt. 1, Bicentennial ed. (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1975), p. 8; U.S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *1970 Census of Population,* vol. 1, *Characteristics of the Population,* pt. 1 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1973), p. 42.

Cities in the continental interior grew at almost unbelievable rates, often morphing from small frontier towns to busy urban centers in only a few years. St. Louis, the old French settlement where Lewis and Clark outfitted their expedition in 1805, exploded from a town of only 16,000 people in 1840 to a city 10 times that size by 1860, and reached 772,000 by 1920. But Chicago's growth was perhaps most startling of all. In the 20 years from 1840 to 1860, it was transformed from a swampy frontier village of 4,500 to a city of more than 112,000. And the people just kept on coming. Chicago quickly left St. Louis in the dust, and by 1920 its population had soared to 2.7 million people, putting it second only to New York.

Places such as St. Louis and New Orleans (on the Mississippi River), Chicago (at the foot of Lake Michigan), and Cincinnati (on the Ohio River) had begun as major trading centers, transferring goods through the Great Lakes or the inland river system to the eastern seaboard cities or directly to Europe. After the Civil War, they quickly emerged as leading industrial centers. Smaller cities and towns prospered by finding a specialized niche in this emerging urban hierarchy. At the top of the pyramid, the largest cities became industrial powerhouses and asserted commanding reach over vast hinterlands. Second-tier cities developed more specialized economies and generally served as transfer points to the larger urban centers. The bottom of the hierarchy was composed of the multitude of small towns that shipped agricultural and extractive resources gathered from mines, forests, and farms to feed the warehouses and factories located in the big urban centers, which then placed the raw materials into international commerce or used them to produce manufactured goods.

Inter-Urban Rivalries

Individual cities did not prosper by relying upon happenstance and chance. Town promotion became a way of life for local boosters, who competed for the settlers and investors who swept across the continent. The fortunes of cities were only partially determined by locational advantages—what might be called "place luck." Transportation connections—turnpikes, canals, and, later, railroads—were also crucial in determining a city's destiny. Links to the national transportation network could instantly secure a city's future by expanding its reach into the hinterland surrounding it and by tying it into national and international trade networks. Because such connections were so important to a city's prospects, promoters freely used the fiscal resources and powers of local governments to secure them. In the early century, canal building reached a fever pitch, but within a few years the railroads provided better links to other cities and to broader markets. Cities scrambled to offer subsidies to railroad corporations in the form of free land and terminal facilities and stock purchases. The logic was simple: rising real

estate values were expected to provide more than enough additional revenues to pay off the debts. These hopes did not always pan out, but any city that failed to make the effort to secure good rail links would surely wither on the vine.

TABLE 2.1 Population and Rate of Growth in Five Large Cities, 1820–1920[a]

	New York City[b]	% Inc.	Chicago	% Inc.	Philadelphia	% Inc.	St. Louis	% Inc.	Boston	% Inc.	Percentage Increase In U.S. Population
1820	137,388		—		63,802		4,598		43,298		
1830	220,471	60%	—		80,462	26%	5,847	27%	61,392	42%	33%
1840	369,305	67	4,470		93,665	16	16,469	182	93,383	52	33
1850	660,803	79	29,963	570%	121,376	30	77,860	373	136,881	47	36
1860	1,183,148	79	112,172	274	565,529	366	160,773	107	177,840	30	36
1870	1,546,293	31	298,977	167	674,022	19	310,864	93	250,526	41	27
1880	2,061,191	33	503,185	68	847,170	26	350,522	13	362,839	45	26
1890	2,507,474	22	1,099,850	119	1,046,964	24	451,770	29	448,477	24	26
1900	3,437,202	37	1,698,575	54	1,293,697	24	575,000	27	560,892	25	21
1910	4,766,883	39	2,185,283	29	1,549,008	20	687,029	20	670,585	20	21
1920	5,620,048	18	2,701,705	24	1,823,779	18	772,897	13	748,060	12	15

Notes: [a]These five cities were ranked as the five largest in the 1910 census. [b] Using the consolidated borough boundaries of 1898.
Sources: Glen E. Holt, personal files; U.S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *The Growth of Metropolitan Districts in the United States: 1900–1940,* by Warren S. Thompson (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1947); Blake McKelvey, *American Urbanization: A Comparative History* (Glenview, IL: Scott Foresman, 1973), pp. 24, 37, 73.

The battle for rail connections was fought with white-hot intensity. Before the railroads, it was possible to transport corn by wagon only 125 miles, and wheat only 250 miles, before the cost made them unmarketable.[8] Beyond that distance, agricultural land was almost worthless for anything except subsistence farming because there was no way of getting crops to market. The cost and inconvenience of hauling goods on horse-drawn wooden wagons guaranteed that settlements without access to water transportation would never amount to much. In the first decade of the nineteenth century, a ton of goods could be shipped all the way from Europe for the same amount it cost to haul it 9 miles over roads.[9] Inland cities without waterfronts could not conceivably compete with port and river cities as centers of trade. All that changed with the coming of the railroads. The emerging rail network opened up huge areas of farmland to commercial agriculture, which not only allowed the countryside to fill in but also resulted in soaring land values and population growth for the cities able to secure a connection. Local promoters were anxious to shape patterns of trade and economic development in their favor because they were keenly aware that they were involved in a competition in which some cities would prosper, but others would perish on the vine.

The building of the Erie Canal demonstrated how cities might gain a measure of control over their own destinies. In 1817, the New York State legislature authorized money for the construction of a 364-mile waterway to connect the Hudson River to Lake Erie. When the canal opened in 1825, it became possible to ship huge volumes of agricultural and extractive goods from the continental interior through the Great Lakes to Buffalo, down the canal, and on to the port at New York, where they could be distributed along the eastern seaboard, used in factories, or shipped to Europe. Many producers and shippers abandoned the long, circuitous, and hazardous journey down the Ohio, Missouri, and Mississippi rivers to the port at New Orleans. New York's direct connection to the heartland via the canal quickly vaulted it past other eastern seaboard cities in population and volume of trade. By 1860, 62 percent of the nation's foreign trade passed through New York's harbor.[10]

The lesson was not lost on city boosters elsewhere. Civic leaders lobbied their state capitals for financial assistance to build canals. Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, and South Carolina financed expensive canal projects designed to cut through the Appalachians. More than 3,000 miles of canals were dug between 1824 and 1840, most of them operated by state governments.[11] About 30 percent of the costs were raised through private sources, but public financing was essential for such ambitious undertakings.[12]

Canal building was so expensive, the engineering so complicated, and the natural barriers often so formidable

that most cities could not hope to build them unless state legislatures helped out. Natural topographic barriers left many places out of the competition altogether. But the railroad era ignited an inter-urban competition that almost any city might join. Until the railroads, water was the singularly critical ingredient determining a city's fate; canals were just a means of trying to make up for what nature had not endowed. In the first decades of the nineteenth century, for the river towns such as St. Louis, Pittsburgh, Cincinnati, and New Orleans, the steamboat had been "an enchanter's wand transforming an almost raw countryside of scattered farms and towns into a settled region of cultivated landscapes and burgeoning cities."[13] In the 1850s, the enchanter's wand was passed to the railroads. The rail lines became rivers of commerce, capable of carrying huge volumes at amazing speeds over long distances. The railroads guaranteed that America's frontier would eventually vanish and a network of cities, towns, and villages would spread over the continent.

In 1840, only 2,800 miles of track had been laid, most of it in the urban East. No connection reached even as far west as Pittsburgh. The early steam locomotives were hazardous and unreliable contraptions, blowing up with a regularity that provoked opposition to their use in urban areas. Lacking the capital to take on bigger projects, railway companies built short lines. Because each company devised its own gauge (width between the rails), at the end of each line goods had to be unloaded from one company's cars and put onto cars that fit the next company's rails. Even with these limitations, however, the early rail system was vastly superior to the only alternative: horse-drawn wooden wagons.

Rail lines were built at astonishing speed, and by the 1880s the adoption of standard gauge sizes made the system much more efficient. In 1857, the newly consolidated Pennsylvania Railroad first connected Pittsburgh to Chicago. Three years later, 11 trunk lines ended in Chicago and 20 branch and feeder lines passed through it, making the city the nation's largest rail center terminus. By 1869 and with much fanfare, the symbolic Golden Spike was pounded in at Promontory Point, Utah. It completed the first cross-continental route by joining the Union Pacific line originating on the East Coast to the Central Pacific line starting in San Francisco. Within a few years, the outline of the modern rail system was almost complete, a spider's web with strands reaching into every section of the country. In just the half century between 1850 and 1900, the network expanded from 9,021 miles of track to 258,784 miles.[14]

More miles of track were laid more quickly than in any other nation in the world. This explosive growth could be traced to the massive public subsidies pumped into railroad building. Until the 1890s, most private corporations lacked the ability to raise the capital that would later become routine for them. Subsidies from governments at all levels helped make the railroads "America's first big business."[15] In the Pacific Railways Acts of 1862 and 1864, the federal government gave huge swaths of land to the railroad corporations, which they could use for rail construction and to raise capital. But some involvement by the states was critical because the federal government considered transportation to be mostly a state responsibility. Treasury Secretary Albert Gallatin's 1808 plan for a federal system of turn-pike and harbor improvements had failed to gain congressional approval because of regional rivalries.[16] Following President Andrew Jackson's veto of a federal turnpike bill in 1830, transportation became viewed more as a state than a federal responsibility.

The states responded by feverishly subsidizing canal and railroad construction, but their eagerness to assume risk was also tempered by experience. The Panic of 1837 bankrupted scores of canal companies and some of the early steam railroad lines, which caused private investors and the states alike to lose their investments. Taxpayers and politicians were up in arms, and "revulsion against internal improvements" swept the country.[17] In the 1840s, many states wrote prohibitions against loaning money or buying stock in private corporations. Facing new restrictions at the state level, railroad promoters shifted their efforts to cities, which raced to outbid one another for railroad stock.

The anarchic competition for rail connections imposed many costs, including overbuilding and redundancies that resulted in bond defaults and bankruptcies. Up to 1861, 25–30 percent of all direct investment in railroad building was supplied by state and local governments. The cities were the biggest spenders; they contributed an estimated $300 million in direct subsidies; the states spent $229 million and the federal government $65 million.[18] In addition, the federal government and the states offered generous land grants, which the railroad companies quickly converted to cash by selling the land to settlers. In the post-Civil War period, the railroads accumulated so much property that they sent agents to the Scandinavian countries, Germany, and elsewhere to recruit immigrants to buy and settle it. Partly because the railroad companies recruited heavily there (and also because of hardships in their homeland), one-sixth of all Swedish citizens left for the United States in the last half

of the nineteenth century, many of them settling in a broad swath of territory paralleling rail routes from the Great Lakes through the Dakotas and Montana.

Railroad owners became adept at playing cities against one another in an attempt to secure lucrative subsidies. By the 1850s, cities along the eastern seaboard were floating bond issues so they could invest in railroad stock, clear rights-of-way, and build terminal facilities—actions intended to ensure rail connections. The competition quickly spread west. In the 1860s, the business leaders of Kansas City, Kansas, sold bond issues to private investors, gave the proceeds to a railroad company, and persuaded Congress to approve a federal land grant to the company. As a result of its success in this venture, Kansas City prospered while its nearby rival Leavenworth stagnated (today, Leavenworth is known mainly for its federal prison).[19] Denver's board of trade raised $280,000 to finance a 100-mile spur line to obtain access to the intercontinental track that ran through Cheyenne, Wyoming.[20] Some of Denver's businesses had already moved to Cheyenne in the expectation that its position astride the intercontinental line would make it the premier city of the Rocky Mountain West. Their ambitions were frustrated when rail lines from all directions began to converge on Denver, thus securing its status as the dominant city of the Rocky Mountain region. The results of this long-ago battle are still obvious: today, Cheyenne's image is tied mostly to its annual rodeo, the "Cheyenne Frontier Days."

No city benefited from railroad building as dramatically as did Chicago, whose phenomenal growth was founded on its access to agricultural and extractive products gathered from a vast region. Corn and grain, cattle and hogs, and iron ore and coal poured into Chicago through the Great Lakes and over the rails. The city became a center for steelmaking; the manufacture of agricultural implements, tools, and machines; slaughtering and meatpacking; and trade. By the mid-1870s, Chicago eclipsed St. Louis as the Midwest's premier city, a feat accomplished partly through the success of its local business community in securing rail links. Chicago built its first railroad in 1852 and then helped finance feeder lines into the city. The city also invested in grain elevators, warehouses, switching yards, and stockyards. By contrast, for too long St. Louis' business community held fast to the faith that the Mississippi River steamboats would continue to be the key to the city's prosperity. By the time St. Louis began seeking rail connections, Chicago's lead was overwhelming. Although Chicago also enjoyed a considerable advantage because it was located on the Great Lakes and was right next door to the most fertile farming regions of the Midwest, its aggressive leadership reinforced its favorable location.

For many years, the question of whether cities should go into debt to secure rail connections was beyond public dispute. Urban voters enthusiastically supported the issuance of city bonds to finance railroad subsidy schemes. As long as everyone's attention was riveted on external threats to the local economy, nearly everyone supported the idea that everything possible should be done to attract rail connections. Local promoters were encouraged to think that virtually any scheme that benefited them personally was also in the public's interest: "Developmental policy was almost wholly a product of consensus-building among groups of merchant elites to support particular canal, turnpike, rail and other projects in response to merchant elites in nearby communities."[21] From 1866 to 1873, the legislatures of 29 states granted over 800 authorizations for aid by local governments to railroad projects.[22] A study of governmental aid to railroads in New York found that no community ever voted against subscribing to railroad stock.[23] The votes were usually so lopsided as to be a foregone conclusion.[24]

The fight for rail connections improved the fortunes of many a city, but the overheated competition brought disaster to some. Railroad promoters played one town against another in search of better subsidies. The interurban competition grew often so fierce that many cities bid up the subsidies beyond what was economically rational. City governments incurred huge debts on a hope and a promise. In New York State, 50 towns bypassed a major rail line joined in a $5.7 million stock subscription to the New York and Oswego Railroad. Zigzagging across the state to link the towns, the company went bankrupt shortly after completing the line in 1873 because the areas it served had too few people and products to sustain a viable business. Most of the investments made by the towns were wiped out, with taxpayers left holding the bag.[25]

Promoters exaggerated the positive effects expected of public subsidies, predicting rapid town growth, rising real estate values, and overflowing municipal treasuries. Profits on railroad stocks, they often promised, would eliminate the need for local taxes altogether. For most cities, however, "the direct effect on government finances was on the whole unfavorable."[26] Too many cities bought stock that went bust, or the new lines brought far less prosperity than promised. Cities that had heavily invested in speculative railroad ventures regularly found themselves dragged into fiscal crisis. Some cities defaulted on their debts in the 1860s, but it was merely a harbinger of things to come. The three-year depression that began in 1873 was precipitated, more than anything

else, by the overbuilding of railroads and the overvaluing of railroad stock and local real estate. Hundreds of towns and cities were forced into default. In 1873, an astounding $100 million to $150 million of municipal debt was involved in railroad bond defaults—one-fifth of all the municipal debt in the nation.[27]

Municipal defaults on railroad bonds and revelations of political corruption associated with railroad building affected politics at all levels. Citizens rebelled against paying back eastern financiers for bonds that had become worthless. In some cases, the lines had not even been built. When federal marshals came to towns to collect the debts, they were sometimes run off by shotgun-wielding mobs. Cries of debt repudiation filled the air, and some cities and states won court battles to forgive their debts.[28] From 1864 to 1888, the most common type of case before the U.S. Supreme Court involved railroad bonds.[29] Many states adopted restrictions on local debt and limited the aid that could be given to private corporations.[30] Financial and political abuses by railroad barons fueled a populist rebellion against big business that shook the national political system.[31]

Industrialization and Community

At the time of the nation's founding and for several decades after, the politics of American cities were controlled primarily by an aristocratic and merchant elite. Such a system could not survive the urban growth and the economic and technological changes wrought by industrialization. In only a few years, cities changed from relatively compact communities held together by personal relationships and shared community norms to sprawling industrial cities characterized by social stratification and segregation, constant population change, and social and political conflict. By degrees, the governing class inherited from an earlier era lost its grip on local political systems. Increasingly, urban politics became a battleground revolving around social class and ethnic identity.

Before the emergence of the industrial city, trading cities sprang up along navigable waterways and harbors. The economy of the merchant cities was intimately tied to trade and commerce: the importation and distribution of European goods; the regulation of docks and farmers' markets; the financing and insuring of ships and goods; the printing of accounting ledgers, handbills, and newspapers. Educated aristocrats, importers, bankers, wholesalers, and shopkeepers were numbered among a city's most prominent citizens. A notch down in the social order were the craft workers, artisans, and individual entrepreneurs—shoemakers, hatters, bakers, carpenters, blacksmiths, potters, butchers, wheelwrights, saddle and harness makers, and shipwrights. At the bottom were sailors, domestic workers, servants, and the unskilled workers who moved goods from docks to warehouses. Social differences were clearly marked and widely accepted; overall, in colonial New England the inequality in wealth was about the same as in the slaveholding South.[32] At the time of the Revolution, about three out of four white persons in Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia had come to America as indentured servants; until they paid their debts they were not free to join the paid labor force.[33]

The lifeblood of the mercantile cities (called the "city of merchants" by historians) flowed along the waterfront. Wharves and docks, warehouses, clerks' offices, banks, newspapers and printing establishments, taverns and breweries, and private homes all clustered close to the riverfront or harbor. This compact "walking city" was bounded by the distance the inhabitants could walk within an hour or two. Typically, the area of urban settlement spread about 2 miles from the center, but most people lived in densely packed neighborhoods stretching only a few blocks from the water. The small size of the merchant cities moderated the effects of inequality by fostering "a sense of community identification similar to that of traditional societies."[34] Most goods were produced in small shops by skilled artisans who employed one or two apprentices, and these often lived on the premises. Workers clustered together in shanties or back alleys within a short distance of the comfortable homes of wealthy merchants.

In his study of colonial Philadelphia, the historian Sam Bass Warner found that people of different occupations lived apart, but it was a proximate segregation: "It was the unity of everyday life, from tavern, to street, to workplace, to housing which held the town together in the eighteenth century."[35] Class conflict was moderated by this intimate geography as well as by a sense that everyone's welfare depended on the commercial success of the city. The merchant class was expected to run the city's affairs, and it did. With few exceptions, wealthy aristocrats and merchants presided over the public affairs of the city, and they encountered little opposition.[36] Consistent with their view that the scope of local government ought to be limited, they spent little on public services. In 1810, for instance, New York City spent only $1 per capita on all governmental functions put together.[37]

Casual and consensual governance of this sort began to disappear by the second half of the nineteenth century.

In 1850, not much more than 10 percent of all workers in America were engaged in manufacturing, and they produced less than 20 percent of the nation's economic output. Only two decades later, however, industrial production exceeded the commercial and agricultural sectors in value added to the economy, and by the turn of the century, manufacturing accounted for more economic value than both sectors combined.[38] Industrialization moved economic production from small shops and homes into factories. Before the Civil War, manufacturing establishments rarely employed more than 50 workers, and even in large cities they ranged between 8 and 20 workers. In 1832, for example, the average-sized manufacturing establishment in Boston employed 8.5 workers.[39] But in the years following the Civil War, manufacturing firms grew quickly in size. In agricultural implements and machinery, the number of employees per establishment increased from 7.5 in 1860 to 79 in 1910. In malt liquor breweries, the number of workers increased from 5 to 39, and in iron and steel establishments, from 54 to 426.[40]

The transformation of small businesses into big corporations spawned a class of industrial magnates who flaunted their wealth by building mansions and estates, throwing lavish parties, and constructing monuments to themselves.[41] Capital became increasingly concentrated in large firms. Limited-risk corporations,[42] which were relatively rare before the Civil War, produced 60 percent of value in manufacturing by the turn of the century.[43] (Such corporations raise capital by selling stocks to investors, who risk their investment but not their personal assets if the company fails.) Twelve firms were valued at over $10 million in 1896, but by 1903, 50 firms valued at more than $50 million.[44] Several giant corporations formed between 1896 and 1905, including U.S. Steel, International Harvester, General Electric, and American Telephone and Telegraph, became models of the modern corporate form of the twentieth century.

As the workplace became increasingly impersonal, hierarchical, and rigid, relationships between employers and workers became distant and even hostile. As machine-tooled, standardized parts replaced handcrafted goods, the number of unskilled workers multiplied. Standardized production had begun as early as 1798, when Eli Whitney designed a musket with interchangeable parts. Over time, standardized components made it possible to make a variety of goods rapidly and cheaply. Such products as clocks, sewing machines, and farm machinery, which had once been assembled by craft workers, were now made in big factories. The huge military orders placed during the Civil War prompted the mass production of shoes and clothing. Factory methods of production required specialized, repetitive work and a rigid distinction between management and workers, and work became regimented and closely monitored.

Class differences sharply separated urban neighborhoods. While immigrant working-class tenement slums crowded close to the downtown business districts or in bottomlands near the docks and factories, middle-class neighborhoods tended to be located away from the teeming crowd. The wealthy claimed exclusive areas, often located on hills, where the air was fresher and the residents commanded pleasing views (almost everywhere, "the heights" came to signify high social standing). Wealthy people began to spend their weekends and holidays on bucolic suburban estates.

A series of transportation improvements allowed people to commute farther from their place of work. When the omnibuses were introduced to the streets of New York City in 1828, they represented a minor revolution in urban transportation. The way people commuted to work had changed little for hundreds of years. The wealthy owned or rented carriages; everyone else walked or, rarely, rode a horse. The omnibus made it possible for larger numbers of people to ride, in effect, in an enlarged version of the carriage. From the 1830s until the Civil War, dozens of omnibuses careened down the streets of the industrial cities. Basically, an enlarged version of the longdistance stagecoach, the omnibus was pulled by a team of two to four horses and typically carried up to a dozen people. Omnibuses were crowded and uncomfortable, cold in the winter, hot in the summer, and slow, barely moving faster than a person could walk. The coaches swayed and lurched over cobblestones and rutted unpaved streets.[45] A newspaper of the time complained that "during certain periods of the day or evening and always during inclement weather, passengers are packed in these vehicles, without regard to comfort or even decency."[46]

Despite the discomforts, commuters who could afford the fares— merchants, traders, lawyers, artisans, managers, junior partners—crowded into these crude conveyances. The advantages were many. The omnibus ran on a fixed schedule and route, and it picked up and dropped off passengers at frequent intervals. The fixed fare, typically a nickel, was a small fraction of the cost of renting a hackney coach. The omnibus was thus more convenient and less expensive than any alternative mode of traveling except walking. By encouraging in some urban residents the "riding habit,"[47] the omnibus marked the beginning of the end of the walking city. Almost immediately, the American city began fragmenting into distinct neighborhoods and enclaves.

Steam railroad lines, which made their first appearance in Boston in the 1830s, made it possible for a select few commuters to live at some distance away, but there were a few drawbacks. Steam engines were suited for constant speed rather than for frequent stops and starts, they were expensive to build and operate, and they were fearfully loud and prone to blowing up. They did not, therefore, compete with omnibuses on crowded urban streets but instead facilitated a commute by a privileged few to smaller towns and villages some miles away from the urban center. The 40–75 cent fares were out of reach for all but the wealthy (the average laborer made about $1 a day; sometimes skilled workers made as much as $2 a day).[48] Even so, by 1848, one-fifth of Boston's businessmen commuted daily by rail.[49]

In the 1850s, horse-drawn streetcars replaced omnibuses on main thoroughfares. Because they were pulled on rails rather than over potholed streets, the horsecars carried twice as many passengers and traveled almost twice as fast as an omnibus. Horsecars were cheaper, too, and their affordable cost "contributed to the development of the world's first integrated transportation systems."[50] In the larger cities, the lines radiated from the center like spokes on a wheel. Because horsecars could travel 6 to 8 miles in an hour, middle-class residential settlements began to spread that far and more from the city center. (The rule of thumb, then as now, was that most people were willing to commute up to an hour, but not much more.) In addition, the horsecar lines sometimes extended well beyond built-up areas, serving hospitals, parks, cemeteries, and independent villages.[51] Wherever they reached, land speculators and builders bought up property in the expectation that development would follow and real estate values would rise.

In 1888, Frank Julian Sprague revolutionized urban transit when he installed the first electric streetcar system in Richmond, Virginia.[52] The motive force driving the electric streetcar came from a wheeled carriage that moved atop an overhead cable. This device trolled along the wires, pulling the car as it went. The "troller" gave the trolley car its name.[53] Trolley cars had so many advantages over horsecars that despite the expense of installing overhead wires, traction companies and cities rushed to install them. In 1890, 60 percent of the nation's streetcars were still pulled by horses, but 12 years later the figure was less than 1 percent.[54] Trolleys traveled almost twice as fast as horsecars. Areas 6 to 8 miles from the city center could now be reached in half an hour, making it possible for people to live 10 miles or more from work. And electric streetcars were infinitely cleaner than the horsecars they replaced. City residents had always complained about "an atmosphere heavy with the odors of death and decay and animal filth and steaming nastiness."[55] The trolley removed thousands of horses, together with their daily tons of manure, from the streets.

The horse-drawn streetcars and the electric trolleys (and a few decades later, the automobile) facilitated, each in its turn, an increasing segregation of settlement and land use. Until the 1870s, crowded financial and retailing districts were located close by and even mixed in with warehouses and factories.[56] In the last third of the nineteenth century, however, well-defined downtown shopping and financial districts sprang up. Middle-class people developed a new shopping habit. They rode the streetcars downtown to buy goods in the new generation of chain and department stores, which were able to grow larger because more people could get to them. The first chain retail company, the Great Atlantic and Pacific Tea Company, was organized in 1864, and A&P stores soon expanded to other cities. Frank W. Woolworth opened his five-and-dime store in Lancaster, Pennsylvania, in 1879, and by the 1880s Woolworth's became a familiar marquee in downtown areas.[57] The middle-class habit of shopping in downtown stores for major purchases persisted right up until the end of the 1950s, by which time the streetcar system had been dismantled in most cities.[58]

The development of social and ethnic segregation among neighborhoods, cities, and suburbs eroded the sense that everyone lived cooperatively in a mutually beneficial urban community. If the term "community" once evoked images of a diverse assortment of people rubbing shoulders in their daily lives, it gradually came to refer to the patterns of interaction among people living within homogeneous neighborhoods. The poor began to inhabit distinct enclaves, as did the middle class and the wealthy. The intimate sense of community that gave the merchant cities their distinctive character became a thing of the past, little more than a nostalgic remembrance.

The Immigrant Tide

The final blow to the social structure and politics of the preindustrial city was delivered by the flood tide of immigration that swept over the cities in the latter half of the nineteenth century. The industrial economy depended on a constantly expanding pool of cheap labor. Millions of foreign immigrants were pushed out of their homelands by war, civil unrest, and hardship, and pulled to American shores by opportunity. They worked on the

railroads, in meatpacking, in steelmaking, in coal and lead mining, and in factories of every kind. Simultaneously, an unprecedented migration from farm to city was set in motion. Between 1830 and 1896, developments in farm machinery cut in half the average time and labor required to produce agricultural crops. In the four decades after the Civil War, the time required to harvest wheat was cut by 95 percent and labor costs for farming fell by one-fifth.[59] The new machinery drove up the capital investment required to start and run a farm and it required fewer hands than before. The millions of farm laborers and young people who could no longer find work streamed into the industrial cities in search of jobs and opportunity.

In the century between 1820 and 1919, 33.5 million foreign immigrants came to America. The Irish and then the Germans set off the first big surge. A famine that swept Ireland in the mid-1840s pushed desperate families to make the wrenching decision to leave their homeland (forever after, an unrequited yearning has been the most common theme running through Irish music). Irish peasants subsisted primarily on potatoes and vegetables grown on tiny rocky plots of ground and in strips of soil along the roads, the only usable land not claimed by their English landlords. When a potato blight swept through Europe in the 1840s, its effects were more devastating in Ireland than elsewhere. Between 1845 and the mid-1850s, up to one-fourth of Ireland's peasants starved to death. Many of the survivors streamed into Liverpool and bought or bartered passage on ships heading for America.

In the same decade, years of civil war pushed a flood of German immigrants to America. The data displayed in Table 2.2 reveal that all through the 1840s and 1850s the Irish and Germans kept coming. In this period these two groups accounted for more than 70 percent of all new arrivals. Immigrants from the American "motherland," England, made up less than 14 percent of the flow, with an assortment of different nationalities making up the rest. America would never be the same.

After the depression of 1873–1876 the numbers of immigrants surged to levels never before experienced in the nation's history. In the decade of the 1870s, 2.7 million foreign immigrants came to America, and this number doubled to 5.2 million in the 1880s. The depression of 1893–1896 slowed the flow for a brief time, but the number of arrivals in the first decade of the twentieth century soared to the highest level in American history, to over 8 million people, with an additional 6.5 million pouring in between 1910 and 1920. These astonishing numbers were driven by people coming from countries not much represented in the American population up to that point. Irish and Germans kept coming, but by the 1880s they accounted for just 40 percent of the immigrant flow, and after the turn of the century their numbers plummeted to 8 percent of the total. Immigration from the United Kingdom continued to fall decade by decade. Italians, Greeks, immigrants from several eastern European nations (Bohemians, Czechs, Slavs, Lithuanians, Poles) and Jews made up the difference. In the 1890s, Jews from Russia and Austria–Hungary, together with Catholics from Italy, accounted for 42 percent of arrivals, and their numbers swelled to more than 60 percent in each of the two decades from 1900 to 1920. Between 1900 and 1920, 14.5 million immigrants entered the country.[60] These numbers would surely have increased still more if Congress had not enacted restrictive immigration laws in 1921 and 1924.

Wherever they were headed, the Statue of Liberty gave them their first view of America, making it the most enduring symbol of America's immigrant history. Sixty percent of all European immigrants between 1820 and 1919 passed through New York harbor. Between the turn of the century and World War I, two-thirds of all the immigrants entering the United States were processed through New York's Ellis Island (which was closed in 1954). Almost three-fourths of the new arrivals, 24 million in all, settled in the cities. By 1870, remarkably, more than half the population of at least 20 American cities were foreign-born or children of immigrant parents. In some cities the proportion reached much higher levels. As shown by the data in Table 2.3, by 1870, first- and second-generation immigrants accounted for at least 72 percent of the populations of eight cities of more than 500,000 people. Eighty percent of New York City's population was made up of first- and second-generation immigrants, and in Chicago an astounding 87 percent of the population was composed of the foreign-born and their American-born children.

And they kept on coming. Despite a huge and continuing migration from rural areas to the cities in the latter years of the nineteenth century, by 1910 the proportion of first- and second-generation immigrants in most cities was about the same as it had been 40 years before. In 1920, more than 80 percent of the Italian, Irish, Russian, and Polish newcomers were urban, as were 75 percent of the immigrants from the United Kingdom.[61] By the census of 1920, just before Congress passed restrictive legislation, 58 percent of the population of American cities of more than 100,000 people was first- or second-generation immigrant.[62]

TABLE 2.2 Decennial Immigration to the United States, 1820–1919

	1820–1829	1830–1839	1840–1849	1850–1859	1860–1869	1870–1879	1880–1889	1890–1899	1900–1909	1910–1919
Total in millions	0.1	0.5	1.4	2.7	2.1	2.7	5.2	3.7	8.2	6.3
Percentage of total from										
Ireland	40.20%	31.70%	46.00%	36.90%	24.40%	15.40%	12.80%	11.00%	4.20%	2.60%
Germany	4.5	23.2	27	34.8	35.2	27.4	27.5	15.7	4	2.7
United Kingdom	19.5	13.8	15.3	13.5	14.9	21.1	15.5	8.9	5.7	5.8
Scandinavia	0.2	0.4	0.9	0.9	5.5	7.6	12.7	10.5	5.9	3.8
Canada	1.8	2.2	2.4	2.2	4.9	11.8	9.4	0.1	1.5	11.2
Russia					0.2	1.3	3.5	12.2	18.3	17.4
Austria-Hungary					0.2	2.2	6	14.5	24.4	18.2
Italy					0.5	1.7	5.1	16.3	23.5	19.4

Sources: From N. Carpenter, "Immigrants and Their Children," *U.S. Bureau of the Census Monograph,* no. 7 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1927), pp. 324–325.

TABLE 2.3 Proportion of Immigrant Population in Cities of 500,000 or more, 1870 and 1910

		Percentage Foreign-Born	Percentage Foreign-Born or Native-Born with at Least One Foreign Parent[a]
New York	1870	44%	80%
	1910	40	79
Chicago	1870	48	87
	1910	36	78
Philadelphia	1870	28	51
	1910	25	57
St. Louis	1870	36	65
	1910	18	54
Boston	1870	35	63
	1910	36	74
Cleveland	1870	42	75
	1910	35	75
Baltimore	1870	21	38
	1910	14	38
Pittsburgh	1870	32	58
	1910	26	62
Mean for all eight cities (each counted equally)	1870	40	72
	1910	32	72

Note: [a] Native-born with foreign parents is unavailable in the 1870 census. The figures for 1870 are estimated by adding 80 percent to the number of foreign-born. In all cases, this should yield a safely conservative estimate.
Sources: U.S. Department of the Interior, Superintendent of Census, *The Ninth Census* (June 1, 1870), vol. 1, *Population and Social Statistics* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1872), p. 386; U.S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *Thirteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910,* vol. 1, *Population 1910* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1913), p. 178.

Although clustered disproportionately in a few northeastern and midwestern industrial centers, immigrants spread out to all the cities that could offer industrial jobs. Large numbers also fanned out to the growing cities of the continental interior, went on to mining camps, or joined railroad construction gangs. About one-third of the arriving Germans settled outside towns and cities altogether. A smaller proportion of Scandinavians moved to cities than any other nationality group because many of them were enticed by agents sent to the Scandinavian countries by railroad corporations, which were trying to find buyers for some millions of acres of land the

companies had secured through government land grants. Enough Scandinavians settled in rural areas in Wisconsin, Minnesota, the Dakotas, and throughout the Midwest that only 55 percent were classified as urban in the census of 1920.

As soon as they arrived, immigrants encountered hostility and sometimes violence. A special enmity was reserved for the Irish because they were raggedly poor and Catholic. Irish workers could rarely read or claim a skilled occupation. Most of them took menial, temporary, low-paying jobs—moving goods on the waterfront, building streets and roads, and working in slaughterhouses and packinghouses. Because of their poverty and their religion and their peasant origins, they became etched in the public mind as dangerous, alcoholic, criminal, and dirty. Anti-Catholic and anti-Irish riots broke out on a regular basis. Irish churches, taverns, and neighborhoods were attacked by mobs whipped up by a rhetoric that spoke of "an invasion of venomous reptiles … long-haired, wild-eyed, bad-smelling, atheistic, reckless foreign wretches."[63] Protestant Yankees were in a position to hire, promote, and fire. Even as late as the 1920s, want ads in Boston frequently added "Protestant" as a qualification for employment.[64] The Irish clustered on the lowest rungs of the social and economic ladder well into the twentieth century.

The Germans encountered far less antipathy because many were wealthy or from middle-class backgrounds. Unlike the Irish, they were escaping war and political turmoil, not poverty and starvation. They brought with them music and literary societies and a commitment to formal education. Although the Germans nominally faced a greater language barrier than did the Irish, the widely used Gaelic and the Irish brogue sounded just as foreign to American ears as did the German language.

The opportunities available to the different ethnic groups varied in relationship to the level of animosity directed at them. In late nineteenth-century Boston, "a pecking order favored some groups over others."[65] The Irish and Italians competed for the lowest wages and lowest-skill jobs. Only the few blacks who lived in cities occupied a lower social position. German and recent British immigrants were generally able to enter middle-class occupations right away, and those who possessed an exceptional education or a special skill might achieve success very quickly. Russian and eastern European Jews, who came in the 1890s and later, placed emphasis on formal education and business. Although anti-Semitism kept them out of corporations and larger business enterprises, they succeeded in carving out a distinct economic niche as job brokers, middlemen, and shopkeepers.

Most of the immigrants crowded into densely packed neighborhoods near the waterfront and factories. In the 1840s and 1850s, real estate speculators and landlords shoehorned them into deteriorated houses, attics and basements, and unused warehouses and factories. Housing was so scarce and rents so high that a lot of property-owning families made money by renting extra space in their own living quarters.[66] Narrow three- and four-story buildings divided into tiny spaces sprang up in alleyways and on back lots. On vacant lots and behind and between buildings, immigrants crowded into sheds and shanties.

The first tenement districts began to spread in New York City as early as the 1850s, and made their appearance in other cities soon after. As middle-class families left the city center, it became cost-efficient to raze older structures and replace them with buildings designed to crowd as many people as possible into the available space. The tenement—the name given to any low-cost multiple-family rental building—became a universal symbol of the American urban slum, and by the twentieth century, multistory buildings of any kind came to represent city living. At the same time, the freestanding house evolved into a cultural expression of suburban living. The most notorious tenement structure was the dumbbell—so named because two 28-inch-wide air shafts provided the only light and air to the interior rooms. Based on an award-winning 1879 design, the dumbbell maximized economic return at the expense of ventilation and sanitation. Tenants on the upper floors would pitch their garbage down the shafts, where it was left to rot. On each floor, tenants shared one or two public toilets and a sink, and these were always located next to ventilation shafts, with their foul and fetid air. By 1893, 70 percent of the population of New York City lived in tenements, most of them dumbbells.[67]

Despite the problems caused by overcrowding, the concentration of the immigrant groups into densely packed enclaves was crucially important in easing their assimilation into urban life. Within these densely packed wards, a variety of religious and social institutions sprang up to nurture ethnic traditions and a sense of solidarity and shared identity. The immigrant neighborhoods also facilitated the rise of a style of politics based on ethnic solidarity that began to bring immigrants in the American political system. By the 1880s, urban party machines began to emerge based on the relationship forged between ethnic voters and a new breed of politicians skilled at mobilizing their followers. In Chapter 3 we describe this historic development.

The Capacity to Govern

As the industrial cities grew, the capacity of local governments to respond to the needs of their residents came into question. For many urban dwellers, in the latter half of the nineteenth century the conditions of life ranged from squalid to barely tolerable. Epidemics periodically swept through, sometimes killing several hundred people in a summer. Streets turned to seas of mud in winter and to dust bowls in summer, and in every season they were littered with refuse and piles of steaming horse manure. A Swedish novelist commented that Chicago in 1850 (when it still had only 30,000 people) was "one of the most miserable and ugly cities," where people had come "to trade, to make money, and not to live."[68]

The residents of the cities complained about the conditions of daily life, but no one was sure what municipal governments should do about the situation. In the American political tradition, there was an abiding suspicion of government; most people seemed more concerned about its potential dangers than about the ways in which it might be put to positive use. This suspicion was reinforced by a deeply rooted culture of privatism—the idea that progress comes through individual rather than through collective endeavors. Although urban leaders were able to persuade their fellow citizens that local government should support schemes promoting the local economy, it was much more difficult to talk them into taxing themselves to support the services that might improve the local quality of life.

Even in the large cities full-time, paid, uniformed police forces were rare until the mid-nineteenth century. The law was generally enforced by parttime or volunteer night watches and constables. Volunteer fire gangs answered the fire alarm. Individual property owners swept the streets and collected refuse. Even as population growth made city life increasingly unpleasant, city residents were reluctant to acknowledge that municipal government might do better than the community's own efforts. Against this background, it is a puzzling fact that municipal governments vastly increased their responsibilities in the latter half of the nineteenth century. In New York City, for instance, per capita city expenditures increased from $6.53 in 1850 to $27.3 in 1900.[69] During this half century, cities spent more money and employed more people than either the state governments or the national government. When governmental spending was cataloged for the first time in the federal census of governments in 1902, local governments accounted for half of all governmental expenditures in the United States.[70]

Despite a national culture that preferred minimal government, over the course of a century municipal responsibilities vastly increased. Three major reasons can be offered to explain this unexpected outcome. First, new services were provided in cases when urban residents of all classes felt threatened by imminent catastrophe or crisis. Second, local boosters assumed the lead in organizing public services when the absence or inadequacy of these services threatened the economic vitality of the city. And third, by the late nineteenth century, a growing middle class became intolerant of urban conditions that had previously been considered unpleasant, but normal or inevitable.

In the colonial period and for many years after, urban services were minimal. Essential as they were to the basic health of urban citizens, for instance, water systems were chronically inadequate. In the early nineteenth century, most city residents got their water from wells, and these were often contaminated by waste. As a result, outbreaks of contagious diseases occurred with disturbing regularity. In the summer of 1793, 10 percent of Philadelphia's population died from yellow fever.[71] The city's economy came to a standstill, and a third of the population and virtually all wealthy families fled for the summer months. Outbreaks of yellow fever or cholera occurred in Philadelphia, Baltimore, and New Haven (Connecticut) in 1793; in New York City, Baltimore, and Norfolk (Virginia) in 1795; and in Newburyport (Massachusetts), Boston, and Charleston (South Carolina) the next year.[72] Nearly a dozen cities were hit in 1797; three-fourths of Philadelphia's population fled and 4,000 people died (which amounted to about 7 percent of the population).[73]

Such catastrophes prompted cities to invest in waterworks, drain swamps, and to regulate the keeping of animals and the dumping of refuse. Philadelphia was goaded by its epidemics to construct the first municipal waterworks in the nation's history. Begun in 1799 and operational in some parts of the city by 1801, it piped water from the upper Schuylkill River. Over time, Philadelphia's system was constantly improved by the merchant elites who ran the Watering Committee. By the 1840s, however, these elites began to withdraw from political activities, partly because competition for political office from a new generation of public leaders had become more intense. Without their guiding hand on the committee, the water supply system became less and less adequate.[74] Only with great reluctance did the city government assume the responsibilities of an increasingly inept Watering Committee.

Despite the manifest need, municipal services tended to lag behind need because they were generally provided only in response to a crisis: "municipal authorities, loath to increase taxes, usually shouldered new responsibilities only at the prod of grim necessity."[75] Devastating outbreaks of yellow fever, typhoid, and cholera periodically made their rounds, especially in the cities such as New Orleans and Memphis that lagged furthest behind in providing uncontaminated water supplies. Several urban water systems were built in the 1850s, and by the Civil War 70 towns were served by waterworks. For the most part these were privately owned and operated by the 80 private companies that had sprung up for this purpose.[76] The systems were partial and primitive. Except in the wealthy neighborhoods where water was piped into homes, most people had to fetch the water from street hydrants and hand pumps. As late as 1860, only about one-tenth of Boston's residents had access to a bathtub, and only 5 percent of the homes had indoor water closets.[77]

Urban water supplies were generally polluted by human and animal waste. In most cities, sewage was collected in huge community cesspools, which had to be dug out frequently. Even when sewer pipes carried waste away from the city, the main result was merely to send the polluted water downstream. Serious typhoid epidemics broke out in the cities along the Merrimac River in Massachusetts in the 1880s because residents were drinking water that carried the sewage of cities located upstream. Because of Boston's habit of dumping wastes directly into its harbor, by 1877 Boston Harbor had become "one vast cesspool."[78] Until the 1920s, crowded residential districts were dotted with outdoor privies, and water, bearing a burden of horse manure and other refuse, flowed in open gutters along the streets. The sources of contamination were so numerous that only those cities that piped their water from watersheds far away from urban settlement were able to avoid a contaminated water supply.

Ultimately, the water supply problem could be solved only through the development of adequate technology. Even Philadelphia's relatively sophisticated system delivered its water with only the heaviest silt filtered out.[79] Pumps frequently failed; in the winter, pipes froze. People found dirt, insects, and even small fish gushing from the taps. During the first decade of the twentieth century, when modern filtration techniques were developed, death rates in New York, Boston, Philadelphia, and New Orleans fell by one-fifth.[80]

Epidemics prompted cities to build sewers to carry the waste away from heavily populated neighborhoods. In 1823, Boston began installing the nation's first sanitary sewers. Other large cities followed suit, but slowly. By 1857, New York City, which by then had a population of nearly a million people, had a system of sewers under only one-fourth of its streets, and most of these were storm water rather than sanitary sewers.[81] Taxpayers resisted the high cost of laying underground pipes and installing costly pumps. Although most of the big cities had constructed sewers by the 1870s, these were usually paid for by the property owners who subscribed, leaving vast areas—always the neighborhoods inhabited by the poor—without service.

A perceived crisis of a different sort forced cities to begin financing and organizing professional police forces. As cities grew in size and complexity, rising levels of violence, crime, and disorder threatened to disrupt the lives of every urban resident. The unceasing influx of immigrants provoked ethnic conflict, pushed up crime rates, and broke apart the bonds of community. In the 1830s and 1840s, rioting directed against Irish immigrants and free blacks broke out regularly in Philadelphia. In frontier cities, the connection between rapid population growth and social instability was painfully obvious. A constant stream of river men, wagon drivers, and traders moved into and out of bustling cities like San Francisco, St. Louis, and New Orleans. Saloons proliferated; gambling and prostitution flourished. During the gold rush years of the 1850s, violent crime became such a fact of everyday life in San Francisco that merchants funded vigilante committees to keep order. Before long, however, the vigilantes organized their own crime rings and became almost as dangerous as the criminals they were supposed to catch.[82]

In 1845, Boston became the first city in the United States to provide uniforms for its officers. The same year, when its population numbered more than 400,000, New York finally replaced its rag-tag army of part-time police with a full-time force. Even then, though, the police continued to go about their jobs in street clothes, completely untrained and without supervision.[83] Eight years later, the city's police finally received uniforms and some modest training. Until the late 1830s, Philadelphia relied on a mix of part-time posses, militia, and night watches, and none of them wore uniforms.[84]

New York's police forces were in constant turmoil for many years. There was resistance to the idea of creating a professional police force because the two political parties that contended for power in the city regarded the police as an important source of patronage jobs. Following the 1857 mayoral election, the new mayor fired everyone on the force and installed officers who were loyal to him. The former officers refused to quit their jobs, and so for several months the city was patrolled by two competing police forces. In June of that year, a full-scale riot broke

out between the two groups.[85] Similar confusion repeated itself in 1868, when the newly elected Democratic governor removed all of the city's police commissioners because they were Republicans. The commissioners refused to vacate their offices. Finally, the state legislature resolved the dispute by assuming the authority to appoint them.

Episodes like this illustrate why it took so long for the cities to build modern, fully professionalized police forces. Many people feared that, as a quasi-military organization, the police might be used by one political faction against another. This fear was well founded. Police departments were deeply affected by ethnic and racial prejudices, and also by political loyalties. Such problems persist right up to the present day. A presidential commission investigating the urban riots of the 1960s found that police conduct was the most common provocation causing the rioting.[86] In the nineteenth century and still today, police officers are granted a great deal of discretion, and often enough they do not apply the law dispassionately.

If it seems that an atmosphere of crisis was necessary to goad governing elites into organizing and financing municipal services, this fact still begs an important question: what provoked a sense that there was a crisis? Objective conditions, however dire, may be adjusted to, considered normal, or appear to be beyond anyone's control. The answer to the question is that political leaders held ambitious aspirations for their cities and for themselves. Chronic problems such as crime, poor sanitation, and impassable streets not only diminished the quality of life for urban residents but these problems also threatened local economic vitality. Faced with this reality, civic elites and business leaders preferred to support public services rather than allow their city to slip into decline.

Once provided, urban services became institutionalized; they quickly seemed normal and routine; there could be no going back to a time when they were not available. This was especially true for services such as water systems and fire departments that required the construction of permanent infrastructure and investment in expensive equipment. In this way, the responsibilities of city governments grew inexorably, step by step. In the early nineteenth century, when confronted with a problem, the cities' aristocratic and merchant class would typically organize a committee to decide what to do. Over time, such informal arrangements gave way to services provided by full-time paid employees. Again, the evolution of Philadelphia's waterworks is instructive. At first, the Watering Committee raised money through private donations and individual subscriptions to the water service. Prominent merchants led the committee until 1837.[87] But over the next few decades, the system expanded until it provided water to all citizens, and it became necessary to impose taxes to support it.

Milwaukee's volunteer fire department gave way to paid professionals in the 1850s when new steam pumps proved too complicated for volunteers to maintain and operate.[88] In the same decade, public works employees began to maintain the streets when it became too difficult to find volunteers for the task. Trained employees were hired to run the sewer system when the city council provided funds to expand it to cover most of the city. When the Milwaukee city council required vaccinations for smallpox, local health services became too complex for volunteers. In this way, the day-to-day administration of municipal services was gradually put in the hands of paid employees. "Politics became a full-time business and professionals moved in to make careers of public office."[89]

In the last third of the nineteenth century, a growing middle class began to demand improved water and sewer systems,[90] and by the 1890s popular pressure was mobilized to demand better services of all kinds. From the 1850s to the 1870s, assistance to railroads had been the largest single cause of municipal debt. In striking contrast, during the last 30 years of the century, the cities went into debt mainly to finance the expansion of new services and to build infrastructure.[91] Because of rising standards of public health, new technologies, even when very expensive, were quickly adopted. The construction of integrated sewerage systems provides an instructive example. Systems of separate sanitary and storm sewers were not completed in most cities until very late in the nineteenth century. Laying sewer pipe was a huge public works project for any city. Nevertheless, the number of miles of sewer pipe increased fourfold from 1890 to 1909.[92]

By the turn of the century, American cities, in general, provided more and better services than did their European counterparts, with more miles of sewer and water mains, more miles of paved streets, more street lamps, better mass transportation, and more fire departments with better equipment.[93] Urban residents in the United States used more than twice as much water per capita as did their counterparts in England and many times more than city dwellers in Germany,[94] probably because flush toilets and bathtubs were far more widespread in American cities.[95] The cities also vastly expanded public health efforts. Using the new science of bacteriology, health inspectors examined children in schools, checked buildings for ventilation and faulty plumbing, and

inspected food and milk.[96] Such public health measures, when combined with the completion of integrated sewer systems and installation of new water filtration technology, dramatically reduced typhoid mortality rates.[97] Overall death rates fell sharply in the big cities, by 20 percent or more in New York, Chicago, Cleveland, Buffalo, and other cities in the 1890s,[98] and just as sharply again after the turn of the twentieth century.[99]

The late nineteenth century was the golden age of American city building. The massive investment in physical infrastructure placed city governments at the cutting edge of technology, resulting in such engineering marvels as the Brooklyn Bridge and New York's Croton aqueduct system, with its thousands of miles of pipes and reservoirs. The Parks Movement and the City Beautiful Movement, both supported by urban elites and the middle class, swept the nation, resulting in urban amenities such as parks, ponds, formal gardens, bandstands, ball fields, broad tree-lined avenues, and ornate public buildings. Urban residents came to expect a level of municipal services that would have been inconceivable in an earlier time. The squalor of the nineteenth-century industrial city began to yield to the relative safety, cleanliness, and health of the twentieth-century metropolis.

Municipal services have continued to evolve over the past century. Cities today provide a remarkable array of services. They build and maintain a public infrastructure—roads, bridges, sewer lines, sewage treatment plants, water mains, parks, zoos, hospitals, and sometimes even universities. They provide police and fire protection. They collect garbage (or pay someone who does). They run public health services that inspect restaurants, vaccinate children, and test for the HIV (AIDS) virus. Through city zoning ordinances, they influence the location of homes, factories, office buildings, restaurants, and parking lots. Through local building codes, they regulate such matters as plumbing, wiring, building materials, the height of structures, and architectural styles. Cities poison rats and sometimes try to scare away pigeons. These public undertakings, and many more, are essential to the safety and well-being of people living in urban environments. Without them, urban life would quickly become not only dangerous but intolerable.

The Limited Powers of Cities

The ability of American cities to adapt to changing circumstances is a remarkable story, all the more so because they were mostly left on their own to devise solutions to the problems that faced them. The national government was distant and indifferent: only in the twentieth century would the federal government establish any relationship to the cities. State legislatures were alternately hostile and indifferent. For the most part, the legislatures—made up as they were by part-time politicians who met for a few weeks or months every other year—paid little attention. More than anything else, rural legislators wanted to keep urban politicians and the constituencies that supported them from intruding into their domain. The independence of cities led Alexis de Tocqueville, in his classic work *Democracy in America* (1835), to emphasize that local governments in the United States were sovereign. He compared them to independent nations: "Municipal independence is … a natural consequence of the principle of the sovereignty of the people in the United States: all the American republics recognize it more or less."[100] But his assessment was not quite accurate. The autonomy of cities owed more to an attitude of indifference to how they governed themselves than to their legal status. Although state legislatures clearly possessed the legal authority to control the cities within their boundaries in almost every detail, they exercised that right only sometimes, although when they did they could be unpredictable and capricious. Cities might seem to be independent, but this was true only because state legislatures generally lacked the time and interest to notice what they were up to.

Advocates for the right of cities to govern themselves without outside interference pleaded their cause in articles, books, and court rulings.[101] Mostly it was to no avail; the courts consistently upheld the powers of the states to define the powers and obligations of local governments. In 1819, in the *Dartmouth College* case, the U.S. Supreme Court held that cities were created by the states and their charters could therefore be amended or rescinded at will. (By contrast, private corporations were protected from interference by the constitutional provision against "impairing the obligation of contract."[102]) A second definitive case was handed down in 1868, when the chief justice of the Iowa Supreme Court, John F. Dillon, declared that states could rightfully exert total control over their cities, with no restrictions whatsoever:

> Municipal corporations owe their origin to, and derive their powers and rights wholly from, the legislature. It breathes into them the breath of life without which they cannot exist. As it creates so it may destroy. … Unless there is some constitutional limitation on the right, the legislature might, by a single act, if we can suppose it capable of so great a folly and so great a wrong, sweep from existence all of the municipal corporations of the state, and the corporations could not prevent it. … They are, so to phrase it, the mere tenants at will of the legislature.[103]

Judge Dillon was motivated by the fact that cities had been active in providing subsidies to railroads, and he reasoned that if they could help private corporations so directly, they could regulate them as well. Dillon's missionary zeal was also fired by a conviction that dangerous riffraff governed the cities: "men the best fitted by their intelligence, business experience, capacity and moral character, for local governors and counselors are not always, it is feared—it might be added, are not generally—chosen."[104] His solution was that state governments and courts, like stern parents, should closely supervise their cities and strictly limit their privileges. In 1872, Dillon published his *Treatise on the Law of Municipal Corporations.* Originally 800 pages long, by the time the fifth edition was published in 1911, it had grown to five thick volumes.[105] By then, Dillon's work had become the bible on municipal law. By 1924, William Munro, the author of a leading textbook, *The Government of American Cities,* wrote that Dillon's rule was "so well recognized that it is not nowadays open to question."[106]

Motivated by a similar distrust of cities—or, rather, of immigrant voters—state legislators took steps to ensure that no matter how fast and big cities might grow, their representatives to the statehouse would never be able to gain a majority of seats in state legislatures. Most rural legislators would probably have agreed with the delegate to the New York State constitutional convention of 1894 who said, "the average citizen in the rural district is superior in intelligence, superior in morality, superior in self-government to the average citizen of the great cities."[107] This attitude reflected a long-standing animosity to cities and everything urban. Decades earlier, Maine's constitutional convention of 1819 had established a ceiling on the number of representatives who could serve towns in the state legislature. In 1845, the Louisiana legislature limited New Orleans to 12.5 percent of the state's senators and 10 percent of the state's assemblymen. (The population of New Orleans accounted for 20 percent of the state's total.[108]) By the end of the century, every state had ensured that no matter how large its cities became, representatives from rural legislative districts would continue to hold a commanding voting majority in state legislatures.

By then, more people lived in the cities of some states than outside them. If their influence in state legislatures had grown in step with their populations, cities would have been able to secure state financial support for the expansion of city services. In fact, however, cities received practically no help at all. If urban voters had managed to exert more influence in state politics and in state governments, they also could have asserted a political voice in national affairs. Rural elites firmly controlled the state party caucuses that nominated governors, members of Congress, senators, and presidents, and therefore ethnic minorities and other urban voters had no effective means of influencing governmental policies at the state or national levels. The underrepresentation of the cities resulted in indifference to their problems in state legislatures, governors' offices, Congress, and the White House. Traffic congestion, slum housing, orphaned children, contagious diseases, poverty—none of these problems interested rural and small-town legislators or the members of Congress and presidents beholden to state party leaders who answered to rural constituents.

Underrepresentation of cities throughout the federal system exerted profound and long-lasting consequences, for it allowed governmental leaders at all levels to wash their hands of the devastating effects of industrialization and urbanization. In the late nineteenth century, powerful populist movements pushed for the recognition of the right of labor unions to organize. In the first 20 years of the twentieth century, reformers lobbied state legislatures to adopt universal health insurance, workers' compensation, and relief programs for widows, children, and the elderly. A groundswell of opposition to child labor swept the country; nevertheless, the federal government did not adopt child labor legislation until 1916; even then it was struck down by the Supreme Court two years later.[109] These and other reforms that would have benefited cities and their residents were delayed until the New Deal of the 1930s. Many other policies, such as federal aid to education, health care for the aged and poor (Medicare and Medicaid), federal aid to the cities, and a variety of social programs, would surely have been adopted long before the 1960s if the cities had been represented in state and national politics in proportion to their share of the national population.

The federal courts finally moved against legislative malapportionment in the 1960s, more than 40 years after the 1920 census showed that a majority of Americans lived in urban places. In *Baker v. Carr* (1962), a group of Knoxville residents challenged the fact that the Tennessee legislature had not been reapportioned since 1901.[110] Their lawyers argued that citizens living in urban areas were being deprived of "equal protection of the law," as guaranteed by the Fourteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. The important court decision that decided this case, as well as others, came on June 15, 1964, when the U.S. Supreme Court, in *Reynolds v. Sims,* ruled that state legislative apportionments must follow a "one man, one vote" principle.[111] Within a few years, for the first

time in the nation's history, state legislative and congressional districts were apportioned to give city residents equal representation.

By the time the courts imposed the one-man, one-vote remedy, it was too late to be of much consequence. By the 1960s the older industrial cities were rapidly losing population, and the suburbs and Sunbelt were booming.

This demographic transformation brought about a historical shift in the balance of national power. If cities had gained equal representation in state legislatures and in Congress decades earlier, urban voters might have been able to secure from the federal government, as well as from many states, funding for such local priorities as mass transit, public housing, urban revitalization, and public health programs. But the American political system had been biased against the urban electorate for a reason: the people who lived in the cities of America had long been regarded as "strangers in the land."[112] In light of such deeply rooted attitudes, the fact that American cities responded to their problems as well as they did must be regarded as a remarkable success.

Endnotes

1 Robert A. Beauregard, *Voices of Decline: The Postwar Fate of U.S. Cities* (New York: Blackwell, 1993).
2 London proper had 957,000, but the Greater London area had 1,117,000 people.
3 Brian R. Mitchell, *European Historical Statistics, 1750–1970* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1975), p. 76.
4 Defined as settlements with a population of at least 5,000.
5 Eric Lampard, "Historical Aspects of Urbanization," in *The Study of Urbanization,* ed. Philip M. Hauser and Leo F. Schnore (New York: Wiley, 1965), p. 523.
6 "The Inevitability of City Growth," reprinted from *Atlantic Monthly,* April 1985, in *City Life, 1865–1900: Views of Urban America,* ed. Ann Cook, Marilyn Gittell, and Herb Mack (New York: Praeger, 1973), p. 17.
7 Eric H. Monkkonen, *America Becomes Urban: The Development of U.S. Cities and Towns, 1780–1980* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988), p. 78.
8 D. Philip Locklin, *Economics of Transportation,* 7th ed. (Homewood, IL: Irwin, 1972).
9 Allan R. Pred, *The Spatial Dynamics of Urban–Industrial Growth, 1800–1914* (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1966), p. 103.
10 David M. Gordon, "Class Struggle and the Stages of American Urban Development," in *The Rise of the Sunbelt Cities,* ed. David C. Perry and Alfred J. Watkins (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1977), p. 64.
11 George Rogers Taylor, *The Transportation Revolution, 1815–1860* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1951), p. 52.
12 Carter Goodrich, *Government Promotion of American Canals and Railroads, 1800– 1890* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1960), pp. 266–267.
13 Richard C. Wade, *The Urban Frontier: Pioneer Life in Early Pittsburgh, Cincinnati, Lexington, Louisville, and St. Louis* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1959), p. 70.
14 U.S. Department of Commerce, *Historical Statistics of the United States, Colonial Times to 1970,* pt. 2, (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1975), pp. 728, 731.
15 Alfred D. Chandler, *The Railroads: The Nation's First Big Business* (New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1965).
16 Paul Kantor, *The Dependent City Revisited: The Political Economy of Urban Development and Social Policy* (Boulder, CO: Westview, 1995), p. 24.
17 Carter Goodrich, "The Revulsion Against Internal Improvements," *Journal of Economic History* 10, no. 2 (November 1950): 145–169.
18 David Chalmers, *Neither Socialism nor Monopoly* (Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1976), p. 4.
19 Blake McKelvey, *American Urbanization: A Comparative History* (Glenview, IL: Scott Foresman, 1973), pp. 25–26.
20 Ibid.
21 Paul Kantor with Stephen David, *The Dependent City: The Changing Political Economy of Urban America* (Glenview, IL: Scott Foresman, 1987), pp. 499–500.
22 Goodrich, *Government Promotion,* p. 241. Goodrich estimates that until 1860, local governments provided 29 percent of total public subsidies (p. 268). The proportion of local contributions increased significantly after the Civil War. In his study of New York from 1826 to 1875, Harry Pierce concludes that three-quarters of the subsidy came from local governments and one-quarter from the state. See Harry H. Pierce, *The Railroads of New York: A Study of Government Aid, 1826–1875* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1953).
23 Ibid.
24 In 1849, for example, the voters of Cleveland approved a $100,000 subscription to stock in the Cleveland and Pittsburgh Railroad by a vote of 1,157 to 27. Despite the enthusiasm of the voters, the stock never paid any dividends and eventually sold at far below par. Charles C. Williamson, *The Finances of Cleveland* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1907), pp. 218–220.
25 Goodrich, *Government Promotion,* p. 42.
26 Ibid., p. 272. One study gave the following figures for New York: "Only 52 of the 297 municipalities that bought stock in a railroad disposed of their securities at par or better, 162 held stock with no market value" (Pierce, *The Railroads of New York*), p. 273.
27 A. M. Hillhouse, *Municipal Bonds: A Century of Experience* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1936), p. 39.
28 Goodrich, *Government Promotion,* pp. 268–271. Repudiation goes beyond default, which is simply a failure to pay the debt on time. Repudiation declares an unwillingness to ever repay the debt.
29 Alberta M. Sbragia, *Debt Wish: Entrepreneurial Cities, U.S. Federalism and Economic Development* (Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press, 1996), p. 91.
30 Goodrich, "Revulsion Against Internal Improvements"; see also Sbragia, *Debt Wish,* Chapter 5.
31 Lawrence Goodwyn, *The Populist Movement* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1978).
32 Edwin J. Perkins, *The Economy of Colonial America* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1980), p. 157.
33 Philip Foner, *History of the Labor Movement in the United States* (New York: International, 1975), pp. 13–18.

34 Howard P. Chudacoff, *The Evolution of American Urban Society* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1975), p. 26.
35 Sam Bass Warner Jr., *The Private City: Philadelphia in Three Periods of Its Growth* (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1968), p. 21.
36 Kantor, *The Dependent City,* p. 22.
37 Ibid., p. 33.
38 Pred, *The Spatial Dynamics,* p. 16.
39 Ibid., p. 170.
40 Ibid., pp. 68–69.
41 The skyscraper boom on Fifth Avenue between 1900 and 1915 was largely fueled by the desire of rich individuals to outdo one another in pretentious architecture. See Seymour I. Toll, *Zoned America* (New York: Grossman, 1969), Chapter 2.
42 Chartered by the states, limited-risk corporations allowed the selling of shares to investors whose liability in case of corporate failure was limited to their direct investment. In partnerships, the partners were liable for all debts incurred by the company, and these could easily exceed the partners' own assets. The corporate form of business organization thus made it easier to raise capital, for investors risked less than in other forms of business investment.
43 U.S. Department of the Interior, Census Office, *Census Reports of* 1900,vol. 7, *Manufacturers,* pt. 1: "United States by Industries" (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1902), pp. 503–509.
44 William Miller, "American Historians and the Business Elite," *Journal of Economic History* 9 (1949): 184–208.
45 Kenneth Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier: The Suburbanization of the United States* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1985), p. 35.
46 George Rogers Taylor, "Building an Intra-Urban Transportation System," in *The Urbanization of America: An Historical Anthology,* ed. Allen M. Wakstein (Boston, MA: Houghton Mifflin, 1970), p. 137.
47 Glen E. Holt, "The Changing Perception of Urban Pathology: An Essay on the Development of Mass Transit in the United States," in *Cities in American History,* ed. Kenneth T. Jackson and Stanley K. Schultz (New York: Knopf, 1972), p. 327.
48 Taylor, "Building an Intra-Urban Transportation System," p. 139.
49 C. G. Kennedy, "Commuter Services in the Boston Area, 1835–1860," *Business History Review* 26 (1962): 277–287.
50 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* p. 41.
51 David Ward, *Cities and Immigrants: A Geography of Change in Nineteenth-Century America* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1971), p. 4.
52 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* p. 108.
53 Ibid.
54 Gary A. Tobin, "Suburbanization and the Development of Motor Transportation: Transportation and Technology and the Suburbanization Process," in *The Changing Face of the Suburbs,* ed. Barry Schwartz (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1975), p. 99.
55 "The Smell of Cincinnati," *Enquirer* (Richmond, VA), November 15, 1874, in *City Life,* ed. Cook, Gittell, and Mack, p. 143.
56 Ward, *Cities and Immigrants,* Chapter 3.
57 Blake McKelvey, *The Urbanization of America, 1860–1915* (New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1963), p. 54.
58 For an excellent history of America's downtowns, see Robert M. Fogelson, *Downtown: Its Rise and Fall, 1880–1950* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001).
59 Samuel P. Hays, *The Response to Industrialism, 1885–1914* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1957), p. 14.
60 Thomas Monroe Pitkin, *Keepers of the Gate: A History of Ellis Island* (New York: New York University Press, 1975), p. ix.
61 Ward, *Cities and Immigrants,* p. 56.
62 Ibid., p. 52.
63 John Higham, *Strangers in the Land: Patterns of American Nativism, 1860–1925* (New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1955), pp. 54–55.
64 Stephen Thernstrom, *The Other Bostonians: Poverty and Progress in the American Metropolis, 1880–1970* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1973), p. 160.
65 Ibid.
66 Charles N. Glaab and A. Theodore Brown, *A History of Urban America* (New York: Macmillan, 1967), p. 160.
67 Gwendolyn Wright, *Building the American Dream: A Social History of Housing in America* (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1983), p. 123. Dumbbell waiters are rope-pulley devices used to move small items up and down a shaft in multistory buildings.
68 Glaab and Brown, *A History of Urban America,* p. 86.
69 Ibid., p. 180.
70 Terrence J. MacDonald and Sally K. Ward, eds., *The Politics of Urban Fiscal Policy* (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1984), p. 14.
71 Nelson M. Blake, *Water for the Cities: A History of the Urban Water Supply Problem in the United States* (Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press, 1956), p. 6.
72 Ibid., pp. 102–103.
73 Ibid., p. 6.
74 Warner, *The Private City,* pp. 107–109.
75 Arthur N. Schlesinger, "A Panoramic View: The City in American Life," in *The City in American Life,* ed. Paul Kramer and Fredrick L. Holborn (New York: Capricorn Books, 1970), p. 23.
76 McKelvey, *The Urbanization of America,* p. 13.
77 Edgar W. Martin, *The Standard of Living in 1860* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1942), pp. 44–47, 89–112.
78 McKelvey, *The Urbanization of America,* p. 90.
79 Ibid., p. 13.
80 Ibid., p. 90.
81 McKelvey, *American Urbanization,* p. 44.
82 Fred M. Wirt, *Power in the City* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1974), p. 110.
83 James F. Richardson, "To Control the City: The New York Police in Historical Perspective," in *Cities in American History,* ed. Jackson and Schultz, pp. 272–289.
84 Warner, *The Private City,* Chapter 7.
85 Richardson, "To Control the City," p. 278.
86 *Report of the National Advisory Commission on Civil Disorders* (New York: Bantam Books, 1968).

87 Warner, *The Private City.*
88 Bayrd Still, *Milwaukee: The History of a City* (Madison: State Historical Society of Wisconsin, 1984), Chapter 10.
89 Warner, *The Private City,* p. 86.
90 Sbragia, *Debt Wish,* p. 76.
91 Ibid.
92 Ibid.
93 Jon Teaford, *The Unheralded Triumph: City Government in America, 1870–1900* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1984), Chapter 8.
94 Ibid., p. 222.
95 Ibid., p. 221.
96 Ibid., p. 247.
97 Stanley K. Schultz, *Constructing Urban Culture: American Cities and City Planning, 1800–1920* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1989), p. 174.
98 Ibid., p. 246.
99 McKelvey, *The Urbanization of America,* p. 90.
100 Alexis de Tocqueville, *Democracy in America,* vol. 1 (New York: Shocken Books, 1961), p. 60.
101 For citations, see Gerald Frug, "The City as a Legal Concept," *Harvard Law Review* 93, no. 6 (April 1980): 1113–1117.
102 See *Dartmouth College v. Woodward,* 4 Wheat. 518 (1819).
103 *City of Clinton v. Cedar Rapids and Missouri River Railroad Co.,* 24 Iowa 455–475 (1868).
104 Schultz, *Constructing Urban Culture,* p. 73.
105 Ibid., p. 69.
106 William Munro, *The Government of the American Cities,* 3rd ed. (New York: Macmillan, 1924), p. 53.
107 Mark I. Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities: The Federal Government and Urban America, 1933–1965* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1975), p. 11.
108 Ibid.
109 *Hammer v. Dagenhart et al.,* 247 U.S. 251 (1918).
110 *Baker v. Carr,* 369 U.S. 189 (1962).
111 *Reynolds v. Sims,* 377 U.S. 533 (1964). "One man, one vote" was the term used in the Court's decision.
112 Higham, *Strangers in the Land.*

CHAPTER 3

Party Machines and the Immigrants

Machines and Machine-Style Politics

The image of the rotund, cigar-smoking machine politician handing out buckets of coal to poor widows and cutting deals in smoke-filled rooms in the back of taverns holds a sacred place in the lore of American politics. What continues to make it fascinating is its colorful, larger-than-life aspect: the politician who is passionate, free-wheeling, and generous to his loyal constituents, but also self-serving, venal, and corrupt. The television series *The Sopranos* or Francis Ford Coppola's film *The Godfather* may come to mind because they serve as reminders that machine politicians and the Mafia shared a general style. The occasions when machine politicians crossed the line into thuggish violence are generally exceptional, but not enough for comfort. Recall, for example, *The Untouchables* television series and movie, based on the heyday of the Chicago machine of the 1920s and 1930s, when politicians, judges, and police officers were bought off by Al Capone and speakeasy owners, and FBI agent Elliott Ness arrived on the scene to take on not only Capone, but an entire system of criminal and political corruption. There have been instances when information fed by machine members to criminal gangs has been used to kill informants, and even cases when investigative reporters have been killed.[1] But lurid episodes such as this give an inaccurate impression of how most machines operated. The day-to-day business of maintaining a machine was ordinary and prosaic.

The impressions from the era of machine politics are still very much alive, but they are misleading in key respects. It is true that the machines thrived on corruption, some spectacularly so. But it is also true that machine politicians provided a path by which ethnic voters could gain a measure of access to a political system that had excluded them. Looked at in this way, the machines were, in effect, mechanisms that facilitated the assimilation of immigrants into American culture. Over time, the machines declined, and they pretty much disappeared by the second half of the twentieth century. Even so, they helped shape the contemporary American city, and their legacy still lives on.

Some degree of machine-style politics—a style that relies on material incentives to nurture loyalty—is present in every political system. Silver-haired, country-club "suits" who help their favored developers obtain zoning variances for a suburban mall are acting as much like machine politicians as a ward boss who provides assistance to a constituent dealing with a rat inspector who wants to close down a restaurant or apartment building. In politics, material incentives come in many forms: a patronage job, a government contract, a zoning variance, a fixed parking ticket, an expedited business license, and more. In all political systems, claims to lofty ideals are often little more than fig leaves covering naked self-interest. For this reason, something more than a style of politics based around material rewards is necessary if we are to accurately employ the term "machine."[2] Specifically, the urban machines were organizations held together by a combination of ethnic identity and partisan loyalty. They were also, to varying degrees, hierarchical and disciplined, often controlled by a single leader, a "boss," or a tightly organized clique that shared power. They were democratic in the sense that they expended great energy to mobilize voters, but they also preserved a high degree of independence from outside influences through an internal system of command, coordination, and control.

Machines prospered for a time because of the social and political circumstances of the industrial age, which nurtured tightly knit ethnic communities sharply divided from the rest of society. Many of America's big industrial cities were once governed by party machines. Between 1870 and 1945, 17 of the nation's 30 cities with populations of more than half a million people were governed through boss rule and a disciplined, hierarchical party organization at some point.[3] In most of these cities, a factional machine-style politics operated for some time

before the actual machines emerged. With only rare exceptions, the classic machines flowered in the last years of the nineteenth century and the first two or three decades of the twentieth century, after which those that still remained went into decline. Boss rule peaked sometime in the 1920s. In 1932, the year Democratic candidate Franklin D. Roosevelt won the presidency, 10 of America's 30 biggest cities were ruled by machine bosses. Today, the machine is pretty much extinct. The death of Chicago boss Richard J. Daley in 1976 marked the end of the era of the classic party machines, which relied on patronage and the distribution of material incentives to keep their organizations intact.[4]

Despite the demise of these storied organizations, any serious discussion of American urban politics must take them into account because the political struggles of that time still reverberate at all levels of the political system. Early in the twentieth century, the machines became the target of a sustained campaign to clean up politics and reduce the influence of immigrant voters. The reforms adopted to end machine rule undeniably reduced corruption, but they also changed the rules of the game to the disadvantage of people at the lower end of the social spectrum. Even today, conflicts regularly break out involving the question of whether it should be easy or hard for people to register to vote. Battles over the rules that govern participation in the political system are bitterly fought because political outcomes reflect the composition of the electorate and the mix of interest groups that try to exert influence. These skirmishes go back more than a century, and they continue to the present day because so much is at stake.

OUTTAKE

Machines Had Two Sides

The careers of two machine politicians, James and Tom Pendergast of Kansas City, Missouri, illustrate both the positive and the negative sides of machine politics.

In 1876, James Pendergast, an Irishman with a short, thick neck and massive arms and shoulders, moved to Kansas City. Just 20 years old and with only a few dollars in his pocket, he rented a room in the West Bottoms ward, an industrial section on the floodplain of the Missouri River. The residents of West Bottoms worked in the meat packinghouses, machine shops, railroad yards, factories, and warehouses of the area. Blacks, Irish, Germans, and rural migrants lived in crowded four- and five-story tenements and tiny shanties. Overlooking this squalid area of dirt streets and open sewers was Quality Hill, where the wealthy elite lived. Pendergast held jobs in the packinghouses and in an iron foundry until 1881, when he used racetrack winnings to buy a hotel and a saloon.

He named the saloon Climax, the name of the lucky long-shot horse that gave him his start. The Climax Saloon became a social center of the First Ward, which put Pendergast in a position to meet the people of the ward. His generosity made him many friends. On payday, he cashed payroll checks and settled credit agreements; he posted bonds for men who had been arrested for gambling. His business flourished: "Men learned that he had an interest in humanity outside of business and that he could be trusted, and they returned the favor by patronizing his saloon and giving him their confidence." In this way, Pendergast's politics and his everyday life became one and the same. He soon found himself being promoted for an alderman's seat, which he won in 1892.

The same year, Pendergast opened another saloon in the Second Ward, located in the city's North End. In that saloon he employed 22 men to run gambling tables, and in his West Bottoms ward he continued to employ a large gambling staff. Gambling was run on a large scale in Kansas City. Opening his own operations in the North End enabled Pendergast to forge close relationships with the politicians of that ward, and he soon became as influential in the Second Ward as he was in the First. He was able to secure police protection for gambling and liquor operations by paying off police officers and manipulating the choice of a police chief in 1895.

Pendergast could have run for mayor, but he preferred to exert his influence behind the scenes. By 1900 he was so powerful that he was able to select his preferred candidate for City Hall personally. In return, the grateful mayor gave Pendergast control over hundreds of patronage jobs and appointed Pendergast's brother, Tom, to the position of superintendent of streets. More than 200 men were employed by the streets department, which placed orders for gravel and cement with suppliers and contractors loyal to the machine. James Pendergast also gained control over positions in the fire department and was named the city's deputy license inspector, an important job because saloons and other business establishments needed licenses to operate. As the final step in consolidating his political authority, by 1902 he had personally selected 123 of the 173 patrolmen on the police force. Although he never ran for mayor, he was Kansas City's most powerful politician.

Like all the urban machines, Pendergast's organization was sustained by a web of mutually beneficial relationships. Machine bosses distributed material rewards and expected loyalty in return. Some of them made this implicit bargain explicit, but the most effective ones never had to. A politician could get a lot of mileage out of only a modest amount of help; the word spread. James Pendergast expressed the principle in this way: "I've been called a boss. All there is to it is having friends, doing things for people, and then later on they'll do things for you." The First Ward voters reliably elected him by at least a 3-to-1 margin, and without discernible fraud. It never occurred to him that he would need to steal an election.

Jim Pendergast's style contrasted starkly with his brother Tom's. Tom, who inherited the Kansas City Democratic organization after James died, resorted to a mixture of fraud and coercion to maintain discipline and win elections. In the summer of 1914, Tom Pendergast's organization "used money, repeat voters, and toughs to produce North Side majorities" to gain approval of a proposed railway franchise. Machine workers distributed liquor and money in black and Italian neighborhoods. They "paid men to vote under assumed names; and election judges who questioned some of those dragged off the streets and out of flop houses to vote were intimidated and abused, both verbally and physically." On election day in 1934, four persons were killed by thugs. Two years later, an attempted assassination and massive fraud at polling places led to an investigation that eventually resulted in 259 convictions for election fraud and criminal behavior.

Jim Pendergast succeeded in politics because he went out of his way to ascertain the needs of his constituents. By building a powerful political organization, he was able to provide them with jobs and other prized benefits. When his brother Tom took over, corruption and intimidation became the order of the day because he had not nurtured any real connection to his electoral constituency. The story of the two Pendergasts highlights a question often asked about the classic party machines: Were they vehicles for democracy or were they inherently flawed by the concentration of power they facilitated?

Source: Lyle W. Dorsett, *The Pendergast Machine* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1968). Quotations are from pp. 14, 26, 59, 60.

The Origins of Machine Politics

The rise of the urban party machines was made possible by two factors: the emergence of a mass electorate and industrialization.[5] When the Constitution was ratified in 1789, only about 5 percent of adult white males were eligible to vote, and it took decades for the political systems of American cities to become fully democratic. Property qualifications for voting began to be eased after 1776, and by 1850 virtually all free white males were eligible to vote in city elections.[6] Until the 1820s, most mayors were appointed by governors or city councils. Beginning with Boston and St. Louis in 1822, charter revisions gradually transformed the office into a popularly elected post, and by 1840 this practice had become almost universal.[7] In the 1840 presidential election, 80 percent of adult white males went to the polls, the highest rate in any major democracy.[8] The spread of universal male suffrage coincided with the explosive growth of cities. From the 1830s to the 1920s, more than 30 million immigrants came to the United States, most of them pouring into the cities. As soon as they were citizens, if they were male, they could vote. A new breed of enterprising politician learned to profit from this circumstance.

In most of the industrial cities, a "friends and neighbors" or "local followings" style of politics evolved that fit perfectly with the decentralized nature of local governmental structures. Aldermen were elected from wards, and because these electoral units tended to be small, politicians were able to enter politics as a natural consequence of their personal connections. No one benefited from this arrangement more than pub owners. Saloons were central to the day-to-day life of working-class neighborhoods. Pub owners were considered reliable sources of information and advice. The density of pubs in immigrant neighborhoods was astonishing. In 1915, for example, there was a saloon for every 515 residents in New York, but the ratio was even greater in Chicago, which had a saloon for every 335 of its inhabitants.[9] In most cities there was at least one pub for every 50 males.[10] In late-nineteenth-century Chicago, half the city's total population entered a saloon every day.[11] Many machine politicians got their start as pub owners. Of New York City's 24 aldermen in 1890, 11 were pub owners. Pub owners made up a third of Milwaukee's city council members in 1902 and a third of Detroit's aldermen at the turn of the century.[12]

Party machines managed to combine two seemingly incompatible qualities: the absence of formal rules, and a disciplined organization. Machine politicians were not "hired" into party organizations, and they did not have a formal job description. Their ability to deliver votes and their skill at forging alliances with other politicians

determined their standing within the organization. Normally, a machine politician started at the bottom and worked his way up. Precinct captains, who were responsible for getting out the vote in the smallest and most basic political unit of the city, knew each voter personally, often as a friend and neighbor. To secure a following at this level, a politician had to be known not only as a person involved in politics but as someone who participated in local community life. Politicians climbed the political ladder only if they demonstrated they could reliably deliver the vote. If they did, the next rung they reached for was alderman.

Most machine politicians came from backgrounds that offended silk-stocking elements. Schooled in rough-and-tumble political competition, they generally were men of incredible energy, quick temper, and rough manners. At the least, they loved what they were doing; they felt no alienation from their job. Politics was everything the machine politicians knew and did—it was their social life, their profession, their first love. They pursued political power, not high social standing.[13] George Washington Plunkitt, a member of the Tammany Hall organization in New York, advised against what he called the "dangers of the dress suit in politics." "Live like your neighbors," Plunkitt admonished aspiring politicians, "even if you have the means to live better. Make the poorest man in your district feel that he is your equal, or even a bit superior to you."[14]

Disciplined political organizations emerged when skillful leaders succeeded in persuading enough of their fellow politicians that everyone would benefit if they cooperated. When enough of them came together, a militarystyle hierarchy emerged, with those lower in the organization waiting for their chance to move up. This structure was once described by Frank Hague, the Jersey City boss, to columnist Joseph Alsop, who wrote

> He [Hague] was talking in the dining room of one of the local hotels. He took the squares on the tablecloth to illustrate precincts and wards, tracing them out with his finger, and he explained the feudal system of American politics, whereby the precinct captain is governed by a ward lieutenant, the lieutenant by a ward leader, and each ward leader by the boss.[15]

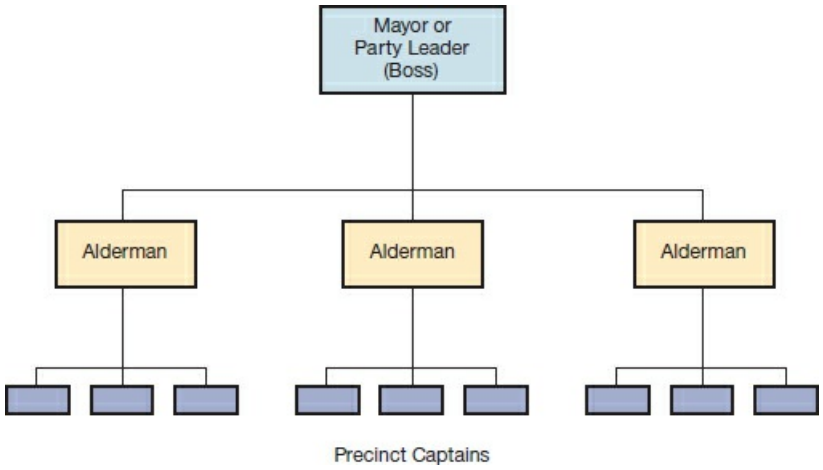


FIGURE 3.1 The Organization of Machine Politics

The organization of local political machines, or parties, parallels the formal structures of government but is also separate from them. Like the mayor, the party leader or boss controls the entire city, or perhaps county. The alderman represents a ward in the city council or on the board of aldermen. The alderman may or may not serve as ward leader of the party. Each ward consists of many precincts or election districts. Precinct captains are responsible for delivering the vote in their precinct. In principle, power flows from the bottom up: precinct captains elect the ward leaders, and the ward leaders elect the party boss. But in fact, power flows from the top.

As shown in Figure 3.1, precincts and precinct captains constituted the foundation of the typical machine organization. The average precinct had 400–600 voters, and precinct captains were expected to know them by name. Thirty to forty precincts were generally included within a ward. The captains of the precincts were chosen by and worked for the ward's alderman. The alderman served as the chair of the ward's party committee, unless he selected a committeeman to supervise the precinct captains on his behalf. Finally, the aldermen reported to the machine boss, who was usually but not always the mayor.

The hierarchical structure of the machine held together because everyone gained by cooperating in what was, in essence, a "system of organized bribery."[16] Bosses and individual aldermen had at their disposal patronage jobs in police, fire, sanitation, and streets departments—and occasionally even in private industry. Construction projects, such as levee construction or road building, could give a boss control over hundreds of permanent and temporary jobs. Precinct captains usually held low-level jobs arranged through the machine, perhaps serving as supervisors on street crews. Ward committeemen were rewarded with higher-paying administrative posts in the city government.

Aldermen and other elected officials often owned lucrative insurance companies, ran their own construction firms, or owned saloons. The most menial jobs were passed along to some of the loyal voters who turned out faithfully on election day.

An understanding of the patronage ladder can be gained by examining one of the last machines to exist in any American city, the one run by Richard J. Daley, mayor of Chicago from 1953 until his death in 1976. In the early 1970s, the Cook County Central Committee (which contains Chicago) had about 30,000 positions available for distribution. Most of these jobs were unskilled; 8,000 were available through Chicago's departments and commissions, including street cleaners, park supervisors, and the like.[17] The jobs ranged from $3,600-a-year elevator operators and $6,000-a-year stenographers to $25,000-a-year department directors (in the early 1970s, a skilled factory worker in a union plant made approximately $9,000 per year). Individual ward committeemen controlled as many as 2,000 jobs. (Richard J. Daley had begun his career as committeeman of his ward.) There were (and still are) 50 wards in the city of Chicago, with an average of 500–600 patronage jobs available in each of them in the 1970s.[18]

The election-day result determined the number of jobs available for distribution by individual precinct captains and ward committeemen. A precinct captain in Chicago was expected to know all the voters in the precinct and to be known by them.

> When a man is given a precinct, it is his to cover, and it is up to him to produce for the party. If he cannot produce for the party, he cannot expect to be rewarded by the party. "Let's put it this way," [one alderman said] "if your boss has a salesman who can't deliver, who can't sell his product, wouldn't he put in someone else who can?"[19]

Alderman Vito Marzullo was a member of the Chicago organization. Every week he scheduled a formal audience with his constituents. Flanked on each side by a precinct captain, he heard their complaints:

> A precinct captain ushered in a black husband and wife. "We got a letter here from the city," the man said. "They want to charge us twenty dollars for rodent control in our building." "Give me the letter, I'll look into it," Marzullo replied. The captain spoke up. "Your daughter didn't vote on November fifth. Look into it. The alderman is running again in February. Any help we can get, we can use."[20]

In the course of hearing his constituents, Marzullo exclaimed, "Some of those liberal independents in the city council, they can't get a dog out of a dog pound with a ten-dollar bill. Who's next?" Marzullo then arranged to have a traffic ticket fixed, agreed to recommend someone for a job at an electric company, refused to donate money to the Illinois Right to Life Committee ("Nothing doing … I don't want to get into any of those controversies. People for it and people against it."), agreed to try to find a job for an unemployed truck driver, and gave $50 to a welfare mother. Responding to several more requests, he offered to "see what I can do."[21]

During the Richard J. Daley years, the Chicago machine was structured like a political pyramid. Committeemen and the aldermen directed the captains of the precincts within their wards; they, in turn, reported to the Cook County Central Committee. Although most of the city machines that operated a half-century before were similarly organized, some were directed from the top with an iron hand, as in Daley's Chicago; others were little more than loose confederations of politicians jealous of their own turf. However tightly run the individual machines were, they all revealed the same qualities: They were rooted in neighborhoods, and a combination of material incentives and ethnic and community attachments held them together.

Being close to constituents did not necessarily mean the machines can be regarded as a model of democracy at work. Although all machines provided something to their supporters, most of them also engaged in election fraud. Because so many opportunities were available, few machine politicians could resist the temptations offered by bribes and backroom deals. But as an answer to the impression that machines were nothing but cesspools of corruption, some historians and social scientists called attention to some of their positive achievements. They have offered three main arguments in defense of the machines: That they (1) centralized power and "got the job done," (2) served as vehicles of upward mobility for immigrants, and (3) helped assimilate the immigrants into American life. In the next three sections, we examine these claims.

Did Machines "Get the Job Done"?

It has generally been assumed that political machines evolved in the late nineteenth century to fill a vacuum left by the absence of effective local governments. City governments were often inept and inefficient because they relied on a chaotic division of responsibilities among a multitude of separate officials, boards, and departments. The mayor generally wielded little authority. The city council or board of aldermen typically controlled the budget and

made most of the important decisions. Day-to-day administrative responsibilities were generally assumed by committees whose members were appointed by the city council, or sometimes by some combination of the mayor, state legislature, governor, or other state or local official. At election time, a long list of names on the ballot made it impossible for voters to know anything about the candidates. Edward Sait wrote in 1933 that "when the people or particular groups among them demanded positive action, no one had adequate authority to act. The machine provided an antidote."[22] In other words, he was saying, machines were necessary if anything was to get done.

If it is true that machines arose mainly to fill a void left by disorganized and inefficient government, then we would expect to find that machines prospered best in cities where governments were the most politically and administratively fragmented. The problem with this idea is that by the time most machines came into being, reformers devoted to the cause of stream-lining municipal governance had already achieved their goal of concentrating more power in the hands of mayors and a cadre of full-time civil service administrators.[23] The municipal reformers had imagined that these changes would make officeholders more accountable to the electorate, and that informed voters would elect a "better class" of refined and educated leaders to office. They were sorely disappointed with the results. As it turned out, it was easier to build disciplined machine organizations where local government had been streamlined and centralized than where it remained fragmented and chaotic. Jersey City, New Jersey supplies an instructive example. In 1913, reformers there persuaded the voters to fuse legislative and executive functions into one five-member commission. When the machine mayor, Frank Hague, gained control of the city commission, he was able to accomplish something he had tried many times before: consolidate his power over a faction-ridden Democratic Party and become the uncontested boss of Jersey City.[24]

Control of municipal government was a prize worth pursuing. Between 1870 and 1900, municipal workforces grew even faster than urban populations,[25] and local governments spent more money than either the federal government or the state governments.[26] Cities ran up debts at a feverish pace to finance water systems, lay sewer lines, pave streets, build parks and public buildings, deepen harbors, and improve public health.[27] Even cities with fractious and divided politics, such as Los Angeles, made huge investments in infrastructure.[28] The political support for urban infrastructure and services was sufficiently strong that city budgets and workforces were bound to expand, regardless of how a city was run.[29] A study of cities from 1890 to 1940 found no difference between machine and non-machine cities in the overall level of public expenditures.[30]

Corruption could make the price of "getting the job done" astonishingly high. Probably the most notoriously corrupt machine in American history was led by William Marcy "Boss" Tweed, who ran the infamous Tweed Ring in New York City from 1868 to 1871. In three years, Tweed took $30 million to $100 million of public funds for himself and his cronies. Under his regime, the machine's traditional take of 10 percent on construction contracts was ratcheted upward. A courthouse project originally estimated to cost $250,000 ended up costing taxpayers $14 million. At least 90 percent of this cost overrun went to pay payoffs, bribes, and fake contracts.[31] Tweed's rule has been called the politics of "rapacious individualism" because everyone in the machine seemed to be after personal wealth. Ultimately, the availability of so many spoils undermined the discipline of his organization. Because Tweed was not able to count on the loyalty of his fellow politicians, he was forced to buy it directly, and therefore his authority was fragile and short-lived.[32] In 1869 and 1870, the city's debt increased from $36 million to $97 million. By 1871, when Tweed was arrested, the city was bankrupt.

Machine bosses realized that the artful distribution of spoils was the key to holding their organizations together. The rapid growth of city services guaranteed there would be plenty of largesse to spread around. Mayors and city councils negotiated lucrative multiyear contracts for streetcar operations and utility services (such as electricity, gas, and telephone). Cities issued tavern and liquor licenses and regulated gambling and prostitution (or had the option of looking the other way when they were illegal). They engaged in a continuous stream of public works projects, including the building of roads, bridges, public buildings, sewer and water systems, streetlights, and parks. There was money to be made on both ends of these transactions.

The operations of Abraham Reuf's regime, which ruled San Francisco just after the turn of the century, provide some insight into the wealth of opportunities available to people who entered politics.[33] Reuf was an attorney who never held public office, but his law practice gave him access to those who did. In October 1901 his handpicked candidate took over the mayor's office, and within days Reuf spread the word that the city's laws against prostitution would be strictly enforced. He advised the brothel owners that it would be wise to have an attorney—specifically himself—who could effectively represent their interests. The owners quickly got the point and agreed to pay him a fourth of their business profits, half of which Reuf split with the mayor. This arrangement allowed

the brothels to continue operating without fear of prosecution. Reuf also provided his professional "advice" to saloon owners that it would be wise to pay premium prices for a low-quality whiskey supplied by one of Reuf's legal clients. In return, the saloon owners were protected from police raids.

San Francisco invested huge resources in municipal services, and businesses competed for the contracts. A lot of money was at stake. The mayor, the city council, or a utilities commission could, in a single stroke of a pen, enrich a business owner by awarding a contract to build trolley lines, install streetlights, supply gas, or install telephones. The temptation to make decisions secretly in smoke-filled rooms was overwhelming. The chair of the public utilities committee of the San Francisco Board of Supervisors reminded a group of business leaders in January 1906:

> It must be borne in mind that without the city fathers there can be no public service corporations. The street cars cannot run, lights cannot be furnished, telephones cannot exist. And all the public service corporations want to understand that we, the city fathers, enjoy the best of health and that we are not in business for our health. The question at this banquet board is: "How much money is in it for us?"[34]

There seemed to be plenty of money for everyone. When two telephone companies submitted competing bids to supply service to the citizens of San Francisco, Reuf collected a $1,200 monthly "attorney's fee" from one company while secretly accepting a $125,000 bribe from the other. Reuf persuaded the board of supervisors to award the contract to the company that paid the biggest bribe. Keeping $63,000 for himself, he used a loyalty test to distribute the remainder of the $125,000 to the individual supervisors: $6,000 each to those who had taken no independent bribes (showing they were not trying to compete with Reuf), $3,500 to those voting correctly despite bribes to do the opposite, and nothing at all to those who did not cooperate.

Reuf's tenure as the power behind the mayor's throne ended when he was indicted and tried for corruption. Ironically, his downfall was precipitated by too much success. After seeing how lucrative local politics could be, more and more of the politicians around him struck out on their own in search of profit and opportunity, and before long the feeding frenzy attracted attention and the jackals began to turn on one another.

Reuf's behavior was more reckless than usual, but in almost all cities, machine leaders forged alliances with illicit business owners. The relationship benefited both sides in the partnership: The businesses were free to operate without having to worry about the law, and the politicians could count on a steady flow of favors and bribes. One of the reasons that machines flourished so much in the 1920s is that the national prohibition of liquor sales opened unprecedented opportunities for selling police protection to speakeasies and bootleggers. Prohibition facilitated a cooperative arrangement between machines and organized crime not only in Chicago, where the collusion was especially notorious, but all over the country, in big cities and small. In many cases, the level of flagrant corruption and rising levels of violence brought a reaction that brought the machines down for good.

Machines took bribes from legitimate enterprises, too. The machines governed the cities during a period of explosive growth in population, services, and construction. Even if local politicians tried to be honest, business tycoons eager to expand their empires were eager to spread their money around to get what they wanted. They found it convenient to work with politicians who could make decisions expeditiously behind the scenes. Big businesses paid bigger bribes than anyone else, and this put them in a position to negotiate monopoly contracts on favorable terms. The franchises typically were granted for periods of 50–100 years, and some specified no terminal dates at all.[35] In the 1880s and 1890s, national financial syndicates made millions of dollars by gaining control of street railway franchises. In 1890, there were 39 street railway companies in Philadelphia, 19 in New York City, 24 in Pittsburgh, 19 in St. Louis, and 16 in San Francisco.[36] There was simply not enough business for all of them, and by the turn of the century only one or two major street railway companies operated in most cities.

In light of the numerous opportunities for personal enrichment, it may seem surprising that a number of machine leaders refused to cash in to enrich themselves. The extent and style of corruption varied considerably from one city to the next. In the 1930s, Boss George Cox was credited with bringing "positive and moderate reform government to Cincinnati."[37] In the years when Richard J. Daley was boss (1955–1976), Chicago was known as "the city that works" because the mayor saw to it that services were delivered effectively. Daley was popular with voters both because they felt he was responsible for getting things done, and because there was never any evidence that he took money for himself.[38] For all of his life he and his family lived in a modest bungalow in an old Irish neighborhood close to the stockyards.

Were Machines Vehicles of Upward Mobility?

A leading sociologist once proposed that the machines succeeded partly because they provided "alternative channels of social mobility for those otherwise excluded from the more conventional avenues of 'advancement.'"[39] In the nineteenth century, many employers refused to hire the Irish; "Irish need not apply" was printed on many an employment notice. For the ethnics who found public employment, local politics was "like a rope dangling down the formidable slope of the socioeconomic system" that poor immigrants could grab to pull themselves up.[40]

Ample evidence supports the thesis that the urban machines aided the upward mobility of their immigrant supporters. Although it is not exactly a typical story, politics was a key element in the rise of the Kennedy clan from poverty to wealth and national power. President John F. Kennedy's grandfather on his mother's side, John "Honey Fitz" Fitzgerald, rose from a ward heeler running errands for an alderman to the office of mayor of Boston. Kennedy's grandfather on his father's side was a respected ward politician and saloonkeeper whose contacts helped the early career of the president's millionaire father, Joseph P. Kennedy, who made a fortune in bootleg liquor.[41]

Despite the many stories describing how boys from poor immigrant families rose through the ranks of local machines, the evidence supporting the idea that the machines enhanced the upward mobility of immigrants is mixed. Mostly, political machines provided petty favors for their working-class constituents, and their pyramid-shaped hierarchy did not provide an upward trajectory for the majority of immigrants. It is important to realize that these tales are colorful partly because they are exceptional, and in any case they apply to the Irish more than to any other immigrant group. In most cities Irish politicians mastered the art of machine politics before anyone else, and they incorporated other ethnic groups into their coalitions only if it was absolutely necessary for winning elections. Later-arriving immigrants generally found it hard to get a toehold into the political system. In New York City, for example, the machine organization called Tammany Hall was run by and for the Irish. Although Jews and Italians represented 43 percent of New York's population by 1920, in the same year only 15 percent of the city's aldermen and assemblymen were Jewish and only 3 percent were Italian.[42]

Most of the big-city machines were dominated by Irish politicians from the beginning, and they stayed that way.[43] Between 1900 and 1930, the machines in New York City, Jersey City, and Albany, New York, added nearly 100,000 municipal jobs. Close to two-thirds of these jobs went to Irish constituents, even though the Irish accounted for only about one-third of the population in these cities. The Irish were especially vigilant about maintaining iron-fisted control over police forces. As late as 1970, for instance, 65 percent of police officers in Albany were still of Irish descent, even though no more than 25 percent of the city's population could trace their ancestry to Ireland.[44]

Eventually, some skilled politicians managed to challenge the control wielded by Irish machine bosses by appealing to the groups that had been left out. Fiorello LaGuardia, elected mayor of New York City in 1933, smashed the Tammany organization, which had dominated the city's politics for almost a century. LaGuardia was a master of ethnic politics, perhaps because "half Jewish and half Italian, married first to a Catholic and then to a Lutheran of German descent, himself a Mason and an Episcopalian, he was practically a balanced ticket all by himself."[45] This rich ethnic heritage helped him to assemble an electoral coalition composed of disgruntled Jews, Italians, and other excluded groups. Likewise, in the 1920s Anton Cermak became mayor of Chicago by building "a house of all peoples."[46] By reaching out to Italians, Jews, Czechs, and Poles, Cermak won the 1931 mayoral election with 65 percent of the vote, and once in office he solidified his authority by adeptly distributing patronage, recruiting candidates for machine positions, and fighting against Prohibition, which almost all ethnics opposed. La Guardia's and Cermak's success revealed that any political organization built on an overly narrow base was vulnerable to challenge.

It perhaps goes without saying that blacks were excluded from most of the urban machines. Chicago became a notable exception because in the 1920s the city's machine leaders recognized that they could reliably secure the vote in the segregated South Side wards simply by creating "submachines" run by black politicians who were subordinate in every way to the white machine organization.[47] William Dawson, a member of Congress from 1942 until his death in 1970, ran a submachine in Chicago's South Side ghetto, but white politicians kept him carefully in check. Dawson reliably delivered huge pluralities for machine candidates from the black wards, but black voters received relatively little in return.[48] Throughout Chicago's history, weak and inexperienced black politicians who accepted a devil's bargain were recruited into the machine: in exchange for a measure of freedom to pursue their own ambitions, they delivered the vote and kept a militant black leadership from emerging.[49] The legacy of such practices was still apparent in the Richard J. Daley years. Although blacks made up 40 percent of

Chicago's population in 1970, they held only 20 percent of the government jobs in the city, and most of those jobs were the least desirable.[50] A study of a typical ward in Chicago found that the machine consistently over-rewarded middle-class voters at the expense of loyal working-class voters, with blacks getting the least of all.[51]

Disaffected African American voters finally challenged the Chicago machine organization in the 1980s. In 1983 a charismatic black politician, Harold Washington, assembled a coalition of poor people, blacks, Hispanics, and white liberals to defeat the machine's mayoral candidate.[52] His victory set off a prolonged racial tug-of-war in the city council between his supporters and the old-guard members of the machine, but when Washington died in his office of a heart attack on November 15, 1987, the new groups he had brought into politics continued to exert a voice. In 1989, Richard M. Daley, son of Richard J., won the mayor's race by successfully reassembling the remnants of his father's organization, forging alliances with African American and Latino politicians, and establishing a close relationship with the downtown business establishment. He was elected to office five times because he understood the principle that to govern effectively, he needed to build a broad base of support.

Machine leaders had believed it made perfect sense to keep their coalitions only as big as necessary.[53] The more groups making up the alliance, the greater the interethnic squabbles over the distribution of patronage and the thinner the distribution of rewards. As a consequence, "once minimal winning coalitions had been constructed, the machines had little incentive to naturalize, register, and mobilize the votes of later ethnic arrivals."[54] For entrenched machines, expanding the electoral base past the minimum number of voters needed for winning elections just complicated things. The art was to strike a balance to ensure that a coalition that was just large enough, and sometimes they miscalculated.

The machines distributed benefits that were of great value to their supporters. According to Jessica Trounstine, in the early years of the twentieth century "public jobs frequently paid better wages than private employment," and access to public jobs allowed the Irish and sometimes other groups to escape the discrimination they faced in the private marketplace.[55] The problem was that the number of public jobs was pitifully small compared to those available in the private economy. In 1900, Tammany's vaunted patronage army made up 5 percent of New York City's workforce. It is true that from 1900 to 1920 local governments grew so fast that public employment accounted for 20 percent of all urban job growth,[56] but for most people, including the immigrants, private industry rather than patronage provided the best opportunities for upward mobility.

Although for decades the Irish laid claim to a disproportionate share of the jobs provided by municipal government, it took a long time for them to catch up to the gains made by some other ethnic groups. Scandinavians, Germans, and Jews, for example, participated relatively little in machine politics, and yet they joined the American middle class faster than the Irish did. The Irish did not achieve economic parity with these groups until the 1960s and 1970s. This disparity is mainly due to the circumstances of immigration, as well as immigrants' socio-economic situation in their countries of origin. For instance, Germans and Jews did not come to the United States primarily for socio-economic reasons. They were often middle-class immigrants who were fleeing discrimination in their home countries in Europe (Jews) and religious and political unrest (Germans). Despite this mixed record, however, the benefits supplied by the machines to their loyal supporters were better than nothing, and for the individuals who received them they were precious indeed. On the whole, immigrant voters got back about as much as they could have expected for what they could give in return.

Did the Machines Help Immigrants Assimilate?

Without doubt, the urban party machines helped to assimilate millions of impoverished immigrants into a culture that was fearful of and hostile to almost every newly arriving ethnic group. Machine politicians nurtured a sense of community and belonging in the immigrant wards. They sponsored picnics, patriotic gatherings (such as Fourth of July celebrations), baseball teams, choirs, and youth clubs. The local party organization was an important community institution, and one of the main alternatives to the pubs: the Democratic Club was a place where men played cards and checkers or just talked.[57]

With the material resources at their disposal already devoted to their core constituency, machine politicians learned to satisfy immigrants who arrived later with largely symbolic benefits. In New York City, Tammany leader "Big Tim" Sullivan, an Irishman, ruled the Lower East Side even though as early as 1910 it was 85 percent Jewish and Italian. He retained the loyalty of his constituents through a mixture of favors and artful gestures:

> He and his Irish lieutenants distributed coal, food, and rent money to needy Jews and Italians on the Lower East Side. Tammany's police department opened up station houses as temporary shelters for the homeless. Sullivan expedited business licenses for ethnic shopkeepers and

pushcart peddlers. He shamelessly "recognized" the new immigrants with symbolic gestures and donned a yarmulke to solicit Jewish votes. Sullivan solicited Italian votes by sponsoring legislation to make Columbus Day a holiday.[58]

Many immigrants felt like outsiders in the dominant Protestant and middle-class culture of the United States. One of the secrets of the machines' appeal was that they tolerated the immigrants' "strange" practices and defended them from the dominant culture.[59] This was an important benefit that machine politicians could deliver at little cost. Although working-class communities in American cities were not economically independent, they were, to a remarkable degree, socially independent. Immigrants built their own churches, mutual aid societies, and clubs for drinking and gambling. Machine politicians supported such activities because they were handy venues for campaigning and political organizing.[60]

Machine politicians appealed to and were supported by immigrant voters, in part, because they represented the possibility of success in this strange new country. Almost all machine politicians came from lower-class immigrant origins. One study of 20 bosses found that 15 were first- or second-generation immigrants; 13 had never finished grammar school; and most had gone into politics at a young age, serving as messengers or detail boys at rallies and meetings.[61] Machine leaders, therefore, became symbols of success. Immigrants may not have read the Horatio Alger stories, but in machine bosses they could see men who had risen out of poverty. Aspiring politicians often accepted this interpretation of themselves, too; they viewed themselves as examples of what could be done with hard work and a little luck along the way. These real-world examples of upward mobility were sources of pride and hope for the masses of immigrants who lived and worked under incredibly difficult conditions. However, symbol exceeded substance, especially for later-arriving southern and eastern European immigrants. Irish politicians would shrewdly pick a handful of men from other immigrant groups and place them in lesser positions on the ballot to demonstrate their generosity. Meanwhile, the bread-and-butter patronage stayed home.

The immigrants paid a high price for assimilation on these terms. Machines rarely attempted to address the collective needs of their constituents. They were not interested in lasting social reform, because machines benefitted, to a certain extent, from social inequality. Instead, the immigrant voters were encouraged to "cast their ballots on the basis of ethnicity rather than policy considerations."[62] The immigrants gave their support not as an act of consciousness about group goals but because it was easy to do and plausible alternatives were few. The vote was a minimal commitment for the immigrant but a sufficient one for the machine. Constituents could hardly expect miracles in return.

The operating principles and structures of the urban machines encouraged the politicians who ran them to steer clear of ideological battles. To deal with their constituents' requests effectively, machine politicians had to learn the art of manipulating power within the framework of a political and economic order that they did not control. A premium was placed on simple pragmatism, the ability to pull strings to get things done. Idealism was scorned. If a constituent came to complain about a building inspector, the politician's job was to make things nice with the inspector. Changing the building code was irrelevant and even counterproductive because it might reduce the need for the politician's services and would offend local property owners as well.

Machines were hostile to political movements that tried to reform the system because such movements threatened their control of the immigrant vote. Until the 1930s, most machines vigorously opposed labor unions. In the first years of the twentieth century, Irish machine politicians ordered the police to attack labor organizers in Lawrence, Massachusetts, and in New York City.[63] In Pittsburgh's 1919 steel strike, the machine likewise ordered police to harass strikers.[64] After Franklin D. Roosevelt's landslide victory in the presidential election of 1932, some of the big-city machines forged alliances with the moderate trade unions, but the relationship was never easy to maintain. The machines expected the unions to respect their turf by keeping out of local politics and focusing mainly on state and national politics and on labor–business relations.

On balance, it may be argued that the machines stunted the immigrants' potential as a political force. Working-class immigrants desperately needed reforms such as widows' pensions, better working conditions, laws regulating hours and wages (especially for women and children), and workers' compensation. On occasion, machine politicians supported these reforms as well as the regulation of utilities, the legal recognition of labor unions, and the regulation of insurance companies.[65] But the selective and often half-hearted support for a few reform measures did not exactly transform machine politicians into crusading reformers. Machine politicians were willing to declare their support for reform legislation at the state level if it made them look good, but they never became active advocates for progressive causes. Machine politicians could be quite capricious, for immediate political circumstances always took precedence over principle.

Machine politicians rarely considered how things could be changed. They often referred to reformers as "goody-goodies" or "goo-goos" who, they thought, were in politics for a few thrills. ("Goo-goo" was derived from "good government," often the reformers' rallying cry.) Much of their disdain was rooted in the social differences between themselves and middle- and upper-class reformers. As a result, they had an excessive respect for the pragmatic fix.

The Social Reform Alternative

Defenders of the machines have argued that there were few alternatives to their pragmatic style of politics, that in the face of the vast economic and political resources held by corporations and wealthy elites, machine politicians milked the system on behalf of their constituents as effectively as they could. From this way of thinking, criticizing machine politicians for what they failed to do is an exercise in wishful thinking about what might have been.

The view that the machines accomplished as much as they could for their constituents fails to take into account the full range of opportunities available to them. The Progressive Era got its name because a generation of reformers were intent on improving the quality of life for immigrants and workers. They campaigned for support from both working-class immigrants and middle-class voters, but at every turn they encountered resistance both from machine politicians and members of the business community.[66] The examples of mayors who went in a different direction show, however, that it was possible to overcome such opposition. Mayors Tom L. Johnson of Cleveland, Ohio (1901–1909), Samuel "Golden Rule" Jones of Toledo, Ohio (1897–1903), and Brand Whitlock of Toledo (1906–1913) all won election by fighting against high streetcar and utility rates and for fair taxation and better social services. Their campaigns became models for like-minded reformers across the country. Reform-oriented mayors in Jersey City, Philadelphia, and Cincinnati attempted to increase municipal revenue by raising taxes on businesses and wealthy property owners and by renegotiating streetcar and utility franchises. But machine bosses bitterly fought reform in these cities, just as they had a few years earlier when similar efforts were mounted in Cleveland and Toledo.[67]

The career of Hazen S. Pingree, who served as Detroit's mayor from 1890 to 1898, shows there were enormous possibilities for accomplishing reforms that would benefit ordinary people. Born in Maine to a poor farmer and itinerant cobbler, Pingree's background did not suggest he would one day become a political reformer. After fighting in the Civil War, Pingree moved to Detroit, where he worked as a leather cutter in a shoe factory. After a few years, he and a partner pooled their savings to purchase the outdated factory. By modernizing the machinery and producing a new line of shoes that fit current fashions, Pingree managed to become independently wealthy. He was picked as the Republican candidate for mayor in 1889, mostly because he was the only member of the exclusive Michigan Club who could be persuaded by its members to run. The business leaders who controlled Republican politics trusted him, as a member of the club, to advocate the usual program of low taxes and a minimal array of municipal services. In any case, few of them imagined he would win, and they had grown accustomed to working with the reliably cooperative Irish-dominated Democratic machine.

To their deep disappointment, Pingree was not a typical business candidate. He campaigned in the ethnic wards, and even kicked off his campaign by drinking whiskey in an Irish saloon. Pingree was a big hit with German and Polish voters, who had long been ignored by the Irish politicians. He called attention to the endemic corruption of the machine and advocated an eight-hour workday for city employees. His willingness to seek the ethnic vote was the foundation on which he built his subsequent political success.

Pingree's programs, and the strategies he used to implement them, reveal how much might have been accomplished in other American cities. When Pingree took over city hall, Detroit had one of the worst street systems in the nation. Many of the streets were made of wooden blocks, which caught fire in the summer and sank into the mire in the winter. The few paved streets were pocked with ruts and potholes. Pingree quickly realized that collusion between paving contractors and machine politicians was at the heart of the street problem. He launched an aggressive campaign against this arrangement, appealing to his business supporters by pointing out that the prosperity of the city depended on good streets. His insistent efforts led the city council to adopt strict paving specifications; as a result, by 1895 Detroit had one of the best street systems in the United States.

It was not long before Pingree understood that the local business establishment was responsible for many of Detroit's problems. He challenged the high fare charged for a ferry ride across the Detroit River to Belle Isle Park. The company dropped its rate from 10 cents to 5 cents after the mayor threatened to revoke its franchise or put into operation a municipal ferry service. Pingree also found that private companies had located along the Detroit River waterfront, often on municipal property, which choked off public access to water and recreation. He took

action to open up waterfront areas for public use.

Pingree's fight with the Detroit City Railway Company turned him into a true social reformer willing to use public authority to curb private power to benefit the city's residents. At a time when streetcar companies in other cities were converting from horses to electric power, Detroit's company refused to make the change. In April 1891 the company's employees went on strike, presenting a perfect opportunity for Pingree to begin a battle for modernization and lower fares. The three-day strike culminated in a riot in which workers and citizens tore up the tracks, stoned the streetcars, and drove off the horses. Pingree ignored the company's request to call in the state militia and instead took the position that privately owned public services were "the chief source of corruption in city governments."[68] Pingree's stance precipitated a protracted, bitter fight to regulate the streetcars. This conflict vaulted him to national prominence.

Many business leaders had supported the strike, believing the street railway was so badly run that it was hurting local business. The business community was mainly interested in more reliable service, but Pingree went further and pressed for lower fares and municipal ownership. Such a position ran afoul of business leaders when the company passed into the hands of an eastern business mogul. The new owner's first action was to pack the company's board of directors with prominent businessmen from Detroit. The company then demanded that the city negotiate a more favorable franchise. Pingree countered with a lawsuit meant to terminate the existing company in favor of municipal ownership. At that point, the company bought Pingree's own attorney away from him and proceeded to offer bribes to city council members, including a $75,000 bribe to Pingree himself. The Preston National Bank dropped Pingree from its board of directors; he lost his family pew in the Baptist church; and he and his friends were shunned in public. The lesson Pingree learned from all this was that business supported reform only on its own terms. And he also began to form his own analysis about what was wrong with America's cities.

In 1891, Pingree began attacking the tax privileges of the city's corporations. The railroad, he observed, owned more than one-fifth of the property value in the city but paid no taxes at all because of the tax-free status granted to it by the state legislature. Shipping companies, docks and warehouses, and other businesses escaped local taxation by claiming that their principal places of business existed outside the city. The city's biggest employer, the Michigan-Peninsula Car Company, paid only nominal taxes. Although he was not successful in equalizing the tax burden, Pingree was able to modify some of its worst features, especially the practice of assessing, for tax purposes, real estate owned by wealthy people at rates far below its value. Pingree earned the special enmity of the city's elite by successfully campaigning for a personal property tax on home furnishings, art objects, and other luxury items.

On April 1, 1895, Detroit began operating a municipal electric plant to supply power for its streetlights. This ended a five-year running battle between Pingree and the private lighting company. Pingree's main argument against the private control of electricity was that it cost too much. Pingree gathered voluminous information to show that Detroit's service was more expensive and less reliable than service in other cities. Despite the merits of his case he would have lost, but a scandal tipped the scales in his favor. In April 1892, Pingree walked into a city council meeting waving a roll of bills and dramatically accused the Detroit Electric Light and Power Company of bribing council members. The mayor had been sure to pack the room with his working-class supporters. With Pingree's followers whipped into a dangerous mood, the council members hastily capitulated.

Pingree used similar tactics in his fights with the gas and telephone interests. To force the Detroit Gas Company to lower its natural gas rates, he initiated a campaign to inform the public about the high price of Detroit's gas. When his attempt to force lower prices stalled in the courts, he persuaded the public works board to deny permits to excavate streets for the purpose of laying gas lines. When the gas company attempted to dig anyway, Pingree saw to it that the owners were arrested. "Possession is a great point," argued Pingree. "Let them get their gas systems connected and then they could float their $8,000,000 of stock in New York City and become too powerful for the city to control. Detroit would be helpless in the hands of corporations as never before in her history."[69]

The battle raged on, with Pingree next encouraging users not to pay their gas bills. As public resistance against the Detroit Gas Company mounted, investors' confidence in the company plummeted, precipitating a plunge in the company's stock values. Even after Southern Pacific Railroad magnate Samuel Huntington became the company's principal investor, stock prices continued to fall, and Huntington negotiated an agreement to lower the price of gas from $1.50 per cubic foot to $0.80.

In his fourth term, Pingree took on the Bell Telephone Company. Again, the issue was high prices and

inadequate service. This time he helped organize a competing phone company that charged less than half of Bell's rate, and in only a few months the newly formed Detroit Telephone Company was serving twice as many customers as Bell. In response, Bell Telephone initiated a rate war and began to improve its equipment and service. By 1900, when Michigan Bell bought out Detroit Telephone, Detroit had the lowest telephone rates and the most extensive residential use among large American cities.

No other mayor in America accomplished such a broad program of social reform. In his last two terms, Pingree traveled around the country making speeches and gathering ideas about what to do next. He wrote prolifically. He inspired reformers all over the country, and his national prominence helped him bring more reform to his own city. After winning four terms as the mayor of Detroit, Pingree went on to serve two terms as the governor of Michigan, where he continued to fight for reform.

Hazen Pingree recognized the necessity of building a broad-based coalition of support. He so assiduously courted ethnic voters that by his fourth term he had even won the dependable Irish away from the Democratic machine. In effect, he pieced together his own machine, filling patronage jobs with his own supporters and firing his opponents. However, "he absolutely refused to tolerate dishonesty or theft."[70] Unlike Detroit's machine politicians, who regularly exploited ethnic hostilities to win votes in their wards, Pingree tried to unify working-class Poles, Germans, Irish, and the middle class. In short, he was aware that to accomplish reform it was necessary to "recruit a coalition of power sufficient for his purpose."[71] A great many political machines had likewise constructed powerful electoral coalitions, but the politicians who built them were more interested in furthering their own careers than in making the economic and political system more just.

Ethnic Politics in Today's Cities

Cities are once again magnets for millions of immigrants, and as a consequence, struggles over racial and ethnic political participation have become highly charged. Despite their shortcomings, the machines showed respect for the newcomers and distributed highly valued resources. Considered in this light, an intriguing question arises: What strategies can the more recent immigrant groups employ to gain a voice in local political systems? Would recent immigrants and ethnic and racial minorities benefit if they were able to build political machines much like those that existed a century ago? The historical record indicates that the answer is "not much." And in any case, the rules of the game that regulate political processes have changed so much that such a strategy would be impractical.

The urban machines brokered a deal with both poor immigrants and economic elites, and each of these groups gave up something and got something in return. Business elites ceded control over local governments to working-class ethnic politicians who controlled armies of patronage workers, supported in part by income from bribes paid by businesses and corporations. In return, machine politicians essentially promised to leave business alone. In effect, the two sides struck a bargain by recognizing a sharp separation between the market and the public sphere. This compromise was important in managing the tension between capitalism, with its attendant inequalities, and popular democracy.[72]

On the whole this turned out to be a bad bargain for the machines' ethnic supporters. Rather than passing out favors and low-paying jobs, machine politicians could have emulated Hazen Pingree by attacking the practices that inflated the cost of urban services and infrastructure. They could have gone farther, too, and forged alliances with labor unions to pursue programs designed to modify dangerous working conditions, long hours, child labor, and low pay. Instead, they discouraged immigrants from organizing around their common interests.

There is reason to believe that today's urban residents could expect even less if well-oiled machine organizations came into power. The machines prospered in rapidly growing industrial cities that required massive expenditures on roads, bridges, sewers, streetcar systems, schools, and parks.[73] The resulting government jobs, contracts, and franchises were traded for the political support necessary to sustain the party organizations. By contrast, in today's cities it would be extremely difficult to assemble the patronage and other material rewards necessary to build and maintain disciplined organizations. City services are now administered through civil service bureaucracies, and merit employment systems have been put in place so patronage can no longer be regularly delivered on the basis of personal or political relationships. Federal prosecutors would quickly sniff out patronage and vote-buying arrangements, which were outlawed long ago.

The last of the old-style machines, presided over by Chicago's Mayor Richard J. Daley, died along with him in 1976. From April 1989 to April 2011 his son, Richard M. Daley, assembled a disciplined political organization,

and in a few respects it resembled his father's. The "rubber stamp" city council almost always endorsed his proposals; even on controversial issues, few aldermen dared to vote no.[74] Even so, the political style and policy priorities of the younger Daley were utterly different from his father's. The elder Daley ran campaigns primarily through aldermen and precinct captains; for his son, the most effective techniques involved direct mail and television ads crafted by the best political consultants that money could buy. To pay for media campaigns, new sources of money were tapped. In his father's day, machine workers provided critical financial support for the machine. By contrast, the contributions for Richard M.'s campaigns came primarily from the sectors making up the new global economy—lawyers, bankers, insurance agencies, and the conventions, tourism, and entertainment industry. For the 1999 mayoral campaign, the financial services industry contributed roughly 10 percent of the cost of the campaign and the legal community produced 5.5 percent. The tourism, entertainment, and hospitality industry, which had given very few dollars to previous mayors, emerged as a significant supporter for Daley, accounting for 4 percent of his campaign contributions in 1999. The owner of the Chicago Blackhawks hockey team threw in $10,000, and another $10,000 came from a livery firm from Frankfort, Illinois (which sponsors carriage rides in tourist areas of the city). The union representing hotel employees gave Daley's campaign $30,000. By contrast, government officials produced less than 2 percent of Daley's financial support.[75]

The second Daley maintained his authority by distributing a new kind of white-collar "pinstripe" patronage to lawyers, brokers, financial consultants, advertising and public relations firms, and lobbyists. The big volumes of money required for mayor's campaigns went more to media advertising than to grassroots campaigning. Media-centered campaigns have replaced door-to-door and face-to-face campaigns at all levels of the American political system. The election of media mogul Michael Bloomberg as mayor of New York City in 2002 suggested that media-based politics has increasingly become common in the larger cities of the United States. National issues such as abortion rights, gay rights, and social welfare spending have also become important in local politics almost everywhere.[76] Because voters care about many national issues, it is difficult to imagine how an old-style party machine oriented to ethnic voters or to a politics of immediate material rewards would again emerge in any city.

Richard M. Daley ran a tight-knit political organization in the five terms he served as mayor, but whether it should be called a "new machine" or not is subject to debate.[77] Even though it clearly had some of the elements of the classic machines, it operated in a very different fashion. As a way of securing support among a new generation of ethnic voters, City Hall distributed as many jobs as possible to pro-Daley groups, but changing circumstances made the job difficult and even hazardous. The problem with the long-standing practice of fixing job applications for favored applicants was revealed late in 2005, when federal prosecutors began looking into the city's hiring practices. On July 6, 2006, the former director of the mayor's Office of Intergovernmental Affairs and three other former employees of the mayor's office were convicted in federal court of doctoring job applications, which violated a 1969 court decree forbidding the city from making patronage appointments. (The so-called Shakman decree carried the name of Michael Shakman, a Chicago lawyer who had filed suit against the city to stop patronage hiring.) Although Mayor Daley denied any knowledge of the practices, the corruption investigation threatened to spread out of control when the convicted employees and others fearing they might be prosecuted began talking to investigators. Federal prosecutors and the FBI promised that more was to come. Some people thought at the time it might even bring the mayor down.[78] By the end of 2007, two of the mayor's aides were serving terms in federal prison, and the investigation was still ongoing in 2010. The string of highly publicized cases kept Chicago's special style of politics in the news, and the presidential campaign of 2008 brought it to a national audience. But the truth is that long era of the classic party machine ended when the father, Richard J. Daley, died of a heart attack in his office in 1976. With his death, the last remnants of a colorful era slipped into the past.

Endnotes

1 Jessica Trounstine, "Challenging the Machine–Reform Dichotomy," in *The City in American Political Development,* ed. Richardson Dilworth (New York: Routledge, 2009), pp. 77–97.

2 Raymond Wolfinger, "Why Political Machines Have Not Withered Away and Other Revisionist Thoughts," in *Readings in Urban Politics: Past, Present, and Future,* ed. Harlan Hahn and Charles H. Levine (New York: Longman, 1984), p. 79. Wolfinger makes the distinction that we draw here between machine politics and a centralized machine. See also Roger W. Lotchin, "Power and Policy: American City Politics between the Two World Wars," in *Ethnics, Machines, and the American Urban Future,* ed. Scott Greer (Cambridge, MA: Schenkman, 1981), p. 9.

3 M. Craig Brown and Charles N. Halaby, "Machine Politics in America, 1870–1945," *Journal of Interdisciplinary History* 17, no. 3 (Winter 1987): 598. To qualify as a dominant political machine, a machine-style party had to control both the executive and the legislative branches of

the city for an uninterrupted series of three elections.

4 One of the last classic machines, the O'Connell machine in Albany, New York, lost its grip in the 1980s. See Swanstrom and Ward, "Albany's O'Connell Organization: The Survival of an Entrenched Machine," paper delivered at the American Political Science Association Convention (Chicago, September 1987). In Chicago, Richard M. Daley, the son of Richard J., still presides over a disciplined machine, but it relies on well-funded media campaigns and a high level of amenities and services, rather than on patronage and spoils, for its support. For a comprehensive history of machine politics in Chicago, see Dick Simpson, *Rogues, Rebels, and Rubber Stamps: The Politics of the Chicago City Council, 1863 to the Present* (Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 2001).

5 Amy Bridges, *A City in the Republic* (Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, 1984), p. 8.

6 Donald S. Lutz, *Popular Consent and Popular Control: Whig Political Theory in the Early State Constitutions* (Baton Rouge, LA: Louisiana State University Press, 1980), p. 105; Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations, *Citizen Participation in the American Federal System* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1979), p. 41.

7 William Bennett Munro, *Municipal Government and Administration* (New York: Macmillan, 1923), p. 94.

8 William N. Chambers, "Party Development and the American Mainstream," in *The American Party System: Stages of Political Development,* 2nd ed., ed. William Nisbet Chambers and Walter Dean Burnham (New York: Oxford University Press, 1975), p. 12.

9 Jon M. Kingsdale, "The 'Poor Man's Club': Social Functions of the Urban Working-Class Saloon," in *The Making of Urban America,* ed. Raymond A. Mohl (Wilmington, DE: Scholarly Resources, 1988), p. 123.

10 Ibid.

11 Ibid.

12 Ibid., p. 130.

13 "He [the boss] does not seek social honor; the 'professional' is despised in 'respectable society.' He seeks power alone, power as a source of money, but also power for power's sake." Max Weber, "Politics as a Vocation," in *From Max Weber: Essays in Sociology,* ed. H. H. Gerth and C. Wright Mills (New York: Oxford University Press, 1946), p. 109.

14 William L. Riordan, *Plunkitt of Tammany Hall* (New York: Dutton, 1963), p. 50.

15 Quoted in Dayton McKean, *The Boss* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1940), p. 132.

16 Edward C. Banfield and James Q. Wilson, *City Politics* (New York: Vintage Books, 1963), p. 125.

17 Milton Rakove, *Don't Make No Waves … Don't Back No Losers: An Insider's Analysis of the Daley Machine* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1975). The following material on Daley's machine is drawn from Rakove.

18 Ibid., pp. 114–115.

19 Ibid., p. 115.

20 Ibid., p. 120.

21 Ibid., p. 122.

22 Edward McChesney Sait, "Political Machines," in *Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences,* ed. Edwin R. A. Seligman (New York: Macmillan, 1933), p. 658. See also Robert M. Merton, *Social Theory and Social Structure* (New York: Free Press, 1949), pp. 126–127. For decades, Merton's functional analysis of political machines was widely accepted, but it has been seriously challenged in recent years. See Steven P. Erie, *Rainbow's End: Irish-Americans and the Dilemmas of Urban Machine Politics, 1840–1985* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988); Alan DiGaetano, "The Rise and Development of Urban Political Machines," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 24, no. 2 (December 1988): 247, Table 3; M. Craig Brown and Charles N. Halaby, "Functional Sociology, Urban History, and the Urban Political Machine: The Outlines and Foundations of Machine Politics, 1870–1945," Unpublished conference paper (Albany: Department of Sociology, State University of New York at Albany, n.d.).

23 A. DiGaetano, "The Rise and Development of Urban Political Machines," pp. 257–262. See also M. Craig Brown and Charles N. Halaby, "Bosses, Reform, and the Socioeconomic Bases of Urban Expenditure, 1890–1940," in *The Politics of Urban Fiscal Policy,* ed. Terrence S. McDonald and Sally K. Ward (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage), p. 90.

24 DiGaetano, "The Rise and Development of Urban Political Machines," p. 261. Urban politics is often portrayed as a morality play in which reformers are pitted against machine politicians. In fact, machines often used reforms to consolidate their power and put reformers on the ballot in order to legitimate their rule. On the other side, reformers often created their own type of political machines. For a critique of the dichotomy between bosses and reformers, see David P. Thelen, "Urban Politics: Beyond Bosses and Reformers," *Reviews in American History* 7 (September 1979): 406–412. For an example of a reformer who created a new type of political machine, see Robert Caro's masterful biography of Robert Moses, *The Power Broker: Robert Moses and the Fall of New York* (New York: Vintage Books, 1974).

25 DiGaetano, "The Rise and Development of Urban Political Machines," p. 247, Table 3. For more information on the expansion of city governments in the late nineteenth century, see Jon C. Teaford, *The Unheralded Triumph: City Government in America, 1870–1900* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1984); Eric H. Monkkonen, *America Becomes Urban: The Development of U.S. Cities and Towns, 1780–1980* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988).

26 Terrence J. McDonald and Sally K. Ward, eds., *The Politics of Urban Fiscal Policy* (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1984), Introduction, p. 14.

27 Ibid.

28 Lotchin, "Power and Policy," p. 11.

29 Stanley K. Schultz, *Constructing Urban Culture: American Cities and City Planning, 1800–1920* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1989).

30 Brown and Halaby, "Bosses, Reform, and the Socioeconomic Bases of Urban Expenditure, 1890–1940," p. 87. Interestingly, the authors found that machine cities, after reform—such as the establishment of a city manager form of government—spent more than other cities (p. 89).

31 Many sources of information are available on the Tweed Ring. The two books used here are Alexander Callow Jr., *The Tweed Ring* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1966), and Seymour J. Mandelbaum, *Boss Tweed's New York* (New York: Wiley, 1965). For a provocative, yet ultimately unpersuasive, defense of Tweed, see Leo Hershkowitz, *Tweed's New York: Another Look* (Garden City, NY: Anchor Books, 1977).

32 Martin Shefter, "The Emergence of the Political Machine: An Alternative View," in *Theoretical Perspectives on Urban Politics,* ed. Willis D. Hawley et al. (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1976), p. 21.

33 The information presented here on Abraham Reuf's machine is taken from Walter Bean, *Boss Reuf's San Francisco* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1952; reprinted 1972). Only direct quotations from Bean are cited by page in subsequent notes.

34 Ibid., pp. 93–94.

35 Paul Kantor, with Stephen David, *The Dependent City: The Changing Political Economy of Urban America* (Glenview, IL: Scott Foresman, 1988), p. 104.

36 Ernest S. Griffith, *A History of American City Government: The Conspicuous Failure, 1870–1900* (New York: Praeger, 1974), p. 183.
37 Zane Miller, *The Urbanization of Modern America: A Brief History* (New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1973), p. 121.
38 Ester R. Fuchs and Robert Y. Shapiro, "Government Performance as a Basis for Machine Support," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 18, no. 4 (June 1983): 537–550.
39 Merton, *Social Theory and Social Structure,* p. 130.
40 Robert A. Dahl, *Who Governs? Democracy and Power in an American City* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1961), p. 34.
41 See Doris Kearns Goodwin, *The Fitzgeralds and the Kennedys: An American Saga* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1987).
42 Martin Shefter, "Political Incorporation and the Extrusion of the Left: Party Politics and Social Forces in New York City," in *Studies in American Political Development,* vol. 1, ed. Karen Orren and Stephen Skowronek (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1986), p. 55.
43 Erie, *Rainbow's End,* p. 69.
44 Terry Nichols Clark, "The Irish Ethic and the Spirit of Patronage," *Ethnicity* 2 (1975): 341–342.
45 Caro, *The Power Broker,* p. 354.
46 John Allswang, *A House for All Peoples* (Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 1971).
47 For a useful review of the relationships between African Americans and political machines, see Hanes Walton Jr., *Black Politics: A Theoretical and Structural Analysis* (Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1972), Chapter 4.
48 William J. Grimshaw, *Bitter Fruit: Black Politics and the Chicago Machine, 1931–1991* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1992).
49 Ibid.
50 Erie, *Rainbow's End,* p. 165.
51 Thomas M. Guterbock, *Machine Politics in Transition: Party and Community in Chicago* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1980).
52 See Paul Kleppner, *Chicago Divided: The Making of a Black Mayor* (DeKalb: Northern Illinois University Press, 1985).
53 Michael Johnston, "Patrons and Clients, Jobs and Machines: A Case Study of the Uses of Patronage," *American Political Science Review* 73, no. 2 (June 1979): 385–398.
54 Erie, *Rainbow's End,* p. 218.
55 Jessica Trounstine, *Political Monopolies in American Cities: The Rise and Fall of Bosses and Reformers* (University of Chicago Press, 2008), p. 11.
56 Ibid., pp. 48, 242.
57 For a discussion of the role of political clubs in the evolution of Tammany Hall, see Shefter, "The Emergence of the Political Machine," p. 35.
58 Erie, *Rainbow's End,* pp. 102–103.
59 Kenneth D. Wald argues that ethnics supported machines not so much in response to socioeconomic disadvantage but out of an awareness of their social marginality and in the belief that machines would defend them from external pressures; see his "The Electoral Base of Political Machines: A Deviant Case Analysis," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 16, no. 1 (September 1980): 3–29.
60 It would be misleading to say that such practices simply reflected the desires of poor immigrants. Irish family life was disrupted by the easy availability of illicit entertainment. Catholic priests and a significant proportion of the immigrant population opposed vice activities.
61 Harold Zink, *City Bosses in the United States* (Durham, NC: Duke University Press, 1930).
62 Wolfinger, "Why Political Machines Have Not Withered Away," p. 70.
63 Allan Rosenbaum, "Machine Politics: Class Interest and the Urban Poor," paper delivered at the annual meeting of the American Political Science Association (September 4–8, 1973), pp. 25–26.
64 Ibid., p. 26.
65 John D. Buenker, *Urban Liberalism and Progressive Reform* (New York: Scribner, 1973). Joseph J. Huthmacher also provides evidence of machine legislators' support for reform; see his "Urban Liberalism and the Age of Reform," *Mississippi Valley Historical Review* 44 (September 1962): 231–241.
66 For the distinction between social and structural reformers, see Melvin G. Holli, *Reform in Detroit: Hazen S. Pingree and Urban Politics* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969), Chapter 8. We discuss the social reformers in this chapter; in Chapter 4 we discuss the structural reformers.
67 Martin J. Schiesl, *The Politics of Efficiency: Municipal Administration and Reform in America, 1880–1920* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1977), pp. 80ff.
68 Quoted in Holli, *Reform in Detroit,* p. 42.
69 Ibid., p. 92.
70 Ibid., p. 195.
71 Peter Marris and Martin Rein, *Dilemmas of Social Reform* (New York: Atherton Press, 1967), p. 7.
72 Kantor, *The Dependent City,* pp. 117–118. Machine politicians appealed to voters on the basis of where they lived (their ethnic identification), not on the basis of where they worked (their class identification). Thus machine politics reflected the "city trenches" that have divided the American political landscape into community politics and workplace politics and blunted political action by the working class. See Ira Katznelson, *City Trenches: Urban Politics and the Patterning of Class in the United States* (New York: Pantheon, 1981).
73 See James C. Scott, "Corruption, Machine Politics, and Political Change," *American Political Science Review* 63 (December 1969): 1142–1158; Clarence N. Stone, Robert K. Whelan, and William J. Murin, *Urban Policy and Politics in a Bureaucratic Age,* 2nd ed. (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1986), Chapter 7.
74 Simpson, *Rogues, Rebels, and Rubber Stamps,* p. 280.
75 Ibid., pp. 280–290.
76 Elaine Sharp, ed., *Culture Wars and Urban Politics* (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1999).
77 Larry Bennett, "The Mayor among His Peers: Interpreting Richard M. Daley," unpublished paper (June 2008).
78 Rudolph Bush and Dan Mihalopoulos, "Daley Jobs Chief Guilty"; Dan Mihalopoulos and Charles Sheehan, "Jurors Kept Focus on Case"; Gary Washburn, "Daley's Plans for Re-election Turn Murky"; and John Chase, "Things Are Not Over, FBI Boss Here Says," *Chicago Tribune* (July 7, 2006), pp. 1, 6.

CHAPTER 4

The Reform Crusades

The Reformers' Aims

In 1902, George Washington Plunkitt, a veteran of New York's legendary Tammany Hall machine organization, pontificated that reformers "were mornin' glories—looked lovely in the mornin' and withered up in a short time, while the regular machines went on flourishin' forever, like fine old oaks."[1] At the time Plunkitt delivered that pearl of homegrown wisdom, he had a valid point, but just barely. Even as he spoke, reform movements were springing up in cities all across the country. The reformers aimed to dismantle the party organizations that thrived on immigrant votes, but these movements tended to be short lived, exactly as Plunkitt observed. Reformers were often successful in persuading state legislatures to enact some reforms intended to undermine the machines; for example, some states took the administration of services out of the hands of boards of aldermen and city councils and put them under the control of professional administrators. But despite such measures, they found it hard to destroy the basic foundation of machine politics. This was not easy to do because machine politicians had a close and often personal relationship with their constituents. Their firm grip on the reins of municipal government gave them the power to decide such matters as hiring for public jobs, streetcar and utility franchises, construction contracts, and the provision of city services. Plenty of patronage and money, the lifeblood of machine politics, were bound up in these decisions.

In the estimation of the reformers, the cities were at the mercy of criminals who plundered the public purse for personal gain, but their efforts to change this state of affairs were often frustrated. Although reformers in Cleveland, New York, Chicago, and other cities sometimes succeeded at throwing machine politicians out of office and getting some of them prosecuted in the courts for corruption, the offending politicians were easily replaced by men cut from the same cloth. Commenting on this fact of life, Englishman James Bryce expressed the view that "the government of cities is the one conspicuous failure of the United States."[2] Reformers shared his opinion. Writing in 1909, the author of a textbook on municipal government made this assessment:

> The privilege seeker has pervaded our political life. For his own profit he has willfully befouled the sources of political power. Politics, which should offer a career inspiring to the noblest thoughts and calling for the most patriotic efforts of which man is capable, he has … transformed into a series of sordid transactions between those who buy and those who sell governmental action.[3]

Concerns about political corruption were closely connected to a rising fear of foreign immigrants. The reaction against the "Great Unwashed" had been building for a long time. As early as 1851, an article in the *Massachusetts Teacher* asked,

> The constantly increasing influx of foreigners … continues to be a cause of serious alarm to the most intelligent of our people. What will be the ultimate effect of this vast and unexampled immigration …? Will it, like the muddy Missouri, as it pours its waters into the clear Mississippi and contaminates the whole united mass, spread ignorance and vice, crime and disease, through our native population?[4]

The earlier generations of immigrants were scandalized by lurid newspaper accounts of prostitution, gambling, and public drunkenness in the immigrant wards. Religious moralists secured state and local laws abolishing prostitution, gambling, and Sunday liquor sales. To teach immigrant children middle-class versions of dress, speech, manners, and discipline, reformers passed laws requiring school attendance and raised the upper age limit for mandatory schooling. Truant officers were hired to search for wayward youth.

The vicious reaction against immigrants aggravated the racial, class, and religious tensions that had divided America for almost a century. Immigrants were compared to the Goths and Vandals who invaded the Roman Empire in the second century AD. In his book *Our Country,* the Reverend Josiah Strong accused them of defiling

the Sabbath, spreading illiteracy and crime, and corrupting American culture and morals. Gathered into the cities, he said, immigrants provided "a very paradise for demagogues" who ruled by manipulating the "appetites and prejudices" of the rabble.[5]

The spatial segregation that separated neighborhoods provided fuel for the fears and prejudices of the more privileged members of society. By the turn of the century, all large cities contained sprawling, overcrowded immigrant ghettos near the waterfronts and factories, with middle- and upper-class neighborhoods located farther from the urban center. Jobs, though, were concentrated in downtown districts, and affluent city residents could hardly escape seeing, on their way to work and to shop, the rundown tenements, dirty streets, and littered alleys where the immigrants lived.

The fight to reform the urban political system was mounted by an alliance that brought together wealthy industrialists and other members of the upper class, well-educated members of the middle class, and middle-class voters. Andrew Carnegie and John D. Rockefeller initially financed the New

OUTTAKE

Municipal Reform Was Aimed at the Immigrants

The municipal reforms of the early twentieth century were designed to undercut the electoral influence of working-class and immigrant voters. Virtually all machine politicians came from working-class, immigrant origins. Most machine bosses, like their followers, had little formal education; typically they had started out in politics by carrying messages and working on election day. Reformers were at the other end of the social spectrum. Most of the prominent reformers of the Progressive Era were upper-class people, and many, in fact, were wealthy industrialists, with names like McCormick, du Pont, Pinchot, Morgenthau, and Dodge. Most of them had a college education in a day when this fact marked a very select social stratum.

Machine politicians, ethnic voters, and working-class groups usually opposed reforms because they correctly perceived that these were designed to make it more difficult for working-class candidates to win public office. In the big cities where they exerted a commanding electoral presence, immigrant voters were generally successful in opposing key features of the reform agenda, but elsewhere the reformers managed to reduce the political influence of those they called the Great Unwashed. The reformers' aims were laid bare in the 1938 municipal elections in Jackson, Michigan. The local chamber of commerce persuaded voters to approve a charter that replaced wards with an at-large election system. Working-class and immigrant candidates now had to compete for votes outside their own neighborhoods; no longer could they win a council seat simply by winning enough votes in their own wards. The slate of candidates sponsored by the chamber of commerce swept into office. The new mayor and the council members celebrated with a reception in the Masonic Hall, which excluded Catholics from membership, and once in power, they dismissed most of the city's Roman Catholic employees.

Sources: George Mowry, *The Era of Theodore Roosevelt, 1900–1912* (New York: Harper & Row, 1958); James Weinstein, *The Corporate Ideal In the Liberal State, 1900–1918* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1968).

York City Bureau of Municipal Research, founded in 1906. The U.S. Chamber of Commerce provided office space and paid the executive secretary of the City Managers Association for several years. Civic clubs and voters' leagues generally contained names from elite social directories, and the professionals involved in reform tended to be the most prestigious members of their professions. They succeeded in selling their message to growing numbers of middle-class voters. Between 1870 and 1910, the number of clerical workers, salespersons, government employees, technicians, and salaried professionals multiplied 7.5 times, from 756,000 to 5,609,000.[6] The growing middle class constituted a formidable political force, and with their support the reformers accomplished most of their major aims within a couple of decades. The way Americans elect their leaders, hire public employees, and administer public services still reflects the politics of the reform era.

The Fertile Environment for Reform

In the first decades of the twentieth century a reform impulse swept the nation, energized in equal measure by concerns about corruption at all levels of government and the enormous power wielded by corporate moguls.

Several developments ushered in the period known as the Progressive Era. Ostentatious displays of wealth contrasted starkly with grinding poverty in city and countryside. Newspapers, magazines, and books created a keen awareness about these conditions among upper-class and educated middle-class readers. By the turn of the century, falling paper prices and technical advances in rapid printing made it possible to produce high-quality mass-circulation newspapers and magazines. During the 1890s, newspaper circulation doubled and then tripled. A multitude of new periodicals appeared. All that was required to develop a mass audience was a way to popularize the press. Muckraking was such a technique. Crusading journalists investigated and reported "inside stories" exposing organized vice and the corruption of the urban machines. They also wrote sensational accounts about pervasive corruption in the national government, big business, the stock market, and the drug and meatpacking industries.

Beginning with its September 1902 issue, *McClure's* magazine printed a series of seven articles by Lincoln Steffens that told lurid stories of municipal corruption in the nation's big cities. In October, *McClure's* carried an article by Ida Tarbell exposing corporate corruption and profiteering by John D. Rockefeller's Standard Oil Company. Colorful stories of this kind attracted a large readership because they fed an insatiable appetite for shocking accounts of wrongdoing in business and government. Over the next few years, *Munsey's, Everybody's, Success, Collier's, Saturday Evening Post, Ladies' Home Journal, Hampton's, Pearson's, Cosmopolitan,* and dozens of daily newspapers published stories that contributed to a popular feeling that America's political, economic, and social institutions had become corrupt. Big business was accused of producing unsafe and shoddy goods, fixing prices, and crushing competition. There were exposés of fraudulent practices in banking; heartrending accounts of women and children working at long, tedious, and dangerous jobs in factories and sweatshops; and stories about urban poverty, prostitution, white slavery, and business–government collusion to protect vice.

An outpouring of books played on the same themes. In 1904, Steffens gathered his *McClure's* articles together into a best-selling volume, *The Shame of the Cities.* Other popular titles included *The Greatest Trust in the World,* an exposé of price-fixing and collusion in the steel industry; *The Story of Life Insurance*; and *The Treason of the Senate,* which detailed systematic bribery of U.S. senators. Several novelists entered the field. In his novel *An American Tragedy,* Theodore Dreiser described the corrupting influence of greed on a self-made small-town boy. Dreiser's *Sister Carrie* and David Graham Phillip's *Susan Lenox* vividly portrayed how the impersonal forces of urban life victimized young women. In *The Financier,* Dreiser's story revolved around the ruthless drive for power and wealth, using the Chicago streetcar magnate Charles Yerkes as his model.

The literature produced by the muckrakers—an epithet applied to them in 1906 by President Theodore Roosevelt, referring to a character in John Bunyan's 1645 book *Pilgrim's Progress* who was too busy raking muck to look up and see the stars—was influential in building popular interest in reform. Although the details of reform were often dull and unexciting to the average citizen, the muckrakers' stories gave a feeling of drama and urgency to the cause of reform. No work was more influential than Upton Sinclair's *The Jungle*, a classic work still assigned in college courses. Sinclair tells a riveting story of a Lithuanian immigrant's fight to survive in a corrupt and chaotic Chicago. Beaten down by destitution and poverty, eventually his wife becomes a prostitute, his children die, and he becomes a socialist revolutionary. Sinclair's nauseating accounts of the conditions in Chicago's meatpacking industry (the rats, feces, chopped fingers, and spoiled meat swept into sausage vats) catalyzed a national crusade that prompted Congress to establish the U.S. Food and Drug Administration in 1905.

The political backlash created by the muckrakers catalyzed the formation of organizations dedicated to the goals of regulating business practices, improving working conditions, imposing standards on the professions, and reforming government. Business leaders organized the National Civic Federation in 1900. By advocating workers' compensation and other modest social insurance schemes, the founders of the federation hoped to undermine more militant demands proposed by union organizers.[7] The National Child Labor Committee was organized in 1904 to fight for child labor legislation. In 1910, the National Housing Association brought together housing reform groups from many cities to campaign for building codes. Numerous public officials' associations and municipal research bureaus came into existence specifically to promote municipal reform: the National Association of Port Authorities, the Municipal Finance Officers Association, the American Association of Park Superintendents, the Conference of City Managers, and the National Short Ballot Association.

Although flagrant corruption energized campaigns to "throw the rascals out" in a few cities in the 1870s and 1880s, the issues tended to be local and the remedies specific to an immediate circumstance. But in the 1890s, the reform cause was transformed into a national crusade. Citizens' groups sprang up all across the country to lobby

for improved public services and honesty in government. The problems faced by the reformers varied little from one city to the next. Like-minded reformers from different cities soon began to exchange advice and information about their efforts. It did not take long before these informal networks became transformed into national organizations.

In 1894, delegates to the First Annual Conference for Good City Government met in Philadelphia to establish the first national municipal reform organization, the National Municipal League. The delegates to the conference were united in the belief that machine politicians and their immigrant constituents had corrupted democratic institutions in the cities. But they disagreed about the measures that should be taken to change this situation. "We are not unlike patients assembled in a hospital," one of the participants put it, "examining together and describing to each other our sore places."[8] After the formation of the National Municipal League, the nationalization of reform proceeded quickly. Within two years, 180 local chapters were affiliated with the league, and, by the turn of the century member organizations had sprung up all across the country. In their annual meetings, reformers got a chance to compare notes, and by the time they met in November 1899, the members of the National Municipal League were able to reach agreement on a model municipal charter they could use as a blueprint for "good government."

As a strategy for undermining the close relationship between politicians and their immigrant constituents, the Municipal League's model charter recommended that electoral wards be abolished; instead, each city council member would be elected "at-large," that is, by all the voters of the city. It recommended the abolition of the party label on election ballots, on the premise that uneducated voters cast their ballots for a symbol, but not a name. The charter urged reformers to fight for civil service appointment procedures so that party officials would not be able to use public jobs for patronage. The league also said that local elections should be held in different years than national and state elections, so that the national political parties would find it more difficult to influence local affairs.[9]

The reformers wanted to kick the rascals out, but they also wanted to make local government more efficient and accountable to the tastes and preferences of middle-class voters. The model charter drawn up by the league urged reformers to give the mayor the power to appoint top administrators and to veto legislation. The assumption behind this reform—called "strong mayor government"—was that with authority centralized in the hands of the mayor, voters would be able to hold the mayor accountable for the city's overall governance, and the spoils system presided over by city councils would be disrupted. As they saw it, the main problem was the style of politics in which city council members or aldermen cut deals behind the scenes. Finally, the league urged city reformers to seek home rule, which would give cities, and their voters, broad powers to control their own affairs without meddling from state legislatures.

Through all these reforms, the municipal reformers intended to place the affairs of the city into the hands of educated upper- and middle-class voters and, increasingly, in a cadre of professionally trained and credentialed administrators. Within a few decades, the municipal reform movement managed to build a bureaucratic mode of governance that generations of Americans have often complained about.

The Campaigns against Machine Rule

The intense enmity shared by the reformers toward the urban machines and their immigrant constituents motivated them to cast about for a variety of remedies for the ills they observed. Some reformers went so far as to question the wisdom of universal suffrage, claiming the immigrants were too ignorant and illiterate to vote intelligently. The Tilden Commission, appointed by the New York legislature to investigate the Tweed Ring scandals in New York City, recommended in 1878 that suffrage be restricted to those who owned property.[10] The commission's report was reprinted in an 1899 issue of *Municipal Affairs,* the National Municipal League's magazine, and many reformers read it approvingly. Andrew D. White, the first president of Cornell University, summed up the case for disenfranchising the immigrants in an 1890 issue of *Forum:*

> A city is a corporation; … as a city it has nothing whatever to do with general political interests. … The questions in a city are not political questions. … The work of a city being the creation and control of the city property, it should logically be managed as a piece of property by those who have created it, who have a title to it, or a real substantial part in it, … [and not by] a crowd of illiterate peasants, freshly raked in from the Irish bogs, or Bohemian mines, or Italian robber nests.[11]

However attractive the idea of attaching property qualifications to the vote might have been, such a drastic

remedy was simply impractical. To wage a campaign on this issue would certainly have provoked a negative reaction, even from some of the groups that supported reform. From the constitutional period until the Jacksonian reforms of the 1820s and 1830s, most states had restricted the vote to owners of property. The abolition of these restrictions had been celebrated as a triumph for popular democracy. Virtually everyone understood that the time had passed when the ownership of property could be required as a condition for voting, but a few reformers tried to do it anyway. The 1912 charter of Phoenix, in the new state of Arizona, restricted voting in municipal elections to taxpayers, but the state courts invalidated the restriction as unconstitutional.[12] Even before Phoenix's attempt to restrict the vote, it was clear that the reformers would have to find less direct and more creative methods to reduce the influence of the riffraff and rabble.

Few reformers seriously questioned the idea that immigrants should participate in the democratic system. They were convinced the real problem with elections was that they were run by machine politicians who took advantage of their immigrant constituents, and they were not entirely wrong. Municipal elections were notoriously chaotic and corrupt, conducted, as they were, in the absence of well-established rules and regulations. Because the political parties were considered private organizations, their nominating procedures were not regulated at all. To select candidates for public office, political parties held nominating conventions and ward caucuses according to their own changeable and unwritten rules, often on short notice and at locations known only to insiders. It was not unusual for caucuses to be held in the back rooms of saloons owned by ward bosses. According to one scholar,

> This was the period of massive voting frauds. In the elections of 1868 and 1872, 8 percent more people voted in New York state than were registered. In 1910, when the New York City vote was challenged and recounted, half of the votes were found to be fraudulent. In New Jersey, the stuffing of ballot boxes was so common that the state legislature replaced the wooden boxes with glass ballot jars. In Pennsylvania and Michigan, gangs of thugs moved from polling place to polling place beating up the opposition and voting at will. Fictitious and repeat voters, false counting, and stuffed ballot boxes were such regular features of city elections that voting statistics from this period are suspect.[13]

A Philadelphia politician once boasted that the signers of the Declaration of Independence were machine loyalists: "'These men,' he said, 'the fathers of American liberty, voted down here once. And,' he added with a sly grin, 'they vote here yet.'"[14]

Machine workers sometimes completed the ballot for voters or accompanied them into the voting booth. "Farmer Jones," a member of the Chicago machine in the 1890s, revealed to an inquiring reformer how he guaranteed voter loyalty:

> [The reformer asked,] "When you got the polling stations in your hands, what did you do?"
> "Voted our men, of course."
> "And the negroes, how did they vote?"
> "They voted as they ought to have voted. They had to."
> "… how could you compel those people to vote against their will?"
> "They understood, and besides," said he, "there was not a man voted in that booth that I did not know how he voted before he put the paper in the judges' hands."[15]

On the chance that other methods were not sufficiently reliable, some machines directly paid for the vote. The 1896 election in the First Ward of Chicago provides a good example:

> The bars were open all night and the brothels were jammed. By ten o'clock the next morning, though, the saloons were shut down, not in concession to the reformers, but because many of the bartenders and owners were needed to staff the First Ward field organization. The Bath, Hinky Dink and their aides ran busily from polling place to polling place, silver bulging in their pockets into which they dug frequently and deeply. The effort was not in vain, and the outcome was gratifying.[16]

Not trusting in fraud alone, machine politicians sometimes resorted to intimidation and violence. In his 1898 campaign for alderman, the Chicago ward boss John Powers threatened voters and told business owners they would lose their business licenses unless they supported him.[17] "Hinky Dink" Kenna and "Bathhouse John" Coughlin of Chicago's First Ward defended their loyal constituents but routinely harassed opponents. In the bootleg era of the 1920s, organized crime and machine politics became closely coupled in Chicago. Gangland hits were visited on meddling politicians who stood outside the inner circle of men controlling and protecting illegal liquor, speakeasies, prostitution, and gambling.

Flagrant election-day corruption energized those who opposed such abuses. Ed Crump, the boss of Memphis, Tennessee, won his first mayoral election in 1909 by watching the polls himself. He personally stopped the use of marked ballots by a machine organization he was opposing, in one case by hitting a voter in the face.[18] In Pittsburgh's state and city elections of 1933, the Democrats and Republicans—both rightly fearing fraud by the

other party—mobilized opposing armies of poll watchers. The state police were called in to keep the peace, and lawyers and judges stood by to provide quick court action.[19]

In the late 1890s, reformers introduced several measures intended to reduce election fraud. The key reforms included:

- *Voter registration and literacy requirements.* These requirements reduced repeat voting and stopped the practice of importing voters for an election. By 1920 almost all states had imposed registration laws.
- *Australian ballot.* This was a ballot that could be marked only by the voter, and it was cast in secret. Before the Australian ballot was introduced in the 1880s, the parties printed the ballots and often marked and placed them in a ballot box in front of observers. The ballots were even handed to voters already marked. Use of the Australian ballot became universal after the turn of the century.
- *Nonpartisan elections.* Reformers fought hard to remove party labels of any kind from municipal, election ballots. Where they succeeded, voters had only one clue as to how they should vote: the printed name of the individual candidate.

Although these reforms brought a measure of order and honesty to urban elections, they also had the effect of reducing voting participation by immigrants and less educated voters. Where there were no precinct captains and party workers to help voters register or look over a sample ballot, large numbers of voters were effectively disenfranchised. Twenty-five percent of the white males of voting age in the United States in 1900 were firstgeneration immigrants, and two-thirds of them had come from non-English-speaking countries. In the industrial cities, typically more than two-thirds of the voters were foreign-born immigrants. Illiterate voters often asked for help in reading and filling out the ballot, or requested one that was already completed. When they showed up at the polling place, no one questioned their right to cast a vote. After reforms were adopted, they were required to register in writing, often months before an election. And when they went to the polling station they now faced an election judge, a voting booth, and a printed ballot they could not read. Machine politicians were often able to get around the problems of the secret ballot by controlling the polling places, but these actions exposed them to the possibility of criminal prosecution.

By 1905, voter registration laws had been placed on the books in most states.[20] In the next few years states and localities set up election boards, made it illegal to vote more than once, and tried to define the legitimate uses of campaign funds. Although enforcement was uneven, especially in the cities—the machines continued to control prosecutors and the courts in many places—the existence of new laws provided the basis for investigations and prosecutions when the middle- and upper-class public became disturbed about corruption.

Once electoral reforms were put in place, municipal reformers focused their attention on the machine organizations. It was obvious that machine politicians derived their strength from ethnic neighborhoods and that the machines relied upon the ability of uneducated voters to easily identify a party label printed on the ballot. By voting a straight party ticket, the voter did not have to read the candidates' names. To make it harder for the voters to support machine candidates in this way, the reformers fought hard for two reforms—nonpartisan ballots and at-large elections.

Reformers argued that party labels encouraged blind loyalty to a political organization. They wanted a more "rational" informed voter who possessed the ability to "accumulate and carry in his head the brief list of personal preferences and do without the guidance of party names and symbols on the ballot."[21] The reformers asserted it was the responsibility of citizens to educate themselves and to vote for the best candidates strictly on their merits, not on the basis of party loyalty or ethnic solidarity. Brand Whitlock, the famous reform mayor of Toledo, Ohio, observed,

> It seems almost incredible now that men's minds were ever so clouded, strange that they did not earlier discover how absurd was a system which, in order to enable them the more readily to subjugate themselves, actually printed little woodcuts of birds—roosters and eagles—at the heads of the tickets, so that they might be more easily and readily recognize their masters and deliver their suffrages over to them.[22]

Just as the reformers intended, the nonpartisan ballot made it harder for immigrants to vote as a bloc. Reading their alderman's printed name could be hard for illiterate voters. Recognizing the party symbol on the ballot was infinitely easier than reading the names of candidates.

The reformers also believed that nonpartisan elections would change the types of candidates seeking public office. The party organization supplied campaign money and workers and freed working-class candidates from the

necessity of holding a normal job, which would have denied them time to participate in politics. Few politicians in the cities could have started or stayed in politics without the resources supplied by a party organization. Local parties pooled resources and built cooperative relationships among politicians; without them, people of wealth and social standing tended to hold an overwhelming advantage. This result was, in fact, the objective of the nonpartisanship crusade—to make politics once again a calling appropriate to the educated and cultured classes.[23]

The proposal to replace wards with at-large elections was designed to break the link between neighborhoods and machine politicians. Andrew White complained that "wards largely controlled by thieves and robbers can send thieves and robbers" into public office, and "the vote of a single tenement house, managed by a professional politician, will neutralize the vote of an entire street of well-to-do citizens."[24] The remedy was to require every candidate for the city council to campaign for support from voters wherever they lived in the city; rarely, in such a system, could one neighborhood or ethnic group produce enough votes to carry an election. Gone would be the politics of trade-offs, logrolling, and compromise among legislators representing their own wards:

> For decades the election of councils by wards had superimposed a network of search for parochial favors, of units devoted to partisan spoils, and of catering to ethnic groups that time and again had either defeated comprehensive city programs or loaded them with irrelevant spoils and ill-conceived ward projects. The ward and precinct were the heart of machine control, and the councils so elected were usually also infested with corruption, however acceptable the councilors may have been to the voters of their wards.[25]

Wards potentially gave even relatively small ethnic and racial groups some leverage. Lithuanian voters, for example, might be able to send a Lithuanian alderman to the city council, even if they constituted a tiny proportion of a city's total population. Wards multiplied the points of access through which groups and individuals could influence public officials. At-large elections had an opposite effect. If the city is one big electoral district, candidates representing ethnic and racial groups clustered in specific neighborhoods are handicapped; in order to be elected, they are forced to broaden their appeal to groups distributed over many neighborhoods. Because campaigns covering a city are costly and time consuming, wealthier candidates have a built-in advantage. In such a system, personal wealth and social status become the ingredients of political success.

Civil service hiring systems constituted the last big plank in the reform platform. Civil service rules were crucial because they stopped the machines from rewarding loyal supporters with patronage jobs; instead, written and oral civil service examinations would become the sole basis for hiring municipal employees, and a system of tenure and seniority would make employees safe from political firings. Reformers thought of civil service as the silver bullet because without patronage, they expected the machines to quickly wither away.

The package of reform proposals generally was rejected in the industrial cities where ethnics made up a large proportion of the electorate. In smaller places, even when the machine threat did not seem plausible, reformers were often successful in making the sale. A melodramatic rhetoric of corruption and venality turned the machines into scary bogeymen hiding just around the corner, ready to pounce at the first opportunity.[26] Such stories could just as well be, and often were, imported from cities hundreds of miles away. The reformers' job was made all the more easier because the residents of small urban places tended to share their view that local government should do little else but provide essential public services such as water, sewage disposal, streets, and perhaps libraries.

The electoral rules installed in the era of reform are much in evidence in contemporary cities. Before 1910, nonpartisan elections were almost unknown, but by 1929 they were utilized in 57 percent of the cities with populations of more than 30,000.[27] By the 1960s, a large number of states required their cities to use nonpartisan elections; these included Minnesota, California, Alaska, and most of the western states. In 10 more states, nonpartisan ballots were used in 90 percent or more of the cities (the exceptions usually being cities above a specified size). In the West, 94 percent of cities used nonpartisan elections. The eastern seaboard is the only region of the country where more cities use partisan than nonpartisan elections. The big cities managed to buck the trend: Among those with more than 500,000 people, 85 percent still print party labels on the ballot.

Reformed electoral systems were designed to reduce the influence of working-class ethnic voters, and plenty of evidence indicates that they accomplished their intended purpose. In the first years of the twentieth century, working-class candidates, some of them socialists, were elected to city offices in dozens of cities.[28] The spread of at-large elections made it much harder for candidates of this stripe to win. In Dayton, Ohio, socialists elected two aldermen and three assessors from working-class wards in the 1909 elections. This shocking outcome motivated local elites to mount a furious campaign to install an at-large system. By the 1913 election it was in place. In that year's election, the socialists received 35 percent of the popular vote and, in 1917, 44 percent, but because all candidates were elected at-large, in neither year were the socialists able to elect a single candidate. Similarly, in

1911 Pittsburgh adopted at-large elections, with the result that upper-class business leaders and professionals pushed lower- and middle-class groups out of their places on the city council and the school board.[29]

St. Louis provides a graphic example of these two electoral systems at work. The members of the city's board of aldermen compete for office through partisan elections in each of the city's 28 wards (see Figure 4.1). In a city that was 41 percent African American in 1970, race had become a hotly contested terrain. Because of St. Louis' ward system, 10 blacks won seats on the city's board of aldermen in the 1977 municipal elections (and 11 by 2000). All of them represented predominantly African American wards located in the northern half of the city. By contrast, all of the 18 wards with a majority of white voters elected white aldermen. (As in many cities, *alderman* is an official term in the St. Louis city charter and does not refer exclusively to males.)

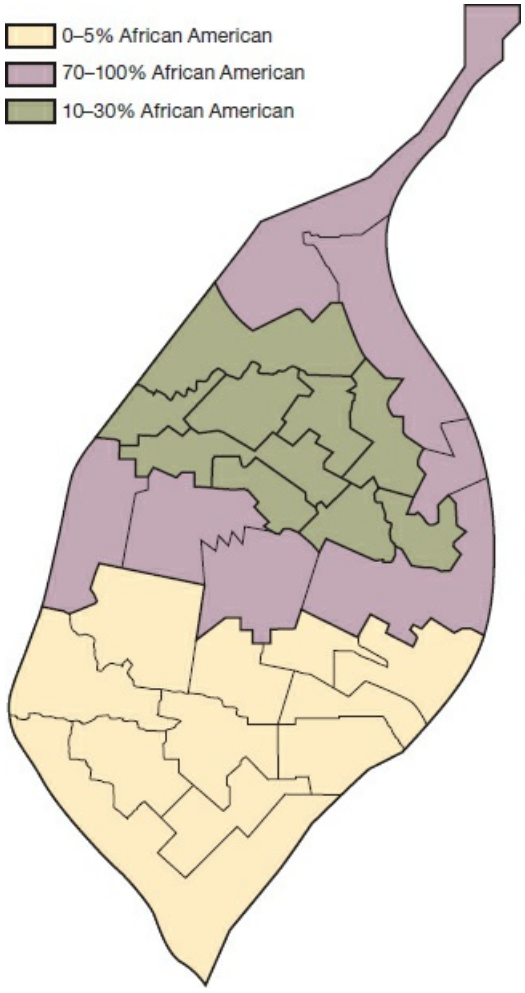


FIGURE 4.1 Racial Composition of Municipal Wards in the City of St. Louis, 1977

These results differed sharply from the outcome of the St. Louis school board elections because all the candidates were required to compete in at-large contests. In 1977, at a time when 70 percent of the public school enrollment was African American, not a single black candidate made it onto the school board. All five of the seats on the ballot went to white middle-class candidates because few white voters would support an African American candidate. The ward system ensured that African Americans would be represented in the city's legislative body, but the rules governing school board elections produced a different outcome.

However, the structure of the electoral system is only one factor that can help determine minority representation. The fact remains that, in comparison to white turnout, minority turnout is often low, with the major exception of the 2008 and 2012 presidential elections, where African American turnout equaled (2008) or even surpassed (2012) white turnout.[30] Socio-economic status is a strong determining factor in minority turnout, especially in local elections.[31] In Ferguson, just outside St. Louis, 67 percent of the population is African American, but 94 percent of the police force is white, as are 5 out of its 6 city council members.[32] The poverty rate in Ferguson, however, is 22 percent, and it is particularly high among the African American population.[33] Low

socio-economic status is known to curb voter participation, especially in local elections. In addition, a lack of African American candidates is an additional factor to lower African American turnout.[34] This shows that, in addition to the electoral system, other factors are at play as well in determining minority representation.

Over time, virtually all cities in the southwestern United States adopted some combination of nonpartisan and at-large elections. Partly as a result, a style of politics evolved in that region that was tilted heavily in favor of business elites. "Frugality, efficiency, and professionalism in public administration" have always been the themes guiding the governance of southwestern cities, but a multitude of governmental units have been willing to take on a great many responsibilities to promote local development.[35] For decades, legions of bureaucrats and professionals have found employment in special districts and authorities devoted to developing land, providing water, dredging harbors, supplying electricity, and lobbying the federal government so that business could grow.[36] Until the 1960s, candidates for public office tended to be selected by business associations. As a result, the cities of the Southwest produced a distinctive type of machine politics, though of course its participants did not give it that label. Voters tended to turn out for elections at a much lower rate than in the industrial cities of the North.[37] This state of affairs began to change in the 1960s only when civil rights and neighborhood groups mobilized in several Sunbelt cities to challenge the tightly knit regimes that had long been dominated by business interests.

"Efficiency and Economy" in Municipal Affairs

In the earliest years of the movement for municipal reform, "efficiency and economy" became code words for good government. When Theodore Roosevelt addressed the delegates to the First Annual Conference for Good City Government in 1894, he urged them to go beyond their moral outrage at the way things were being run to find ways of streamlining and improving government: "There are two gospels I always want to preach to reformers. … The first is the gospel of morality; the next is the gospel of efficiency. … I don't think I have to tell you to be upright, but I do think I have to tell you to be practical and efficient."[38] In truth, it is doubtful the reformers needed such advice. Municipal reformers were hard at work searching for guideposts marking the way to good governance. If they succeeded at kicking the rascals out, they needed to know what to do with their inheritance.

The extreme disorganization of city governments gave the reformers a big target to aim at. All through the nineteenth century, cities had tended to add new responsibilities and services piecemeal, one small step at a time. By late century, every city was governed by a multitude of independent boards and commissions administering municipal services. Organization charts had never been drawn up, making it impossible to make sense of how any individual city was run. This state of affairs seemed like a perfect recipe for chaos and corruption. Typically, a city was governed by a city council, with each of the aldermen representing a ward. Reformers claimed that this system produced a political culture of logrolling and vote-trading. Aldermen also got in the habit of filling the multitude of committees, boards, and commissions with their political cronies, who also took bribes when the opportunity arose. What was to be done? The reformers agreed that the best solution was to replace ward-based with at-large elections. The idea was that individuals with the personal resources to run city-wide campaigns would tend to win, and that therefore a better class of person would end up occupying the mayor's office. This assumption was often, but not always, borne out. Campaigns covering an entire city were expensive, and in the late nineteenth century candidates for mayor paid most of their own campaign costs.[39] As a result, mayors generally came from prominent, even upper-class, backgrounds. Working-class ethnic candidates came to the office mainly in cities with a disciplined party organization with a broad and diverse base.

To enhance the authority of mayors and administrators, state legislatures regularly intervened to take budgetary and supervisory authority from elected councils and to give these powers to mayors or to full-time boards and commissions whose members were appointed by the mayor. In 1891, the Indiana legislature gave the Indianapolis comptroller the authority to draft the budget; the council retained the authority to lower, but could not increase, appropriations. New charters granted the mayors of Cleveland and Indianapolis the right to remove executive officials, a feature that was also adopted in charters approved in other states: New Orleans in 1896 and Baltimore in 1898.[40] In 1892, New York's legislature mandated a Board of Estimate and Apportionment, modeled on New York City's, for all cities over 50,000 in population. In the 1870s and 1880s, state legislative committees assumed financial or administrative control of the police departments of Detroit, Baltimore, Boston, St. Louis, Kansas City, and New York.

Reformers became accustomed to lobbying legislatures to enact legislation that would favor the reform cause.

When they intervened in this way, legislatures became, in effect, referees among the contending interests that were trying to control local politics. Even if they had wanted to, state legislatures could not have been completely insulated from the political battles occurring in the cities. Local governments provided key public services, and representatives to state legislatures answered to local constituents; as a consequence, local and state affairs were closely entwined: "The ordinary work of state politics was local affairs, and an ordinary branch of local government was the state legislature."[41] Most legislators were not inclined to interfere actively in issues arising from local governments outside their legislative districts, and rules governing the apportionment of legislative districts limited the number of legislators coming from big cities. Research has shown that "virtually all bills affecting big cities were introduced by representatives from those cities."[42] Nonlocal representatives "routinely deferred to local governments."[43] Therefore, the important question became: Who, if anyone, spoke for local governments?

Ordinarily, the legislators who represented the biggest cities came from the more privileged sectors of society, and this occurred even where machines governed.[44] They were business leaders, bankers, lawyers, and other men of professional and social standing. The men of wealth and social prestige refused to run in the ethnic wards against immigrant saloonkeepers and party loyalists, but they possessed the personal resources to compete and win in state legislative districts. In addition, members of many of the boards and commissions of city government were appointed by governors, legislative committees, and mayors, and thus they were "protected from popular control, insulated from the undue influence of the city's aldermen, and dominated by those perched proudly on the top rung of the urban social ladder."[45]

By these means, reformers achieved some check on the ward-based city councils, but they were looking for a more comprehensive approach that might transform the governance of the city from top to bottom. To accomplish this, they thought, they needed to agree on a coherent theory of governance to guide their efforts. By the late 1890s, such a theory began to take shape, built around the premise that a singular "public interest" could be defined that benefited all citizens equally and objectively. The reformers rallied around four sacred principles of reform: (1) *low taxes*: there must be strict budgetary controls to ensure taxes would be kept as low as possible and public services delivered at the lowest possible cost; (2) *no politics*: the day-to-day administration of city government should be strictly separated from "politics"; (3) *administrative expertise*: experts with training, experience, and ability should run city services; and (4) *efficiency:* government should be run like a business, with cost efficiency being the ultimate touchstone for good government. This last plank in the "good government" platform was derived from the principles guiding the scientific management movement that swept the country during the Progressive Era. As businesses became ever larger, accountants, engineers, and corporate managers were busily inventing the structure of the modern corporation. What emerged was a quasi-military model of hierarchical administrative control.

In 1911, Frederick Winslow Taylor became a household name with the publication of his book *The Principles of Scientific Management*.[46] Taylor's life work was devoted to the application of military discipline and hierarchy to the workplace, factory, and even daily life. He urged employers to study the movements of individual workers to discover how work tasks could be organized to achieve maximum output with a minimum expenditure of each worker's time and energy. Taylor promised that the application of his efficiency principles would bring progress, prosperity, and happiness to society and material wealth to all. By making management into a science, Taylor said, it would be possible to achieve harmony and cooperation between owners and workers because both had the same interest in maximizing output. There was even a spiritual side; principles of efficiency would allow each worker to develop "his greatest efficiency and prosperity."[47] The essence of the Taylor catechism was that "In the past, the man has been first; in the future the system must be first."[48] Taylor and his disciples spread an urgent message: "Soldiering" (slow work) and inefficiency should be stamped out at home as well as at work. Popular magazines featured articles on efficient housework—describing, for instance, how a homemaker could sequence her daily chores and arrange appliances and furniture to minimize wasted movement while doing household work. By playing upon a universal desire for prosperity and social harmony, the efficiency movement quickly achieved the status of a secular religion; the scientific management movement swept across the country.

To its disciples, scientific management seemed to promise a bloodless revolution, a solution to hostile employer–worker relations, disastrous economic panics, and poverty and want. Efficiency societies sprang up in cities all over the country, and efficiency experts were in great demand as speakers.[49] Taylor's followers invaded the factories to spread the gospel of efficiency. Efficiency and scientific management—"business methods"—also

became the model for municipal reform. The advantages of applying efficiency principles to the workings of government seemed obvious: "The rising prestige of technicians in industry and the increasing demand for new public works and municipal services strengthened the desire for more technical efficiency in local government."[50]

In 1912, Henry Brueré, the first director of the privately funded New York Bureau of Municipal Research, published a book applying efficiency principles to municipal management.[51] Brueré argued that much of the mismanagement in New York City "formerly attributed to official corruption and to popular indifference was really due to official and popular ignorance of … orderly and scientific procedures."[52] What these procedures amounted to were elaborate accounting and reporting devices designed to codify the responsibilities of city officials, the actions taken by them to carry out their duties, the costs of equipment and personnel, and other details. Brueré invented a scoring system whereby the efficiency of cities could be rated and compared, and with the performance of a city reduced to a number. Cities were to be rated on the basis of such items as: "Is a record kept of all city property?" "How often are the treasurer's books audited?" "Twenty questions on the protection of milk supply." "Is the location of houses of prostitution known and recorded?"[53] In all, Brueré and his aides used a list of 1,300 standardized questions to rate cities from the "worst governed" to the "best."

In 1913, Brueré was given the opportunity to make New York City efficient. In November of that year, one of Brueré's closest confidants, John Purroy Mitchell, was elected New York's mayor. Mitchell appointed Brueré to the office of city chamberlain (the mayor's policy adviser). Brueré immediately launched an attack on Tammany Hall's patronage system and managed to push through the first fully fledged civil service system in the nation. Brueré assigned the task of designing the details of the civil service system to Robert Moses, a young staff member at the New York Bureau of Municipal Research. Moses carried out his assignment with the enthusiasm of a Taylorite fanatic. He proposed a system in which every municipal employee would be closely and constantly monitored at work by efficiency experts trained to rate each worker's efficiency by applying an elaborate mathematical formula. The responsibilities of employees were codified and "given a precise mathematical grade. These grades would … be used as a basis for salary increase and promotion."[54] To implement his system, Moses instructed his assistants to draw up rating forms, which he then distributed to supervisors. The idea was that each day, the supervisors would hand a scorecard containing a mathematical score to every employee. City workers would be paid, promoted, or fired on the basis of their performance.

Such a system, if implemented fully, would have fallen of its own weight. There was no way to ensure objective ratings. The amount of time required to rate employees would have resulted in a truly enormous civil service administrative staff. Instead of spending the prodigious amounts of money required to hire hundreds of specially trained supervisors, Moses tried to rely on existing city employees. The 50,000 city employees steadfastly refused to use the reporting forms, objecting that the system was hopelessly time consuming and unwieldy, and arbitrary and capricious to boot.

The elaborate system established during Mitchell's mayoral tenure illuminates the values, assumptions, and foibles of the reformers. As Taylor had put it, "The natural laziness in men is serious, but by far the greatest evil from which both workmen and employers are suffering is the systematic soldiering which is almost universal."[55] Reformers were taking on the formidable task of remaking human beings. Such an ambition could only be based on a fundamental distrust of people as they were. An essential human element was lacking. Mayor Mitchell, while trying to reorganize city departments and implement civil service procedures, tried to reduce all "unnecessary" programs and expenditures. He instituted cutbacks in school expenditures, asked teachers to work without salaries in the summers, tried to close down special schools for persons with mental disabilities, and reduced park and recreational expenditures.[56]

New York's civil service proposals were too draconian even for most reformers, but some of the abstract principles made sense. Streamlined administration and better-trained city workers clearly could save money and improve services. Cities across the country adopted civil service systems but omitted New York City's impossibly complicated reporting system. In addition to the cities, the federal government and the states soon entered the field. President William Howard Taft appointed a Commission on Economy and Efficiency, and President Woodrow Wilson later created the Bureau of Efficiency. Between 1911 and 1917, 16 states established efficiency commissions. These commissions generally recommended streamlining budgeting procedures, centralizing more power in the governor's office, consolidating state agencies, and establishing civil service systems.[57]

The Business Model

The principles of scientific management suggested that municipal government should be modeled as closely as possible on the business corporation. Reformers pointed out that the municipal governments inherited from the past were terribly cumbersome and dysfunctional. A history of reform written by scholars sympathetic to this view described the problem in these terms:

> The reformers, who tried to get good men into office, found … that, even if they elected a mayor or council, they were intolerably handicapped by the existing systems of municipal government. [Due to] the principles of separation of powers and of checks and balances … there was no single elective official or governing body that could be held responsible for effecting reform.[58]

Reformers claimed that the "weak mayor" form of government that existed in most cities dispersed authority among too many politicians—elected aldermen plus the legions of appointed members of boards and commissions. Trying to make sense of it all, they employed organizational charts like the one shown in Figure 4.2. In this "weak mayor" organizational chart, the mayor presides over meetings of the city council, but the council presides over the departments that provide city services. The question being asked was simple: who could the voters blame if they were dissatisfied with the way the city was being run?

It was supposed that businesses operated efficiently because there was a clear separation between policymaking, which was located in a board of directors, and the tasks of day-to-day administration, which was left in the hands of professional executive officers and their employees. Applied to cities, this model would leave policymaking to elected officials, who represented their constituents, just as a board of directors in a business answered to stockholders. The policies they enacted, however, were to be implemented by professional administrators schooled in the principles of cost accounting and personnel management.

The business model required an executive with sufficient authority to run the company. Applying this insight to city government, advocates of reform lobbied for city charters that would reduce the number of elected officials and create a "strong mayor" with authority to appoint most city officials and veto legislation. In 1899, the National Municipal League published a model city charter that contained charts much like the one displayed in Figure 4.3. In this scheme, the mayor presides at the top of a hierarchical chain of command with clear lines of authority and accountability. A city council of five to nine members, each elected at-large, replaces the boards of aldermen that were typical of the time. Reformers thought that with this arrangement in place, voters would be able to clearly understand who was in charge of the affairs of the city, and thus hold them accountable for how well they did their jobs.

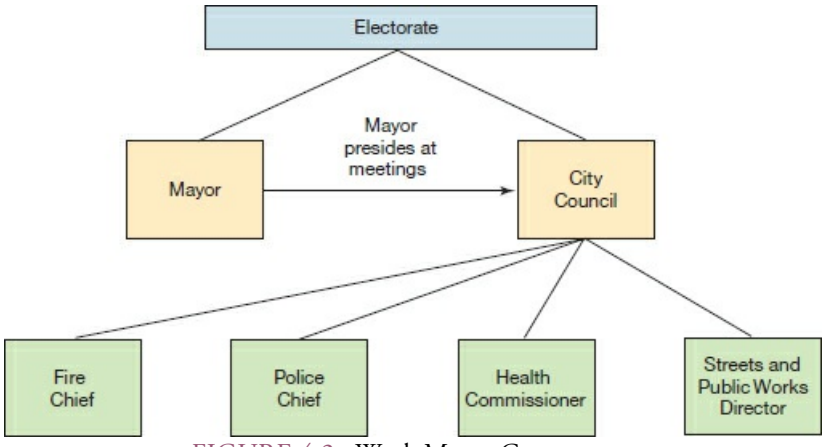


FIGURE 4.2 Weak Mayor Government

Now that the reformers felt confident they knew what to do if they won control of the cities, they launched a crusade for "home rule." They asked state legislatures to grant the cities the authority to set their own tax rates, regulate their internal affairs, and decide how and where to provide services. In this way, the cities would be free to realize the full potential offered by their new and efficient governmental structures. At its state constitutional convention in 1875, Missouri became the first state to write a general home rule charter for its cities, although the legislature retained control of St. Louis' police budget. The state still retained ultimate legal power, but Missouri's cities would not have to seek approval for their every action, as long as they stayed within their broad charter authority. Cities were now permitted to hire new sanitation workers and firefighters, for example, or build a new street without consulting with members of the legislature. The general charter spelled out the range of services to

be provided, but not such details as salary levels, the location of firehouses and streets, and the number of city employees. The home rule movement, pushed hard by the National Municipal League and other organizations, quickly spread across the country. By 1925, 14 states had granted home rule to their cities, and today virtually all cities are governed by "home rule" charters.

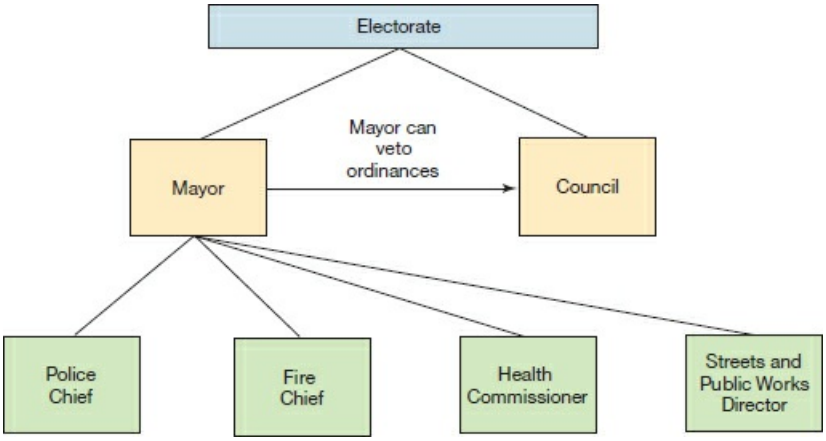


FIGURE 4.3 Strong Mayor Government

Commission and Manager Government

Galveston, Texas, established the first municipal government derived explicitly from the model of the business corporation. In 1894, Galveston's business and professional leaders organized a campaign to elect business leaders to the most significant positions in the city government. The following year, a coalition of city council members and business leaders secured a charter amendment from the Texas legislature that abolished wards and created at-large elections. To the reformers' great disappointment, however, this new election procedure did not result in the sweeping changes its sponsors had hoped for. Over the next few years, a few businessmen were elected to the city council, but on important matters they were regularly outvoted.[59]

A natural disaster provided the pretext for business and corporate leaders to assert themselves decisively. On September 8, 1900, hurricane-driven waves breached the seawall protecting Galveston, and the inrushing sea washed over the town, killing 6,000 of its 37,000 residents. Half of all property in the city was destroyed. In an effort to rebuild Galveston, business leaders organized the Deepwater Committee and set out to gain control of local government. The members of the committee argued that if "a municipality is largely a business corporation,"[60] then it follows that it should be run like one, with the voters acting in the role of stockholders and a board of directors—an elected commission—responsible to them. Guided by this principle, the Deepwater Committee drafted an outline of a commission form of government and asked the state legislature to approve it. Their proposal was promptly enacted.

The Galveston Plan created a five-member commission that exercised the legislative powers previously assigned to the city council, as well as the administrative authority to oversee the city's services. Each of the commissioners assumed responsibility for a department of government. Such a concentration of authority seemed entirely appropriate, and even necessary, in the context of the emergency that followed the hurricane. Initially, the commission was even granted jurisdiction over criminal and civil law enforcement in the city, although a state court subsequently struck down this authority. Even so, the commission exercised sweeping powers. Headed by five leading members of the business community, Galveston initiated a vigorous rebuilding program, and, in the process, the city reduced its debts and restored and improved public services.

The notable success of Galveston's experiment in commission government gained national attention. The new idea spread like wildfire. Its appeal was obvious: It seemed to streamline government, make public service attractive to upper- and middle-class people, and offer a straightforward plan around which reformers could rally in challenging the machines and party bosses. Galveston's performance so impressed business leaders in other Texas cities that they pressed the Texas legislature to allow them to follow Galveston's example and install commission government. By 1907, seven major cities in the state had imitated Galveston's charter, including Houston, Dallas, and Fort Worth.

In 1908, voters in Des Moines, Iowa, gave the commission concept a shot in the arm by placing it within an

entire package of reform. In addition to a five-member commission, Des Moines adopted the initiative, referendum, and recall; nonpartisan and at-large elections; and a civil service system. This package, which reformers labeled the Des Moines Plan, caught on rapidly. The Plan was adopted by 23 cities in different parts of the nation in 1909 and by 66 cities in 1910.[61] By September 1915, at least 465 cities were governed by a commission, and by 1920 about 20 percent of all cities with populations of more than 5,000 had adopted the model.[62] During these years, a few states made commission government compulsory for their cities, and in most states it became an option for cities that wanted to adopt it.

Reformers promoted the Des Moines Plan as a cure for every ill, sure to bring less taxation, more efficient public services, and a "better class of men" to government. In city after city, it was promoted as a means of making government more businesslike. Accordingly, chambers of commerce and other organized business groups became the strongest backers. The Commercial Club succeeded in pushing through Des Moines' new charter in 1907, although, interestingly, the first commissioners voted into office represented a working-class slate—much to the dismay of the charter's sponsors.[63] In Pennsylvania, the Pittsburgh Chamber of Commerce organized a statewide convention of business organizations to persuade the state legislature to require cities above a minimum size to adopt commission government. The coalition of bankers, merchants, and manufacturers secured the legislation in 1913.[64]

Despite its appeal, commission government had some problems. To its critics, its worst feature was that it did not fit the business model faithfully enough. A commission was not truly like a board of directors because commissioners engaged in both policymaking and administration. Because each of the commissioners headed a separate administrative department, they often refused to cooperate. Sometimes they built personal empires by handing out jobs and contracts, thereby acting a lot like the machine politicians they had replaced. It was hard for the mayor to prevent such practices because each of the commissioners was a "first among equals." This defect was the chief complaint of the secretary of the National Short Ballot Association, Richard S. Childs. Noting that commission government was "an accident, not a plan" (referring to the Galveston emergency that brought it into being), he addressed the problem of having five coequal executives: "The theory that the commission as a whole controlled its members in their departmental activities became neglected—the commission could not discipline a recalcitrant member."[65] Childs noted that commissioners typically ignored one another ("You attend to your department and quit criticizing mine") or exchanged favors and support ("I'll vote for your appropriation if you'll vote for mine").[66] This was not the model of efficiency that reformers like Childs had in mind.

The crusaders for reform responded to these criticisms by putting forward a new idea: place administrative authority into the hands of a professional manager specifically trained for the job. As elected officials, the mayor and the council would continue to make policy decisions, but the city manager would be responsible for the day-to-day operations of government. "The reform leaders realized that technical ability could not be expected of elected officials, and they hoped that a strong mayor could appoint trained technicians and administrators as department heads."[67] In this way, the reformers hoped, the city manager would bring to local government administrative expertise and accountability.[68]

This time, the reformers intended to get the business model right. In 1913, the National Municipal League issued a report (written by Childs) recommending that commission government be abandoned in favor of the city manager plan. Only six years later, in 1919, the league amended its model charter to recommend that cities adopt the city manager form of government. In only a few years the city manager plan replaced the commission model, and by the 1920s, the commission form was regarded as a failed experiment.

Between 1908 and 1912, several Midwestern cities hired city managers. The idea caught on in earnest when Dayton, Ohio, changed its city charter. As in Galveston, a natural disaster served as the catalyst. In 1913, John H. Patterson, president of the National Cash Register Company, persuaded the Dayton Chamber of Commerce to draft a new city charter. The chamber established the Bureau of Municipal Research to promote the idea, and the Committee of One Hundred, a group funded by the business community, sponsored a slate of candidates. By organizing a campaign ward by ward, the business slate put several Republican candidates on the city council, but they were still outnumbered by politicians representing the local Democratic machine. It appeared that charter reform had failed to accomplish its purpose. Two months later, however, the Miami River flooded the town, and the municipal government was slow to organize emergency services. Patterson turned his factory into a shelter for flood victims, and virtually overnight he became the town's leading citizen. Business leaders pressed the state governor to put Patterson in charge of an effort to draw up a new city charter. A few months later, the committee

headed by Patterson recommended the city manager model, and the voters soon registered their approval.[69]

The results were spectacular. The new government improved public services, retired most of the city debt, instituted new budget-making procedures, enforced a uniform eight-hour day for city employees, and established civil service. Because of its widely advertised success the Dayton Plan, with its city manager system, quickly became the nation's most popular "good reform" reform model. Although rarely instituted in the big industrial cities, it became the most common form of government in smaller cities around the country. In the five years before 1918, some 87 cities adopted manager charters, and 153 did so between 1918 and 1923. During the next five years, 84 more cities were added to the list.[70]

The city manager plan became popular because it appeared to be the best expression of the reformers' desire to find an objective, nonpolitical, efficient way to run local government. Almost all arguments for reform were founded upon analogies to business organizations. The *Dallas News* promoted the manager plan in 1930 by asking, "Why not run Dallas itself on a business schedule by business methods under businessmen? … The city manager plan is after all only a business management plan. The city manager is the executive of a corporation under a board of directors. Dallas is the corporation. It is as simple as that. Vote for it."[71]

Despite the references to the business model, it was hard to hide the fact that the city manager plan was designed not only to bring efficient government, but also to ensure the election of a different class of people who would insulate government from the influence of the Great Unwashed. A few participants in the reform crusades recognized the issue this raised about democratic processes. A delegate to the 1913 meeting of the League of Kansas Municipalities, after listening to his colleagues orate about the necessity of treating the city as a business, protested that "a city is more than a business corporation" and "good health is more important than a low tax rate."[72] However, the vast social chasm dividing municipal reformers from the rest of the urban populace made such sentiments anathema to most reformers.

Reformers made ambitious claims about the benefits to be realized by adopting businesslike models of government. Without doubt some of their promises were overblown. Studies have shown that the adoption of city manager government had little, if any, effect on the level of city expenditures.[73] Machine and reform cities taxed at about the same rate and spent similar amounts on key public services. The major difference between them was that they distributed services and other valuable governmental benefits to different constituencies. Reform governments tended to neglect lower-income neighborhoods so that they could reward their supporters in more affluent parts of the city. They built libraries, increased services to home-owners (such as free refuse collection), and zoned land to maximize new housing developments. Above all, they promoted policies that benefited downtown businesses and corporations. Bureaucratic rules made it easy to control the distribution of rewards, as well. In the 1980s, for instance, citizens in the city of New Haven found that, "acquiring delivery of some services like tree pruning or waste disposal required attaining a series of permits from offices open at irregular, infrequent times."[74]

Bureaucratic systems often make things difficult for workers who do not have flexible hours and for people not skilled at filling in forms and following formal rules. Wouldn't it be a lot easier if a person could just tell their local alderman what they need? As convenient as that might seem, there are disadvantages to that system, too. Political appointees tend to be less professional, insiders get better treatment than anyone else, and some level of petty corruption is more or less inevitable. Whatever its frustrations, government by bureaucracy is generally less biased than any system based on political favors.[75]

Did Reform Kill the Machines?

Admirers of the reform crusades always assumed the party machines died out because the reformers succeeded in cleaning up local politics. A large number of machines had short lives of only a decade or so before they went into slow decline or the politicians that ran them suddenly lost their grip. Between 1909 and 1918, machines fell apart in Dayton, Ohio; Detroit and Grand Rapids, Michigan; Los Angeles; Portland, Oregon; Milwaukee; Minneapolis; San Francisco; and Seattle. In each case, some variety of reform was adopted and civil service systems changed hiring rules.[76] Most of the machines that survived this era died by the mid-1950s, if not before, including New York's Tammany Hall. By World War II, it would have been impossible to find a city left completely untouched by reform. Voter registration was universal and civil service hiring was nearly so; at-large, nonpartisan elections were used in most cities. Even in the big industrial cities where reform was generally less successful, election rules underwent some degree of change. Boston, New Orleans, and Pittsburgh had switched to at-large elections;

Memphis and Detroit had adopted both at-large and nonpartisan elections. Denver, New Orleans, Philadelphia, Cleveland, and Pittsburgh also became nonpartisan before World War II.[77]

There can be little doubt that these reforms made a difference, but it is also clear that they did not "cause" the big-city machines to collapse. The scholarly evidence confirms the observation that "The adoption of structural reform was not sufficient to eliminate or preclude the appearance of machine politics."[78] Machines were often adept at adjusting to the new rules of the game. In 15 cities, machines actually benefitted from strong mayor and city manager systems.[79] The reformers accomplished their goal of making someone accountable to voters, but the voters did not always respond as the reformers hoped. After Cleveland adopted the city manager plan in the 1920s, the machine put a party hack into the post.[80] Richard J. Daley built his powerful machine in Chicago, beginning with his election in 1955, despite the fact that the city's elections were nonpartisan and the vast majority of its employees were civil servants.

In most cases, the machines died because they were unable to adapt to the demographic and economic transformations that were changing the cities. Over time the immigrant base began to shrink. Irish immigration dropped sharply after the turn of the century; the bulk of new immigrants came from Italy and Eastern Europe. The Irish had been the mainstay groups for most machines, and, as their numbers declined, machines found their support gradually eroding. If they were to continue to exist at all, machines would have to adapt to the times. In New York City, Fiorello LaGuardia put together a coalition of Italian and Jewish voters to defeat Tammany Hall's candidate in 1933, and in the process he built his own, more inclusive version of machine politics. In Chicago, Anton Cermak transformed the machine by bringing Italians, Jews, Czechs, and Poles into its orbit. James Michael Curley, Boston's longtime boss, lasted longer than most other bosses, probably because the Irish were such a dominant force in the city, but he was finally defeated for reelection in 1949.[81] When he was elected mayor in 1955, Richard J. Daley was able to keep the Chicago machine from fracturing by adding middle-class white voters and the downtown business elite to its traditional base in the ethnic neighborhoods, and by rebuilding ties to African American politicians who could deliver the vote in the sprawling black-belt neighborhoods of south and west Chicago.

The second decisive blow to the machines occurred when their immigrant supporters began moving up the economic ladder. As immigrants joined the ranks of the middle class, the petty favors and patronage offered by the machines carried less weight, both in material and symbolic terms, than they had in an earlier era. After World War II, immigrants and the children of immigrants joined the mass movement to the suburbs. Precinct captains saw their neighbors moving out of the city, and sometimes they moved, too. Machines were not generally successful in reaching out to the new generation of immigrants, poor whites, and blacks who streamed into the cities during and after World War II.[82]

The Reform Legacy

Although the municipal reform movement has long since passed, the reforms adopted in that era still reverberate throughout the American political system. Rules governing elections and representation continue to be battlegrounds because they involve disputes over the role of government in determining who will reap the benefits of public policy.[83] Conflicts over the "rules of the game" were rekindled in the 1960s and in the decades to follow because of clear evidence that racial and ethnic minorities were consistently underrepresented at all levels of the American political system. The Voting Rights Act of 1965 was enacted as a way of incorporating blacks into the national political system. Federal registrars were sent into jurisdictions to register blacks, and in some cases, Hispanics and Native Americans. At the local level, lawsuits were filed in the federal courts challenging the electoral rules inherited from the Progressive Era. Groups such as the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) and the United Latin American Citizens sought to invalidate at-large electoral systems, claiming that they violated the Fourteenth Amendment guarantee of equal protection of the laws. They also asked the courts to review the boundaries of state legislative and congressional districts because, they claimed, many of them had been expressly drawn to place hurdles in the way of minority participation. The courts sometimes upheld challenges to at-large elections but issued inconsistent rulings on the constitutionality of legislative boundaries drawn to dilute minority representation (a practice known as racial gerrymandering).[84] The intensity of the battles fought in and out of the courts serves as a reminder that the rules of governing participation in the political system are as crucial today as they were during the reform crusades 100 years ago.

Research has consistently shown that at-large elections reduce the influence of racial and ethnic minorities.[85] In

response to the accumulating evidence and over the strenuous objections of the Reagan administration, in 1982 Congress amended the 1965 Voting Rights Act to make it easier for minorities to challenge local election practices. Congress passed the amendments, contained in Section 2 of the new act, in reaction to a 1980 U.S. Supreme Court decision that had required litigants to demonstrate an *intent* to discriminate before an election rule could be declared invalid.[86] In Section 2, Congress specified that challenges to local election rules could meet a much easier standard than before: They would be considered illegal if they merely had the *effect* of under-representing minorities in elected positions.

On June 30, 1986, the Supreme Court handed down a landmark decision, *Thornburg v. Gingles,* interpreting the 1982 amendments.[87] This case came to the Court after the U.S. Justice Department brought suit against the state of North Carolina, arguing that several multimember state legislative districts in North Carolina violated the voting rights of blacks because in those districts white candidates invariably won all seats.[88] The Court ordered North Carolina to create single-member districts and laid down standards for deciding when at-large and multimember district systems would be considered suspect: (1) when litigants could show it would be possible to create at least one single-member electoral district that would give a minority group an electoral majority; (2) when it could also be demonstrated that the minority group seeking more representation was politically cohesive; and (3) when it could be shown that whites had previously voted as a bloc to prevent minority candidates from being elected.[89]

At-large district systems have since been successfully challenged throughout the United States. In 1986, after finding that at-large elections made it impossible for African American candidates to win, a federal court ordered several Alabama counties to institute single-member districts for electing county commissioners.[90] In a 1987 lawsuit filed against the city of Springfield, Illinois, a federal judge ordered the city to expand the number of its electoral districts from five to ten. Because only 10.8 percent of the city's population was African American, the expansion to 10 districts was necessary if any one of them was to contain a majority of black voters.[91] (Interestingly, a different federal judge did not require this solution in a similar suit filed against the Springfield Park District.[92]) In the same year, the city of Danville, Illinois, expanded its city council to 14 members elected from seven wards after a federal judge threw out its previous system in which a three-member commission and a mayor were all elected at-large.[93]

The numerous court decisions arising from the 1982 amendments to the Voting Rights Act produced an extraordinary amount of confusion about local election rules. All through the 1980s and into the 1990s, court decisions called into question the electoral systems of hundreds of cities, counties, townships, and special districts. To preempt court action, some local governments voluntarily redrew district and ward boundaries to facilitate minority representation. Frequently, this required devising districts with tortuously meandering boundaries.[94] The attempt to redraw boundaries, however, is not a solution available to every city. It may, in fact, be available only to those whose minority populations live in highly segregated circumstances rather than in several distinct but unconnected neighborhoods, because in segregated cities it is easier to draw boundaries that seem coherent. In a series of decisions beginning in 1993, the U.S. Supreme Court invalidated congressional district boundaries that did not meet standards of "compactness, contiguity, and respect for political subdivisions."[95]

Although the courts seemed to be enforcing the compactness standard for a time, it did not necessarily signal an end to all redistricting meant to achieve representation for particular racial or ethnic groups.[96] The Supreme Court's standard could be met simply by increasing the number of legislative districts; smaller districts to ensure that even small minority neighborhoods could exercise influence in some of them. For several years, it was unclear whether there was some upper limit to the number of districts a local government might have to draw to achieve the equitable representation of minorities. By 1987, however, it seemed likely (despite the city of Springfield case) that, under normal circumstances, the number of districts already existing would be left alone.[97]

The courts took up more technical considerations as well. For example, in drawing legislative boundaries was it sufficient to count the entire minority population, or only the voting-age minority population? Most courts decided that a majority voting-age population was required.[98] Could two or more minority groups be combined so that the two together constituted the majority of voters in a district? Only, the courts said, if it could be shown that the groups were politically cohesive—and research makes it clear, for example, that blacks and Latinos do not generally vote similarly.[99]

In 1991, the issue of minority representation was placed at the forefront of the political infighting over congressional reapportionment required as a result of the decennial census of 1990. Because state legislatures

approve the boundaries for congressional districts, party control at the state level was crucial. In 1990, there were 37 blacks and Latinos in Congress. In 1992, as a result of redistricting, 19 additional blacks and Latinos were elected to Congress. In many states, it was Republicans, working with the Congressional Black Caucus, who promoted the formation of districts safe for minority candidates. This move not only increased the number of minority representatives in Congress, but also the number of districts where a Republican candidate was competitive.[100] Complicated gamesmanship of this sort became a standard feature of legislative apportioning.

In June 1991, the Supreme Court ruled that judicial elections in Louisiana and Texas violated the 1982 Voting Rights Act because at-large election districts diluted the electoral strength of minorities. A flurry of lawsuits followed that challenged election procedures for state and local judges. Traditionally, nearly all state and local judges have been elected at-large—that is, multiple positions are filled in each electoral district. This perhaps explains why, as of 1985, only 3.8 percent of judges in state courts were African American and only 1.2 percent were Latino.[101]

The court decisions brought a revolution in local electoral practices. In 1981, 66.5 percent of cities used at-large electoral systems. By 1986, in a space of only five years, the proportion had fallen to 60.4 percent.[102] This very significant change can be traced to research demonstrating that changing from at-large to district elections did, as anticipated, improve the representation of blacks and Latinos.[103] Cities almost everywhere came under pressure to institute a ward system or to redraw existing ward and district boundaries. In 1991, for example, African American leaders in St. Louis threatened to go to court to force a redrawing of the boundaries of the city's 28 wards. At the time, 11 of the 28 aldermen were African American, but a new ward map would have made it mathematically possible to give half of the wards a majority of African American voters.[104]

Court cases in the 1990s seemed to signal that except in extreme circumstances the courts wanted to get out of the business of telling state and local governments how to draw their electoral districts. In an interesting twist, the courts also indicated that electoral districts that were gerrymandered to excessively increase or decrease minority representation now would be treated as suspect. In *Shaw v. Reno* (1993), the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that a very oddly shaped district in North Carolina made up almost entirely of blacks was illegally gerrymandered, calling such districts "political apartheid." Speaking for the majority, Sandra Day O'Connor wrote, "When a district obviously is created solely to effectuate the perceived common interests of one racial group, elected officials are more likely to believe that their primary obligation is to represent only the members of that group, rather than the constituency as a whole."[105] The Court left the door open for modest attempts to take race into account in redistricting by declaring that race could not be the "predominant factor" in drawing district boundaries, and in 1996 it declared that each case would be decided on its own merits and that minority districting might be permissible if the boundaries were sufficiently compact and coherent.[106] These rulings had the effect of discouraging the drawing of tortuous boundaries but otherwise did not change the status quo significantly. Over the subsequent years, courts have been very reluctant to take on such issues.

In 2013, the Supreme Court struck down the preclearance requirement of the 1965 Voting Rights Act, dealing a fatal blow to efforts to make access to the ballot box more equitable, especially to minorities. The preclearance requirement had applied to nine states—Alabama, Alaska, Arizona, Georgia, Louisiana, Mississippi, South Carolina, Texas, and Virginia—and required clearance by the United States Attorney General, as well as a panel at the United States District Court for the District of Columbia, for any changes in the voting laws. The district attorney and the district court were to determine whether any proposed changes in the voting laws would impede with the right to vote of any minority group. In 2011, Shelby County, Alabama sued the United States Attorney General, Eric Holder, in the District Court for Washington, DC, claiming that the preclearance requirement was unconstitutional. In 2013, the Supreme Court decided to hear the case, and subsequently struck down Section 4(b) of the Voting Rights Act with a 5–4 vote. In its majority opinion, the Supreme Court saw the coverage formula inherent in Section 4(b), which mandated the federal review of changes in voting laws for the nine states, where less than 50 percent of the population of voting age was registered to vote on November 1, 1964,[107] in conflict with the federalism principle, and states' rights to sovereignty.[108] Chief Justice John G. Roberts noted that the provision in Section 4(b) was "based on 40-year-old facts having no logical relationship to the present day."[109] Roberts further noted that the country had fundamentally changed. In reference to the two hotspots of the Civil Rights Movement, Philadelphia, Mississippi, where several civil rights activists were murdered during the summer of 1964 while seeking to help register African Americans to vote, and Selma, Alabama, where civil rights protesters were severely beaten by police during a demonstration in 1965, Justice Roberts noted: "Today, both of those

towns are governed by African-American mayors. Problems remain in these states and others, but there is no denying that, due to the Voting Rights Act, our nation has made great strides." In her dissenting opinion, Justice Ruth Bader-Ginsberg mourned the end of an era:

> For a half century, a concerted effort has been made to end racial discrimination in voting. Thanks to the Voting Rights Act, progress once the subject of a dream has been achieved and continues to be made. […] The court errs egregiously by overriding Congress' decision.[110]

After the municipal reforms of the Progressive Era, it took more than half a century for questions about representation and local democracy to resurface as a contentious political issue. The years since the Voting Rights Act of 1965 may be properly regarded, therefore, as the first reform period since the Progressive Era to be aimed specifically at local electoral politics. It should be emphasized that the recent reform movement was mobilized as a result of the civil rights era of the 1960s, which asked fundamental questions about the fairness of the electoral systems put in place decades before. The new era of reform has increased representation for African Americans and for Latinos; their new-found influence has brought important changes in public policies.[111] However, the Supreme Court's decision on Section 4(b) of the Voting Rights Act bears serious consequences for voting rights in a society, which, once again, is charged with tensions about race and ethnic identity, as well as representation.

The Battles Continue

Bitter conflicts over the rules of the game still go on, although the main battleground has shifted from electoral districts to voter registration rules. Especially since the razor-thin and controversial presidential election result in 2000, Republicans and Democrats have become locked in a protracted struggle over voter registration requirements. Both parties have a lot at stake. As in the Progressive Era, strict voter registration rules tend to reduce participation for minorities, the poor, and others who find it more difficult to negotiate the bureaucratic labyrinth. The outcome of the presidential election of 2000 was decided before election day in the state of Florida, when the Republican secretary of state invalidated the registration of more than 70,000 black voters because of technical problems with their applications, such as a misspelled name or failure to change address. Several hundred were invalidated mistakenly because their names matched those on a list of convicted felons. These actions proved to be decisive; ultimately, the election was determined by a little more than 500 votes.

Both parties took the lesson to heart. Democrats redoubled efforts to make it easier to register and to mobilize voter registration drives. The Republican Party fought such reforms in a state-by-state skirmish. When immigration became a contentious national issue, their attempts to impose stricter rules of registration began to bear fruit. In 2008, a major battle erupted over whether states should impose proof of citizenship as a condition of registration, and a photo ID as a condition to vote. Previously, in most of the 25 states that required a form of identification at the polls, identification could come in several forms, including utility bills, pay checks, driver's licenses, or student or military IDs. A wave of new laws was proposed that would require passports, birth certificates, or naturalization papers as a condition of voting. Democrats charged that these proposals were thinly veiled attempts to discourage low-income and minority voters from coming to the polls; Republicans countered by asserting they were merely measures to reduce voting fraud.[112]

It is hazardous to take any of these claims at face value. It is clear that conflicts over voter participation reflect the political interests of the antagonists, a point driven home by controversies over the registration of college students in the period leading up to the 2008 presidential election. In September 2008, a local elections registrar in Virginia (a Republican) announced that Virginia Tech students who registered to vote in Blacksburg might lose scholarships or become subject to Virginia state taxes if they listed their campus as their voting address. His announcement clearly contradicted a U.S. Supreme Court decision granting students the right to vote where they go to school, but it nevertheless provoked confusion on the Virginia Tech campus. As it turns out, the Virginia case was not an exception. Eleven states discourage student voting by refusing to treat P.O. boxes and dormitories as legitimate mailing addresses for determining a permanent residency. Others have specified that out-of-state driver's licenses cannot be used to vote. All of these cases virtually invite election officials to throw out votes in close elections, as occurred in Florida in 2000.[113]

In the two years following the 2010 elections, 180 new voting restrictions were introduced in 41 states, and Republican state legislators have continued to support new voting restrictions. In January 2013, the Virginia Senate passed a redistricting map designed to reduce Democratic representation by at least eight seats. The map was defeated in the House but set a tone on voting rights for the legislative session.[114] The first three months of

2013 saw 55 new voting restrictions proposed in 30 states. At the end of March 2013, Republican lawmakers unveiled a new idea to cut the early-voting window in half, thereby eliminating same-day voter registration and Sunday voting. Critics argue that Republican policymakers are determined to place obstacles between voters and the ballot box as a way of reducing voting participation by minorities.[115]

Republicans in North Carolina were particularly active in proposing voter restrictions in 2013. Senate Bill 721 proposed reducing early voting to six days, eliminating same-day voter registration, and imposing a five-year delay on the eligibility of persons with a past felony conviction to vote and new voter ID restrictions.[116] Florida had already taken the lead in denying ex-felons voting rights. After taking office in 2011, Governor Rick Scott eliminated the automatic restoration of voting rights for nonviolent ex-offenders. The African American population in Florida stood at 16.5 percent in 2010, but black inmates made up 31.5 percent of the state prison population. Citing such statistics, activists asserted that Florida's rules had the effect (and probably the intent), of suppressing the minority vote. Howard Simon, the executive director of ACLU Florida stated, "this is one of the few government programs that has worked precisely as it was designed, namely to try to suppress the vote of as many African Americans as possible. It was designed that way in 1868, and it continues to have that effect in 2013."[117]

In 2013, the Commonwealth Institute estimated that 869,000 registered voters in Virginia would lack the new forms of identification required by new voter ID bills. Whereas in the 2012 election, voters in Virginia were able to vote by showing a form of ID from a variety of sources such as a utility bill or a concealed handgun permit, the new law restricted acceptable ID to a driver's license, passport, state-issued ID card, a student photo ID or an employee photo ID.[118] Studies have shown that restrictions like these reduce voting turnout of young people and minority voters.[119] A report by political scientists at the University of Chicago and Washington University found that, "17.3 percent of black youth and 8.1 percent of Latino youth said their lack of adequate ID kept them from voting, compared with just 4.7 percent of white youth."[120] Even in states with no voter ID laws, 65.5 percent of black youth were asked to show ID at the polls, compared to 42.8 percent of white youth.[121]

In 2012, Viviette Applewhite, a white 93-year-old female and former hotel housekeeper in Philadelphia, had her pocketbook stolen in a supermarket, thereby losing her only form of identification, her Social Security card. When she was not allowed to vote in the presidential election she initiated a lawsuit against the state of Pennsylvania. In her view "They're trying to stop black people from voting so Obama will not get re-elected."[122]

Students have also been affected by the proposed restrictions. In North Carolina, Senate Bill 666, which was introduced in 2013, proposed a tax penalty for parents whose children registered to vote at a college address by stipulating that they would not be able to claim that child as a dependent for state income tax purposes. Bill 667 proposed that student voters who changed their voting registration would be required to register their new address within 60 days and pay local property taxes.

While advocates of restrictions like these asserted that the laws are designed to ensure the integrity of elections by preventing voter fraud, opponents point to the fact that nearly every state legislature that passed such voter ID laws was Republican-run, and that the constituencies which were most affected had tended to vote Democrat.[123] Whatever side one takes in such controversies, it is clear that voting rules are not (and cannot be) neutral, and that they can determine the outcome of elections.

For the 2016 presidential elections, around 40 observers were sent to the United States by the Organization of American States (OAS) to monitor the polls, and the Organization for Cooperation and Security in Europe (OSCE) increased its amount of observers that year, sending several hundred monitors to the United States.[124] Usually, the United States is one of the sending countries for such election monitors, who get dispatched to countries with instable political systems and a shaky democratic track record. This not only illustrates the current level of political polarization, but also the high level of salience of U.S. elections to the rest of the world.

How can it be, more than a century after voter registration and polling rules were first enacted, that issues of political participation continue to be so divisive? Indeed, the debate surrounding voter registration rings particularly odd to citizens and residents of other established democracies, where voting is simply a right that comes with citizenship, and does not require the extra step of registration. Citizens simply go to the polls and cast their vote without having to register to do so. So, what brings about the intense level of contestation around this issue in the United States? The era of municipal reform suggests the answer. Reform, even in established democracies, is always motivated by political goals and purposes, however noble the stated principles may seem. In politics, the rules governing participation matter more than almost anything else because they determine who will

govern, and therefore who will benefit. Accordingly, they will always be the object of conflict and contention.

Endnotes

1 William L. Riordon, *Plunkitt of Tammany Hall* (New York: Dutton, 1963), p. 17.
2 James Bryce, *The American Commonwealth,* 3rd ed., vol. 1 (New York: Macmillan, 1924), p. 642.
3 H. E. Deming, *The Government of American Cities: A Program of Democracy* (London and New York: Putnam, 1909), p. 194.
4 Quoted in Michael B. Katz, *School Reform: Past and Present* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1971).
5 Josiah Strong, in *Our Country,* ed. Jurgen Herbst (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1963; first published in 1886), p. 55.
6 Samuel P. Hays, *The Response to Industrialism, 1885–1914* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1957), p. 73.
7 James Weinstein, *The Corporate Ideal in the Liberal State, 1900–1918* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1968).
8 Melvin G. Holli, "Urban Reform in the Progressive Era," in *The Progressive Era,* ed. Louis L. Gould (Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press, 1974), p. 137.
9 Frank Mann Stewart, *A Half Century of Municipal Reform: The History of the National Municipal League* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1950), Chapter 1.
10 Samuel Haber, *Efficiency and Uplift: Scientific Management in the Progressive Era, 1890–1920* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1964), p. 99.
11 Andrew D. White, "City Affairs Are Not Political," originally titled "The Government of American Cities," *Forum* (December, 1890), pp. 213-216; reprinted in Dennis Judd and Paul Kantor, eds., *The Politics of Urban America,* 2nd ed. (New York: Addison Wesley Longman, 2002).
12 Amy Bridges, "Winning the West to Municipal Reform," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 27, no. 4 (June 1992): 511.
13 Arthur T. Hadley, *The Empty Polling Booth* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1978), p. 61.
14 Alexander B. Callow Jr., ed., *The City Boss in America* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1976), p. 158.
15 William T. Stead, *If Christ Came to Chicago* (Chicago: Laird and Lee, 1894), pp. 56-57.
16 Lloyd Wendt and Herman Kogan, *Bosses in Lusty Chicago* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1967), p. 169.
17 Allan F. Davis, *Spearheads for Reform* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1967), pp. 156-162.
18 William D. Miller, *Mr. Crump of Memphis* (Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1964), p. 74.
19 Bruce M. Stave, *The New Deal and the Last Hurrah: Pittsburgh Machine Politics* (Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press, 1970), p. 77.
20 Ernest S. Griffith, *A History of American City Government: The Conspicuous Failure, 1870–1900* (New York: Praeger, 1974), p. 71.
21 Richard S. Childs, *Civic Victories: The Story of an Unfinished Revolution* (New York: Harper and Brothers, 1952), p. 299. In this passage, Childs was referring to the short ballot reform in conjunction with nonpartisanship. The short ballot reformers advocated fewer elected officials so voters would not be confused and elected officials would be held accountable to voters.
22 Edward C. Banfield, ed., *Urban Government: A Reader in Administration and Politics* (New York: Free Press, 1969), p. 275. Selection from Brand Whitlock, *Forty Years of It,* preface by Allen White (New York and London: Appleton, 1925; first published in 1914).
23 Haber, *Efficiency and Uplift,* pp. 99-101.
24 White, "City Affairs Are Not Political," pp. 213-216.
25 Griffith, *A History of American City Government,* p. 130.
26 Amy Bridges, *Morning Glories: Municipal Reform in the Southwest* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1997), Chapter 8.
27 Willis D. Hawley, *Nonpartisan Elections and the Case for Party Politics* (New York: Wiley, 1973), p. 14. Subsequent information on the use of nonpartisan elections is from Hawley, pp. 15-18.
28 Weinstein, *The Corporate Ideal,* p. 109. Subsequent information on the Dayton election is from Weinstein.
29 Samuel P. Hays, "The Politics of Reform in Municipal Government in the Progressive Era," in *Social Change and Urban Politics: Readings,* ed. Daniel N. Gordon (Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1973), pp. 107-127.
30 Jens Manuel Krogstad and Mark Hugo Lopez, "Black voter turnout fell in 2016, even as record number of Americans cast ballots." *FactTank—News in Numbers,* The Pew Research Center, May 12, 2017. Accessed online: www.pewresearch.org/fact-tank/2017/05/12/black-voter-turnout-fell-in-2016-even-as-a-record-number-of-americans-cast-ballots/
31 Jordan Weissmann, "Ferguson Is Mostly Black. Why Is Its Government So White?" *The Slate*(August 14, 2014). Accessed online: www.slate.com/blogs/moneybox/2014/08/14/ferguson_missouri_government_why_is_it_so_white.html
32 Ibid.
33 Ibid.
34 Ibid.
35 Bridges, *Morning Glories,* p. 146.
36 Ibid., Chapter 7.
37 Ibid., pp. 144-145.
38 Quoted in Holli, "Urban Reform in the Progressive Era," p. 144.
39 Ibid., p. 47.
40 Ibid., p. 45.
41 Nancy Burns and Gerald Gamm, "Creatures of the State: State Politics and Local Government 1871–1921," *Urban Affairs Review* 33, no. 1 (September 1997): 90.
42 Ibid., p. 86.
43 Scott Allard, Nancy Burns, and Gerald Gamm, "Representing Urban Interests: The Local Politics of State Legislatures," *Studies in American Political Development* 12 (Fall 1998): 294; see also Nancy Burns, Laura Evans, Gerald Gamm, and Corrine McGonnaughy, "The Local Politics of State Legislatures," paper delivered at the annual meeting of the Midwest Political Science Association (April 25, 2002).
44 Allard, Burns, and Gamm, "Representing Urban Interests," p. 68.
45 Ibid., p. 76.
46 Frederick Winslow Taylor, *The Principles of Scientific Management* (New York: Harper and Brothers, 1919; first published in 1911).

47 Ibid., p. 140.
48 Ibid., p. 7.
49 Haber, *Efficiency and Uplift,* p. 56.
50 Harold A. Stone, Don K. Price, Kathryn H. Stone, *City Manager Government in the United States: A Review After Twenty-Five Years* (Chicago: Public Administration Service, 1940), p. 5.
51 Henry Brueré, *The New City Government: A Discussion of Municipal Administration Based on a Survey of Ten Commission-Governed Cities* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1912).
52 Ibid., p. v.
53 Ibid., pp. 27-29.
54 Robert A. Caro, *The Power Broker: Robert Moses and the Fall of New York* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969), p. 75.
55 Taylor, *The Principles of Scientific Management,* p. 20.
56 Melvin B. Holli, *Reform in Detroit: Hazen S. Pingree and Urban Politics* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969), p. 167.
57 Haber, *Efficiency and Uplift,* p. 115.
58 Stone, Price, and Stone, *City Manager Government,* p. 4.
59 Martin J. Schiesl, *The Politics of Municipal Reform: Municipal Administration and Reform in America, 1880–1920* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1977), pp. 134–135.
60 Quoted in Weinstein, *The Corporate Ideal,* p. 96.
61 Clinton R. Woodruff, ed., *City Government by Commission* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1911), pp. 293–294.
62 Childs, *Civic Victories,* p. 138.
63 Hays, "The Politics of Reform," p. 116.
64 Weinstein, *The Corporate Ideal,* p. 99.
65 Childs, *Civic Victories,* p. 137.
66 Ibid.
67 Stone, Price, and Stone, *City Manager Government,* p. 5.
68 Griffith, *A History of American City Government,* p. 167.
69 Ibid., p. 166; Schiesl, *The Politics of Municipal Reform,* pp. 175–176.
70 Weinstein, *The Corporate Ideal,* pp. 115–116.
71 Quoted in Stone, Price, and Stone, *City Manager Government,* p. 27.
72 Quoted in Weinstein, *The Corporate Ideal,* pp. 106, 107.
73 Anirudh V. S. Ruhil, "Structural Change and Fiscal Flows: A Framework for Analyzing the Effects Of Urban Events," *Urban Affairs Review* 38, no. 3 (January 2003): 396–416.
74 Jessica Trounstine, *Political Monopolies in American Cities: The Rise and Fall of Bosses and Reformers* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2008), pp. 162–163.
75 Ibid., p. 163.
76 Alan DiGaetano, "Urban Political Reform: Did It Kill the Machine?" *Journal of Urban History* 18, no. 1 (November 1991): 37–67.
77 Ibid.
78 Ibid.
79 Ibid.
80 Ibid., p. 67.
81 Ibid.
82 Steven P. Erie, *Rainbow's End: Irish-Americans and the Dilemmas of Urban Machine Politics, 1840–1985* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988).
83 Karen M. Kaufmann, *The Urban Voter: Group Conflict and Mayoral Voting Behavior in American Cities* (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press), p. 19.
84 Jay M. Shafritz, *The Dorsey Dictionary of American Government and Politics* (Homewood, IL: Dorsey Press, 1988), pp. 244–246. A legislative district is considered gerrymandered when it is drawn with tortuously meandering boundaries as a means of advancing the interests of a party or group. The term comes from a district drawn in Massachusetts in 1811 and signed into law by Governor Elbridge Gerry.
85 Robert L. Lineberry and Edmond P. Fowler, "Reformism and Public Policies in American Cities," *American Political Science Review* 61 (September 1967): 701-716; Chandler Davidson and George Korbel, "At-Large Elections and Minority Group Representation: A Re-examination of Historical and Contemporary Evidence," *Journal of Politics* 43 (November 1981): 982–1005; Jerry L. Polinard, Robert D. Wrinkle, and Thomas Longoria Jr., "The Impact of District Elections on the Mexican American Community: The Electoral Perspective," *Social Science Quarterly* 71, no. 3 (September 1991): 608–614; Richard L. Engstrom and Michael D. McDonald, "The Effect of At-Large versus District Elections on Racial Representation in U.S. Municipalities," in *Electoral Laws and Their Political Consequences,* ed. Bernard Grofman and Arend Liphart (New York: Agathon, 1986), pp. 203-225; W. E. Lyons and Malcolm E. Jewell, "Minority Representation and the Drawing of City Council Districts," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 23 (1988): 432-447; Delbert Taebel, "Minority Representation on City Councils: The Impact of Structure on Blacks and Hispanics," *Social Science Quarterly* 59 (1982): 729–736; Jeffrey S. Zax, "Election Methods, Black and Hispanic City Council Membership," *Social Science Quarterly* 71 (1990): 339–355.
86 *City of Mobile v. Bolden,* 446 U.S. 55 (1980).
87 *Thornburg v. Gingles,* 106 S. Ct. 2752 (1986).
88 A multimember legislative district is just like an at-large system that covers an entire city. All candidates for city council seats must run in the same district; by contrast, in a ward system, a single alderman or council member represents each ward.
89 C. Robert Heath, "*Thornburg v. Gingles:* The Unresolved Issues," *National Civic Review* 79, no. 1 (January–February 1990): 50–71.
90 *Dillard v. Crenshaw County,* 649 F.Supp. at 289 (C.O. Ala. 1986).
91 *McNeal v. Springfield,* 658 F.Supp. at 1015, 1022 (C.D. Ill. 1987).
92 *McNeal v. Springfield Park District,* 851 F.2d at 937 (7th Cir. 1988).
93 *Derrickson v. City of Danville,* 87-2007 (C.D. Ill. 1987).
94 Joseph F. Zimmerman, "Alternative Local Electoral Systems," *National Civic Review* 79, no. 1 (January–February 1990): 23-36.
95 The quotation is from *Shaw v. Reno* 509 U.S. 630 (1993), commonly known as Shaw I. Other cases are *Miller v. Johnson,* 63 U.S.L.W. 4726

(1995); *Shaw v. Hunt,* 64 U.S.L.W. 4437 (known as Shaw II); *King v. Illinois Board of Elections,* 65 U.S.L.W. 3353 (1996); and *Abrams v. Johnson,* 65 U.S.L.W. 4478.

96 Carmen Cirincione, Thomas Darling, and Timothy O'Rourke, "Does the Supreme Court Have It Right?" paper delivered at the 1997 annual meeting of the American Political Science Association, Washington, DC (August 28–31, 1997).

97 Heath, "*Thornburg v. Gingles,"* pp. 51-53.

98 Ibid., pp. 54-55.

99 Ibid., pp. 55-59; Charles S. Bullock III, "Symbolics or Substance: A Critique of the At-Large Election Controversy," *State and Local Government Review* 21, no. 3 (Fall 1989): 91-99.

100 Edward Blum and Roger Clegg, "The GOP's 2002 Racial Redistricting Dilemma," *Weekly Standard* (October 17, 1992).

101 Scott Armstrong, "Minorities Seek More Clout on the Bench," *Christian Science Monitor* (October 1, 1991), pp. 1-2.

102 International City Management Association, "Municipal Election Processes: The Impact on Minority Representation," *Baseline Data Report* 19, no. 6 (November–December 1987): 3-4.

103 Ibid., pp. 6-9; Polinard, Wrinkle, and Longoria, "The Impact of District Elections," pp. 608-614.

104 Tim O'Neil, "Blacks Want Half of City's Wards in Redistricting," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (June 8, 1991), p. 3A.

105 *Shaw v. Reno,* 92 357 (1993). In 1996 the Court rejected a somewhat redrawn 12th congressional district in North Carolina yet again.

106 *Miller v. Johnson,* 515 U.S. 900 (94 631), 1995; *Bush v. Vera,* 571 U.S. 900 (94 805), 1996.

107 *The United States Department of Justice*, "Section 4 of the Voting Rights Act." Accessed online: www.justice.gov/crt/section-4-voting-rights-act

108 Adam Liptak, "Supreme Court Invalidates Key Part of the Voting Rights Act," *New York* Times(June 25, 2013). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2013/06/26/us/supreme-court-ruling.html

109 Quoted in Ibid.

110 Quoted in Ibid.

111 Stephen Ansolabehere, Alan Gerber, and James Snyder, "Equal Votes, Equal Money: Court-Order Redistricting and Public Expenditures in the American States," *American Political Science Review* 96, no. 4 (December 2002): 767-777.

112 Ian Urbina, "Voter ID Battle Shifts to Proof of Citizenship," *New York Times* (May 12, 2008), www.nytimes.com/2008/05/12/us/politics/12vote.html

113 Nikki Schwab, "Confusing Voter Registration Laws Could Affect Presidential Election," *U.S. News and World Report* (September 24, 2008), www.usnews.com/articles/campaign-2008/09/2008/09/24

114 Ari Berman, "New Voter Suppression Efforts Prove the Voting Rights Act is Still Needed," *The Nation* (March 28, 2013), www.thenation.com/blog/173562/new-voter-suppression-efforts-prove-voting-rights-act-still-needed#

115 Steve Benen, "Three Months, 30 States, 55 New Voting Restrictions," *MSNBC: The Maddow Blog* (March 29, 2013), http://maddowblog.msnbc.com/_news/2013/03/29/17518283-three-months-30-states-55-new-voting-restrictions?lite

116 Chris Kromm, "Art Pope-Backed Lawmaker Leads Push for New Voting Restrictions In NC," *The Institute for Southern Studies: Facing South* (April 3, 2013) www.southernstudies.org/2013/04/art-pope-backed-lawmaker-leads-pushfor-new-voting-restrictions-in-nc.html

117 Bill Kaczor, "Florida Leads in Denying Ex-Felons Voting Rights," *Associated Press* (April 14, 2013), www.tallahassee.com/viewart/20130414/POLITICSPOLICY/304140029/Florida-leads-in-denying-ex-felons-voting-rights

118 Berman, "New Voter Suppression Efforts Prove the Voting Rights Act is Still Needed."

119 Benen, "Three Months, 30 States, 55 New Voting Restrictions."

120 Berman, "New Voter Suppression Efforts Prove the Voting Rights Act is Still Needed."

121 Emily Schultheis, "Study Finds Voter ID Laws Hurt Young Minorities," *Politico*(March 12, 2013), www.politico.com/story/2013/03/study-finds-voter-idlaws-hurt-young-minorities-88773.html

122 Ethan Bronner, "Legal Battles Erupt Over Tough Voter ID Laws," *New York Times* (July 19, 2012).

123 Ibid.

124 Carol Morello, "Foreign Election Observers to Cast Their Eyes on U.S. Presidential Vote," *Washington Post*(October 5, 2016). Accessed online: www.washingtonpost.com/world/national-security/foreign-election-observers-to-cast-their-eyes-on-the-us-presidential-vote/2016/10/05/2fb0646e-8666-11e6-ac72-a29979381495_story.html?utm_term=.e45f78dd8edb

CHAPTER 5

Urban Voters and the Rise of a National Democratic Majority

City and Nation in the Twentieth Century

From today's perspective, it may be hard to imagine a time when there was political support for programs to help the cities. Today, voters living in central cities account for only about 10 percent of the national vote during presidential elections, and neither political party has much incentive to promote programs for such a small part of their base. Attention to the problems of the cities emerged at a time when the calculation was different. Voters living in the industrial belt stretching from New England and through the Midwest and in some cities beyond were important to Democratic candidate Franklin D. Roosevelt's landslide victory in the presidential election of 1932, and for decades after, they continued to play a decisive role in determining the national balance of power between the two parties. The nation's 11 largest cities accounted for 27 percent of the popular vote in 1932 and a commanding majority in several of the industrial states with the largest numbers of electoral college votes.[1] For the first time in the nation's history, in the 1930s the politicians representing urban voters began to wield influence in national politics. Their loyalty to the Democratic Party fundamentally shaped American politics until the election of Republican Ronald Reagan in 1980.

Modern American liberalism, as expressed in the New Deal programs of the 1930s and the Great Society programs of the 1960s (these terms were borrowed from the campaign slogans of presidents Franklin Delano Roosevelt and Lyndon Baines Johnson), can be traced to the mobilization of the urban electorate during the years of the Great Depression. The alliance that became the foundation for the Democratic Party's ascendancy was made up of two wings, the urban North and the "solid South." Urban voters in northern cities voted Democratic because they benefited from the outpouring of programs enacted during the New Deal years. Legislation proposed by Roosevelt and supported by the big Democratic majorities in Congress granted powers to regulate the economy and to assist citizens in times of need. Urban working-class people were helped by labor legislation such as Section 7a of the National Industrial Recovery Act and the Wagner Labor Act, which established workers' compensation for death or injury, safety and workplace regulations, and the right of workers to organize unions. As a result, union members became reliable Democratic voters. The African American electorate also became important to the northern wing of the party. Even in the 1930s, decades before civil rights legislation became politically viable, the Roosevelt administration took steps to ensure that blacks received some appointments to federal posts and a share of the benefits from job and relief programs. Although southern voters would eventually become estranged from the party, until the civil rights legislation of the 1960s they stayed in the fold because a lot of the New Deal legislation benefited them too, and the bitterness of the Civil War and Reconstruction years had not yet faded enough to allow them to make the leap to the Republican Party. The odd coalition between urban voters in the North and the one-party Democratic South was forged as an alliance of convenience that began to break apart in the 1960s, when racial animosities drove a wedge between inner-city blacks, white working and suburban voters, and southern conservatives. When the New Deal coalition dissolved for good in the 1980s, the cities' influence in national politics vanished.

OUTTAKE

Urban Ethnics Became a Mainstay of the Democratic Party

It is often supposed, mistakenly, that voters in the central cities have always voted Democratic. But until the New Deal years, about half of the party machines that ruled the cities were Republican. The Democratic machines did little to deliver votes to the national ticket, either, because their leaders had little connection to the national or even to the state party organizations. At the state level, party organizations were dominated by rural, not city, politicians. Machine politicians had gotten into politics through their precincts and wards, and they specialized in a politics of ethnicity and trade-offs, not abstract principles. The machines were strictly local organizations, a product of the segregation of ethnic voters from the rest of American society.

When ethnic politicians from the cities ended up in the state legislature, they found that they received little pay and even less respect. It was often a kiss of political death to be sent away to small upstate or downstate towns like Albany, New York, or Springfield, Illinois, away from friends, family, community, and constituents. When New York City's machine organization, Tammany Hall, sent Al Smith to the state legislature at the age of 30, he had scarcely been outside lower Manhattan. He felt as if he were exiled, sent away to a foreign country:

> Al Smith went to Albany unprepared to be legislator—or even to sleep away from home…. [O]vercome by the intricacies of the legislative process, he sat day after day in the high-ceilinged chamber in silence.
>
> As he sat there staring down at the desk, a page boy would deposit another pile of bills on it. The wording was difficult enough for the expert. It might have been designed to mock a man whose schooling had ended in the eighth grade, who had never liked to read even the simple books of childhood, who, he had once said, had in his entire life read only one book cover to cover: *The Life of John L. Sullivan.*[*]
>
> Before Al Smith, who was later elected governor of New York and nominated as the Democratic presidential candidate in 1928, Tammany politicians had never prospered in Albany.

Personal loyalties and their pocket books motivated urban ethnic voters. When precinct captains took them to the polls, they voted for the local party organization, not for a cause. What in their background would excite them about complicated national issues such as tariff policy or child labor legislation? The upshot was that even when a powerful machine dominated a city, the party bosses and their loyal constituents mostly ignored gubernatorial and presidential elections.

All this changed quickly in the 1930s, when urban ethnic and labor union workers became important to the New Deal coalition.

Source: Robert A. Caro, *The Power Broker: Robert Moses and the Fall of New York* (New York: Knopf, 1974), pp. 118–119.

[*]John L. Sullivan was a famous boxing champion.

A New Political Consciousness

In 1912 a Harvard political scientist wrote, "before many years have passed, the urban population of the United States will have gained numerical mastery."[2] He based this prediction on a simple calculation of demographic trends.[3] In the 30 years from 1890 to 1920, more than 18 million immigrants poured into America's cities. These immigrants came mainly from Italy, Poland, Russia, Greece, and Eastern Europe. They were overwhelmingly Roman Catholic and Jewish. They made up the preponderance of the workforces in the iron and steel, meatpacking, mining, and textile industries. Few spoke English when they arrived, and many were illiterate even in their native languages.

The ever-present nineteenth-century nervousness about the "strangers in the land" escalated into a national phobia in the next century. The viciousness of the campaigns launched against immigrants gradually made them aware that they had a stake in national, and not only local, politics. Immigrant voters had been brought into politics by the urban party machines, but these were strictly local organizations that stayed away from big political issues. But they could scarcely remain neutral when the cultural values and customs they and their constituents held dear came under attack.

The campaigns for prohibition were aimed squarely at immigrants and their cultural values. Proposed to the states by Congress in 1917 and ratified in 1919, the Eighteenth Amendment prohibited the sale and distribution of alcoholic beverages. Small-town Methodists and Baptists—joined in their crusade by upper- and middle-class Protestants in the cities and in the privileged suburbs—claimed that if the immigrants were forced to abstain from alcohol it would reduce poverty, improve workers' efficiency and family life, and end immorality and crime. Prohibition became the most compelling political issue of the first two decades of the century because it gave middle-class Protestants and rural voters a practical way to express their hostility to the foreign immigrants crowded into the industrial cities:

> [Drinking] was associated with the saloonkeepers who ran the city machines and who used the votes of the whiskey-loving immigrant … with the German brewers and their "disloyal" compatriots who drank beer and ale. … The cities, which resisted the idea that "thou shalt not" was the fundamental precept of living, were always hostile to prohibition. The prohibitionists, in turn, regarded the city as their chief enemy, and prohibitionism and a pervasive antiurbanism went hand-in-hand.[4]

To the members of the Protestant middle class, the sins of liquor were indistinguishable from what they saw as the depraved cultural customs of Catholic immigrants. Southern and western newspapers reflexively connected crime, national origin, and liquor. When it was not legitimate to attack foreigners directly, it was easy to attack them indirectly through the surrogate liquor issue, allowing "prohibition partisans to talk about morality when in reality they were worried about cultural dominance and political supremacy."[5]

Prohibition and religion were intimately connected. To most Protestant Americans, the Roman Catholic Church represented evil incarnate. It signified ostentatious authority—the robes, the ceremony, and the architecture of Catholic churches seemed like an affront to the simplicity and informality of small-town life. Like the right-wing groups of the 1950s obsessed by the idea that an international communist conspiracy was poised to subvert the American political system, religious fundamentalists of the early twentieth century were convinced that the Roman Catholic Church was dedicated to the goal of worldwide domination.

By exploiting such fears, the Ku Klux Klan attracted millions of followers. Revived in Atlanta in 1915, for a few years the Klan enjoyed spectacular growth in both the North and the South. Klan membership skyrocketed in California, Oregon, Indiana, Illinois, Ohio, Oklahoma, Texas, Arkansas, and throughout the South. In 1924, at its peak, 40 percent of the Klan's membership resided in Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois. Half of its membership was located in cities of more than 50,000, with chapters of hundreds of members in such cities as Chicago, Detroit, Indianapolis, Pittsburgh, Baltimore, and Buffalo.[6] The Klan remained as a powerful political force until at least the mid-1920s. It helped elect a member of the Senate; governors in Georgia, Alabama, Oregon, and California; and 75 members of the House of Representatives.

Although the Klan found its most enthusiastic support among less educated fundamentalist Christians, its message also reached a broader audience. In 1916, Madison Grant, curator of New York City's Museum of National History, published *The Passing of the Great Race,* in which he worried that Aryans might someday be overwhelmed by dark-skinned races. His book was elevated to the status of a scientific work, along with Lothrop Stoddard's *The Rising Tide of Color against the White World-Supremacy* (1921).

Congress responded to the rising xenophobia with the Emergency Quota Act of 1921 and the National Origins Act of 1924. Both laws drew support from intellectuals, labor leaders, rural people from all sections of the country, and anxious middle-class voters. The Emergency Quota Act reaffirmed the total exclusion of Chinese, which had been legislated by Congress in 1882, and established a national origins quota of 3 percent of the population of other nationality groups as recorded in the 1910 census. The law succeeded in cutting immigration from 805,228 in 1920 to 309,556 in 1921–1922.[7] Three years later, the National Origins Act reduced the origins quota to 2 percent and established the 1890 census as the new baseline. The effect of the legislation was to drastically reduce immigration by ethnic groups that had come to the United States primarily since 1890. Italian immigration was reduced by 90 percent; British and Irish immigration, by contrast, declined by just 19 percent.[8] The overall immigrant flow fell sharply, from 357,803 in 1923–1924 to 164,667 in 1924–1925.

In floor debates on the two immigration bills, members of Congress reviled the foreign-born of the cities in language that could have been lifted from Ku Klux Klan pamphlets. This furious assault taught immigrant voters that national politics affected them, and in the 1920s they began to express their new understanding. Before long, it became apparent they "were not going to support candidates who wanted them to stop drinking, Protestantize their schools, or tell them as often as possible that they were inferior."[9] Opposition to prohibition was the one political issue that unified Catholic immigrants, regardless of national origin.

Earlier, when the State of Illinois began enforcing restrictive drinking laws in 1906, ethnic immigrants had launched protests and launched efforts "to endorse political candidates and lobby city and state governments to protect the free sale and consumption of liquor."[10] Over the next three decades, the number of naturalized immigrants registered to vote rose sharply, and they turned out at very high rates for local elections.[11] They were clearly becoming a political force to be reckoned with, and one of the causes that could motivate them was Prohibition. Anton Cermak, the future mayor of Chicago, began his political career in the 1920s by becoming one of the leaders of the campaign for repeal.[12] Al Smith, the Democrats' nominee for president in 1928, gained support among immigrant voters because he opposed Prohibition and he was, as an Irish Catholic, one of them. In effect, Prohibition taught immigrants that politics was not only local, but also national.

The Changing Political Balance

Before the 1930s, neither the Republicans nor the Democrats paid much attention to the cities. The Republicans, the triumphant party of Abraham Lincoln, emerged from the Civil War as the dominant party controlling Congress and the presidency. Between 1860 and 1928, the Republicans won 14 of 18 presidential contests and controlled both houses of Congress more than half of the time. Because the party's main base of support was made up of financial, industrial, and commercial interests, it opposed taxes on business, enacted high tariffs on foreign imports, encouraged private exploitation (mineral, grazing, homesteading) of federal lands in the West, and used federal troops to quell strikes. At the same time, the Republicans gained support from middle- and working-class voters in the North because the party presided during a long-term economic expansion tied closely to frontier development and industrial production.

For several decades after the Civil War, the Democratic Party tried to hold together an uneasy alliance made up of Southerners and an assortment of groups opposed to economic domination by eastcoast "big money." The party's presidential candidates appealed for support from urban workers, but a lot of other interests jostled for attention too. The chronic problem for the Democrats' coalition was its fragility. The issues that held it together arose from the abiding enmity of Southerners to the party of Lincoln, the insecurities of small farmers about credit and prices, and the tensions between business and industrial workers, but aside from their resentments, these groups had little if anything in common. The party did better during the periodic downturns but lost ground when the economy improved.

The fragile nature of this alliance was revealed at the 1924 Democratic Convention, held in Madison Square Garden in New York City. The Democrats treated the first radio audience of a national convention to a futile 16-day, 103-ballot marathon that listed 19 candidates on the first ballot and 17 on the 100th. The galleries booed the speeches of Southerners and Westerners, especially when William Jennings Bryan, a three-time failed candidate for president, asked the convention to reject a proposed resolution condemning the Ku Klux Klan by name. The motion to condemn the Klan brought forth such heated oratory that police were brought onto the convention floor in case a riot broke out. Delegates shouted at and cursed one another. When the final vote on the resolution was taken, it lost by one vote, 542 3/20 to 541 3/20. Demands for a recount were drowned out when the band struck up "Marching through Georgia," which incited the southern delegates to paroxysms of rage. After 16 days, the convention finally nominated a presidential candidate, John W. Davis, who almost nobody wanted and few of the delegates even knew.[13]

The crowds and the din of New York City confused and frightened the delegates from the towns and farms of the South and West. They found New Yorkers unfriendly and rude, and the city seemed all too easy to get lost in. Delegates who "wandered downtown to Fourteenth Street to gawk at Tammany Hall with its ancient Indian above the door reacted as if they expected to see an ogre come popping out. Almost all delegates were dismayed by the New York traffic, the noise and hustle."[14] Their antagonism toward the city was reaffirmed every day the convention dragged on through the stifling July heat. Small-town reporters filled their hometown newspapers with vivid accounts of the horrors of the city.[15]

Only four years later the Democrats named Al Smith, the four-term governor of New York, as their presidential candidate. The convention was held in Houston, Texas, the first time either of the parties had met in the South since the Civil War. The nomination laid bare bitter divisions. Smith represented everything that was anathema to the city haters. He was the first Roman Catholic nominated for the presidency and an ardent opponent of Prohibition and the Ku Klux Klan. He was a self-made member of the nation's most notorious machine, Tammany Hall. He said "foist" instead of "first" and wore a brown derby, which only accentuated his bulbous nose and ruddy complexion. Smith proudly reminisced about his past: swimming in the East River and working at the Fulton Fish Market as an errand boy. Considering these fractious conflicts, how could he have been nominated? Once he was nominated, why did the party not simply break apart?

Southern and aggrieved farmers had little choice but to stay within the fold because they had come to share, however crudely, a class interest. The party had become—mostly by default because the Republicans took an uncompromising pro-business stand—the "little man's" party. Those who opposed Republican policies could never hope to have a voice in national politics unless they cooperated with one another. Despite their differences, most of the delegates to the 1928 convention wanted to avoid a repeat of the Madison Square Garden debacle. Few delegates thought Smith could win, but no other candidate was available who was capable of bridging the divisions in the fractious party. As the four-term governor of New York, he had gained national prominence as a

progressive leader who had created state parks and beaches, sponsored workers' safety legislation, and financed public improvements throughout the state. He had reorganized state government, making New York the model for progressives who believed in efficiency principles. Admired by progressives for his record as governor and supported by Democratic organizations and their ethnic supporters, his nomination could be denied by rural delegates, but only at the cost of another fiasco like 1924—multiple ballots and a guaranteed loss for the presidential nominee. There was even reason to believe Smith might have a chance. In his victorious gubernatorial run in 1924, he had received 100,000 more votes than the losing Democratic presidential ticket in New York.

In 1928, the Democrats gave the nomination to Al Smith. He lost several southern and border states and won only 41 percent of the national vote, but his candidacy marked the beginning of the party's increasing reliance on the urban electorate. Both in 1920 and 1924, the 12 largest cities in the United States had, taken together, given a decisive majority to the Republicans. Now the tables were turned, and the Democrats gained ground. As later elections were to prove, this marked the beginning of a long-term trend in which voters in the cities cast most of their ballots for Democrats.[16]

For the Roman Catholic ethnics in the cities, Smith's campaign educated them about the national issues of Prohibition, ethnicity, and religion. Smith campaigned with his brown derby and his theme song, "The Sidewalks of New York." Protestants shuddered at the idea of a Catholic in the White House. His stand on Prohibition made drinking the leading issue of the campaign. Blue-blood upper-class Protestants found him beneath them. The campaign highlighted the issues of race, religion, culture, and social class so clearly that never again would the urban ethnics be unmindful of their stake in the national political system.

The election of 1928 brought a Democratic electoral plurality to the industrial cities where immigrant voters lived. In 1920, the Republican presidential ticket carried the 12 largest cities by more than 1.5 million votes, and in 1924 the ticket did almost as well. But in 1928, with Al Smith as the Democratic candidate, the Republican margin in the cities shrank to a narrow 210,000 votes. In the 1932 election, the Democrats beat the Republicans in the big cities for the first time, and decisively, by almost 1.8 million votes.[17] Franklin Delano Roosevelt's landslide demonstrated that the Democrats now had a firm lock on the urban electorate. Since then, the old industrial cities have normally voted heavily Democratic, and this fact proved to be especially decisive in the outcomes of two presidential elections. In 1948 Harry S. Truman barely won the national popular vote, but he carried the cities by nearly 1.5 million votes. Urban voters again provided the crucial difference in the 1960 election, when they put John F. Kennedy over the top.

The Depression and the Cities

The Great Depression came as a shock to Americans and to their public leaders. Especially for the rapidly growing middle class, the 1920s had been a decade of prosperity and optimism. Business leaders and politicians promoted the idea that sustained economic growth was virtually limitless. A strong undertow of poverty ran below the surface in the immigrant slums and on farms alike, but for the growing middle class an air of prosperity prevailed. It was an age that extolled mass consumption and complacency. For a time, the discontents of the industrial age seemed long past.

October 24, 1929, is the symbolic beginning of the Great Depression. On that day—Black Thursday—disorder, panic, and confusion reigned on the New York Stock Exchange. Stock prices virtually collapsed. For several months prices had sagged, then rallied, then sagged again, with each trough lower than the previous one and each peak less convincing. When the bottom fell out, "the Market … degenerated into a wild, mad scramble to sell, … the Market … surrendered to blind, relentless fear."[18] In one morning, 11 well-known speculators committed suicide. From Wall Street the economic catastrophe rippled outward, with consequences that fundamentally reshaped American politics.

Over the next three years, the nation sank ever deeper into economic stagnation. In the spring of 1929, the unemployment rate stood at 3.2 percent. Within a few months the number of unemployed exceeded 4 million, representing 8.7 percent of the labor force.[19] By 1932, 24 percent of all workers—more than 12 million in all—could not find jobs. In the depths of the Depression, during the spring of 1933, the number of unemployed reached 13 million workers, fully one-fourth of the labor force.[20]

The Depression dragged on for a decade. Unemployment levels remained above 20 percent in both 1934 and 1935 and dropped below 15 percent only in 1937. Most of those who managed to find work made less than before. From 1929 to 1933, the average income of workers fell by 42.5 percent.[21] Weekly wages dropped from an

average of $28 in 1929 to $17 by 1934, and workers faced the constant threat of layoffs. Many jobs were reduced from full-time to part-time status, and employers cut wages and hours to meet payrolls. For example, the payroll of the nation's largest steel company, U.S. Steel, was cut in half from 1929 to 1933, and in 1933 the company had no full-time workers at all.[22] Steel mills operated at only 12 percent of capacity by 1932.[23]

The basic structure of the capitalist system seemed irreparably damaged. In the three years following the stock market collapse, national income fell by 44.5 percent. By the summer of 1932, stocks had fallen 83 percent below their value in September 1929.[24] By the end of 1932, 5,096 commercial banks had failed. Farm income declined from $7 billion in 1929 to $2.5 billion in 1932.[25] For many farmers whose incomes had been sharply dropping throughout the 1920s, the Depression came as a final blow.

The statistics of disaster painted a portrait of human suffering. Between 1 million and 2 million men rode the rails and gathered in hobo jungles or camped in thickets and railroad cars. Others lived in "Hoovervilles," clusters of cardboard, scrap wood, and scrap metal shacks in empty lots and city parks. Those who had been chronically poor in the 1920s were now hungry and destitute. They stood in bread lines, ate from garbage cans, or went begging from door to door. One-quarter of all homeowners lost their homes in 1932, and more than 1,000 mortgages a day were foreclosed in the first half of 1933.[26] By March 1933, when Franklin D. Roosevelt was inaugurated as president, 9 million savings accounts had been lost.[27]

Never before had the nation faced an economic catastrophe of this magnitude, nor was there a tradition of federal government assistance for the unemployed and destitute.[28] However, unemployment and poverty were certainly not new. In the period from 1897 to 1926, unemployment levels in four major industries fluctuated around the 10 percent level,[29] and poverty was a chronic condition of industrialization and immigration. What made the Great Depression unique was its depth, persistence, and broad reach. In earlier depressions, including the panics of the 1870s and 1890s, production and employment declined much less severely, and recovery began within a year or two.[30] The Great Depression of the 1930s lasted for over a decade, it touched all classes, and people at all income levels felt its effects. The measure of the crisis of the 1930s was not just unemployment and poverty but also the breakdown of economic institutions.

No one knew how to respond. President Herbert Hoover firmly resisted intervention by the federal government and instead launched two national drives to encourage private relief. Late in 1930 he appointed the President's Emergency Committee for Employment. Its main charge was to encourage state and local committees to expedite public construction and coordinate public and private funding for relief efforts. In August 1931 he formed the President's Organization on Unemployment Relief, whose job was to help organize private unemployment committees in states and communities.

Despite Hoover's stubborn opposition to federal assistance, two programs were funded during his administration. First, the Federal Home Loan Bank Act supplied capital advances to a small number of mortgage institutions so they could forbear rather than foreclose on mortgages in default. This program saved a few banks. Second, the Emergency Relief and Construction Act extended $300 million in loans to state and local governments so they could continue to provide relief to indigent people.

Hoover was hardly alone in opposing aggressive federal action. Until 1932 most governors took a "we'll do it ourselves" attitude to solving unemployment and its associated problems.[31] Two governors refused to work with the President's Organization on Unemployment Relief, even though federal funds were not involved.[32] The officials of financially strapped local governments were also skeptical of federal aid. In July 1931 the socialist mayor of Milwaukee wrote to the mayors of the largest 100 cities, asking them to come to a conference to discuss a joint request for a national relief program. He got no response at all from many of the major cities, and several mayors criticized the idea, arguing that federal aid would constitute "an invasion of community rights."[33]

In the 1932 campaign, the Democrats accused Hoover of doing too much rather than too little. Their nominee, Roosevelt, promised to balance the budget while accusing Hoover of having presided over "the greatest spending administration in peace times in all our history."[34] It was apparent that the weight of the past lay heavily on both political parties. Against a cultural tradition that extolled individualism and free enterprise, there was great reluctance to expand the powers of government—especially the federal government—to meet the crisis. Nevertheless, when Roosevelt was inaugurated on March 4, 1933, he set in motion a concentrated period of reform that vastly increased the powers of the federal government in areas of business regulation, farm policy, and social insurance. Why did Roosevelt break so thoroughly from the American tradition of limited national government?

The new president's change of heart was motivated by the overwhelming sense of crisis that ushered him into the White House. Between his election in November and his inauguration in March, the nation passed through the worst months of the depression.[35] The economy teetered on the brink of utter collapse. In February 1933, some of the nation's biggest banks failed. "People stood in long queues with satchels and paper bags to take gold and currency away from the banks to store in mattresses and old shoe boxes. It seemed safer to put one's life's savings in the attic than to trust the financial institutions in the country."[36] Roosevelt wondered if anything would be left to salvage by the time he assumed office. By Inauguration Day, 38 states had closed their banks, and on that day the governors of New York and Illinois closed the nation's biggest banks.[37] The New York Stock Exchange stopped trading. The Kansas City and Chicago Boards of Trade closed their doors. "In the once-busy grain pits of Chicago, in the canyons of Wall Street, all was silent."[38]

It was also one of the harshest winters on record. In desperation, people overran relief offices and rioted at bank closings. Relief marchers invaded state legislative chambers. Farmers tried to stop foreclosure proceedings and blockaded roads. Amid marches, riots, arrests, and jailings, many people feared there might be a revolution against the capitalist system. The demands for some kind of response became almost impossible to resist.

In its first 100 days, Roosevelt's administration presented Congress with a flood of legislative proposals.[39] On March 9, Roosevelt signed the Emergency Banking Act. The act extended financial assistance to bankers so they could reopen their doors and gave the government authority to reorganize banks and control bank credit policies. It received a unanimous vote from a panicked Congress, sight unseen. A flurry of legislation followed: the Civilian Conservation Corps (March 31), the Agricultural Adjustment Act and the Federal Emergency Relief Act (May 12), the Tennessee Valley Authority (May 18), the Federal "Truth in Securities" Act (May 27), the Home Owners' Loan Act (June 13), the National Industrial Recovery Act (June 16), and more than a score of other bills.

Most of the legislative onslaught was designed to stimulate, regulate, and stabilize the country's most important economic institutions. But the benefits filtered down. After the Emergency Banking Act was passed, depositors gained enough confidence to put their money back into the banks. After passage of the National Housing Act (signed into law in 1934), home-buyers were able to secure long-term mortgages from banks, whose loans were guaranteed by the federal government. Foreclosures on farms and homes fell sharply when the government, through the Farm Credit Administration and Home Owners' Loan Corporation, agreed to buy up defaulted mortgages. New Deal programs affected millions of lives by salvaging savings, houses, and farms. Nevertheless, the New Deal's attempts to reform the economy were designed more to bring stability to financial institutions than to fight poverty and destitution. Home lending and farm credit programs primarily helped the nation's important economic institutions and secondarily aided the heavily mortgaged middle class.

The other side of the New Deal included its public works and relief programs. Between 1933 and 1937, the federal government administered public works programs for several million people and supplied direct relief to millions more. The earliest of the public works programs was the Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC). Overall, the CCC employed more than 2.5 million boys and young men. In 1935 alone, 500,000 men were living in CCC camps. They planted trees, built dams, fought fires, stocked fish, built lookout towers, dug ditches and canals, strung telephone lines, and built and improved bridges, roads, and trails. Their contribution to conservation was enormous; the CCC was responsible for more than half of all the forest planted in the United States up to the 1960s.[40]

The Civil Works Administration (CWA) was much larger and broader in scope. Established in November 1933, it employed 4.1 million by the third week of January 1934, and within a few months it employed almost a third of the unemployed labor force.[41] Although the CWA lasted for less than a year—Roosevelt ended it in the spring of 1934 because he thought it was too costly—it enabled many families to survive the bitter winter of 1934. The CWA was "immensely popular—with merchants, with local officials, and with workers," and its demise was resisted in Congress.[42] The Public Works Administration (PWA) enjoyed a longer run, and its impact was more lasting. In six years, from 1933 to 1939, the PWA built 70 percent of the new school buildings in the nation and 35 percent of the hospitals and public health facilities.[43]

The Federal Emergency Relief Act (FERA), which Roosevelt signed into law on May 12, 1933, was never as popular as public works legislation because it undercut the cherished principles of work and independence by making relief money directly available to the destitute. Roosevelt himself viewed the Federal Emergency Relief Administration with distaste, thinking it would sap the moral strength of the poor. Roosevelt constantly sought ways to cut its budget, but the destitution and the civil disorder that prevailed in Roosevelt's first term made the

program necessary. In the winter of 1934, 20 million people received FERA funds.[44]

The FERA was treated as an embarrassing necessity. The government's response was understood to be an emergency measure, comparable to helping victims of catastrophes such as floods, earthquakes, and tornadoes. Congressional debate on the FERA received little coverage by the media. When the act was passed on May 9, 1933, the *New York Times* only mentioned it on page 3 in a column listing legislation passed by Congress. The day after President Roosevelt put his signature to it, it made page 21 of the *Times* but only in reference to the appointment of the administrator. In a culture that extolled individualism, competition, and hard work, people were uncomfortable with the idea of relief.

Roosevelt frequently expressed doubts about relief and public works programs. He preferred economic recovery to government spending, but his response to the economic emergency vastly broadened the electoral base of the Democratic Party. Public works and relief created a loyal following among middle- and working-class people who benefited. By the 1936 election, and for decades thereafter, voting in small towns split between the Republicans on the wealthier side of the tracks and the working class and poor on the other. The most reliable new Democratic following, however, could be found in the cities. Urban ethnics, especially if they were union members, learned to vote Democratic. The New Deal programs also broke African American voters away from the Republican Party. Before the 1936 election, a prominent black publisher counseled, "My friends, go turn Lincoln's picture to the wall. That debt has been paid in full."[45] In that election, blacks gave Roosevelt 75 percent of their votes, indicating a change in voting behavior which would become amplified with the Democrats' (reluctant) support of the Civil Rights Movement and the great party realignment of the 1960s.

The Great Depression fundamentally altered the group composition of the party system in the United States. In addition to its traditional base in the South, the Democratic Party now claimed solid support among workers, blacks, and the poor in the northern cities, where large numbers of the working class and the poor were concentrated. The party's electoral coalition broadened sufficiently to ensure that Democratic candidates would be competitive in presidential contests and that Democrats would hold majorities in Congress in most years. In 1936, the Gallup poll found that 59 percent of farmers favored Roosevelt (Agricultural Adjustment Act, Farm Credit Administration, Farm Mortgage Corporation, abolition of the gold standard); 61 percent of white-collar workers (bank regulation, Federal Housing Administration, savings deposit insurance); 80 percent of organized labor (government recognition of collective bargaining, unemployment insurance, work relief); and 68 percent of people under age 25 (Civilian Conservation Corps, National Youth Administration). Among lower-income groups, 76 percent favored Roosevelt, compared with 60 percent of the middle class.[46] By contrast, upper-income groups identified overwhelmingly with the Republican Party, and they do so to this day.

Cities Gain a Voice

The Great Depression marked a turning point in American politics. To secure the votes of urban ethnics, Democratic candidates reliably supported the New Deal's initiatives. The voice of the cities in national politics was also amplified in these years by another development: the forging of a direct relationship between the federal government and the cities. Three elements stand out as key factors in this development: (1) a fiscal and social crisis in the cities, (2) indifference of the states, and (3) the forging of an alliance among city officials for the purpose of securing a federal response to their problems.

Even before Roosevelt took office, the cities had exhausted their resources. In the 1920s they had borrowed heavily to finance public improvements and capital construction. They were already deep in debt when the onset of the depression confronted them with rising unemployment and poverty. Local officials could not avoid seeing the misery and want on their streets. Faced with a manifest emergency, they provided relief funds as rapidly as they could, but it was not enough. Municipal governments simply lacked the financial resources to cope with the emergency.

Cities entered the depression after they had already financed a multitude of new public improvement programs. In the 1920s cities had built roads to accommodate the millions of automobiles flooding onto the streets. The automobile imposed heavy new costs on local governments. Cities invested in traffic signals, police cars, garbage trucks, school buses, snowplows, roads, and bus and airline terminals. In response to demands from the rapidly expanding middle class, cities increased spending for education, built new school buildings and public libraries, and invested heavily in improving parks and recreational facilities.

Local governments made heavier investments in these areas than either the state or the federal governments.

During the 1920s counties and municipalities spent 55–60 percent of all public funds in the nation, and their total debts mounted to $9 billion.[47] From 1923 to 1927, while the states increased expenditures by 43 percent, spending by the largest 145 cities rose by 79 percent, and cities of 100,000 or more increased their budgets by 82 percent.[48] In the latter cities expenditures for work relief and welfare shot up by 391 percent from 1923 to 1932; during the same period states increased their relief and welfare budgets by only 63 percent. In the last year of the Hoover administration, the 13 cities with populations above 100,000 spent $53 million more than all the states combined for public welfare. Over the decade of the 1920s federal grants actually declined from 2 to 1.3 percent of all public expenditures.[49] The 13 biggest cities incurred 50 percent more debt in the 1920s, and many of them were hard pressed, even early in the Depression, to pay for government services and public improvements.[50]

The Great Depression placed unprecedented responsibilities on city officials at the very time that fiscal resources were drying up. Cities were unable to generate enough tax revenues to keep pace with their additional responsibilities. Two-thirds of the revenue for city budgets came from property taxes. Falling property values brought a 20 percent decline in property tax revenues from 1929 to 1933.[51] At the same time, the rate of tax delinquency increased from 10 to 26 percent in cities of over 50,000 in population.[52] Between 1931 and 1933, tax losses resulted in a reduction in the budgets of the largest 13 cities from $1.8 to $1.6 billion.[53] State-imposed debt limitations did not allow cities to borrow for day-to-day services. In principle, cities were allowed to borrow for capital improvements, but this option soon evaporated as well. By 1932, because of their high debt loads, cities found it impossible to sell long-term bond issues to investors. In 1932 and 1933, many states and municipalities, including Mississippi, Montana, Buffalo, Philadelphia, Cleveland, and Toledo, were unable to market any bond issues at all.[54] Temporary loans with high interest rates replaced long-term notes.

When the cities financed public works programs to help the unemployed, their budgets quickly ran dry. Municipal governments lacked sufficient resources to treat the depression's symptoms, yet many mayors saw this as their principal mission. Detroit's experience revealed the impossibility of the task. In the fall of 1930, Frank Murphy won a surprise victory in a special mayoral election on a campaign promising unemployment relief.[55] His efforts to provide relief by expanding public jobs and welfare in Detroit attracted national attention. He appointed an unemployment committee, operated an employment bureau, sponsored public works projects, raised private donations for poor relief, and consulted with private firms about rehiring workers. Detroit did more than any other city for its unemployed, but its compassion was costly. With over 40,000 families receiving relief and one-third of the workforce out of work, it was spending $2 million a month for relief in 1931, far more than second-place Boston.[56]

The burden soon brought financial ruin to the city, and by the spring of 1931, Detroit faced municipal bankruptcy. To avoid default on its debts and payroll, Murphy curtailed the city's health and recreational services and slashed the fire and police department budgets. Only an emergency bank loan allowed Murphy to meet the June 1931 payroll, but even this measure was not enough. Under pressure from the New York banks that held most of Detroit's bonds, Murphy was forced to cut relief expenditures in half during 1932. Thousands of families were dropped from the relief rolls as it became painfully obvious that Detroit could not single-handedly solve the local problems caused by a national economic calamity.

The mayors of other cities were learning the same lesson. Finally, their sense of desperation galvanized them to take action. In the spring of 1932, Murphy issued invitations to the mayors of the major cities to attend a conference. In June, representatives from 29 cities met in Detroit with a single purpose in mind. Murphy stated the cities' case succinctly: "We have done everything humanly possible to do, and it has not been enough. The hour is at hand for the federal government to cooperate."[57] New York City's mayor likewise pleaded for assistance:

> The municipal government is the maternal, the intimate side of government; the side with heart. The Federal Government doesn't have to wander through darkened hallways of our hospitals, to witness the pain and suffering there. It doesn't have to stand in the bread lines, but the time has come when it must face the facts and its responsibility.
>
> We of the cities have diagnosed and thus far met the problem; but we have come to the end of our resources. It is now up to the Federal Government to assume its share. We can't cure conditions by ourselves.[58]

The mayors' demands for federal assistance represented a turning point in federal–local relations. Historically, there had been no direct relationship between cities and the federal government. Many local officials felt it was illegitimate to ask the federal government for help, and others feared any aid, thinking it might cause their cities to lose their independence. Only a few months before, most of the mayors had declined to attend a similar mayors' conference suggested by the mayor of Milwaukee.[59] Desperation finally made them reconsider.

The situation was made worse by the fact that state governments refused to respond to the cities' plight. While municipal governments' expenditures on jobs and relief skyrocketed, the states sharply cut back; "As tax revenues dwindled and unemployment increased, economy in government became a magic word."[60] Beginning in 1932, several states slashed their budgets: Arizona by 35 percent; Texas, Illinois, Vermont by 25 percent; South Carolina by 33 percent. As state tax revenues declined, public works and construction programs were curtailed. In 1928 the states had spent $1.35 billion for public works projects, mainly in the form of road building, but this amount was reduced to $630 million by 1932 and to $290 million for the first eight months of 1933.[61] On average, per capita spending for highways and education fell only slightly from 1927 to 1932,[62] but some states made drastic cuts. Tennessee, for example, failed to provide funds for its rural schools for much of 1931.[63] State educational institutions, especially universities, were hard hit. During 1933, education budgets had dropped by 40 percent in Maryland, 53 percent in Wyoming, and more than 30 percent in several other states.[64] All of these cutbacks reduced the public payroll and thus aggravated the unemployment crisis.

Relief spending by the states went up in the early years of the depression, from $1.00 per capita in 1927 to $3.50 four years later.[65] But the amount of welfare provided by the states was small and failed to come close to what was needed even in those few states willing to increase their effort. From mid-1931 to the end of 1932, welfare spending by the states increased from $500,000 to $100 million, but almost all of the money was provided by a few states, principally New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania. When the New Deal began, only eight states provided any money at all for relief.[66]

Local officials petitioned the states for help, and as the depression wore on their pleas sounded increasingly desperate.[67] Except for the very few states that provided relief payments to the unemployed, no response was forthcoming. State governments were slow to respond to the needs of their cities because rural representatives controlled their legislatures. In state after state, legislative districts were drawn up to ensure that rural counties would outvote cities in the state legislative chambers. In Georgia, each county was represented equally in the legislature, regardless of its population.[68] Likewise, Louisiana granted each parish at least one representative in the state senate and house. Rhode Island applied this standard to every town.[69] Without exception, all the states made sure that representatives from rural areas would continue to hold legislative majorities, no matter how much a state's population might become concentrated in the cities.

There were important political stakes in this pattern of under-representation. If cities were allowed to gain majorities in legislatures simply because of their growing populations, political alignments and party structures would fundamentally change. Incumbent rural legislators would be unseated, and it is likely that a shift in legislative power would have favored more generous policies for the cities. The persistent underrepresentation of urban areas resulted in indifference to urban problems. Traffic congestion, slums, inadequate park space, and smoke pollution did not interest rural and small-town legislators. Governors, too, tended to be insensitive to urban issues; indeed, they were remarkably indifferent to the social calamity unfolding all around them. Governors' and legislators' national conferences ignored the depression. At the 1930 governors' conference in Salt Lake City, for example, the major topics of discussion included such topics as the essentials of a model state constitution, the need for constitutional revisions, constitutional versus legislative home rule for cities, and the extent of legislative control of city governments.[70] Likewise, the 1931 conference studiously avoided any mention of the economic crisis. In the face of such indifference, the cities had nowhere to go but to the federal government.

There was a danger that the special plight of the cities would disappear from view because the gathering disaster of the Great Depression affected the entire nation. Conditions in many rural areas were even worse than in the cities. Grinding poverty was pervasive in the Appalachian region and throughout the South; families lived in one-room hovels, children walked around with bellies distended by malnutrition, and some parents could not afford to clothe their children to send them to school. A drought from the Midwest to the Rockies turned much of the Plains into a vast dust bowl; in the winter of 1934, New England's snow turned red from the huge billowing clouds of dust blowing from Texas, Kansas, and Oklahoma. Families left the ravaged land by the thousands. The experiences of those heading for California provided the grist for John Steinbeck's moving novel *The Grapes of Wrath.*

Roosevelt and his advisers instinctively distrusted city politics and urban culture. Roosevelt's first public works program, the CCC, was inspired by his feeling that the moral character of unemployed youth in the cities would be improved by living in the country.[71] Roosevelt felt "small love for the city."[72] One of the president's closest advisers confessed that "since my graduate school days, I have always been able to excite myself more about the

wrongs of farmers than those of urban workers."[73] In its first two years, the New Deal accomplished a comprehensive farm policy of guaranteed price supports, crop allotments to reduce supplies and increase prices, and federally guaranteed mortgages. By contrast, in 1937 it produced its first specifically urban program. The Public Housing Act (also called the Wagner-Steagall Public Housing Act after the names of its legislative sponsors) provided slum clearance and public housing on a very limited scale.

Despite the indifference they initially encountered, city officials managed to forge close relationships with politicians and administrators in Washington, DC. The New Deal's first relief and recovery programs were administered through the states, but federal programs were later enacted that put local officials in charge. Federal officials administered the three largest public works programs—the PWA, CWA, and the Works Progress Administration—in cooperation with both state and local officials. The Federal Emergency Relief funds were channeled through the states, but local relief agencies actually administered the funds. In several cities, such as New York, Pittsburgh, and Kansas City, local Democratic machines found that the new federal resources allowed them to rebuild their strength.[74] Local officials found themselves testifying to congressional committees about programs that affected the cities. By 1934 a southern mayor observed, "Mayors are a familiar sight in Washington these days. Whether we like it or not, the destinies of our cities are clearly tied in with national politics."[75]

The Urban Programs of the New Deal

The first hint of any national concern about the problems of urban America came in 1892, when Congress appropriated $20,000 to investigate slum conditions in cities with more than 200,000 people.[76] In the report that followed, the commissioner of labor informed Congress that all of the nation's big cities contained block after block of rundown tenement districts that packed immigrants together into often unsafe and unsanitary conditions. The commissioner made much of the fact that these areas had a higher incidence of arrests and saloons than anywhere else in the country. In effect, the report amounted to a moral condemnation of city life.

Federal assistance for the construction of urban housing can be traced to the entry of the United States into World War I. In 1918, Congress authorized direct federal loans to local realty companies.[77] At a cost of $69.3 million, 8 hotels, 19 dormitories, 1,100 apartment units, and approximately 9,000 houses were constructed to house wartime shipyard workers in 27 cities and towns.[78] Later the same year, Congress approved the nation's first public housing program, designed to accommodate defense plant workers who needed housing near wartime factories. The U.S. Housing Corporation was created to manage the program. In the brief three months of the program's existence, the Housing Corporation built 6,000 single-family dwellings, plus accommodations for 7,200 single men, on 140 project sites scattered around the country.[79] As soon as the war was over, all of these federally owned housing units were sold to private owners, and in this way the government removed itself from the housing business.

The first significant federal intervention into housing came during the Great Depression. Even during the prosperous 1920s, the nation's cities contained rundown business districts and residential slums. As the depression wore on, the situation deteriorated; landlords and owners invested little or no money in repairs and renovation, and the construction of new housing slowed to a crawl. The solutions to the problems of housing and slums lay beyond the financial capacity of local governments. The slums that had long plagued the nation's cities slowly became defined as a national and not only local problem, and urban officials and business elites who were concerned about the condition of their business and residential districts looked to the national government for help.

In 1932, the last year of Herbert Hoover's presidency, Congress created the Reconstruction Finance Corporation (RFC) and authorized it to extend loans to private developers for the construction of low-income housing in slum areas.[80] Only two projects were actually ever undertaken, with over 98 percent of the money spent in three slum blocks of Manhattan to construct Knickerbocker Village, with its 1,573 apartments.[81] This program had two purposes. On the one hand, it was supposed to help revive the construction industry; on the other hand, it was supposed to increase the supply of low-income housing in New York. In the case of Knickerbocker Village, the first goal won out. Eighty-two percent of the slum families who initially moved into the apartments were soon forced to move back to the slums they had left because of the escalating rents charged by the owners.[82]

Franklin D. Roosevelt implemented a long list of national programs designed to stimulate the economy and bring the depression to an end. One of the first of these, the National Industrial Recovery Act of 1933, included a minor provision authorizing "construction, reconstruction, alteration, or repair, under public regulation or

control, of low-rent housing and slum clearance projects."[83] The Housing Division of the PWA was charged with administering this provision. At first, the PWA tried to entice private developers into constructing low-income housing by offering them low-interest federal loans. This strategy reflected one of the major purposes of the program, which was "to deal with the unemployment situation by giving employment to workers … [and] to demonstrate to private builders the practicability of large-scale community planning."[84] But contractors and home builders did not find low-interest loans sufficiently attractive, and only seven projects ever met specifications and were approved. As a result, the PWA decided to bypass the housing industry altogether and finance and construct its own federally owned housing. The U.S. Emergency Housing Corporation was established for this purpose in 1933, and it asserted the right to use eminent domain to force the owners of slum property to sell so that the land could be prepared for construction.

Federal administrators ran into a problem when court decisions in Kentucky and Michigan declared that the federal government could not use eminent domain if it usurped the authority of state and local governments.[85] In response, they tried another tack. The Emergency Housing Corporation decided to make low-income housing grants to local public housing authorities. States could legally charter local authorities, and previous court cases made it clear that the states could use eminent domain to accomplish a variety of public purposes. With the offer of federal money dangled before them, city officials lobbied their state legislatures to allow them to create local housing authorities to receive the funds. By the end of the PWA public housing program in 1937, 29 states had passed enabling legislation allowing local governments to operate local public housing authorities, and 46 local housing agencies had already come into existence.[86] These authorities built almost 22,000 public low-income housing units in 37 cities.[87]

For all the effort to get the PWA program off the ground, the eventual results were mixed, at best. More low-income units were torn down through slum clearance than were ever built. Local public housing authorities were closely tied to the housing industry in their communities, and as a result a substantial proportion of PWA funds was used not to build housing, but to help politically connected owners sell their properties at inflated prices.[88] These properties were then slated for clearance, even though there were no plans to replace the housing units that were to be razed. In all these respects, the PWA experience provided a warning for the future: program goals were easily subverted if local communities were allowed to make all of the important decisions.

The PWA experience became the administrative model for future housing programs. It was accepted that if federal grants were made available for public housing in the future, local public housing agencies would become the recipients of the funds and federal agencies would not try to build public housing units themselves. When the Public Housing Act of 1937 replaced the PWA program, it was based on the principle that housing programs would be implemented through federal grants-in-aid to local housing authorities. Under the legislation, public housing would be built and administered by local agencies, not by the federal government, and real estate agents and contractors would handle land sales and construction. Its stated purposes were:

> To provide financial assistance to the states and political subdivisions thereof for the elimination of unsafe and unsanitary housing conditions, for the eradication of slums, for the provision of decent, safe, and sanitary dwellings for families of low-income and for the reduction of unemployment and the stimulation of business activity, to create a United States Housing Authority, and for other purposes.[89]

The Public Housing Act of 1937 was "designed to serve the needs of low-income families who otherwise would be unable to afford decent, safe, and sanitary dwellings."[90] Because real estate agents, builders, and banks could not make much profit by constructing public housing projects, they steadfastly opposed the program. As far as they were concerned, government-owned housing competed with the private real estate market, and its only redeeming virtue was that public housing provided jobs in the construction industry. But this benefit failed to outweigh the unpopularity of providing housing subsidies to the bottom third of the population. As explained by the president of the National Association of Real Estate Boards, the housing industry's philosophy was that low-income housing should become available through a filter-down process:

> Housing should remain a matter of private enterprise and private ownership. It is contrary to the genius of the American people and the ideals they have established that government become landlord to its citizens. There is a sound logic in the continuance of the practice under which those who have the initiative and the will to save acquire better living facilities and yield their former quarters at modest rents to the group below.[91]

To make sure middle-class families could not opt out of the private housing market by moving into public housing, the legislation contained specific limitations on the costs and quality of rental units and a restriction that occupancy be strictly limited to low-income families. A requirement was also added that the number of new

housing units constructed could not exceed the number of slum dwellings torn down.[92]

The 1937 act authorized the U.S. Housing Administration (USHA) to extend low-interest loans to local public housing agencies. The loans could cover up to 100 percent of the cost of financing slum clearance and building low-income housing units. The USHA was also authorized to make grants and annual subsidies to local housing agencies for the operation and maintenance of housing units after they were built. The USHA and its successor agencies, the Federal Public Housing Authority (1942–1946) and the Public Housing Administration (1946–the present), completed a total of 169,451 low-income public housing units under the authority of the 1937 housing act.[93]

World War II was the third national emergency (the others were World War I and the Great Depression) recognized by Congress as requiring the production of publicly built and financed housing. In addition to 50,000 housing units built during the war through the 1937 housing act authorizations, 2 million more units were provided through temporary and emergency programs to house workers who streamed into cities to take jobs in defense industry plants. Around a million of these were privately built with federal financial assistance, and another million were completed under programs that left ownership in the hands of the federal government.[94] As soon as the war ended, these government-owned units were sold on the private market.

The New Deal Legacy

The New Deal transformed American politics. The Great Depression persuaded local officials that it was legitimate to seek federal assistance. To help them do so, they formed an enduring urban lobby organized specifically to represent cities in the federal system. Through the United States Conference of Mayors (USCM), formed in 1932, mayors met annually to discuss their mutual problems. The USCM financed a permanent office in Washington to lobby for urban programs. Together with the International City Management Association (now the International City and County Management Association), the National Municipal League, the American Municipal League, and other organizations representing local public officials, cities developed the capacity to lobby federal administrators, Congress, and the White House.

The nation's first urban programs reflected the political pressures that local officials were able to bring to bear on Washington. Through the 1937 Housing Act, the federal government undertook slum clearance and built public housing. In the late 1930s, federal policymakers expressed a concern about urban problems. In 1937 the National Resources Committee, composed of federal administrators and experts appointed by the president, published a pamphlet titled *Our Cities: Their Role in the National Economy*.[95] The report asserted that slums and urban blight threatened a hoped-for economic recovery and recommended federal action to improve the economic performance of cities. Four years later the National Resources Planning Board issued a report, *Action for Cities: A Guide for Community Planning,* which recommended that cities devise local plans to combat blight and the federal government provide assistance for this purpose.[96] In 1944, a federally assisted highways bill was enacted; unlike highway legislation passed in the 1930s, this time the cities got their fair share of construction money. Five years later, in 1949, Congress passed a massive program to build public housing and clear slums in the inner cities.

Between 1953 and 1961, when a Republican president, Dwight Eisenhower, occupied the White House, urban interests were able to push through only one significant new program, the Interstate Highway Act of 1956, an accomplishment made possible because Republicans wanted it too. From 1959 to 1961, President Eisenhower even eliminated public housing requests from the federal budget. But in the wake of the election of John F. Kennedy in 1960, the urban lobby again found a receptive environment, and it did not take long for it to seize the moment. The New Deal experience had convinced city officials they had a right to argue for their interests in Washington, and they were already organized for the task. For years to come, Democrats in the White House and Congress would ignore the concerns of groups representing the cities, and the urban voters they spoke for, at their peril.

Endnotes

1 Samuel J. Eldersveld, "The Influence of Metropolitan Party Pluralities in Presidential Elections since 1920: A Study of Twelve Key Cities," *American Political Science Review* 43, no. 6 (December 1949): 1200.

2 W. B. Munro, *The Government of American Cities* (New York: Macmillan, 1913), p. 27.

3 In the first significant suburban movement of the twentieth century, which lasted from the late 1890s to about 1914 (the outbreak of World War I), the rate of growth in the suburbs exceeded the rate of growth in many central cities, but the total population gains in those cities were

much larger than the population gains in suburbs. Growth rates can be deceptive when expressed as percentage increases on a small original population base.

4 William E. Leuchtenburg, *The Perils of Prosperity, 1914–1932* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1958), pp. 213-214.
5 Robert K. Murray, *The 103rd Ballot: Democrats and the Disaster in Madison Square Garden* (New York: Harper & Row, 1976), p. 9.
6 Kenneth T. Jackson, *The Ku Klux Klan in the City, 1915–1930* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1967).
7 Murray, *The 103rd Ballot,* p. 7.
8 Ibid.
9 Kenneth Finegold, *Experts and Politicians: Reform Challenges to Machine Politics in New York, Cleveland, and Chicago* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1995), p. 174.
10 Jessica Trounstine, *Political Monopolies in American Cities: The Rise and Fall of Bosses and Reformers* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2008), p. 87.
11 Ibid., p. 98.
12 Ibid., p. 87.
13 Murray, *The 103rd Ballot.*
14 Murray, *The 103rd Ballot,* p. 103.
15 For good accounts of the 1924 convention, see Murray, *The 103rd Ballot;* Edmund A. Moore, *A Catholic Runs for President: The Campaign of 1928* (New York: Ronald Press, 1956); and Arthur M. Schlesinger Jr., *The Crisis of the Old Order, 1919–1933* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1956).
16 John D. Hicks, *Republican Ascendancy, 1921–1933* (New York: Harper, 1960), p. 212.
17 Samuel Lubell, *The Future of American Politics,* 3rd revised ed. (New York: Harper & Row, 1965).
18 John Kenneth Galbraith, *The Great Crash, 1929,* revised ed. (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1979; first published in 1961), p. 99.
19 Lester V. Chandler, *America's Greatest Depression, 1929–1941* (New York: Harper-Collins, 1970), p. 5.
20 Ibid.
21 Ibid., p. 35.
22 William E. Leuchtenburg, *Franklin D. Roosevelt and the New Deal, 1932–1940* (New York: Harper & Row, 1963), p. 19.
23 Ibid., p. 1.
24 Chandler, *America's Greatest Depression,* p. 19.
25 Ibid., p. 57.
26 Arthur M. Schlesinger Jr., *The Coming of the New Deal* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1957), p. 3.
27 Leuchtenburg, *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* p. 18.
28 Most relief was given by local public and private agencies. Although many states had programs for relief to designated categories of people—dependent children, people who are blind or disabled—few of these were actually funded.
29 Arthur E. Burns and Edward A. Williams, *Federal Work, Security, and Relief Programs* (New York: Da Capo Press, 1971), pp. 1-2; first published as *Research Monograph 24* (Washington, DC: Works Progress Administration, Division of Social Research, 1941).
30 James T. Patterson, *The New Deal and the States: Federalism in Transition* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1969), p. 30.
31 Ibid., p. 15.
32 Ibid.
33 Mark I. Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities: The Federal Government and Urban America, 1933–1965,* Urban Life in America Series (New York: Oxford University Press, 1975), p. 35.
34 Leuchtenburg, *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* p. 11.
35 Inauguration Day was changed to January by the Twentieth Amendment to the Constitution, ratified in 1933.
36 Leuchtenburg, *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* p. 39.
37 Ibid.
38 Ibid., p. 40.
39 For a thorough account of New Deal programs, see Burns and Williams, *Federal Work.*
40 Leuchtenburg, *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* p. 174.
41 Burns and Williams, *Federal Work,* pp. 29-36.
42 Leuchtenburg, *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* pp. 122-123.
43 Ibid., p. 133.
44 Josephine Chapin Brown, *Public Relief, 1929–1939* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1940), p. 249.
45 Quoted in William E. Binkley, *American Political Parties: Their Natural History* (New York: Knopf, 1943), p. 284.
46 Ibid., pp. 380-381.
47 Patterson, *The New Deal and the States,* p. 26.
48 Calculated from James A. Maxwell, *Federal Grants and the Business Cycle* (New York: National Bureau of Economic Research, 1952), p. 23, Table 7.
49 Ibid.
50 Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities,* p. 49.
51 U.S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics on State and Local Government Revenues, 1902–1953* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1955), p. 12.
52 Maxwell, *Federal Grants and the Business Cycle,* p. 27, Table 11.
53 Ibid., p. 24, Table 8.
54 Ibid., p. 29.
55 Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities,* p. 31.
56 Ibid., p. 32.
57 Ibid., p. 36.
58 Ibid.
59 Ibid., p. 34.
60 Patterson, *The New Deal and the States,* p. 39.

61 Ibid., p. 40.
62 Ibid.
63 Ibid., p. 44.
64 Ibid., p. 47.
65 Ibid., p. 40.
66 Brown, *Public Relief,* pp. 72-96.
67 George C. S. Benson, *The New Centralization: A Study in Intergovernmental Relationships in the United States* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1941), pp. 104-105.
68 Robert G. Dixon Jr., *Democratic Representation: Reapportionment in Law and Politics* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1968), p. 174.
69 Ibid., pp. 71-75, 80, 86-87.
70 Patterson, *The New Deal and the States,* p. 45.
71 Leuchtenburg, *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* p. 52.
72 Ibid., p. 136.
73 Guy Rexford Tugwell, quoted in ibid., p. 35.
74 Finegold, *Experts and Politicians,* p. 12; Bruce M. Stave, *The New Deal and the Last Hurrah: Pittsburgh Machine Politics* (Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press, 1970); Lyle W. Dorsett, *Franklin D. Roosevelt and the City Bosses* (Port Washington, NY: Kennikat, 1977); Dorsett, *The Pendergast Machine* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1968).
75 Quoted in Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities,* p. 66.
76 Public Law 65–102, 65th Cong. (1918); refer to Congressional Quarterly Service, *Housing a Nation* (Washington, DC: author), p. 166; Edith Elmer Wood, *Recent Trends in American Housing* (New York: Macmillan, 1931), p. 79.
77 Congressional Quarterly Service, *Housing a Nation,* pp. xiii.
78 Joint Resolution 52–22, 52d Cong. (1892); refer also to U.S. Congress, House, *Your Congress and American Housing—The Actions of Congress on Housing,* 82d Cong., 2d sess., 1952, H. Doc. 82-532, p. 1.
79 Public Laws 65–149 and 65–164, 65th Cong. (1918); refer also to Twentieth Century Fund, *Housing for Defense* (New York: Twentieth Century Fund, 1940), pp. 156-157; Congressional Quarterly Service, *Housing a Nation,* p. 18.
80 Refer to the Emergency Relief and Reconstruction Act, Public Law 72-302, 72d Cong. (1932).
81 The only other loan made under this authorization was $155,000 for rural housing in Ford County, Kansas.
82 Edwin L. Scanton, "Public Housing Trends in New York City" (Ph.D. dissertation, Graduate School of Banking, Rutgers University, 1952), p. 5.
83 Public Law 73-67, 72d Cong. (1933).
84 From a statement by Harold L. Ickes, Secretary of Interior and Public Works Administrator, quoted in Bert Swanson, "The Public Policy of Urban Renewal: Its Goals, Trends, and Conditions in New York City," paper delivered at the American Political Science Association Meeting (New York, September 1963), p. 10.
85 *U.S. v. Certain Lands in City of Louisville, Jefferson County, Ky., et al.,* 78 F.2d 64 (1935); *U.S. v. Certain Lands in City of Detroit et al.,* 12 F. Supp. 345 (1935).
86 Refer to Glen H. Boyer, *Housing: A Factual Analysis* (New York: Macmillan, 1958), p. 247.
87 Richard D. Bingham, *Public Housing and Urban Renewal: An Analysis of Federal–Local Relations,* Praeger Special Studies in U.S. Economics, Social, and Political Issues (New York: Praeger, 1975), p. 30.
88 Nathaniel S. Keith, *Politics and the Housing Crisis since 1930* (New York: Universe Books, 1973), p. 29.
89 Public Law 75-412, 75th Cong. (1937). Also found in U.S. Congress, House Committee on Banking and Currency, *Basic Laws and Authorizations on Urban Housing,* 91st Cong., 1st sess., 1969, p. 225.
90 Roscoe Martin, "The Expended Partnership," in *The New Urban Politics: Cities and the Federal Government,* ed. Douglas Fox (Pacific Palisades, CA: Goodyear, 1972), p. 51.
91 Keith, *Politics and the Housing Crisis,* p. 33.
92 The restriction limiting participation to low-income families, seen from a comparative perspective, is a root cause of the failure of public housing in America. See Arnold J. Heidenheimer, Hugh Heclo, and Carolyn Teich Adams, *Comparative Public Policy: The Politics of Social Choice in Europe and America* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1975), pp. 69-96.
93 Public Law 76–671, 76th Cong. (1940), relating to defense housing needs; Public Law 80–301, 80th Cong. (1946), suspended cost limitations for some low-income housing projects.
94 U.S. Housing and Home Finance Agency, *Fourteenth Annual Report* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1961), p. 380.
95 U.S. Department of the Interior, National Resources Committee, Urbanism Committee, *Our Cities: Their Role in the National Economy* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1937).
96 Philip J. Funigiello, "City Planning in World War II: The Experience of the National Resources Planning Board," *Social Science Quarterly* 53 (June 1972): 91-104.

PART II

The Urban Crisis of the Twentieth Century

CHAPTER 6

The City/Suburban Divide

A Century of Demographic Change

The twentieth-century movement of millions of people from the central cities to the suburbs constitutes one of the "great population migrations in American history."[1] The suburbs had begun drawing affluent families from the densely packed neighborhoods of the industrial cities as early as the turn of the century, and in the prosperous 1920s the suburbs began growing in earnest.[2] The suburban movement paused for a time in the years of the Great Depression and World War II, but turned into a gathering stampede as soon as postwar prosperity made it possible. The 1970 census revealed that, for the first time, more Americans lived in suburbs than in either rural areas or the central cities. And the suburbs just kept on growing. All through the 1980s and 1990s, suburban communities continued to sprawl in ever-widening arcs around the historic urban centers.

A second great story of the twentieth century involved the several successive waves of migration in the opposite direction, into the cities. From the turn of the century to the 1930s, blacks left the South and poured into the industrial cities of the North, Mexican immigrants made their way to cities of the Southwest, and the great rural-to-urban migration that had begun in the nineteenth century continued to unfold. After World War II, these restless waves of movement reached flood tide. White families living in desperate poverty fled the Appalachian coal fields and depressed areas scattered across rural areas of the country. They were joined by millions of African Americans who pulled up roots and struck out for the cities of the North. Mexicans continued to filter across the border but in larger numbers than before, and by the late century their presence had ignited an antiimmigrant backlash.

Measured in social and political turmoil, the postwar migration of 5 million African Americans out of the South was clearly the most traumatic of all these population movements.[3] In the mid-1960s, a new phrase, "the urban crisis," was coined as a way of referring to the rapidly emerging geography of extreme segregation that separated whites, who now lived primarily in the suburbs, from blacks, who were concentrated in the central cities. In the popular imagination, the phrase came to signify the collision of two powerful cultural stereotypes: "the black ghetto," on the one hand, and, on the other, the American dream of homeownership and upward mobility. These contrasting images called attention to a fundamental fact of American life: in a single generation, racial segregation had become the transcendent issue in national politics and culture, in the North as well as in the South. Americans became accustomed to thinking in dichotomies—city/suburban, black/white, ghetto/subdivision, poor/affluent—and these habits of thought consistently cast cities in a dismal light.[4] The suburbs became identified, in the popular imagination, with tranquil subdivisions of cul-de-sacs and green expanses of lawn; at the same time, images of race, poverty, crime, and slums symbolized the inner cities. By the 1970s, stories of murder, mayhem, and drugs in urban neighborhoods became a means by which local news stations could shore up their ratings. For white Americans, crime and violence became synonymous with the inner city and the people who lived there.[5]

OUTTAKE

Anti-Immigrant Passions Have Reached a Fever Pitch

Unlike any period in the past, immigrants are now arriving nearly everywhere in the United States. It was once assumed, correctly, that immigrants tended to concentrate into a few gateway cities, and from there spread out to older inner-city neighborhoods. In recent years, however, this pattern has changed so much that many suburbs have become as ethnically diverse as the historic cities at the metropolitan core. In the 1990s, for example,

immigrants from an impressive number of countries moved to the suburbs of Long Island: Japanese, Koreans, Vietnamese, Indians, Pakistanis, and Iranians from Asia, and Guatemalans, Cubans, Haitians, and Salvadorans from the Caribbean and Latin America. Immigrants are also moving to cities of all sizes and small towns and rural areas in almost every region of the country. Some rural areas have been changed almost overnight as immigrant workers arrived to be near meat packing plants, poultry operations, and agribusinesses devoted to raising livestock or processing agricultural products.

Such massive changes have spawned fear and resentment, and it is clear that the most inflamed passions have been aimed at undocumented immigrants from Mexico. Hundreds of measures have been introduced into state legislatures to curb and regulate immigration. In 2007, state legislatures considered 1,562 immigration-related measures and enacted 240 of them, a threefold increase over 2006. Among other things, these laws made it a felony for an employer to hire an illegal immigrant, even unknowingly, or for an illegal immigrant to hold a job; made it harder for illegal immigrants to get state ID papers or driver's licenses; and barred illegal immigrants from receiving unemployment insurance or other public services. Over the next two years, local governments adopted literally thousands of anti-immigrant ordinances, many of them of doubtful legality, and police departments took measures to rid their communities of illegal immigrants—and, critics charged, of all Hispanics. As a pretext for deportation, local police departments targeted Hispanic people they thought might be immigrants by arresting them for minor crimes, or detained Hispanics merely on the suspicion that they might be in the country illegally.

The hostility toward immigrants was inflamed by the economic crisis that began to unfold in 2008. By 2010, it had reached a fever pitch not seen since the anti-immigrant hysteria that swept the country almost 100 years before. When Arizona's governor signed into law the nation's strictest anti-immigration law on April 23, 2010, it unleashed a firestorm of protest. The legislation made it a crime to fail to carry identification proving citizenship, and empowered police to arrest anyone if they had a "reasonable cause" to suspect a person was in the country illegally. While conservatives in the Republican Party praised the law, critics called for boycotts on Arizona travel, hurried to prepare legal challenges, and sponsored street protests and rallies. Opponents charged that the law would encourage racial profiling and harassment. President Obama also criticized it, saying that the legislation "threatened to undermine basic notions of fairness that we cherish as Americans." Meanwhile, a series of unintended consequences from the law's passage began to unfold. Hundreds of thousands of undocumented immigrants and Hispanic citizens joined an exodus that had already been in progress since 2008. The number of foreclosures and vacant homes skyrocketed. It was estimated that the impact on the housing market alone might run into hundreds of millions of dollars and that the state's economy would lose more than $26 billion if all undocumented immigrants were to leave. Nevertheless, it was unclear if economic realities could much influence the course of a controversy stirred up by such emotions.

Immigration has remained among the most prominent issues on the federal agenda, and it was a key issue for the Trump presidential campaign in 2016. Since taking office, President Trump has made immigration one of his top priorities, issuing two executive orders and one presidential proclamation, which restrict the entry to the United States of citizens of certain countries, many of them majority Muslim countries. The president also announced in September 2017 that he would withdraw his support for President Obama's 2012 Deferred Action for Childhood Arrivals program, which was also implemented by executive order and provided undocumented immigrants who arrived in the United States as minors with a 2-year, renewable visa. The program is due to expire in March 2018, unless Congress implements a more permanent policy. If DACA is allowed to expire, around 800,000 educated youth, who are currently working and paying taxes, will fall back into undocumented status.

Sources: Dan Anderson, "Times Topics: Immigration and Refugees," *New York Times* (June 9, 2008), p. 20; Randal C. Archibald, "Arizona Enacts Stringent Law on Immigration," *New York Times* (April 23, 2010); Seth Hoy, "Another Unintended Consequence of AZ Immigration Law: More Foreclosures and Vacant Homes," *AlterNet,* www.alternet.org/rights/147211.

Since the mid-1980s, the United States has been undergoing still another demographic transformation. Millions of immigrants have been making their way to the United States from countries all over the world, but for the first time in the nation's history most of them are bypassing the cities entirely and moving directly into the suburbs or beyond. This movement has been transforming both the geography and the politics of urban areas in unexpected ways. The tensions of urban society are no longer rooted mainly in differences between city and suburb. Today, the racial and ethnic groups that make up urban society are spread throughout metropolitan

regions. As of 2006, the Hispanic population in the United States exceeded the African American population,[6] and by mid-century, Latinos are expected to outnumber blacks by more than two to one.[7] Already, these trends are bringing about profound social and political changes to the nation and to its urban areas.

Streams of Migration

Three periods of migration and foreign immigration created the crisis of segregation, race, and poverty that beset America's cities by the second half of the twentieth century.[8] The data in Table 6.1 reveal that the first wave began in the early twentieth century and crested just before the Great Depression. Between 1910 and 1930, some 700,000 Mexicans moved into Texas, New Mexico, Arizona, and California, and more than a million blacks left the southern states for Chicago, Detroit, Cleveland, New York City, Pittsburgh, Philadelphia, and other cities of the industrial Midwest and Northeast. The second, much bigger wave washed over the cities during World War II and did not ebb until the late 1960s. From 1940 to 1970, up to 5 million blacks and 700,000 Mexicans moved into America's inner cities. During this same period, more than a million and a half impoverished whites also left rural and small-town life, although their migration received little attention.

Between 1910 and 1926, the bloody and protracted violence of the Mexican Revolution drove Mexicans into the southwestern states. Although the revolution released millions of peasants from their feudal relationship with landholders, it left many of them without a way to make a living. Bloody confrontations between a Mexican government dedicated to land reform and landowners who resisted change drove the newly liberated peasants into Texas, Arizona, and California. During World War II and its aftermath, employment opportunities in the southwestern states induced still more Mexicans to cross the border. By 1970, 5.5 million Mexican Americans were living in the American Southwest, accounting for more than 90 percent of all the people of Mexican descent in the United States.[9] By 2000, 17.9 million Mexican Americans were spread throughout the southern and western states, about 87 percent of the nation's total.[10] Hispanic immigrants from several other Latin American countries streamed into the states of the Southwest in even larger numbers in the 1980s and 1990s, pushed by political repression and poverty and pulled by the availability of jobs.

TABLE 6.1 Rural-to-Urban Migrant Streams in Twentieth-Century America

Migrant Group	Principal Migration Period	Approximate Number of Migrants[a]	Origin	Destination
Appalachian whites	1940–1970	1,600,000	Southern Appalachian Mountains (Kentucky and West Virginia)	North-central states
Mexicans	1910–1930	700,000	Mesa Central primarily, also Mesa del Norte	Texas and south-western states
	1940–1970	700,000	Mesa Central primarily, also Mesa del Norte	Texas and California
Blacks	1910–1930	1,250,000b	Mississippi delta, Atlantic black belt, coastal plain	Illinois, Ohio, Michigan New York, and Pennsylvania
	1940–1970	5,000,000[b]	Mississippi delta, Atlantic black belt, coastal plain	Cities everywhere

Notes: [a] These figures are approximate. The data for the Mexican migration, for example, are obscured by contract labor, two-way migration, and illegal entrants. [b] U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics of the United States: Colonial Times to 1970* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 2002). Greenberg's original table lists 1 million blacks, 1910–1930, and 3.5 million blacks, 1940–1965.
Source: Adapted from Stanley B. Greenberg, *Politics and Poverty: Modernization and Response in Five Poor Neighborhoods* (New York: Wiley, 1974), p. 19.

The inexorable decline of the coal industry from the 1930s to the 1960s in the southern Appalachian Mountains and the Cumberland Plateau of Virginia, West Virginia, and Kentucky forced the desperately poor

families of the mining communities to flee year by year in their thousands. The exodus reached such proportions after World War II that some counties in Appalachia were almost depopulated. In his moving book *Night Comes to the Cumberlands,* Harry Caudill describes the abject poverty that forced families and entire communities to pick up and leave their marginal farm plots and shabby towns. Families could trace their roots in Appalachia several generations back. Homesickness for the hills and hollows left behind became a lament often expressed in folk and bluegrass music. In the 1950s alone, a quarter of the population deserted the Cumberland Plateau, settling in cities and towns of Kentucky, Tennessee, Maryland, Virginia, and the industrial belt of the upper Midwest.[11] A steady stream of impoverished white families living in the smaller coalfields of southern Illinois, Kentucky, and Arkansas joined them. The new migrants, who were scarcely more welcome than blacks and Hispanics, were derisively called Hoosiers, Okies, and Arkies. Like the flood of African Americans and the lesser stream of Hispanics, they crowded into rundown urban neighborhoods, although unlike those groups, they had the option of moving into small towns or trailer parks located at some remove from the inner city. More than class origins or poverty, race was the great dividing line of American urban life.

The two great waves of African American migration, one before the Depression and the other in the years after World War II, were by far the largest regional population movements of the twentieth century, and they had the most enduring effects. Historians have referred to the exodus of blacks from the South between 1910 and 1930 as "the Great Migration" because it was "one of the largest and most rapid mass internal movements of people in history—perhaps the greatest not caused by the immediate threat of execution or starvation."[12] In the decade from 1910 to 1920, 450,000 blacks moved out of the South, followed by another 750,000 in the 1920s.[13] In the 20 years between 1910 and 1930, about a million blacks—one-tenth of all blacks living in the South—moved to cities in the Northeast and Midwest. In just 20 years, the black population living outside the South shot up by 134 percent, and the proportion of the nation's black population residing in the South dropped from 89 to 79 percent.[14]

Like the generations of European immigrants who preceded them, African Americans were pushed by crisis and pulled by opportunity. Poverty and unemployment in the South provided the push, jobs in the North the pull. Beginning in southern Texas in the late 1890s and sweeping eastward through Georgia by 1921, boll weevil infestations wiped out cotton crops, forcing black sharecroppers off the land. In the same period, an abrupt decline in European immigration occasioned by World War I, combined with the sudden rise of armaments industries, produced labor shortages in the industrial cities of the North.

Almost all the African Americans leaving the South settled into densely packed neighborhoods in northern cities. Only 10 percent of the nation's blacks lived in cities of 100,000 or more in 1910; this percentage increased to 16 percent in 1920 and to 24 percent by 1930.[15] The biggest cities lured most of the migrants. The proportion of blacks living in cities smaller than 100,000 declined from 1910 to 1930, but the proportion increased substantially in cities of over 100,000.[16] Thus, the Great Migration was made up of two principal components: Blacks were becoming northern, and they were becoming urban.

In 1910, African Americans made up more than 2 percent of the population in only a handful of northern cities. By 1930, however, they accounted for 18 percent of the population of Gary, Indiana, and 16 percent in East St. Louis, Illinois, with its stockyards, rail yards, and heavy industry. As shown in Table 6.2, in the same two decades, black populations had grown two to three times as large in the big cities. By 1930, percentages ranged from almost 5 percent in New York City to 7 percent in Chicago and 8 percent in Cleveland, to just over 11 percent in St. Louis and Philadelphia. African Americans became concentrated in well-defined ghettos. In north Harlem in New York City, about one-third (36 percent) of the population was African American in 1920, but this proportion increased to 81 percent by the 1930 census.[17]

The North was seen as a "promised land" that offered an escape from the violent racism of the South and the opportunity for economic advancement. Southern blacks began their trek to northern cities and states as a means of escaping the shackles of the southern caste system. The migration northward had already commenced when, in May 1917, the publisher of the *Chicago Defender* launched "The Great Northern Drive" to persuade blacks to move. Founded in 1905, by World War I the *Defender* already had reached a circulation of 100,000, and blacks read it avidly throughout the South. The *Defender*'s editorials exhorted blacks to come north to the land of opportunity, where they could find employment and, if not equality, at least an escape from harassment and violence. Its columns of job advertisements added substance to the vision of the "promised land." At the same time, the *Defender* exposed the terrible conditions experienced by blacks living in the South. Lynchings and other

forms of intimidation were regularly highlighted in lurid detail. Moving out of the South was portrayed as a way to advance the cause of racial equality for all blacks.[18]

TABLE 6.2 Growth of Black Population in Several Cities, 1910–1930

City	Total Population			Percentage Increase		
	1910	1920	1930	1910–1930	1910	1930
New York	91,709	152,467	327,706	257.3%	2%	5%
Chicago	44,103	109,458	233,903	429.3	2	7
Philadelphia	84,459	134,229	219,599	160.0	5.5	11
St. Louis	43,960	69,854	93,580	112.9	6	11
Cleveland	8,448	34,451	71,889	751.0	1.5	8

Source: U.S. Bureau of the Census, Negroes in the United States, 1920–1932 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1935), p. 55.

The *Defender* was only one of many voices encouraging African Americans to abandon the South. Those who had already moved wrote letters to relatives and friends describing their new life in glowing terms. Despite job and housing discrimination in the North, they found conditions preferable to those they had left behind. Throughout the South, blacks lived under a reign of terror. From 1882 to 1930, there were 1,663 lynchings in the five states of the Cotton Belt alone—Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana, Mississippi, and South Carolina—and 1,299 blacks were legally executed.[19] In the 10 southern states, more than 2,500 blacks—an average of about one person per week—were lynched between 1880 and 1930.[20] The legal systems of the southern states were so completely rigged that the difference between lynching and legalized murder by police and the courts was not much more than a technicality. Blacks who failed to obey the racial caste system, even inadvertently, could expect immediate retribution in the form of beatings or worse. Failing to step off the sidewalk, forgetting to say "sir" or "ma'am," or looking a white person in the eye could bring a sudden and violent reaction. As a way of enforcing strict obedience, lynchings had long been a way of life throughout the southern states. Frequently these descended into orgies of depravity, the victims slowly tortured to death with blowtorches or other devices, and the mobs carrying off clothing and body parts as souvenirs.[21]

The opportunities for escaping such conditions improved in proportion to labor shortages in northern factories. After war broke out in Europe in 1914, factory owners found themselves with lucrative armaments contracts but too few workers. They sent labor agents into the South with free train tickets in hand, which could be exchanged for a labor agreement. Southern white employers and planters took steps to prevent the exodus of their cheap labor. Magazines, newspapers, and business organizations decried the movement, as in this October 5, 1916, editorial in the Memphis *Commercial Appeal*:

> The enormous demand for labor and the changing conditions brought about by the boll weevil in certain parts of the South have caused an exodus of negroes which may be serious. Great colonies of negroes have gone north to work in factories, in packing houses and on the railroads….
>
> The South needs every able-bodied negro that is now south of the line, and every negro who remains south of the line will in the end do better than he will do in the North….
>
> The negroes who are in the South should be encouraged to remain there, and those white people who are in the boll weevil territory should make every sacrifice to keep their negro labor until there can be adjustments to the new and quickly prosperous conditions that will later exist.[22]

States and communities went to great lengths to discourage migration. Jacksonville, Florida, passed an ordinance in 1916 levying heavy fines on unlicensed labor agents from the North. Macon, Georgia, made it impossible for labor agents to get licenses and then outlawed unlicensed agents. The mayor of Atlanta talked to blacks about the "dreadfully cold" northern winters.[23] In some communities, police were sent to railroad stations to harass blacks near the stations, keep them from boarding trains, or even drive them off the trains.

But the "promised land" beckoned, and despite all obstacles the exodus continued. What the new arrivals found was opportunity—but not equal opportunity—and persistent discrimination. Whenever blacks attempted to move into white neighborhoods, they were harassed or violently assaulted. In the workplace, they were the last hired and the first fired. They were kept in the most menial occupations. Job opportunities were limited not only by employers but even more so by labor unions, which generally prohibited blacks from membership. Because the

North was more heavily unionized than the South, there were actually fewer opportunities in some occupations, especially for skilled laborers.[24] In both union and non-union shops, white workers often refused to work alongside blacks. To avoid trouble, employers assigned blacks to the least desirable jobs.

African Americans found it hard to adjust to urban life. Hardly any of them had previously lived in a city. Many had never even participated directly in the cash economy. Sharecroppers had often worked under contracts with provisions that they bought only from the planters' stores and then with scrip and credit rather than cash. Some of them had never even seen U.S. currency, and they were often cheated and overcharged.

These conditions, when amplified by the intense segregation into dilapidated, overcrowded ghettos, led to astonishing levels of social pathology. The arrest rate for blacks in Detroit in 1926 was four times that for whites. Blacks constituted 31 percent of the nation's prison population in 1923, although they made up only 9 percent of the total population. The death rate in Harlem between 1923 and 1927 was 42 percent higher than in New York City as a whole, even though Harlem's population was much younger than the overall city population. Harlem's infant mortality rate was 111 per 1,000 births, compared with the city's rate of 64 per 1,000. Tuberculosis, heart disease, and other illnesses also far exceeded the rates for the city's general population.[25]

Blacks moving into northern cities were often surprised when they encountered a level of hostility, racism, and discrimination that was almost as bad as in the South. Restaurants and stores refused to serve them; banks typically refused to give them loans. Cemeteries, parks, bathing beaches, and other facilities were put off limits or divided into "white" and "colored" sections. Many dentists, doctors, and hospitals refused to treat blacks. Worse, the violence that had plagued them in the South followed them everywhere they went. On July 2, 1917, 39 blacks and 5 whites died in a race riot in East St. Louis, Illinois.[26] In the infamous "Red Summer" of 1919, race riots broke out in more than 20 cities, all of them involving attacks by white mobs on blacks. Chicago's riot of that summer started when a black teenager inadvertently swam across a strip of water separating the beach designated "For Coloreds Only" from the one reserved for whites. A crowd stoned the boy to death and then terrorized blacks throughout the city for days. From July 1, 1917, to March 1, 1921, Chicago experienced 58 racial bombings.[27] Unemployed blacks were forced out of Buffalo by city police in 1920. That same year, in perhaps the worst mass murder of blacks in U.S. history, more than 300 blacks were killed by white mobs in Tulsa, Oklahoma—an incident covered up for almost 80 years before it was brought to light.[28] Almost everywhere, blacks who attempted to move into white neighborhoods were terrorized by cross burnings, vandalism, and mob violence.

In all cities, restrictive covenants were attached to property deeds to keep African Americans from buying into white neighborhoods. Deeds with racial restrictions were filed in the office of the county clerk or the register of deeds and enforced by the courts. Chicago, with more than 11 square miles covered by restricted deeds in 1944, was typical of northern cities.[29] Neighborhood improvement associations sprung up in new subdivisions and, by legal prosecution and social persuasion, they forced homeowners to accept and abide by restrictive covenants. The result was that racial segregation in northern cities had become firmly fixed even before the second great wave of black migration, which was many times larger than the first.

Racial Conflict in the Postwar Era

Although the movement to the North slowed to a crawl in the years of the Great Depression, during World War II it picked up momentum and soon reached levels far exceeding anything that came before. As in the years of the Great Migration, factory jobs pulled blacks into northern cities, and conditions in the South provided a push. The mechanization of southern agriculture, in particular the widespread adoption of the mechanized cotton picker, threw hundreds of thousands of sharecroppers and farm laborers out of work. From Texas, Louisiana, and Arkansas, blacks streamed into cities of the West, especially in California; from the middle South they moved to St. Louis, Chicago, Detroit, Cleveland, and other cities of the Midwest; and from Mississippi and eastward in the Deep South, they moved to Washington, DC, New York, Boston, and other cities in the East. In 1940, 77 percent of the nation's blacks still lived in the southern states but by 1950 only 60 percent lived in the South. Over the next two decades the South's share declined to 56 percent (in 1960) and to 53 percent (in 1970).[30] Almost all the northward-bound migrants ended up in cities.

As blacks continued their trek out of the South, the pressure on the urban housing stock intensified. The African American families crowded into segregated areas expressed resentment about the invisible walls that kept them out of the more desirable areas inhabited by whites.[31] At the other end of the scale, virtually all whites felt an imperative to keep their neighborhoods segregated.[32] Realtors made sure that blacks stayed out of white areas by

refusing to show them homes there, or by rejecting their business altogether. Sometimes, though, realtors made money by doing exactly the opposite. To induce white homeowners to sell their homes at bargain prices, some realtors distributed handbills or went door-to-door announcing that blacks were moving onto the block. Panicked homeowners were eager to sell out cheap, and at the other end of the process the realtor was able to charge a premium for blacks who wanted to buy homes in the "busted" neighborhood.[33]

The tactics employed by homeowners to resist the movement of blacks into their neighborhoods assumed some of the aspects of war. In the 1950s, a homeowners' movement swept through the neighborhoods of Detroit. Neighborhood associations organized meetings to urge their neighbors not to sell to blacks and to discuss strategies of resistance. At night, when they could most effectively terrorize their victims, crowds gathered in front of houses newly purchased by black families, shouting racial epithets and insults; strewing garbage on the lawn; breaking windows with stones, bricks, and bottles; tearing down fences; breaking car windshields; and, if all else failed, setting fire to the house.[34] Racial change occurred in block-by-block skirmishes, with whites making a slow retreat until panic precipitated a sudden exodus. By the mid-1960s, resistance had given way to "white flight," and white families were fleeing from the neighborhoods of central cities.

For both blacks and whites, the racial wars shattered lives and left an enduring legacy of bitterness. Whites who fled in panic sold their homes at bargain-basement prices. Blacks who had to abandon their houses in the face of intimidation often lost their investments and any hope of moving out of the slums. Many neighborhoods never recovered from the turmoil; for others, it would take decades, if it happened at all. In 2005, Detroit was a city in which 11 percent of the population was white and 82 percent was African American. The contrast to its suburbs was stark: there, African Americans comprised less than 10 percent of the population.[35]

As a result of the two streams flowing in opposite directions—blacks moving into the cities, whites fleeing to the suburbs—the demographic composition of the central cities changed almost overnight. By the mid-1960s, a yawning racial chasm separated the central cities from the suburbs. In the wake of urban riots in 1965 and 1966, a series of presidential commissions gave expression to the rising concern that the extreme segregation of urban areas had developed into a national crisis. The National Commission on Civil Disorders of 1967 (called the Kerner Commission after its chair, Illinois governor Otto B. Kerner) warned of "two nations, one black, one white—separate and unequal."[36] With this phrase, the commission was merely acknowledging a reality that anyone could easily observe. Table 6.3 shows that in 1940, blacks accounted for more than 10 percent of the population in just 4 of 12 big cities; on average, the proportion was 9 percent. Only 30 years later, African Americans made up 72 percent of the population in Washington, DC, 47 percent in Baltimore, 44 percent in Detroit, 39 percent in Cleveland, and 41 percent in St. Louis.

Although the opposing streams of movement began to slow in the 1970s, the racial gap continued to grow more extreme right up to the end of the century. By the 2000 census, African Americans accounted for large majorities in several cities even while the suburbs contained relatively few African Americans. The data displayed in Table 6.3 reveal that even as late as the census of 2000, African Americans accounted for barely more than 10 percent of the suburban population (and sometimes less) in most of the leading metropolitan areas: 11 percent in Chicago's suburbs, 9 percent in Detroit's, and 5 percent in Pittsburgh's; 3.5 percent in Boston's, and 11 percent in Cleveland's. High levels of residential segregation between suburban jurisdictions show that the racial disparities inherited from the era of the urban crisis continue to persist.

TABLE 6.3 Percentage of Blacks in Central Cities and Suburban Rings in 12 Selected Standard Metropolitan Statistical Areas (SMSAs), 1940, 1970, and 2000[a]

SMSA	Central City			Suburban Ring		
	1940	1970	2000	1940	1970	2000
New York[b]	6%	23%	29.5%	5%	6%	10%
Los Angeles–Long Beach	6	21	12	2	7	6
Chicago	8	34	37	2	4	11
Philadelphia	13	34	45	7	7	12
Detroit	9	44	83	3	4	9
San Francisco–Oakland	5	33	12	4	9	6
Boston	3	18	28	1	2	3.5
Pittsburgh	9	27	28	4	4	5
St. Louis	13	41	52	7	8	13
Washington, DC	28.5	72	61	14	9	23
Cleveland	10	39	52	1	1	11
Baltimore	19	47	65	12	6	14.5
All 12 SMSAs	9	31	33.5	4	6	10

Notes: [a] Except for St. Louis, Baltimore, and Washington, DC, figures refer to the consolidated metropolitan statistical areas (CMSAs), which are not strictly comparable to the standard metropolitan statistical areas (SMSAs) used in earlier years. For 2000, additional central cities are included for some urban areas: Oakland for San Francisco–Oakland; Bridgeport (Connecticut), Newark, Jersey City, and New Haven for New York. As of 2000, Washington, DC, and Baltimore were considered central cities of a single metropolitan area, but they are kept separate to facilitate accurate comparisons with earlier censuses. Camden has also been deleted as a separate central city for the Philadelphia region. Calculated from U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Census of 2000*, www.census.gov.
[b] Includes data from the Nassau–Suffolk SMSA, which was deleted from the New York City SMSA in 1971. They are included to maintain comparability across time periods.

Source: Data for 1940 and 1970 adapted from Leo F. Schnore, Carolyn D. André, and Harry Sharp, "Black Suburbanization, 1930–1970," in *The Changing Face of the Suburbs,* ed. Barry Schwartz (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1976), p. 80. Reprinted by permission. The figures here were transposed to yield data on black percentages.

The Emergence of a New Kind of Poverty

Inevitably, the mass migration of rural blacks to the inner cities and their concentration into densely packed urban neighborhoods created intractable social problems. Blacks were not only crowded into segregated slums, but their plight was also aggravated by their high rate of poverty and the constant influx of new arrivals. A large proportion of blacks lived in areas in which almost everyone was poor. Ironically, the problem of concentrated poverty worsened at the same time that housing opportunities for middle-class blacks improved. As the African American middle class abandoned the ghetto, they left behind the families that lacked the resources to make the same move. The result was that poverty became even more concentrated than before. In 1970, the Census Bureau classified more than one-fourth (27 percent) of the census tracts located in the 100 largest cities as officially designated "poverty" tracts where at least 20 percent of the residents lived in households with incomes that fell below the federal government's poverty line. Two decades later the percentage of poverty tracts had reached 39 percent.[37] In 2005, the poverty rate in large cities (18.8 percent) was twice as high as in the suburbs (9.4 percent), and this ratio had not changed for decades.[38]

African Americans, Hispanics, and American Indians are far more likely to live in high-poverty neighborhoods than whites.[39] A 2011 survey study found that overall, African American and Hispanic households live in neighborhoods with more than one and a half times the national poverty rate. The differences, though, may be even more extreme than that statistic seems to suggest—for example, in 2010 African American and Hispanic households earning more than $75,000 lived in less affluent and resource-rich neighborhoods than white households earning less than $40,000.[40]

In the 1980s, the sociologist William Julius Wilson used the term *underclass* to refer to people who were

concentrated in low-income areas and who were chronically out of work and out of the social mainstream.[41] The media, politicians, and social scientists quickly appropriated the term, using it to refer loosely to "a constellation of behaviors or conditions, including being poor and living in the inner city, being chronically unemployed, on welfare, homeless, residing in a single-parent family (especially with illegitimate children), having a criminal record, or using drugs (especially crack cocaine)."[42] Although this list clearly included behaviors that might be exhibited throughout society or by poor people regardless of where they lived, the term was normally used to refer to African Americans exclusively. Frequently, "underclass" was defined so broadly that it included blacks not living in poverty areas at all but who allegedly exhibited a single characteristic (such as unemployment or single parenthood) that was thought of as "underclass." In short, the underclass concept became a way of speaking about race without actually admitting that race was the topic of conversation.[43]

Because the underclass concept was widely exploited for ideological purposes and as a media stereotype, most scholars abandoned it. Wilson stopped using the term and began instead to refer to the harmful effects that result from segregating the poor together as "concentration effects."[44] Later, he used the term *the new urban poverty,* and his main focus turned to the high proportion of unemployed males in areas with high poverty rates: "poor, segregated neighborhoods in which a substantial majority of individual adults are either unemployed or have dropped out of the labor force altogether."[45] Without work, he said, a necessary structure for daily life disappeared, and the activities that replaced work—such as hanging out on the corner, engaging in petty crime, becoming involved with drugs—undermined family life. Wilson linked the persistent joblessness among African Americans to the steep decline of manufacturing jobs in the 1970s and 1980s. In the past, African Americans held a disproportionate share of blue-collar jobs, and even though their employment in the service sector rose sharply in the period of deindustrialization, full-employment wages declined by 25–30 percent by the mid-1990s.[46] Wilson's research was alarming because it appeared that the conditions of life in the inner-city ghettos were getting worse, with no end in sight. It was a dismal conclusion to reach fully a quarter century after the civil rights legislation and the programs of the Great Society.

A large number of studies documented the startling dimensions of the unresolved problems of inner-city poverty neighborhoods. More than two-thirds of African American families were headed by single women. By itself this would not have seemed so bad, except that in 1993 families headed by divorced women made 40 percent as much as households headed by a husband and a wife.[47] Households headed by women who had never been married made only 21 percent as much, and *two-thirds* of all children in such families lived in poverty (compared to one-tenth of children in married-couple families).[48] Since the mid-1970s, middle-class families had been able to maintain high living standards because there were typically two wage earners in the household. Increasingly, a large proportion of African American women were forced to work in low-paying and seasonal jobs. When combined with the rising unemployment levels among African American men, the pathways out of poverty seemed few indeed.

Health and health care in inner-city poverty areas continued to deteriorate after the 1970s. Families in poverty generally lacked health insurance, and so were forced into overcrowded health clinics and emergency rooms.

For these reasons, in 1990 the United States had among the highest infant mortality rates in the industrialized world.[49] The overall national rate was about 10 deaths for every 1,000 live births in the late 1980s, but the rate for inner-city poverty neighborhoods approached that of developing countries. In 1988–1989, for example, the infant mortality rate in central Harlem was 23 per 1,000 births, about the same as in Malaysia.[50] In the 1980s, the drug epidemic began to devastate inner-city minority neighborhoods. The murder rate among young black males tripled between 1984 and 1991, in part because of crack cocaine and heroin use.[51] Young men in well-armed gangs fought one another to control the lucrative business. The connection between crack and violence went beyond the gangs, however. Because crack was so addictive, users resorted to robbery, burglary, car theft, and prostitution to feed their habit.

Fueled by turf wars between gangs engaged in the drug trade, violent crime soared in American cities in the late 1980s and early 1990s.[52] In 1990, New York City set a record with 2,262 murders, yet its per capita homicide rate ranked it only slightly above average for the country's 25 largest cities.[53] Violent death reached pandemic proportions among young black and Latino males in inner-city areas. Citing the fact that homicide was the leading cause of death for black males aged 15–24 in 1990, the federal Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC) stated the casualty rate was approaching that of war. According to a study in the *New England Journal of Medicine,* young men in Harlem, primarily because of high homicide rates, were less likely to survive to

the age of 40 than their counterparts in Bangladesh.[54] A late-1980s survey of schoolchildren in Chicago found that an astonishing 24 percent of them had personally witnessed a murder.[55]

Despite the fact that overall crime rates fell after 1990, there continued to be a high level of random violent crime in low-income minority areas. Gang warfare had become a fact of life in such communities, and innocent bystanders frequently got caught up in street-level violence. This trend has continued in recent years. For instance, although 2009 was the safest year in New York in more than four decades, in the first 11 weeks of 2010, the citywide murder rate increased 22.8 percent over the same period as in 2009, and most of this occurred in a few high-poverty areas.

The problems in the urban ghetto in the late twentieth century bred a national obsession with crime and violence. In 1990, approximately 20 percent of front-page news stories and local news broadcasts focused on violent crime.[56] A 10:00 p.m. newscast typically contained live footage of a reporter standing at a crime scene in front of a minicam, the talking head soon giving way to a video collage of a bloodstained street or sidewalk, shocked spectators, and perhaps grief-stricken friends and relatives. The discourse about the inner cities became "our … national morality play," a performance made up of sensationalized and exaggerated narratives of good and evil, the "good" in the suburbs, and the "evil" in the cities.[57]

In the 1990s, the stark divide between cities and suburbs began to melt away, and thus the main defining characteristic of the postwar urban crisis began to disappear. At the national level, other issues—terrorism, economic crisis, immigration, and the environment—have largely displaced concern about the cities and their problems. As suburbs have become more diverse they have also become more "urban," and the revitalization of the central cities has restored a sense that they are vital and interesting places. These momentous developments tend to obscure the fact that many of the social problems associated with the urban crisis persist. Blacks still remain more highly segregated than any other racial or ethnic group in American society, and poverty and violence remain as intractable problems in poor neighborhoods. The urban crisis took a long time to develop, and its effects will echo for a long time to come.

The Suburban Exodus

To understand how the urban crisis of the twentieth century emerged so quickly, it is not sufficient to focus solely on the segregation of African Americans into inner-city neighborhoods. The mass exodus of the white population is the other side of the coin. Wealthy people began leaving the cities in the nineteenth century, but only in small numbers. Hardly anyone noticed because the industrial cities were prosperous and crowded. In the twentieth century, urban America underwent a historic sea change when the movement to suburbs accelerated at the same time that the industrial cities began to lose their economic vitality. The denouement to this process came in the years after World War II, when white families of all social classes began to desert the cities en masse.

The movement to the suburbs came in four great bursts, each fueled by some combination of middle-class prosperity, transportation innovations, a desire for a larger house and a higher standard of living—and a growing rejection of the city. Although a few suburbs began to form as early as the mid-nineteenth century, when railroads made it possible for a few affluent urban dwellers to escape the teeming masses in the densely packed cities, the first burst of suburban development began later in the century, with the building of a streetcar network. A second surge, which came in the 1920s, was energized by middle-class prosperity, the adoption of the automobile, and the building of paved roads. But the two suburban movements that truly altered the geography of urban America and redefined its national politics have come over the past half century or so: first, in the 1950s and 1960s, with the flight of middle- and working-class white families from the city, and second, the movement of minorities and immigrants not only to the cities, but throughout metropolitan areas. As we shall see, these successive periods of suburban growth changed the contours of American urban politics in their own distinctive ways.

The Romantic Suburban Ideal: 1815–1918

The first faint hint of a city/suburban split became evident quite early in the nation's history. The desire to escape from the madding crowd can be traced not only to the conditions in the industrial cities but also to a deeply ingrained hostility to urban life that dates to the nation's founding. Historians have often noted Thomas Jefferson's suspicion that cities undermined the democratic impulse. According to Jefferson, "The mobs of great cities add just so much to the support of pure government, as sores do to the strength of the human body."[58] In

the 1830s and 1840s, the disdain for urban life was reinforced by the literature of the Romantic Movement, whose writers admired nature and abhorred cities, technology, and modernism.

A series of nineteenth-century transportation innovations allowed an increasing number of city dwellers to leave the crowded streets of the historic city center. In 1814, Robert Fulton began operating a steam ferry service between Manhattan and Brooklyn, thus making Brooklyn the nation's first commuter suburb.[59] A few years later, a select class of wealthy people rode in luxury cars pulled by steam locomotives to mansioned districts a few miles from the built-up city, but for most of them these residences served as weekend and country homes. In the years after the Civil War, rail-improved connections enabled wealthy families to live in pristine isolation from the problems of industrial society. Some railroads lost money on day-to-day operations, but that did not prevent railroad entrepreneurs from amassing fabulous fortunes through suburban land speculation.[60] Llewellyn Park, located 13 miles outside the boundary of New York City, was founded in 1853 by a wealthy entrepreneur who thought that placing people in a natural setting would revive religious and moral values. Lake Forest, founded in 1857 as a railroad suburb a few miles north of Chicago, was designed around a picturesque village square surrounded by tree-shaded lanes winding among the hills and bluffs along Lake Michigan. After the Civil War, more suburbs modeled on the picturesque landscaping ideal of the Romantic Movement made their appearance: "gracefully-curved lines, generous spaces, and the absence of sharp corners, the idea being to suggest and imply leisure, contemplativeness and happy tranquility."[61] Even today, most of the suburbs built on this model retain their exclusive character: In contrast to the grid-patterned streets of cities, these suburbs look like "scattered buildings in a park," the homes integrated with nature, with no hint of the grimy factories on which this suburban wealth was based.[62]

The image of the suburb as a romantic idyll reflected a growing disenchantment with urban life. At the turn of the century, a back-to-nature movement, built on a romanticized version of nature and rural environments, swept the country. Boy Scouts, Campfire Girls, Woodcraft Indians, and several other organizations sought to expose children to the healthy influence of nature study. Children's literature was filled with stories of adventure in "natural" settings. Adults, too, were thought to be purified and rejuvenated by visits to the countryside. Bird-watching and nature photography became major pastimes. Tourism to national parks boomed, especially after the turn of the century, when automobiles became available to the middle classes.

Although the suburban ideal was intimately linked with a yearning for an idealized version of nature, suburban residents had no intention of giving up the amenities and advantages of the cities they had left behind. Instead, they attempted a fusion of both worlds—the urban and the rural—in the suburbs. Magazines and newspapers of the day were filled with articles on the advantages of suburban life as an amalgam of city conveniences and rural charm. In 1902, one magazine writer claimed that suburban living could "offer the best of chances for individualism and social cooperation."[63] The next year, *Cosmopolitan* carried an article hailing the "new era" of suburban living:

> The woeful inadequacy of facilities of communication and transportation which formerly rendered every suburbanite a martyr to his faith have, in great measure, been remedied; and moreover, residents in the environs have now reached the happy point where they consider as necessities the innumerable modern conveniences of the city house which were little short of luxuries in the suburban residence of yesterday.[64]

The turn of the century brought a flood of advertisements describing suburban living as a dreamland landscape of springs, orchards, and forests, where the inhabitants enjoyed bathing, fishing, and shooting, all while living in houses with the modern conveniences of hot water, gas lighting, and telephones.[65] One ad promised "A Country Home with All City Comforts," while another talked of crops of oats and hay, orchards, trees and shrubbery, fruit trees, and other accompaniments of the rural environment.[66] The lush ads featured drawings and photographs of wide expanses of lawn, trees, and meticulously tended gardens.

When horse-drawn streetcars began to run on city streets in the 1850s, the opportunity to escape the noise and anarchy of the industrial city filtered down the social ladder; now professionals and small businessmen were able to commute up to 3 miles from the downtown precincts. Cities still remained quite compact, but all that changed with the coming of the electric trolley in the 1890s. By tripling the distance of a practical commute, the trolley increased the amount of land available for residential use by an incredible 900 percent. American's urban areas began to spread inexorably outward.

By the 1890s, the electric streetcar had quickened the pace of suburban development, and it did not take long for a more affordable version of the suburban dream to emerge. A new generation of suburbs sprang up along the boundaries of the older cities, such places as University City, Missouri, just outside St. Louis, and Oak Park, 8

miles west of Chicago. These suburbs preserved the basic idea of the romantic ideal even while incorporating physical elements of the city, with grid street patterns, houses planted in rows along a sidewalk, and yards in the back. The quickened pace of suburban development was tied to an intellectual and sentimental reaction against the city. Academic writers promoted the idea that "our great cities, as those who have studied them have learned, are full of junk, much of it human."[67] A Boston University professor called city life "a self-chosen enslavement" and indicated that "the psychological causes of urban drift are socially most sinister."[68] Already, it was possible to discern a presentiment of the attitudes that would later be directed at African Americans in the post–World War II era. Cities were thought to nurture every conceivable sort of evil, as evidenced by such titles of sociological research as *The Social Evil in Chicago*; *Five Hundred Criminal Careers; The City Where Crime Is Play*; *Family Disorganization; Sex, Freedom and Social Control;* and *The Ghetto*.[69] Cities had few defenders and a host of critics.

The Automobile Suburbs: 1918–1945

For awhile, it seemed that suburban development posed no threat to the vitality of the industrial city. In hindsight, though, it is clear that this state of affairs could not last. The data in Table 6.4 can be read as a narrative revealing that even before the automobile became popular, the suburbs around several big cities were growing fast enough to suggest that suburban growth might eventually pose a problem. Between 1900 and 1910, New York City's population increased by 39 percent, but in the same decade its suburbs grew even faster, by 61 percent. Meanwhile, the number of people living in Chicago's suburbs skyrocketed, growing by 88 percent in the first decade of the century; and St. Louis' suburbs grew at an even faster pace of 91 percent. As more and more people took to the streetcars and the early automobile, the trend accelerated. A new kind of urban form began to emerge, too. Los Angeles, which began to grow in the era of the automobile, began to spread out even before the city was fully formed.

Still, the day when suburban growth might be regarded as a problem was some way off. The cities were madhouses of activity, and on their borders a few people lived their quieter lives. Between 1900 and 1920, for instance, New York City grew by 2.2 million people; over the same period, the suburbs beyond the city limits increased by 190,000. This meant that the suburbs had more than doubled in 20 years, but this hardly mattered when considered in the larger context: in 1920, New York City's population was 5.6 million people, making the suburban population of 379,000 seem awfully small.

TABLE 6.4 Metropolitan Area Population, 1900–1940 (Increases in Population Expressed as Percentage Growth and Number of People Added)

Districts	1900–1910		1910–1920		1920–1930		1930–1940	
	Central City	Outside Central City	Central City	Outside Central City	Central City	Outside Central City	Central City	Outside Central City
Boston	20%	23%	9%	21%	4%	21%	–1%	3%
Chicago	29	88	23	79	25	74	0.6	10
Cleveland	46	46.5	40	140	12	126	–1	13
Los Angeles	206	553	81	108	115	158	–3	30
New York City[a]	39	61	18	35	23	67	8	18
St. Louis	19	91	12.5	26	7	71	–1	6
Mean for all metro districts (nation)	**34**	**38**	**25**	**32**	**21**	**47**	**4**	**14**

Note: [a] *Includes growth of population in New York City proper and in satellite areas of New York State. New Jersey population is excluded.*

Source: U.S. Bureau of the Census, *The Growth of Metropolitan Districts in the United States, 1900–1940,* by Warren S. Thompson (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1947), especially Table 2.

The same could be said for all of the big cities. Almost everything was concentrated close to downtown. Industrial and manufacturing facilities remained near the water and rail transportation facilities located at or near the historic center. Between 1904 and 1914, St. Louis lost some industry to its suburbs (its share of industrial employment fell from 95 to 90 percent of the area's manufacturing establishments), as did Baltimore (96 to 93 percent) and Philadelphia (91 to 87 percent), but these cities were the exception rather than the rule.[70] The

industrial cities overwhelmingly dominated the economies of their urban regions. Men left the suburbs in the morning to commute to their jobs downtown, and at night they returned home. Suburban residents went downtown to shop for cars, appliances, and practically everything else. Railroad and streetcar suburbs prospered, but the people who lived in them were still dependent on downtown jobs and downtown businesses. Downtown streets were constantly jammed with traffic.

Though it took a few decades for the process to unfold, ultimately the automobile utterly transformed the urban landscape. When it first made its appearance, the car was mainly an expensive toy for the rich. Henry Ford made it affordable in 1908 when he introduced the Model T, a car for the masses that was reliable and easy to operate. After he introduced the moving assembly line in 1913, Ford managed to reduce the cost of a Model T each year, from $950 in 1910 to $290 by 1924. Car ownership skyrocketed. American car production increased from 63,000 automobiles in 1908 to 550,000 by 1914. After World War I, car production reached new highs, rising from 2.27 million automobiles in 1922 to 4.45 million in 1929.[71] The construction of adequate roads lagged seriously behind car ownership, but this problem was eventually solved when the driving public successfully pressed for more state and federal funding.

The automobile allowed an increasing number of middle-class Americans to make the move to the suburbs. The streetcar suburbs had sprung up along the rail tracks, leaving big patches of undeveloped land in between. The car made it possible to fill in the gaps. Vast new tracts of land were opened to land speculation and suburban development, and the upper-middle class invested much of its newfound money in suburban real estate. Total national wealth doubled in the 10 years from 1912 to 1922, and from 1915 to 1925 average hourly wages climbed from 32 to 70 cents.[72] Residential land followed suit by doubling in value during the 1920s.[73]

These circumstances conspired to push suburban development to unprecedented levels. In the 1920s, the cities of Boston, St. Louis, and Cleveland grew more slowly than ever in their history, but their suburbs boomed, both in total population and rates of growth. The truck and the automobile began to change well-established economic patterns as well. The proportion of factory employment in the cities of more than 100,000 residents declined between 1920 and 1930, and this trend was likely to continue because the new assembly-line production techniques required a lot of land rather than vertical buildings, and this land was most easily found in the suburbs. Still, it would take decades for the process of decentralization to fully work itself out. The volume of downtown office space tripled in the 1920s, and employment continued to soar in most central cities.[74] For the old industrial cities the day of reckoning was still a ways off.

The Great Depression of the 1930s signaled the twilight of the citybuilding era. As the data in Table 6.4 reveal, Boston, Los Angeles, St. Louis, and Cleveland all lost population in the 1930s; so did Philadelphia, Kansas City, and the New Jersey cities—Elizabeth, Paterson, Jersey City, and Newark (the latter cities are not shown in the table). San Francisco, which had added 27 percent to its population in the 1920s, suddenly stopped growing. Small manufacturing cities of New England and the Midwest slid into decline—Akron and Youngstown, Ohio; Albany, Schenectady, and Troy, New York; Joplin, Missouri; and New Bedford, Massachusetts.

The Great Depression hit the suburbs hard, too, because now most upper-middle- and middle-class people lacked the means to buy a new home. Some suburban development still occurred, but it was slow and uncertain. The rate of growth in New York's suburbs fell from 67 percent in the 1920s to only 18 percent in the 1930s. In the same decade, Chicago's suburban expansion slowed from 74 percent in the 1920s to 10 percent in the 1930s; Cleveland's dropped from 74 to 13 percent and Los Angeles' from 158 to 30 percent. All through the 1930s, the effects of the Great Depression stubbornly lingered. With the coming of World War II, materials needed for housing construction were commandeered for the war effort. Suburban growth came to a standstill.

The Bedroom Suburbs: 1946–1970s

The slowdown in housing construction during depression and war would have caused a serious housing shortage all by itself, but the postwar baby boom made the situation worse. After falling to a low point in the years of the Great Depression, the birth rate began to rise in 1943 and climbed rapidly in the postwar years, when 16 million GIs returned to civilian life.[75] By 1947, 6 million families were doubling up with relatives or friends because they could not find a home of their own.[76] The housing industry geared up to meet the demand, pushing single-family housing starts from only 114,000 in 1944 to 1,692,000 by 1950.[77] Virtually all of this new construction occurred in the suburbs.

Utilizing mass-production methods and sophisticated marketing techniques, big construction companies began

to dominate the industry. Big firms accounted for only 5 percent of all houses built in 1938, but increased their share of the market to 24 percent by 1949, and a decade later they produced 64 percent of all new homes.[78] The preferred method was to buy tracts of land on the outskirts of cities and to create entire new subdivisions by bulldozing everything to an even surface and constructing houses quickly using standardized production techniques. The emergence of cookie-cutter residential developments stimulated a boom in suburban construction. In the 10 years between 1940 and 1950, the suburbs experienced a 36 percent gain; in the same decade, the core cities they surrounded grew by only 14 percent. In fact, however, postwar suburban growth had occurred much faster than these statistics suggest because no subdivisions at all were built until 1946, when wartime restrictions on building materials finally ended. After the war, the pent-up demand for housing ignited a virtual gold rush to new suburban subdivisions. In earlier decades, suburban development had been mainly an upper- and middle-class phenomenon, but now it filtered down to embrace working-class families, too. Federally insured home loans, cheap energy, and new, efficient building technologies made it less expensive to build a new house in the suburbs than to rehabilitate a home or rent an apartment in the city. The nation's homeownership rate increased from 44 percent in 1940 to 63 percent by 1970.[79]

The suburban boom accelerated during the prosperous years of the 1950s. Virtually all the cities that had prospered in the industrial era were losing population, some at a dramatic pace. Cities all through the industrial belt stretching from New England through the Great Lake states were hemorrhaging population. Between 1950 and 1960, Boston's population shrunk by 13 percent; by comparison, the population losses in that decade were 12.5 percent in St. Louis and 4 percent in Cleveland. From there, things got quickly worse. In the 1960s, St. Louis lost 17 percent of its population, 17 percent in the 1970s, and an extraordinary 27 percent in the following decade. In 1950, before it started its long slide, 857,000 people resided within the city, but by century's end only 335,000 people were left.[80]

In the 40 years from 1950 to 1990 virtually all of the old industrial cities hemorrhaged population. Even after the 1970s, when the first hints that things might turn around began to appear in some places, some cities continued their long slide. The downtowns and neighborhoods of most of the industrial cities were clearly on the rebound by the end of the century, but even so many of them continued to lose population, though at a slower rate than before. Between the 2000 census and 2003, Cleveland, Baltimore, Flint (Michigan), Detroit, and Cincinnati all shrank by 3.5 percent or more, an experience shared by 30 other older cities.

Table 6.5 shows that as the central cities continued to shrink, their share of metropolitan population rapidly declined. Already by 1940 only 29 percent of the people in metropolitan Boston resided in the city, a reflection of the fact that suburbanization there had begun earlier than in most places. Before the war Chicago still had 70 percent of its region's population, compared to 64 percent for Cleveland and New York and 57 percent for St. Louis. Even in metropolitan Los Angeles, which had begun sprawling in the early years of the century, more than half of the population still lived within the city limits. But the postwar suburban exodus changed regional geographies very quickly. When the 2000 census was conducted, just 10 percent of the population of metropolitan Boston lived within the city. In the St. Louis region only 13 percent still claimed the city as their home, and in the Cleveland metropolitan area, only 16 percent did so. Among older industrial cities, New York and Chicago stood out as exceptions because they still captured as high as one-third of their region's population in 2000.

TABLE 6.5 Share of Metropolitan Population Living in Selected Central Cities, 1940–2000[a]

City	Percentage Living in Central City			
	1940	1960	1980	2000
Boston	29.0%	21.8%	11.0%	10.1%
Chicago	70.4	51.5	37.0	31.6
Cleveland	64.1	32.1	19.5	16.2
Los Angeles	51.6	32.0	25.8	22.6
New York	64.3	50.5	37.8	37.8
St. Louis	57.0	35.0	18.8	13.4

Note: [a] It is difficult to calculate precise figures over time of city/suburban ratio because the Census Bureau's definition of metropolitan areas has

changed from time to time. Corrections have been made to minimize this problem. Although Lorain–Elyria counties were not included in the 1940 Cleveland metropolitan area, they have been added because these counties were included from 1960 and thereafter. For Boston, the four major counties are included for 1940 and 1960, which is comparable to the regional definition from 1970 to 2000.
Sources: U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, various years): 1987, pp. 29–31, Table 34; 1993, pp. 37–39, Table 42; 2003, p. 32, Table 27.

The suburbs of the 1950s and 1960s were by no means all cut from the same cloth. The legacy of the past was plain to see, with middle-class housing tracts, a sprinkling of working-class blue-collar subdivisions, a few isolated areas populated by blacks, and, of course, the enclaves inhabited by the wealthy. But most of the housing tracts built in the postwar years were marketed to white middle-class families. Some suburbs were remarkably uniform, with row after endless row of houses looking as if they had been produced on the same assembly line, an impression that turned out to be close to the truth. Suburbia came to be portrayed in the popular media as a place of look-alike streets and regimented people, where bored couples with small children spent their free time watching television and picking crabgrass out of their lawns, and where the men commuted to office jobs, leaving behind lonely housewives to care for the children in culturally sterile environments. This image of suburbia was captured in three best-selling novels published during the period: *The Man in the Gray Flannel Suit* (1955), *The Crack in the Picture Window* (1956), and *The Split Level Trap* (1960). Although the cultural images of suburbia undoubtedly traded on stereotypes, they were close enough to the truth to strike a responsive chord.[81]

By the mid-twentieth century, civic elites in the central cities were thoroughly alarmed that the suburbs threatened the vitality and even viability of the urban core. It was not only that the suburbs were growing so fast. As affluent white families deserted, they were leaving behind a population made up of blacks and poor people. Increasingly, suburbanization was understood in racial terms; the phrase "white flight" started to be heard, suggesting that suburban development was motivated in part by racism, a suggestion for which there is abundant evidence.[82] The riots of the mid-1960s called attention to the fact that racial segregation on this scale might legitimately be regarded as a national problem. In 1967, when the National Commission on Civil Disorders called attention to the stark dichotomy between the cities and suburbs, the suburbs had already become far removed from the conditions that attracted the commission's concern. Increasingly, suburban residents regarded the cities as reservations for blacks, and many blacks had become completely estranged from the rest of America.[83] All of the ingredients that defined the twentieth-century urban crisis had come together into an explosive mixture.

The Rise of the Multiethnic Metropolis

By the end of the 1960s, the momentous movements that had brought millions of African Americans to northern cities had pretty much run their course; indeed, in the decade of the 1990s, 579,000 blacks returned to the South.[84] The biggest demographic change, however, involved the movement of large numbers of African Americans to the suburbs, and this occurred at exactly the same time that white flight had begun to ebb. A surge of foreign immigration added another ingredient to the mix. After the 1960s the pace of immigration steadily gained momentum, and by the last decade of the century it had reached a level not experienced for 100 years. By the new millennium, the segregation of blacks and whites was being supplanted by a new reality: the politics of urban America was becoming multiracial and multiethnic. Unlike any previous period of immigration, more immigrant groups were settling in the suburbs than in the central cities. Ethnic enclaves began springing up in a lot of unlikely places.

The number of foreign immigrants entering the country in the 1990s exceeded every other decade of the twentieth century except 1910–1920, and the movement continued until recently, when the number of persons obtaining legal permanent residence status began a steady decline. From 2000 to 2005, the immigrant flow increased 16 percent, and the newcomers were showing up in all regions of the country. In the same five-year period, Indiana experienced a 34 percent rise, and several other states also far exceeded the national rate: South Dakota, with a 44 percent increase, compared to 32 percent in Delaware, 31 percent in Missouri, and 26 percent in New Hampshire.[85] According to census estimates, in September 2004 there were 11.6 million legal permanent resident newcomers in the United States, with 8 million of them eligible to be naturalized; in addition, more than 5 million undocumented immigrants were thought to reside within the nation's borders.[86] In 2011, 1,062,040 immigrants obtained legal permanent status, which was a slight drop from the rate in previous years.[87]

TABLE 6.6 Immigrants by Place of Origin, 1951–2000

Year	Percentage of Total Immigration					
	Europe	Asia[a]	Canada	Other Western Hemi-sphere[b]	All Other[c]	Total Number (000s)
1951–1960	57%	6%	11%	22.5%	3%	2,515.5
1961–1970	37	13	9	39	2	3,321.7
1971–1980	18	36	3	40	3	4,493.3
1981–1990	10	38	2	47	3	7,338.1
1991–2000	14	32	1.5	48	5	9,092.9
2011	7.9	42.5	1.2	38	9	1,062.04

Note: [a] Cambodia, China, Taiwan, Hong Kong, India, Iran, Israel, Japan, Korea, Philippines, Thailand, Vietnam, and "other Asia." [b] Mexico, Caribbean, Central America, South America. [c] Africa, Australia, New Zealand.

Sources: U.S. Department of Justice, Immigration and Naturalization Service, *Statistical Yearbook of the Immigration and Naturalization Service, 1989* (Washington, DC: Government Printing Office, 1990), pp. 2–5; and U.S. Bureau of the Census, *The Official Statistics, Statistical Abstract of the United States, 2003* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 2004).

The rate of immigration increased decade by decade after 1950. Table 6.6 reveals that during the 1950s, 57 percent of foreign immigrants came from Europe, 22.5 percent from the Western Hemisphere south of the United States, and 6 percent from Asia. But the composition of the immigrant stream changed dramatically over time. Immigrants from European countries fell sharply to less than 10 percent of the total number of arrivals in the 1980s before rebounding briefly to about 14 percent because of a surge from Russia and the formerly communist countries of Eastern Europe. By 2009, the number of European immigrants fell back to slightly less than 10 percent of the total immigrant flow, and has risen only slightly in the years since.[88] In the decade of the 1980s, Asian immigrants shot up from 6 percent to more than 38 percent of the total immigrant flow before settling back to 30 percent or so. The biggest surge came from the Western Hemisphere south of the United States, mostly from Mexico and Latin America. Since the turn of the century, immigrants from that region have constituted about half of all arrivals to the United States. In 2011, the leading countries of birth of new legal permanent residents were Mexico (14 percent), China (8.2 percent), and India (6.5 percent).

The laws governing immigration from the 1920s to the mid-1960s were adopted in a climate of xenophobic fear and resentment. The National Origins Immigration Act of 1924 established an annual quota that could not exceed 2 percent of the base population of foreign-born nationality groups already in the country as of 1890. This restriction accomplished its intended goal of drastically reducing immigration by all nationality groups except those from northern Europe. In debating the legislation, members of Congress made it clear that they considered Slavs, Jews, Italians, Greeks, and other people of the countries of eastern and southern Europe to be inferior. The new law slashed annual immigration by these nationality groups by more than 90 percent.

By the 1960s, the changing political climate made overt racist formulas of this kind unacceptable. In the Hart-Cellar Act of 1965, Congress essentially put immigrants from all countries on an equal footing and granted a high priority to family reunification. Special provisions for political refugees from socialist and communist countries increased the rate of immigration even more, and the ethnic composition of the immigrant flow changed radically. After the 1960s, between 80 and 85 percent of the immigrants entering the United States were of Hispanic or Asian origin. (As of the 2000 census, the U.S. Census Bureau used the terms *Latino* and *Hispanic* interchangeably; we follow that practice here.) People of both ethnic categories came from many nations—Hispanics from a vast area from the Caribbean to the tip of South America, Asians from the arc of countries from Japan to India.

In 1990, Congress again reformed the immigration laws, and as a result of the legislation, the number of legal immigrants allowed into the country increased by 40 percent. The law more than doubled the number of visas granted to foreigners with job skills needed in the United States, and it allowed the highest percentage of European-origin groups into the country since Hart-Cellar.[89] Immigration from Eastern Europe, Russia, and the nations that had been a part of the former Soviet Union increased sharply. By the mid-1990s, the United States

was admitting more legal immigrants than all the rest of the nations of the world combined.[90]

Asians were the fastest-growing ethnic group in the 1980s, with the metropolitan areas of Los Angeles, San Francisco, and New York having the largest Asian communities. The number of people coming from Asia in the 1980s almost equaled the number from all countries of the Western Hemisphere south of the U.S. border. But in the last decade of the century Asian immigration slowed while Hispanic immigration increased.[91] In 2009, the number of persons obtaining legal permanent residence status, whose region of last residence was Asia, was 394,874 of the 1,130,818 total legal permanent residents. During the same period the number from Mexico, the Caribbean, Central and South America rose to 457,366. As a result of the rising volume of the immigrant flow and the relatively large size of Hispanic families, in 2005 Hispanics outnumbered blacks for the first time in the nation's history, a trend which has held—in 2010, blacks made up 12.6 percent of the total U.S. population, while persons of Hispanic/Latino origin constituted 16.3 percent.[92]

Hispanics arriving from the Caribbean, Latin America, Central America, and South America were made up of a complex mixture of languages, cultures, and nationalities. Significant numbers from the Caribbean were black, which thoroughly confused census categories (nearly all other Hispanics filling out the census forms fit the "white" racial category). In 2000, nearly 8 percent of blacks in the United States were foreign born, with the figure over 20 percent in New York, Florida, and New Jersey.[93] The Census Bureau found it difficult to identify ethnic categories accurately in New Mexico (where 42 percent of the population is officially classified as Hispanic) because many families are descended from residents who lived in the region generations before most American settlers arrived; as a consequence, even if they were once citizens of Mexico (before New Mexico was ceded to the United States in 1846), they cannot accurately be classified as coming from there.

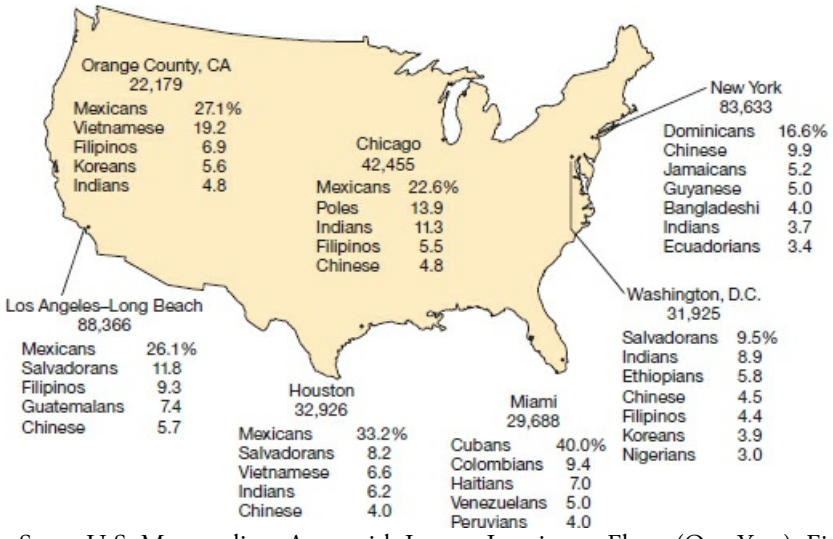


FIGURE 6.1 Seven U.S. Metropolitan Areas with Largest Immigrant Flows (One Year), Fiscal Year 2004

Note: "Chinese" includes immigrants from mainland China only.
Source: Department of Homeland Security, www.uscis.gov/graphics/shared/statistics/yearbook/2005/ImmSupTable2fy04D.xls

Figure 6.1 reveals that the racial and ethnic composition of the immigration stream differs remarkably among the seven metropolitan areas receiving the largest numbers of immigrants in 2004. In Orange County, California, which is composed of numerous interlocking cities, Mexicans and Vietnamese are the largest immigrant groups, followed by Filipinos, Koreans, and Indians. By contrast, Cubans were the most numerous group to arrive in Miami in the same year, and nearly all the rest were from other Caribbean and Latin American countries. Mexicans easily led the list in Los Angeles and Houston, but a significant number also came from Asia and elsewhere in Latin America. The immigrant flow to the New York region was so diverse that only Dominicans accounted for more than 10 percent of the total; the other leading groups were Chinese, Jamaicans, Guyanese, Bangladeshi, Indians, and Ecuadorians. Washington, DC attracted a diverse mixture of Asian and Hispanic immigrants, with a significant number of Ethiopians added to the mix. In the Chicago region, Mexicans led all nationality groups, with Poles and Indians next.

In 1987, more than 93 percent of legal immigrants coming to the United States settled in urban areas, and more than half of them moved into just seven metropolitan areas. Notably, many of these immigrants bypassed

the central cities and moved directly to suburbs. The statistics displayed in Table 6.7 show recent trends for the nation's 14 most diverse metropolitan areas (for areas of more than 500,000). In all of the 14 central cities listed there, minorities comprised half or more of the population when the census of 2000 was taken.

TABLE 6.7 City and Suburban Minority Shares, Year 2000, Metropolitan Areas with Populations Over 500,000 (in Percentages)

		Share of Suburban Population			
Metro Area	**City**	**Suburban**	**Latino**	**Black**	**Asian**
Los Angeles	69%	69%	45%	8%	14%
New York	65	32	13	12	4
Chicago	65	26	11	8.5	5
Washington, DC	61	40.5	8.5	22	7
Houston	68	40	23	10	5
Dallas	62	31	15	9	4
Riverside	51	53	38	7	4
Phoenix	37	30	21	3	2
Orange County	70	40	22	1	14
San Diego	50	40	27	4	6
Oakland	67	48	19	8	17
Miami	82	78.5	56	19.5	1.5
Newark	86	34	11	17	4.5
San Francisco	56	43	19	3	17

Source: *Adapted from William H. Frey,* Melting Pot Suburbs: A Census 2000 Study of Suburban Diversity *(Washington, DC: Center on Urban and Metropolitan Policy, Brookings Institution Press, June 2001), p. 14.*

In all but four of these same urban regions, more than 40 percent resided in the suburbs. In the Washington, DC, and Newark areas, blacks still outnumbered Hispanics, but the differences were much smaller in the New York and Chicago metropolitan regions. In the other Sunbelt urban regions shown in Table 6.7, Hispanics constituted the largest racial or ethnic group by far. Asians constituted less than 10 percent in all metro areas of the Sunbelt except for those clustered around Los Angeles, Orange County, Oakland, and San Francisco.

Table 6.8 and Figure 6.2 also show that immigrant destinations are changing. While throughout the twentieth century the vast majority of immigrants settled in the nation's largest cities, recent census data show that immigrant destinations have moved beyond just the largest metros, and settlement patterns have become more complicated. Table 6.8 shows the metro areas that have doubled their immigrant population over the past decade. None of these metros are among the country's major ones, and almost all are secondary or tertiary metro areas in terms of size. A considerable number of them are also located in non-traditional immigrant destination states in the "old South"—an area that, with the exception of Florida, has not really received much immigration at all—such as Alabama, Kentucky, Mississippi, and Tennessee. Figure 6.2 illustrates the changed settlement patterns of migrants. A larger percentage of immigrants now reside in the suburbs than in cities, and a growing percentage is settling in small metros and rural areas.

The census of 2011 showed that two-thirds of all Hispanics in the United States reside in only five states. Almost half (47 percent) of all Hispanics live in only two states, California and Texas,[94] despite the fact that all but two of the cities with the largest Hispanic populations, Chicago and New York, are located in other states (the other three leading cities are Los Angeles, Houston, and San Antonio).[95] About 80 percent of Hispanics in the southwestern states came originally from Mexico, compared to 60 percent for the United States as a whole. But in the 1990s, Mexican-origin immigrants began to spread across the nation, with the largest percentage occurring in North Carolina (a 479 percent increase), Arkansas (388 percent), Georgia (374 percent), Tennessee (327 percent), and Nevada (271 percent).[96] By 2011, new trends of Hispanic immigrant settlement were apparent: based on 2011 census data, five non-traditional immigrant states have experienced the fastest growth of their Hispanic

population: Alabama (158 percent), South Carolina (154 percent), Tennessee (154 percent), Kentucky (132 percent), and South Dakota (129 percent).[97] What was once mainly a regional phenomenon has become a truly national trend. In 2011, persons of Hispanic/Latino origin composed 16.7 percent of the total U.S. population, making them the nation's largest ethnic or race minority.[98] Regional variations are substantial. In New Mexico, 46.7 percent of the state's population was Hispanic in 2011, the highest of any state, and Hispanics constituted at least one-fifth of the population in California and Texas.[99]

TABLE 6.8 Metro Areas Which More Than Doubled Their Immigrant Residents Between 2000 and 2010

Metro Area	2000	2010	# Change	% Change
Scranton-Wilkes-Barre, PA	11,347	27,254	15,907	140.2
Cape Coral-Fort Myers, FL	40,362	95,494	55,132	136.6
Little Rock-North Little Rock-Conway, AR	14,285	32,009	17,724	124.1
Indianapolis-Carmel, IN	53,296	115,866	62,570	117.4
Birmingham-Hoover, AL	22,224	47,667	25,443	114.5
Jackson, MS	6,214	13,082	6,868	110.5
Knoxville, TN	13,345	27,981	14,636	109.7
Nashville-Davidson-Murfreesboro-Franklin, TN	58,539	118,126	59,587	101.8
Louisville-Jefferson County, KY-IN	30,670	61,615	30,945	100.9

Source: Jill H. Wilson and Audrey Singer (2011): "Immigrants in 2010 Metropolitan America: A Decade of Change." Metropolitan Policy Program at Brookings: State of Metropolitan America. (p. 4) Accessed online: https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/06/1013_immigration_wilson_singer.pdf

FIGURE 6.2 Foreign Born Population in the U.S., Places of Residence, 1980–2010

Source: Jill H. Wilson and Audrey Singer (2011): "Immigrants in 2010 Metropolitan America: A Decade of Change." Metropolitan Policy Program at Brookings: State of Metropolitan America (p. 6). Accessed online: https://www.brookings.edu/wp-contenVuploads/2016/06/1013_immigration_wilson_singer.pdf

Adverse economic conditions in Mexico and poverty and political repression in other countries pushed most Hispanic immigrants northward. Economic opportunity in the United States exerted the necessary pull. The minimum wage in the United States was approximately six times the prevailing wage in Mexico in 1990, which was higher than in most other Latin American countries.[100] Undocumented immigration helps account for persistently low wages and low levels of education among Latinos. Undocumented immigrants are willing to take (or are coerced into taking) jobs paying less than the minimum wage, and they often end up in sweatshops, meat-

processing plants, or agricultural jobs working under abysmal conditions. Beginning with the Clinton administration, there have been frequent and serious efforts to further fortify the border, especially in urban areas, where most of the crossings were occurring. This kind of fortification has pushed undocumented immigrants into more hostile, but less fortified border territory, such as the Arizona desert, leading to a drastic increase in immigrant deaths. According to the United Nations' migration agency's report, there were 232 deaths along the U.S.–Mexico border during the first seven months of 2017 alone, marking a 17 percent increase compared to the first seven months of the previous year.[101] Most of those crossing the border without documents die from exposure to the elements, given the extreme conditions in the desert and dehydration, but some also drown in the Rio Grande. Frequently led across the border by professional smugglers known as *coyotes* for their predatory habits, undocumented immigrants live at the margins of American society. Because they live in constant fear of detection by the United States Citizenship and Immigration Services (USCIS), a bureau of the Department of Homeland Security, they are in no position to bargain with employers.

To deal with the problem of undocumented immigrants, Congress enacted the Immigration Reform and Control Act (IRCA) in 1986, which established stiff penalties for employers who knowingly hired individuals without papers. At the same time, the law made it possible for undocumented immigrants who had already entered the country to achieve citizenship by registering with the Immigration and Naturalization Service (INS). Within four years of the passage of the IRCA more than 2 million undocumented immigrants attained legal status, and the INS stepped up efforts to find employers who violated the law. One of the unintended effects of the 1986 reform is that many employers began to discriminate against anyone who looked or sounded like they came from anywhere south of the U.S. border.[102] Reflecting a growing national anxiety about undocumented immigration, the successor agency to the INS, the USCIS, began to round up undocumented immigrants in spectacular, well-publicized raids. After the U.S. Senate failed to pass an immigration bill in 2006, several states adopted legislation requiring employers to check the backgrounds of employees; in addition, by 2008, 15 states had passed laws establishing criminal penalties for smugglers who bring immigrants into the country.[103]

The reactions against immigrants prompted towns and cities across the nation to adopt an extraordinary variety of laws that required, for example, business owners to check the identity of potential employees, property owners to check the backgrounds of renters, public buildings to post "English only" signs, and other measures. Local police departments rounded up anyone appearing to be an immigrant for minor violations such as, in Georgia, fishing without a license.[104] These actions, many of doubtful legality, gave police the pretext for initiating deportation proceedings. Arizona took this strategy a step further when the state senate passed legislation in April 2010 that empowered the police, when interacting with people on a routine basis, to question anyone suspected of being in the country illegally.[105] There was speculation that Texas might follow suit.[106]

California, on the other hand, went a different route. In September 2017, the California legislature passed the California Values Act, which prohibits police departments state-wide from arresting immigrants for their lack of status in the United States, and precludes any undocumented immigrants from being handed over to federal authorities at Immigration and Customs Enforcement (ICE) unless they have been convicted of a crime appearing on specific list of felonies or misdemeanors.[107] In addition, the act puts a limit on the amount of personal information on undocumented immigrants which can be shared with federal immigration authorities. The bill, which was signed by California governor Jerry Brown, in early October 2017, became effective on January 1, 2018, and is seen as a direct reaction to the Trump administration's efforts to crack down on undocumented immigrants.

Has the Urban Crisis Disappeared?

The twentieth-century urban crisis of city versus suburb, black versus white, is coming to an end. In the past, most immigrants settled in central cities, often moving into neighborhoods already occupied by the same ethnic group, but the recent pattern of settlement has become more complex and less predictable. In a break from historic patterns of settlement, many immigrants are bypassing the central cities entirely and moving directly into suburbs. By 2000, 55 percent of Asians, 50 percent of Latinos, and 39 percent of blacks lived in suburbs, and the proportions were much higher in many Sunbelt metropolitan regions.[108] Several of the communities that minorities moved into are now ethnically diverse, which reduces the extreme polarization between central city and suburb that characterized urban areas only a few years ago.

The movement to the suburbs has had the effect of moderating the extremely rigid pattern of racial and ethnic

segregation that was the defining feature of the twentieth-century urban crisis. Research shows that in the 1990s, the level of segregation declined in 272 metropolitan statistical areas (MSAs) and increased in only 19 MSAs.[109] Most of the metropolitan areas where segregation increased were located in second-tier older industrial cities in the Northeast and Midwest, which tend to be less diverse than the faster-growing metropolitan areas elsewhere. In one study, the authors found that between 1970 and 2000 all ethnic groups had become more spatially assimilated, although blacks remained more segregated than Asians or Latinos.[110] The dismal findings from earlier studies of residential segregation were distilled into a book titled *American Apartheid*,[111] but census data from the late 1990s and early 2000s, seemed to suggest that change may be afoot.

In the 1990s the number of people living in neighborhoods of concentrated poverty—which researchers define as areas where 40 percent or more of the residents are under the poverty line—fell dramatically in the 1990s, by 24 percent, or 2.4 million people.[112] The proportion of people living in high-poverty neighborhoods fell among all racial and ethnic groups, and the sharpest declines were in cities in the Midwest and South, such as Detroit, Chicago, St. Louis, Milwaukee, Memphis, New Orleans, Houston, San Antonio, and Dallas. Researchers referred to the decline in concentrated poverty as "stunning progress."[113] It should be noted that these figures had changed little when the effects of the Great Recession were reported in the 2010 census.

By the late 1990s, there was also evidence to suggest that the social ills that gave rise to the label "the urban underclass" had become less concentrated than before. In the 1970s and 1980s, four indicators of underclass status —female-headed households, high school dropouts, male unemployment, and welfare dependence—were highly concentrated in areas of high poverty. The clustering of these social ills in a few areas fell so dramatically in the 1990s that the scholars conducting the research called the trend "nothing short of profound." The researchers drew the conclusion that "many fewer neighborhoods now resemble the depressing descriptions of the inner city that were commonplace in journalistic and scholarly accounts of previous years."[114]

These patterns, however, have reversed in the 2010s. Several social scientists have concluded that recently, concentrated poverty has returned to its peak levels of the 1990s, or even surpassed those levels. However, poverty patterns seem to have changed. For instance, high-poverty tracts seem to be more racially and ethnically diverse, smaller cities and metros appear to have the most explosive growth of such areas, and within bigger cities and metros (which typically had the largest ratio of high-poverty census tracts in the past), high-poverty neighborhoods tend to be increasingly remote and disconnected.[115] In other words, poverty is returning with a vengeance, but in a more unexpected fashion than previously known.

Even though, in the 2010s, high-poverty neighborhoods tend to be more diverse, their residents are still disproportionately members of ethnic and racial minority groups.[116] Racial and ethnic segregation still prevail as well. However, the demographic patterns of poverty are growing increasingly complex: One recent study found that the proportion of non-Hispanic white people living in high-poverty neighborhoods almost doubled between 2000 and 2007–11, from 1.4 million to 2.9 million.[117] On the other hand, the proportion of blacks and Hispanic residents in high-poverty neighborhoods grew from 39 percent to 51 percent during that time.[118] Within that high-poverty population, the Hispanic proportion has grown in comparison to black residents.[119] In total, the proportion of black residents of high-poverty neighborhoods has declined since the 1990s, from 40 percent to 37 percent, still making up a plurality of high-poverty residents, while the proportion of white high-poverty residents has grown from 20 to 26 percent, and the proportion of Hispanics in such neighborhoods has remained about the same at 30 percent.[120]

Crime rates in urban areas went into a steep decline. For the nation as a whole, violent crime per 100,000 persons decreased by 29 percent from 1990 to 2000 (after an increase of 20 percent from 1987 to 1990), and the murder rate fell by 41 percent (after a 13 percent increase).[121] The drop in crime was even more dramatic in big cities; homicide rates, for example, fell by 75 percent in New York City between 1990 and 2003 (from more than 2,200 in 1990 to 597 in 2003).[122] Although the rate of violent crime has increased in some cities since then, overall crime rates have continued to drop, often to levels not seen in decades. In 2009, there were 1,318,398 violent crimes, a drop of 5.3 percent from 2008, 5.2 percent from 2005, and 7.5 percent from the 2000 level.[123] The trend continues—in 2011, an estimated 1,203,564 violent crimes occurred nationwide, a drop of 3.8 percent from 2010.[124]

Despite the accumulating evidence that some things have changed in urban regions, it would be premature to conclude that the urban problems of the twentieth century—high levels of segregation, inequality and poverty, and racial and ethnic tensions—are disappearing. The urban crisis was defined by reference to the great

city/suburban divide. This geographic pattern is slowly changing, and in that important sense the old urban crisis is mostly a thing of the past. But some of the problems previously associated with broad swatches of central-city ghetto neighborhoods are now cropping up all over the place.

The prospects for the central cities have improved, but the benefits from this turnaround have been selective. By many measures, downtowns and residential areas in the central cities have been on the rebound since sometime in the 1990s. Fifteen large older industrial cities—including, for example, St. Louis, Gary, Baltimore, Buffalo, Pittsburgh, Cincinnati, and Detroit—continued to lose population in the 1990s, but the rate of loss slowed. Declining population could no longer be interpreted as a reliable measure of decline. Many cities were becoming less densely populated and single and childless households were replacing larger families. In effect, the cities were exporting social problems to the suburbs by replacing poorer families with more affluent single, professionals who have led the gentrification of old neighborhoods.[125]

The inequalities between the downtown professional class and the residents of minority neighborhoods have become transparently obvious in cities tied closely to the global economy. Global cities have attracted a more diverse profile of immigrants than any other cities.[126] Jobs are the lure. The concentration of multinational businesses, financial services corporations, and the businesses connected to them draws highly educated workers from all over the globe. But the greatest demand for jobs (at least expressed in numbers) is found at the other end of the job market. Lower-status service workers are indispensable to the working of a global city—clerical workers, janitors and cashiers, nannies, cooks and busboys, maintenance and security workers, hotel maids, and a multitude of personal-service specialists from masseurs and shoppers to dog walkers: these kinds of jobs are taken disproportionately by immigrants and minorities. The jobs generally pay little, with the result that inequality escalates. New York's experience is revealing. In the late 1980s, the poorest 20 percent of the population in the New York metropolitan region accounted for 5 percent of incomes, but the top 20 percent of wage earners had a 45 percent share. By 1997, the percentage of earnings claimed by the poorest quintile had fallen to just above 2 percent, whereas the richest quintile received 56 percent of all earnings. While New York was becoming more affluent, it was also become poorer; between 1990 and 2000, the poverty rate rose from 29 to 32 percent of households.[127]

Rising inequality is occurring not only in global cities but throughout American society. In 1980, the bottom one-fifth of the population earned 4.3 percent of all earned income, but only a few years later, in 1998, the poorest fifth of wage earners accounted for just 3.6 percent. Meanwhile, from 1980 to 1998 the richest fifth increased its share from 44 to 49 percent. Perhaps even more telling, the top 5 percent of wage earners had increased its share of earnings in the same period from 16 to 21.4 percent.[128] As of 2011, the United States has a higher level of income inequality than Europe, Canada, Australia, and South Korea—a wealth gap which is increasing more rapidly than that of any other nation.[129]

In 2011, the richest 1 percent of Americans took home almost 24 percent of the total national income, an increase of almost 9 percent from 1976. As a reporter for the *New York Times* wrote, "you no longer need to travel to distant and dangerous countries to observe such rapacious inequality. We now have it right here a home."[130] From 1980 to 2005, the richest 1 percent took away more than four-fifths of the total increase in the national income. Such a concentration of income at the top tier of earners has only occurred three times in the twentieth century: in 1915 and 1916, at the end of the Gilded Age, and again in the late 1920s prior to the stock market crash.[131]

Minorities continue to significantly lag behind in income and wealth. Indicators of economic well-being show that Hispanics, as a group, have a long way to go to catch up with the general U.S. population. The median income for Hispanic families in 2006 was 72 percent of the average earnings for non-Hispanic white families (down from 75 percent in 2001) but above the average earnings of black families, which was 61 percent of white family income.[132] While the 2010 census showed that nearly 28 percent of Americans aged 25 and older had bachelor's degrees, it also showed the great racial disparity in education. The rate for black Americans was 17 percent, and only 13 percent for Hispanic Americans. The lag in educational qualifications, plus a measure of discrimination, has meant that Hispanics have occupied lower rungs on the job ladder. Even though they held 12 percent of all jobs in 2000, only 6 percent of Hispanics worked in managerial or professional positions.[133] The economic crisis that began in 2008 affected Hispanics and blacks disproportionately. By March 2009 the unemployment rate for whites reached 7.3 percent, but for Hispanics it had climbed to 12.9 percent and 13.8 for blacks.[134] During the recovery, unemployment rates for whites have fallen far faster than for either of these groups.

It is unrealistic to expect that inequality on this scale can occur without an increase in social problems. Within urban areas, extreme inequality has always been expressed in two ways: social disorder (in the form of crime, riots, and family disorganization, for instance) and residential patterns of segregation. No one knows whether the crime rates will continue to fall, or how the resurgence of concentrated poverty is going to further unfold. However, unless job and educational opportunities improve, it is certain that social tensions will rise. These tensions may be expressed in a different spatial geography than in the past, but some people may wonder whether this amounts to a difference that makes no difference.

Endnotes

1 Barry Checkoway, "Large Builders, Federal Housing Programs, and Postwar Suburbanization," in *Marxism and the Metropolis: New Perspectives in Political Economy,* ed. William K. Tabb and Larry Sawers (New York: Oxford University Press), p. 156.
2 Population growth on the outskirts probably exceeded population growth in the center before the 1920s. However, before 1920, annexation of suburban land by central cities obscured the statistical trend. See John D. Kasarda and George V. Redfearn, "Differential Patterns of City and Suburban Growth in the United States," *Journal of Urban History* 2, no. 1 (November 1975): 53.
3 Nicolas Lemann, *The Promised Land: The Great Migration and How It Changed America* (New York: Vintage Books, 1991), p. 6.
4 Robert A. Beauregard, *Voices of Decline: The Postwar Fate of U.S. Cities* (Cambridge, MA: Blackwell, 1993).
5 Dennis Judd, "Urban Violence and Enclave Politics: Crime as Text, Race as Subtext," in *Managing Divided Cities,* ed. Seamus Dunn (Keele, UK: Ryburn Publishing, Keele University Press, 1994), pp. 160–175.
6 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States* (2005), www.census.gov/prod/2005pubs/06statab/pop.pdf
7 Pew Research Center, *Social and Demographic Trends* (Washington, DC: Pew Charitable Trusts, 2008).
8 A brief but excellent account of these movements may be found in Stanley B. Greenberg, *Politics and Poverty: Modernization and Response in Five Poor Neighborhoods* (New York: Wiley, 1974), pp. 15-27.
9 See ibid., pp. 15-27; and Leo Grebler, Joan W. Moore, and Ralph C. Guzman, *The Mexican-American People* (New York: Free Press, 1970), p. 113.
10 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States.*
11 Harry M. Caudill, *Night Comes to the Cumberlands* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1962).
12 Lemann, *The Promised Land,* p. 6.
13 Stewart E. Tolnay and E. M. Beck, "Rethinking the Role of Racial Violence in the Great Migration," in *Black Exodus: The Great Migration from the American South,* ed. Afrerdteen Harrison (Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1991), p. 20.
14 Robert B. Grant, ed., *The Black Man Comes to the City: A Documentary Account from the Great Migration to the Great Depression, 1915–1930* (Chicago: Nelson-Hall, 1972), p. 27; see pp. 16-30 for a complete set of statistics on black migration from 1890 to 1930. These data are used throughout this section.
15 Ibid., p. 22.
16 Ibid., p. 23.
17 Winfred P. Nathan, *Health Conditions in North Harlem, 1923–1927,* Social Research Series no. 2 (New York: National Tuberculosis Association, 1932), pp. 44-45, excerpted in Grant, *The Black Man Comes to the City,* pp. 59-61.
18 *Chicago Defender,* reprinted in Grant, *The Black Man Comes to the City,* pp. 31-40.
19 Tolnay and Beck, "Rethinking the Role of Racial Violence," p. 27.
20 Philip Dray, *At the Hands of Persons Unknown: The Lynching of Black America* (New York: Random House, 2002).
21 A collective amnesia has erased much of this past from America's consciousness. A recent book of photographs from the period is shocking but an effective antidote to cultural denial. See James Allen, *Without Sanctuary: Lynching Photography in America* (Sante Fe, NM: Twin Palms Publishers, 2000).
22 Memphis *Commercial Appeal* (October 5, 1916), reprinted in Grant, *The Black Man Comes to the City,* pp. 43-44.
23 *Chicago Defender* (August 12, 1916), reprinted in Grant, *The Black Man Comes to the City,* p. 45.
24 Herbert Northrup, *Organized Labor and the Negro* (New York: Kraus Reprint, 1971).
25 These statistics are from several sources excerpted in Grant, *The Black Man Comes to the City,* pp. 58-61.
26 See Elliott M. Rudwick, *Race Riot at East St. Louis, July 2, 1917* (Carbondale: Southern Illinois Press, 1964), for a discussion of this event.
27 Chicago Commission on Race Relations, *The Negro in Chicago: A Study of Race Relations and a Race Riot* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1922), p. 122.
28 Tom Kenworthy, "Okla. Starts to Face up to, '21 Massacre," *USA Today* (February 18, 2000), p. 4A.
29 Grant, *The Black Man Comes to the City,* p. 71.
30 U.S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *Census of Population 1970: General Social and Economic Characteristics* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1972), pp. 448-449, Table 3.
31 Douglas Massey and Nancy Denton, *American Apartheid: Segregation and the Making of the Underclass* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1993), pp. 89, 91.
32 Ibid., p. 91.
33 Rosalyn Baxandall and Elizabeth Ewen, *Picture Windows: How the Suburbs Happened* (New York: Basic Books, 2000), p. 202; Ray Suarez, *The Old Neighborhood: How We Lost in the Great Suburban Migration, 1966–1999* (New York: Free Press, 1999), pp. 40-41.
34 Quoted in ibid., pp. 252-253.
35 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *American FactFinder(2005),* http://factfinder.census.gov/home/saff/main.html?_lang=en.
36 National Advisory Commission on Civil Disorders, *Report of the National Advisory Commission on Civil Disorders* (New York: Bantam Books, 1968), p. 1.
37 John Kasarda, "Inner-City Concentrated Poverty and Neighborhood Distress: 1970 to 1990," *Housing Policy Debate* 4, no. 3 (1993): 253-302.
38 Alan Berube and Elizabeth Kneebone, *Two Steps Back: City and Suburban Poverty Trends 1999–2005* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution,

2006).

39 Rolf Pendall, Elizabeth Davies, Lesley Freiman, and Rob Pitingolo, *A Lost Decade: Neighborhood Poverty and the Urban Crisis of the 2000s* (The Urban Institute, for the Joint Center on Political and Economic Studies, September 2011).

40 John R. Logan, *Separate and Unequal: The Neighborhood Gap for Blacks, Hispanics and Asians in Metropolitan America* (Brown University, July 2011).

41 William Julius Wilson, *The Truly Disadvantaged* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1987).

42 Micaela di Leonardo, "White Lies/Black Myths: Rape, Race, and the Black Underclass," *The Village Voice* (September 22, 1992), p. 31.

43 Norman Fainstein, "Race, Class, and Segregation: Discourses about African-Americans," *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 17, no. 3 (1993): 384-403.

44 Wilson, *The Truly Disadvantaged.*

45 William Julius Wilson, *When Work Disappears: The World of the New Urban Poor* (New York: Knopf, 1996), p. 19.

46 Ibid., p. 31.

47 Ibid., p. 92.

48 Ibid., p. 93.

49 Lisa W. Foderaro, "In Harlem, Children Reflect the Ravages U.N. Seeks to Relieve," *New York Times* (September 30, 1990), p. 1.

50 Walter J. Jones and James E. Johnson, "AIDS: The Urban Policymaking Challenge," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 11, no. 1 (1989): 85.

51 Joel A. Devine and James D. Wright, *The Greatest of Evils: Urban Poverty and the American Underclass* (New York: De Gruyter, 1993), p. 167.

52 Robert D. McFadden, "New York Leads Cities in Robbery Rate, But Drops in Murders," *New York Times* (August 11, 1991), p. 1.

53 See James Diego Vigil, *Barrio Gangs: Street Life and Identity in Southern California* (Austin: University of Texas Press, 1988).

54 Ronald Kotulak, "Study Finds Inner-City Kids Live with Violence," *Chicago Tribune* (September 28, 1990), p. 1.

55 Jonathan Kozol, *Rachel and Her Children: Homeless Families in America* (New York: Crown, 1988), p. 9.

56 Margaret T. Gordon and Claudette Guzan Artwick, "Urban Images in the Mass Media" (research proposal, Urban University Research Consortium, June 17, 1991), p. 2.

57 di Leonardo, "White Lies/Black Myths," p. 31.

58 Quoted in James A. Clapp, ed., *The City: A Dictionary of Quotable Thoughts on Cities and Urban Life* (New Brunswick, NJ: Center for Urban Policy Research, Rutgers University, 1984), p. 129.

59 Ibid., pp. 25-30. Robert Fishman dates the first true suburb somewhat earlier, in the 1790s in Clapham and other villages outside London; see Robert Fishman, *Bourgeois Utopias: The Rise and Fall of Suburbia* (New York: Basic Books, 1987), p. 53.

60 For accounts of railroad suburbs and land speculation, see Kenneth T. Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier: The Suburbanization of the United States* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1985), Chapter 5; Fishman, op. cit., *Bourgeois Utopias,* Chapter 5; and Harry C. Binford, *The First Suburbs: Residential Communities on the Boston Periphery, 1815–1860* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1985).

61 John W. Reps, *The Making of Urban America: A History of City Planning in the United States* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1965), p. 344.

62 The phrase "scattered buildings in a park" is Lewis Mumford's; see his *The City in History: Its Origins, Its Transformations, and Its Prospects* (New York: Harcourt, Brace and World, 1961), p. 489.

63 Editorial, (New York) *Independent* (February 27, 1902), p. 52.

64 Weldon Fawcett, "Suburban Life in America," *Cosmopolitan* (July 1903), p. 309.

65 Advertisement in *Country Life in America* (November 1906), p. 3.

66 Advertisement in *Country Life in America* (March 1908), p. 474.

67 Robert Park, Ernest W. Burgess, and Roderick D. McKenzie, *The City* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1925), p. 109.

68 Quoted in Peter J. Schmitt, *Back to Nature: The Arcadian Myth in Urban America* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969), p. 180; original quotation found in Ernest Groves, "The Urban Complex," *Sociological Review* 12 (Fall 1920): 74, 76.

69 A more complete list of titles can be found in Schmitt, *Back to Nature,* pp. 180-182.

70 Gary A. Tobin, "Suburbanization and the Development of Motor Transportation: Transportation Technology and the Suburbanization Process," in *The Changing Face of the Suburbs,* ed. Barry Schwartz (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1976), p. 100. See also U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Industrial Districts: 1905, Manufactures and Population,* Bulletin 101 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1909), pp. 9-80; and U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Census of Manufactures: 1914,* vol. 1, *Reports by States with Statistics for Principal Cities and Metropolitan Districts* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1918), pp. 564, 787, 1292.

71 These data are cited in Tobin, "Suburbanization and the Development of Motor Transportation," pp. 102, 103, and are also available in National Industrial Conference Board (NICB), *The Economic Almanac 1956: A Handbook of Useful Facts about Business, Labor and Government in the United States and Other Areas* (New York: Crowell for the Conference Board, 1956).

72 Tobin, "Suburbanization and the Development of Motor Transportation," pp. 102, 103.

73 Ibid.

74 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* pp. 174, 184.

75 The birthrate (the number of live births per 1,000 population) increased from 18.4 in 1936 to 26.6 in 1947. U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics of the United States, Colonial Times to 1970,* Bicentennial ed., pt. 2 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1975), p. 49.

76 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* p. 232.

77 Ibid., p. 233.

78 Checkoway, "Large Builders, Federal Housing Programs, and Postwar Suburbanization," pp. 155-156.

79 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics of the United States, Colonial Times to 1970,* p. 646.

80 U.S. Department of Commerce, *Bureau of the Census, Census of Population, 1950,* vol. 1 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1952), p. 69, Table 17; *Census of Population, 1970,* vol. 1, *Characteristics of the Population,* pt. A, p. 180, Table 34; *Census of Population, 1980,* suppl. reports, *Standard Metropolitan Statistical Areas and Standard Consolidated Statistical Areas,* p. 2, Table B, p. 6, Table 1, and p. 49, Table 1; *State and Metropolitan Areas Data Book,* 1991, Table D; Bruce Katz and Robert Lang, eds., *Redefining Urban and Suburban America: Evidence from Census 2000* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2003), pp. 47-50.

81 For criticisms of the 1950s stereotype of suburbia, see Bennett M. Berger, *Working-Class Suburb: A Study of Auto Workers in Suburbia* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1968); and Herbert J. Gans, *The Levittowners: Ways of Life and Politics in a New Suburban*

Community (New York: Pantheon Books, 1967).

82 Thomas M. Guterbock, "The Push Hypothesis: Minority Presence, Crime, and Urban Deconcentration," in *The Changing Face of the Suburbs,* ed. Barry Schwartz (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1976), p. 26.

83 National Advisory Commission on Civil Disorders, *Report of the National Advisory Commission on Civil Disorders,* p. 1.

84 William H. Frey, *Census 2000 Shows Large Black Return to the South, Reinforcing the Region's 'White-Black' Demographic Profile,* U.S. Bureau of the Census, PSC Research Report no. 02-473 (May 2001).

85 Rick Lyman, "Census Shows Growth of Immigrants," *New York Times* (August 15, 2006), www.nytimes.com.

86 Department of Homeland Security, Office of Immigration Statistics, www.uscis.gov/graphics/shared/statistics/publications/LPRest2004.pdf

87 "2009 Yearbook of Immigration Statistics: Table 1," *U.S. Office of Immigration Statistics; "*2011 Yearbook of Immigration Statistics: Table 1," *U.S. Office of Immigration Statistics* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office).

88 Ibid.

89 Robert Pear, "Major Immigration Bill Is Sent to Bush," *New York Times* (October 29, 1990), p. A1; see also Stephen Castles and Mark J. Miller, *The Age of Migration: International Population Movements in the Modern World* (New York: Guilford Press, 1993), p. 249.

90 Rodman D. Griffin, "Illegal Immigration," *CQ Researcher* 2, no. 16 (1992): 364.

91 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *1990 to 1998 Annual Time Series of Population Estimates by Age, Race, Sex, and Hispanic Origin* (January 2000), www.census.gov/population/estimates/county/casrh_doc.txt

92 "Quick Facts: USA," U.S. Bureau of the Census, www.census.gov

93 Frey, "Census 2000 Shows Large Black Return to the South, Reinforcing the Region's 'White-Black' Demographic Profile."

94 Pew Hispanic: "A Statistical Portrait of U.S. Hispanics," *Pew Research Center,* February 2013. Accessed online: www.pewhispanic.org/2013/02/15/hispanic-population-trends/ph_13-01-23_ss_hispanics1/

95 U.S. Census Bureau News, "Census 2000 Paints Statistical Portrait of the Nation's Hispanic Population," www.census.gov/press-release/www/releases/archives/population/00434/html

96 Ibid.

97 Pew Hispanic: "A Statistical Portrait of U.S. Hispanics," Pew Research Center, February 2013. Accessed online: www.pewhispanic.org/2013/02/15/hispanic-population-trends/ph_13-01-23_ss_hispanics1/

98 "USA People QuickFacts," United States Census Bureau (2013), http://quickfacts.census.gov/qfd/states/00000.html

99 "New Mexico People QuickFacts," United States Census Bureau (2013), http://quickfacts.census.gov/qfd/states/00000.html

100 Alejandro Portes and Ruben Rumbaut, *Immigrant America: A Portrait* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1990), p. 10.

101 Amanda Holpuch, "Migrant deaths at US–Mexico border increase 17% this year, UN figures show," *Guardian* (August 5, 2017). Accessed online: www.theguardian.com/us-news/2017/aug/05/migrants-us-mexico-border-deaths-figures

102 Reported in Charles Kamasaki and Paul Yzaguirre, "Black-Hispanic Tensions: One Perspective," paper delivered at the annual meeting of the American Political Science Association (Washington, DC, August 29–September 1, 1991), p. 5. See also Castles and Miller, *The Age of Migration.*

103 Julia Preston, "Surge in Immigration Laws around the U.S.," *New York Times* (June 23, 2008), www.nytimes.com/2007/08/06/washington/06immig.html

104 Dan Anderson, "Times Topics: Immigration and Refugees," *New York Times* (June 9, 2008), www.nytimes.com

105 Randal C. Archibald, "Arizona Enacts Stringent Law on Immigration," *New York Times* (April 24, 2010), p. 1.

106 "The Immigration Law Fallacy" (June 16, 2010), Examiner.com (*Dallas Tea Party Examiner*).

107 Harriet Sinclair, "More than 2 Million Undocumented Immigrants Will Now Be Protected under California's Sanctuary Law," *Newsweek* (October 5, 2017). Accessed online: www.newsweek.com/more-2-million-undocumented-immigrants-will-now-be-protected-californias-679150

108 John R. Logan, *The New Ethnic Enclaves in America's Suburbs,* a report by the Lewis Mumford Center for Comparative Urban and Regional Research (Albany, NY, 2002), p. 2; William H. Frey, *Melting Pot Suburbs: A Census 2000 Study of Suburban Diversity* (Washington, DC: Center for Urban and Metropolitan Policy, Brookings Institution Press, June 2001).

109 Edward L. Glaeser and Jacob L.Vigdor, "Racial Segregation: Promising News," in *Redefining Urban and Suburban America,* ed. Bruce Katz and Robert Lang, pp. 211-234.

110 Jeffrey M. Timberlake and John Iceland, "Change in Racial and Ethnic Residential Inequality in American Cities, 1970–2000," *City and Community* 6, no. 4 (December 2007): 335-365.

111 Massey and Denton, *American Apartheid.*

112 Paul Jargowsky, *Stunning Progress, Hidden Problems: The Dramatic Decline of Concentrated Poverty in the 1990s* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2004), pp. 1-2.

113 Ibid., p. 1.

114 Paul A. Jargowsky and Rebecca Yang, "The 'Underclass' Revisited: A Social Problem in Decline," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 28, no. 1 (2006): 76.

115 Paul A. Jargowsky, *Concentration of Poverty in the New Millennium: Changes in Prevalence, Composition, and Location of High-Poverty Neighborhoods* (New Brunswick, NJ: Century Foundation and Rutgers Center for Urban Research and Education, 2014),p. 1.

116 Ibid., p. 4.

117 Ibid.

118 Ibid.

119 Ibid.

120 Ibid.

121 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States 2003,* Table 305, Crimes and Crime Rates, by Type of Offense: 1980 to 2001, p. 199.

122 Federal Bureau of Investigation, *Uniform Crime Reports.*

123 "Violent Crime in the United States, 2009," U.S. Department of Justice.

124 "Crime in the United States: 2011," *FBI Uniform Crime Reports* (2011), www.fbi.gov/about-us/cjis/ucr/crime-in-the-u.s/2011/crime-in-the-u.s.-2011/violent-crime/violent-crime

125 William H. Frey and Alan Berubé, "City Families and Suburban Singles: An Emerging Household Story," in *Redefining Urban and Suburban America,* ed. Katz and Lang, p. 265.

126 Mark Abrahamson, *Global Cities* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2004), pp. 99-100.
127 Ibid., p. 101.
128 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *The Changing Shape of the Nation's Income Distribution, 1947–1998,* p. 3, Table 1 (published June 2000), www2.census.gov/prod2/popscan/p60-204.pdf
129 Tami Luhby, "Global Income Inequality: Where the U.S. Ranks," *CNN Money* (November 8, 2011).
130 Nicholas Kristof, "Our Banana Republic," *New York Times* (November 6, 2010).
131 Louis Uchitelle, "The Richest of the Rich, Proud of a New Gilded Age," *New York Times* (July 15, 2007).
132 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *The 2009 Statistical Abstract of the United States,* Table 669, www.census.gov/compendia/statab
133 U.S. Bureau of the Census, Table 11, Employment Status of Civilian Population, Sex, Race, and Hispanic Origin (2005), www.bls.gov/html
134 Ibid., Table A-2.

CHAPTER 7

National Policy and the City/Suburban Divide

The Unintended Consequences of National Policies

By the end of World War II, there was a growing national concern about the condition of the inner cities. The neglect of basic infrastructure brought about by the Great Depression and the war could be observed in the decay of business districts, the dilapidation of older housing stock, and the tattered state of roads, bridges, parks, and urban amenities. These problems seemed all the more urgent because of overcrowding. The wartime boom had brought a crush of new residents to cities, but housing was hard to find. At first, the suburban subdivisions seemed like a welcome safety valve, but while they grew, the cities slid ever deeper into decline. This was alarming because the industrial cities had always been the engines of the American economy, and thus their fate seemed inextricably tied to the nation's well-being.

Even before the war was over, congressional leaders from both political parties began to consider ways to address the sorry state of the cities. After several years of haggling over details, in 1949 Congress approved ambitious urban renewal and public housing programs, and over the next few years these programs attracted an astonishing amount of private investment—$35.8 billion by 1968.[1] Despite the best of intentions, however, the federal effort to help the cities failed, in considerable measure because other federal policies were, at the same time, igniting a suburban housing boom. These deep contradictions virtually guaranteed policy failure because the left hand was trying to revive the cities while the right hand was undermining that effort.

Even the federal programs designed to help the cities often had exactly the opposite effect. The massive slum clearance projects financed by the urban renewal program razed low-income housing units faster than public housing could be produced. The effect was to sharply reduce the supply of housing available to African American homebuyers and renters. All through the 1950s and 1960s, hundreds of thousands of low-income blacks were displaced, and they were forced either to play a game of musical slums or move into high-rise public housing projects that ultimately turned into architectural eyesores and vertical ghettos. Because they were denied access to the suburbs by discriminatory policies implemented by the real estate industry and federal administrators, middle-class blacks were forced into an intense competition for housing in neighborhoods already occupied by white homeowners. Meanwhile, federally insured loans made it possible for millions of white middle-class families to find new housing in the suburbs. Still another federal program financed a national system of freeways that made it easy for suburbanites to commute long distances. When considered in their entirety, the mix of federal policies that affected metropolitan development intensified racial segregation in the cities and subsidized white flight to the suburbs.

Although the federal government shifted course in the 1960s, the changes came too little and too late. Racial discrimination in the buying and selling of real estate was outlawed by the 1968 Civil Rights Act, and federal programs were enacted to make funds available to minority homeowners. But the pattern of extreme racial segregation between city and suburb was, by then, too firmly established to be easily reversed. A metropolitan pattern of rigid racial segregation was fixed in place, and the national government had helped to create it.

OUTTAKE

Highway Programs Contributed to the Decline of the Cities

It is inaccurate to use the phrase "national urban policy" when referring to the policies that have influenced urban development in the United States. There has never been a national policy for the cities. Instead, a mixed bag of

uncoordinated programs has been adopted at different times and for different purposes. Although some of these programs profoundly impacted cities and urban regions, their urban effects were rarely given serious consideration, and even if they had, the political forces at work and the complexity of the governmental system in the United States would have made it virtually impossible to achieve a comprehensive and well-coordinated strategy of urban development.

Highway programs serve as an enlightening example. For decades, the federal government devoted massive resources to build a national highway system, but the powerful effects of that program on cities and urban areas were mostly ignored. Early in the twentieth century, the federal government began providing aid for state-constructed roadways as a way of connecting farmers to the national economic system and opening up rural areas for settlement. By the 1930s, federal aid had become focused on a more abstract objective of promoting the use of the automobile. The political muscle of the automobile industry expanded in step with its economic importance. The states established trust funds that relied primarily upon gasoline taxes, and federal legislation in 1934 established penalties for any state that used any auto taxes for purposes other than building and maintaining highways.

The federal role expanded enormously in 1956 when Congress declared the intention to create a 42,000-mile national system of interstate highways. As in previous years, the taxes used to finance the system were "disproportionately collected in cities and disproportionately spent outside of cities," which reflected the power of rural interests in state legislatures and the aims of the highway engineers. It also accorded with the thinking of President Eisenhower, who thought that an integrated system of highways was important to the national defense because in times of war it would make it easier to move troops and equipment. There was another consideration as well. It was widely thought that the concentration of populations and economic activity in cities made the United States vulnerable should atomic warfare break out. An influential city planner warned that urban areas had to decentralize or face disaster, saying that "If we delay too long, we may wake up some morning and find that we haven't any country, that is, if we wake up at all that morning." The lesson to be drawn is that even when the policymakers took some notice of the urban impacts of their policies, they considered these to be secondary, if they mattered at all.

Sources: Quotations are from Owen D. Gutfreund, *20th Century Sprawl: Highways and the Reshaping of the American Landscape* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2004), p. 56; Robert M. Fogelson, *Downtown: Its Rise and Fall, 1880–1950* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001), p. 392.

The Politics of Slum Clearance

Following World War II, a powerful and diverse coalition lobbied Congress to enact a federally funded slum clearance program. Local public officials and business leaders were alarmed by the condition of downtown business districts and nearby residential areas. Public housing administrators, labor unions, social workers, and liberal Democrats were concerned about the plight of the poor and argued that the residents of dilapidated neighborhoods had a moral right to adequate housing. Realtors, developers, financial institutions, and local business elites had entirely different reasons for favoring slum clearance. They were concerned not so much about the conditions of life in the slums as for the security of their own investments in inner-city property. Clearly, the widespread deterioration of commercial and residential areas threatened the economic vitality of the central cities. For this reason, the National Association of Real Estate Boards (NAREB) favored a federally funded program of urban renewal even though it maintained a venomous opposition to public housing programs, in large part because of the real estate industry's interest in preventing government competition with private developers and landlords.[2]

A coalition of groups important to the Democratic Party fought for the principle that public housing must be included in any urban renewal program funded by the federal government. Organized labor led the way in criticizing the real estate industry's fixation on its own bottom line. Local government officials represented by the U.S. Conference of Mayors, the National League of Cities, and the American Municipal Association lined up behind a program of urban renewal that included public housing. These groups formed an alliance powerful enough to prevent the legislation before Congress from being sabotaged by bickering over details. In the spring of 1949, Congress approved the Housing Act. Despite intense lobbying by real estate agents and their allies to throw out the public housing provision, it was kept in the final bill, but only by a razor-thin five-vote margin. The final version of the legislation was then passed by a bipartisan majority of northern Democrats, urban Republicans, and

a few southern Democrats.[3]

In the 1949 Housing Act, Congress declared a national commitment to rebuild the cities, eliminate slums and blight, and provide decent housing for the nation's citizens. The preamble to the act, titled a "Declaration of National Housing Policy," offered a sweeping statement about the need for a housing program:

> The general welfare and security of the Nation and the health and living standards of its people require housing production and relating community development sufficient to remedy the serious housing shortage, eliminate substandard and other inadequate housing through the clearance of slums and blighted areas, and the realization as soon as feasible of the goal of a decent home and suitable living environment for every American family.[4]

Business interests and the housing industry got what they wanted in the bill but were forced to accept public housing in the bargain. In the end, the housing bill received the endorsement of key business, real estate, and housing interests because the legislation gave control over the urban renewal and public housing programs to local public authorities. Title I of the act empowered the Housing and Home Finance Agency (HHFA) to distribute grants-in-aid to help local urban renewal agencies absorb the cost of buying and clearing renewal sites. After this process was complete, urban renewal agencies were allowed to "write-down" the cost of the properties so they could be sold to developers at bargain prices. Because part of the "writedown" was covered by federal grants, it amounted to a direct subsidy to well-connected developers.

Tenants and slum dwellers displaced by renewal programs were supposed to be supplied with "decent, safe and sanitary dwellings." Title III of the bill, which funded low-rent public housing, authorized (but did not appropriate money for) the production of 810,000 government-subsidized housing units over a six-year period. This amounted to 10 percent of the estimated national need for new low-cost dwellings. Occupancy preferences were given to veterans and families displaced by Title I (clearance) activities. Federal administrators imposed per-room and per-unit cost limitations to prevent "extravagance and unnecessary" amenities, and imposed tenant eligibility requirements to minimize competition with the private housing market and to ensure that public housing benefited only the neediest families.

How Local Politics Shaped Urban Renewal

Local political and economic elites were far more concerned about the economic decline of central business districts (CBDs) than they were about slum residents. Business leaders and politicians were convinced that encroaching slums were responsible for the steady decline in property values and retail activity in the downtown areas. Despite the fact that the legislation seemed to favor residential development, right from the beginning local renewal agencies placed a much higher priority on commercial development than low-income housing, a practice made possible by the flexible way federal administrators interpreted the provisions of the housing act. Guidelines issued by the HHFA defined any renewal project that allocated 51 percent or more of its funds to housing as a "100 percent housing" project. In its effect and intent, this standard gave local authorities permission to emphasize commercial development over other uses despite the "predominantly residential" language contained in the original legislation.

Public housing immediately ran into trouble. In the abstract, housing for low-income people might seem worthwhile, but at the local level it ran into determined opposition. Experiences with housing legislation passed in the 1930s had already showed that it was likely there would be problems. In December 1946, when the Chicago Housing Authority (CHA) tried to move a few families of African American veterans into a public housing project built with funds from the housing act of 1937, white mobs jeered and threw stones. In August 1947, menacing mobs gathered to keep blacks from moving into a project on the city's southwest side. A contingent of police was assigned to protect the black families, and they stayed six months.[5] The CHA learned its lesson well, and backed off any further attempts to integrate housing projects.

After passage of the 1949 Housing Act, the Chicago experience was repeated in cities across the country. In city after city, local chapters of the NAREB organized opposition to public housing projects. In vitriolic campaigns, the opponents of subsidized housing played on fears that public housing might be used to promote racial integration. Between 1949 and the end of 1952, public housing programs were rejected by referenda in Akron, Houston, Los Angeles, and almost 40 other cities. Social and political realities at the local level made public housing a volatile issue. Local officials were acutely aware "there could hardly be many votes to be gained in championing the cause—and perhaps a great many lost."[6]

By contrast, slum clearance and economic redevelopment were programs that local political interests were happy to embrace. Seizing on redevelopment as a way to secure federal funds, in city after city, enterprising mayors managed to assemble powerful alliances to support the cause of redevelopment. Corporate executives were the most important members of the coalition, but other crucial participants were involved as well. Real estate and small business owners, metropolitan newspapers, and the construction trades unions lent their support. A prominent urban scholar, Robert Salisbury, observed that this "new convergence of power" that brought public power and private resources together turned urban renewal into an almost irresistible force capable of overwhelming all opposition.[7]

The programs financed by the Housing Act were perfect vehicles for mayors who wished to secure their personal political futures. After he was elected mayor of Chicago in 1955, Richard J. Daley forged a powerful civic coalition to launch an ambitious program to revitalize Chicago's downtown Loop and lakefront. In Boston, the candidate selected by the business-sponsored New Boston Committee defeated longtime machine boss James Michael Curley in the 1951 mayoral race, then backed the massive clearance of Boston's Italian West End and the construction of a government center. Ultimately, Boston's renewal program took 10 percent of the city's land area.[8] In 1950, St. Louis' mayor, Joseph Darst, received national publicity when his city became the nation's first to secure federal funding for urban renewal. Raymond Tucker, who replaced him in 1953, was even more aggressive in pushing clearance projects. He assembled a broad coalition that included all of the major corporations in the city—69 businesses in all—and managed to persuade them to raise $2,000,000 in private capital to help fund the local urban renewal agency. An almost identical alliance came together in New Haven, Connecticut, where the young Democrat Richard Lee won several terms by leading an ambitious renewal effort. Lee's political capital derived from his ability to marry the public resources made available through the program with the political and financial support of business leaders. Mayor Lee referred to this coalition as

> the biggest set of muscles in New Haven. … They're muscular because they control wealth, they're muscular because they control industries, represent banks. They're muscular because they head up labor. They're muscular because they represent the intellectual portions of the community. They're muscular because they're articulate, because they're respectable, because of their financial power, and because of the accumulation of prestige they have built up over the years as individuals in all kinds of causes.[9]

Mayors and business leaders tended to share the view that the economic fortunes of their cities depended on the health of the downtown. In the 1950s, the flight of the middle class to the suburbs was seriously undermining the economic viability of the inner cities. Because the central business district was the center of activity where the local business establishment held heavy real estate and business investments, it was only logical that businesses would try to protect their investments. The need for political visibility and campaign contributions from wealthy donors ensured that elected officials would favor downtown sites. Those areas were generally the oldest in the cities and therefore easily designated as officially "blighted" by the local urban renewal authority, the first step in a process that led to condemning and clearing property.

The members of the urban renewal coalition needed one another. Local officials coveted the investment capital and the public prestige the business community possessed. In turn, leaders in the business community realized that governmental authority was a necessary ingredient for a successful redevelopment effort. Public authority was, in the first instance, called on to apply for federal funds through an officially constituted urban renewal agency. The government's power of eminent domain, which allowed it to condemn "blighted" property for a "higher" public use, was crucial for land assembly because individual property owners could not otherwise be compelled to sell. Finally, the unique ability of local renewal agencies to secure the necessary write-down subsidies and loans from the federal government made local officials and agencies indispensable to business leaders who wanted urban redevelopment. In this way, "this strange coalition"[10] became a singularly dominant force in local politics.

Over the years, the urban renewal program "engineered a massive allocation of private and social resources" in cities all over the United States.[11] Public funds were used to make downtown areas more desirable to investors. By 1968, private institutions had committed $35.8 billion in 524 renewal projects across the nation.[12] From 1953 to 1986, when the last money left in the pipeline was finally exhausted, over $13 billion in direct federal spending had been committed to urban renewal.[13] At the same time, the huge federal expenditures authorized by the National Defense Highway Act of 1956 provided hundreds of thousands of jobs and considerable profits to construction firms building limited-access highways through urban neighborhoods.

The clearance of neighborhoods associated with urban renewal and highway building soon ignited resistance and controversy. Although business leaders talked glibly about benefiting all the residents of the city through the

provision of jobs and increases in business investment, it became painfully apparent that viable and even thriving neighborhoods were often destroyed in the process. In Boston, block after block of well-kept bungalows and row houses, grocery stores, barber shops, bakeries, and taverns—all the elements making up historic, safe, thriving Italian neighborhoods in Boston's West End—were leveled. *Blight* was such an ambiguous term that it could be, and often was, applied even to healthy neighborhoods.[14]

All across the country, community protests called attention to the destruction caused by urban renewal and highway construction projects. According to one scholar, "development issues … dominated the neighborhoods" in the 1950s and 1960s in the four cities he studied.[15] Despite the intensity and frequency of protests, however, in the end neighborhoods won few victories. This poor record of success reflected that fact that the groups opposing renewal were small and often easily divided. The residents of neighborhoods put a priority on protecting their own turf but rarely saw any reason to expend scarce resources to help someone else. By astutely selecting renewal and redevelopment sites, urban renewal administrators found it easy to pursue a strategy of divide and conquer.

Atlanta provides an excellent example of how this kind of politics worked. Beginning in 1952, Atlanta's Metropolitan Planning Commission became concerned about the movement of blacks into neighborhoods close to the central business district. In its report of that year, *Up Ahead,* the commission maintained that "from the viewpoint of planning the wise thing is to find outlying areas to be developed for new colored housing." The commission recommended "public policies to reduce existing densities, wipe out blighted areas, improve the racial pattern of population distribution, and make the best possible use of central planned areas."[16] The actual goal, which was only thinly disguised by this rhetoric, was to move blacks into areas farther from the downtown area and to secure land near the CBD for redevelopment.

The Central Atlanta Improvement Association, an organization that represented corporate interests, energetically promoted clearance. Corporate leaders took special care to obtain the support of the Chamber of Commerce, which represented smaller businesses. The Atlanta Real Estate Board was brought on board with reassurances that renewal would help maintain segregated housing patterns and that no public housing would be built on properties cleared by urban renewal. At the same time, the corporate and public leadership gained support from leaders of the black community by promising that land would be made available for the construction of single-family, owner-occupied housing for blacks well away from the downtown. Years later, downtown Atlanta was still undergoing massive clearance and reconstruction and a huge enclosed mall called the Peachtree Center was slowly replacing the historic downtown.

The local renewal coalitions born in the 1950s used their political muscle to crush opponents. Although almost any city could be selected as a suitable example, San Francisco's single-minded pursuit of downtown renewal is especially revealing.[17] In 1953, the San Francisco Board of Supervisors approved a plan to clear several blocks adjacent to the financial district and south of Market Street. This area, with its market stalls, narrow passageways, and constant bustling activity, stood in the way of plans to remake the downtown into a collection of corporate, cultural, and tourist facilities. By the late 1950s, civic leaders had settled on a plan to clear the area for a sports arena and convention center that would be named the Yerba Buena Center. Planners envisioned that Yerba Buena would help support the city's financial district and become a magnet for further development.

This vision appealed to the scores of corporate giants located in the heart of the city, including Standard Oil of California, Southern Pacific, Trans-america Corporation, Levi Strauss, Crown Zellerbach, Del Monte, Pacific Telephone and Telegraph, Bethlehem Steel, and Pacific Gas and Electric. Among the many financial institutions located in downtown San Francisco were Bank of America, Wells Fargo, Crocker National Bank, Bank of California, Aetna Life, John Hancock, and Hartford Insurance. During the 1960s, the buildings that housed these institutions utterly changed San Francisco's skyline. Twenty-three high-rises were constructed in downtown San Francisco between 1960 and 1972.[18]

The director of the San Francisco Redevelopment Agency, M. Justin Herman, became the "chief architect, major spokesman, and operations commander" for the massive renewal project. Under his leadership, the redevelopment agency hired several hundred professionals and dozens of consultants and applied for millions of dollars in federal urban renewal subsidies. Herman regarded even the mildest criticism of his project as an attempt by parochial interests to stand in the way of progress. In 1970, he was quoted as saying, "This land is too valuable to permit poor people to park on it."[19] He was cited in a major publication in 1970 as "one of the men responsible for getting urban renewal" renamed "the federal bulldozer" and "Negro removal":

> He was absolutely confident that he was doing what the power structure wanted insofar as the poor and the minorities were concerned. That's

why San Francisco has mostly luxury housing and business district projects—that's what white, middle-class planners and businessmen envision as ideal urban renewal.[20]

Federal administrators turned a blind eye to the fact that the Yerba Buena Center project was being planned with no thought of building replacement housing for the people who lived in the area. During the summer of 1969, local residents challenged the project in federal court, arguing that the 1949 Housing Act required the renewal agency to find safe and suitable housing for people displaced by clearance. The judge who heard the case concluded that the secretary of the Department of Housing and Urban Development "had not been provided with any creditable evidence at all" in regard to the redevelopment agency's plan to relocate residents.[21] Temporarily stopped in its tracks, the agency eventually agreed to increase the hotel tax in San Francisco in order to finance the construction of some low-income housing to absorb the area residents displaced by the Yerba Buena Center. Eventually a series of court battles, plus the escalating costs of building the center doomed the project, and it was never built. It was a rare and widely celebrated victory for the opponents of urban renewal.

Organized opposition at the national level emerged in the early 1960s. Liberal critics viewed urban renewal as a "federally financed gimmick to provide relatively cheap land for a miscellany of profitable, prestigious [private] enterprises."[22] Conservatives were equally appalled by the results of the program. At its inception and through its early years, business leaders and politicians expected a miraculous reversal of central-city decline. The optimism soon turned into frustration. By the late 1960s, it took an estimated four years to plan a typical clearance project and an additional six years to clear the site. Frequently, by the time it was ready for redevelopment the original plans had long been abandoned.[23] Even generous write-downs to lower the cost of acquisition often failed to entice developers. Meanwhile, blighted and slums continued to spread; indeed, it appeared that the displacement of residents only accelerated the deterioration of nearby neighborhoods.

Racial Segregation and "The Projects"

The public housing program turned out to be a cruel hoax because it promised to improve the lives of slum dwellers but instead made things worse. African Americans who moved to the cities in the great migrations of the twentieth century were crowded into rundown neighborhoods clustered near the urban core. Because much of the oldest and most dilapidated housing was located near central business districts, clearance projects displaced blacks more than anyone else. Critics coined the phrases "black removal" and "Negro clearance" as a way of referring to the fact that two-thirds of the people displaced in the first eight years of the program were black.[24] Economic and racial barriers left them no choice other than to move to another area much like the slum they had left behind: "Given the realities of the low-income housing market … it is likely that, for many families, relocation [meant] no more than keeping one step ahead of the bulldozer."[25] Thus a new game was added to the harsh realities of urban life—"musical slums."

Black families displaced by urban renewal clearance found their options to be few. They had the choice of either moving into public housing projects or to other slum areas, where they paid higher rents because the overall supply of low-rent housing units was rapidly dwindling. By the end of 1961, clearance projects had eliminated 126,000 housing units. The 28,000 new units that replaced them could house less than one-fifth of the 113,000 families and 36,000 individuals displaced by clearance.[26] There was a 90 percent decline in the supply of low-income housing within redevelopment areas during the first 10 years of the program's operation.[27] Only $34.8 million of the urban renewal funds—less than 1 percent—was used for relocation assistance, placing a disproportionate share of the cost of the program on the slum residents who were forced to move.[28]

Their status as displaced slum residents conferred on blacks "the dubious privilege of eligibility for public housing."[29] For potential renters, the problem was that public housing was basically designed to fail. The first and perhaps most important impediment was that eligibility was restricted to those who could not afford to rent on the private housing market. The real estate lobby would have tolerated no other policy. The insidious result was to concentrate those poor families together that, for whatever reasons, were unable to improve their circumstances. Tenants who got jobs and increased their incomes were evicted. Already, in the 1950s, the concentration of families in poverty meant that public housing projects were prone to high levels of violence and juvenile crime. Over the years, public housing tenants were increasingly made up of "broken families, dependent families, and welfare families."[30] If the families whose incomes went up had been able to stay in their apartments by paying higher rents, the rise in social pathologies might have been moderated,[31] and the rental income they paid would

have helped make public housing more economically viable.

The second flaw was related to the fact that public housing projects almost always were built on sites carefully separated from more desirable parts of the city. This meant that "the projects" were surrounded by slums, and most of these areas were inhabited by blacks. From the beginning, most public housing projects were segregated by explicit policy in all but a few northern states. It is true that, nationwide, non-whites accounted for only 38 percent of all public housing tenants in 1952, and 46 percent by 1961. Significant portions of the buildings were occupied by whites and were, for a time, considered desirable by young families headed by veterans, who received first priority.[32] However, strict racial segregation between projects was the universal norm. But by the time President John F. Kennedy signed an executive order forbidding the racial segregation of public housing projects in 1962, it could have little practical effect because by then the overwhelming majority of tenants in large cities were African American anyway; white families found it easy to find other housing, but black families did not. Thus, the public housing program had the perverse effect of reinforcing and intensifying the racial segregation that prevailed before it was adopted.

The third fatal flaw of the public housing program was that the units themselves were cheap and shoddily built. Everything about public housing served as a constant reminder to its tenants and to everyone else that this was a grudging welfare program. To save money on site preparation and construction costs, cities built clusters of high-density high-rise buildings. The African American writer James Baldwin might have been describing almost any of these projects when he referred to those in Harlem as "colorless, bleak, high and revolting."[33] Of course, big American and European cities are full of high-rises that command steep rents from affluent clientele, but such structures, especially when built cheaply, "were not suitable for poor people with big families."[34] It was difficult for parents to supervise children even when play facilities were available. Elevators were often broken and stuck, laundry rooms were many floors removed from tenants' apartments, and dark hallways and stairwells were poorly lighted even when bulbs were available.

The Cabrini-Green projects north of Chicago's Loop began as two-story brick row houses built to house war workers in World War II. All of the occupants were white. In 1958, these houses were replaced by 15 high-rise buildings, and another 8 were constructed in 1962. These 19-story rectangular monstrosities loomed over the surrounding neighborhoods. The same situation existed in New York City, where public housing typically rose to more than 20 stories. The Pruitt-Igoe project in St. Louis, built between 1954 and 1959, was composed of 2,762 apartments in 33 elevenstory buildings on a 57-acre site. By the time the last building was completed, the project was already a community scandal.[35] By 1973, it had become an international symbol of the failure of American public housing. In that year, photographs that made *Life* magazine's "The Year in Review" feature showed the shocking spectacle of one of the buildings imploding from hundreds of charges of carefully placed dynamite. As a monument to a policy failure, the episode could hardly have been more dramatic and fitting: Explosives experts got the opportunity to hone their demolition skills on buildings that had been completed, with awards to the architectural firm, just 15 years before.

In 1965, Congress approved rent supplement programs as an alternative to public housing construction. The idea was that if the government paid part of the rent, low-income families would be able to choose their own housing on the private market. The Housing and Urban Development Act of 1968 required that a majority of privately constructed housing units built on redevelopment sites be reserved for low- and moderate-income families.[36] These steps began a long-term trend away from governmentally constructed public housing. Public housing and urban renewal met their effective demise in the 1970s. In 1974, urban renewal was merged into the Community Development Block Grant program. During the Nixon administration public housing was allowed to wither away; dropping from 104,000 starts in 1970 to only 19,000 by 1974.[37] A few years later, public housing was essentially abandoned when the Reagan administration eliminated low-income housing built by the government in favor of programs that subsidized landlords by giving housing vouchers to prospective tenants.

National Policy and Suburban Development

In the decades after World War II, millions of white families moved from the cities to the suburbs. Suburban growth would have occurred with or without governmental policies that hurried it along. Operating on its own, the private real estate market would have supported, as it did in the past, a movement to the urban periphery. But by accelerating the pace of suburban development the federal government guaranteed that central cities would quickly empty even while the suburbs prospered. The National Housing Act of 1934 and the Serviceman's

Readjustment Act of 1944 made it possible for millions of American families to purchase their first suburban home. These programs were an unalloyed blessing for the white families who poured into the suburbs, but they also had important unintended consequences.

Until the Great Depression of the 1930s, the government played little direct role in housing provision. The notable exception was that the federal and state courts enforced restrictive covenants attached to property deeds; usually, such attachments restricted the sale of homes in urban neighborhoods to whites only. Restrictive covenants exerted a huge impact on the housing market, but the role of the courts was not considered to be a matter of government policy; rather, enforcement of the covenants was considered a private contractual matter between buyer and seller that the courts were occasionally called upon to mediate.

During the Great Depression, the federal government was prompted to intervene in the nation's housing market because it constituted a significant sector of the national economy. Second only to agriculture as an employer, during the depression the housing industry experienced a sudden, devastating contraction. Before the stock market crash of October 1929, 900,000 new housing units came on the market each year, but in 1934 this number had fallen to one-tenth as many. Throughout the 1930s, housing starts lagged far behind the demand for new housing.[38] In Chicago, only 131 new housing units were constructed in all of 1933, compared with 18,837 in 1929 and 41,416 in 1926.[39] Across the nation, 63 percent of the workers in the housing industry were unemployed in 1933. Foreclosures on millions of mortgages brought hardship to homeowners and drove thousands of banks out of business. Something had to be done to keep millions of people from becoming homeless and to save the banking system.

The National Housing Act of 1934 created both the Federal Housing Administration (FHA) and the Federal Savings and Loan Insurance Corporation (FSLIC). The FHA assumed much of the risk in the housing market by insuring most of the value of home loans made by banks. The FSLIC insured individual savings accounts up to $5,000 (this level has since risen in a series of steps to more than $250,000). It was hoped that such insurance would inspire confidence by potential savers and investors, so people would be encouraged to put their savings into banks instead of in shoeboxes and under their mattresses. These savings accounts, in turn, would enable savings and loan institutions to invest more capital in the floundering housing market.

The most important provision of the Housing Act is Section 203, the basic home mortgage insurance program under which the bulk of FHA insurance has been written up to the present day. Fully 79 percent of all FHA-insured units from 1934 to 1975—about 9.5 million units representing a face value of more than $109 billion—came under the provisions of Section 203.[40] The act specified that 80 percent of the value of the property financed by banks would be insured through the FHA. (Later, through the Housing and Urban Development Act of 1974, this share was increased to 97 percent of the first $25,000 and 80 percent of the remaining value. Since then the formula has been changed from time to time.) Under FHA guidelines, the low risk assumed by the lending institution permits the borrower to pay a low down payment, with the remaining principal and interest spread over a period of up to 30 years.

There were many different interpretations put on the main purpose of the 1934 National Housing Act. Title I of the act provided FHA insurance for loans used for "permanent repairs that add to the basic livability and usefulness of the property."[41] Social welfare liberals saw Title I as a means of eliminating substandard living conditions in the central cities by providing low-interest, low-risk loans. City officials hoped Title I would entice affluent people to stay within the city limits and remodel their homes rather than move to new homes in the suburbs. Downtown business interests had a different goal in mind: they favored it because they thought it could shore up downtown property values. Most banks, savings and loan institutions, real estate agents, and contractors had another thing in mind entirely. They regarded Section 203 as a way to finance new construction in the suburbs. In lobbying for the housing act, they had agreed to Title I only as a compromise to facilitate quick congressional action.

Despite the impression one might get from reading the 1934 legislation, over the years almost all the government's resources were devoted to promoting suburban housing development. Congress never appropriated much money to finance Title I repairs for existing property, but it provided generous support for the home insurance provisions of Section 203. Freed of most of the risk entailed in making a loan, banks were quick to liberalize loan terms. Table 7.1 shows how much more difficult it was to buy a home before the passage of the FHA program. In the 1920s, banks ordinarily required down payments of 30–50 percent, and amortized the loan over a maximum of five years, often with a balloon payment (the remainder of the loan) due at the end. Savings

and loan institutions, which amortized loans for up to 11 years, were slightly more generous. The FHA program changed all that, and in 1944, when Congress approved legislation making veterans eligible for special loan terms, loan terms for new housing became even more liberal. Under the FHA, a home-buyer could get a 30-year mortgage with only 5 percent down. The VA allowed banks to finance a mortgage with no down payment at all. The FHA and VA programs helped increase the federally insured share of the mortgage market from 15 percent in 1945 to 41 percent by 1954, and these programs provided an incentive for the banks to ease loan terms on conventional loans as well.[42] By the 1960s, the typical home loan could be obtained with a 25 percent down payment and was amortized over 30 years.

TABLE 7.1 Relative Burden of Loan Terms, 1920s and 1960s[a]

Decade and Lender	Terms
1920s	
Savings and loan association	60 percent of house value loaned for 11 years fully amortized
Bank or insurance company	50 percent of house value loaned for 5 years unamortized (balance due at end)
1960s	
Conventional lender	75 percent of house value loaned for 20 years fully amortized
FHA	95 percent of house value loaned for 30 years fully amortized

Note: [a] For a house equal to approximately 2.5 times the purchaser's annual salary.
Source: from *Shelter and Subsidies: Who Benefits from Federal Housing Policies, Studies in Social Economics* by Henry J. Aaron (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1972), p. 77. Copyright © 1972.

The FHA loan guarantee program fundamentally changed the home credit market. Between 1935 and 1974, more than three-fourths of the FHA insured home mortgages financed new (as opposed to existing) housing.[43] The proportion of all homes that were owner-occupied rather than rented increased from 44 percent in 1940 to 63 percent in 1970, and to 68 percent in 2002.[44] As shown in Table 7.2, more than one-third of all homes purchased in 1950 and 1955 were financed through the FHA or VA programs, and the proportion of new single-family home sales financed under these programs varied from a low of 26 percent (in 1960 and 1990) to a high of 50 percent (in 1970). In 1995, FHA/VA financed 19 percent of mortgages, and the proportion fell to 14 percent in 2002.[45] The declining reliance on FHA and VA loans in the 1990s occurred mainly because lending institutions began offering variable-rate and other creative forms of mortgage financing that made buying a home easier for almost everyone.

TABLE 7.2 Use of FHA- and VA-Insured Loans in the United States, 1950–2002

Year	Percentage of Private Housing Financed through the FHA or VA[a]
1950	35%
1955	41
1960	26
1965	30
1970	50
1980	36
1990	26
1995	19
2002	14
2016	22.8

Note: [a] Data from 1950, 1955, and 1960 for all private-sector housing. Data from 1965 to 2002 for newly built, private-sector, single-family

homes actually built and sold within the reporting year. These new methods are not strictly comparable; the percentages for all private-sector housing will tend to be somewhat smaller than for private-sector, single-family housing built and sold within the reporting year. This bias will tend to understate FHA/VHA financing for 1950, 1955, and 1960.
Sources: U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics of the United States to 1970, Colonial Times to 1970,* pt. 2 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1975), pp. 369, 641 (for 1950, 1955, 1960); *Historical Statistics of the United States* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, various years) 2003: pp. 611–612, Tables 943–945; 2002: pp. 591–592, Tables 921–923; 1999: pp. 724–725, Tables 1201–1202; 1998: pp. 718–719, Tables 1199–1201; 1993: pp. 718–719, Tables 1221, 1224; 1989: p. 715, Tables 1262–1263; 1987: p. 706, Tables 1273–1274; 1982–1983: p. 748, Tables 1341–1342; 1973: pp. 684–685, Tables 1156–1158; 1969: pp. 697, 698, Tables 1071, 1075; 2016: *The Urban Institute,* Housing Finance Policy Center, "Housing Finance at a Glance: A Monthly Chartbook" (Washington, DC, February 2017), p. 8.

Virtually all of the new homes bought with FHA/VA loans were built in the suburbs. Throughout the 1940s and 1950s, the FHA displayed an overwhelming bias in favor of the suburbs; for instance, in its first 12 years it did not insure a single dwelling in Manhattan. In part, this bias reflected a widespread cultural preference for less dense, single-family neighborhoods, which were normally found in the suburbs, over the denser, multiunit neighborhoods in the cities. But the roots of the FHA policy went beyond a simple matter of architectural form or geography. The real agenda was racial. FHA administrators were convinced that neighborhoods should be racially and ethnically segregated.

FHA mortgage insurance programs relied upon the private-sector lending institutions that processed the actual loans. From the beginning, the FHA absorbed the values, policies, and goals of the real estate and banking industries.[46] The staff of the FHA was drawn from the ranks of those industries, and it was only logical that the FHA's philosophy would parallel theirs. On the surface, it might seem that the "FHA's interests went no farther than the safety of the mortgage it secured."[47] This is a bit misleading because in the minds of FHA administrators, the soundness of a neighborhood and its racial makeup could not be separated. The FHA administrators took some pains to make sure that banks understood the connection. When it issued its underwriting manual to banks in 1938, one of the guidelines instructed loan officers to steer clear of changing or racially mixed areas:

> Areas surrounding a location are [to be] investigated to determine whether incompatible racial and social groups are present, for the purpose of making a prediction regarding the probability of the location being invaded by such groups. If a neighborhood is to retain stability, it is necessary that properties shall continue to be occupied by the same social and racial classes. A change in social or racial occupancy generally contributes to instability and a decline in values.[48]

A revealing glimpse into how sensitive FHA administrators were to the issue of race can be gained by reading the language of a 1933 report submitted to the agency by one of its consultants, Homer Hoyt, a well-known sociologist and demographer at the time. He offered his view that land values and the racial composition of a neighborhood were closely linked, and that it was possible to determine the desirability/undesirability of racial and ethnic groups with some precision. His list was, he said, an accurate representation of each group's "beneficial effect upon land values":

> If the entrance of a colored family into a white neighborhood causes a general exodus of the white people it is reflected in property values. Except in the case of Negroes and Mexicans, however, these racial and national barriers disappear when the individuals of the foreign nationality groups rise in the economic scale or conform to the American standards of living. … While the ranking may be scientifically wrong from the standpoint of inherent racial characteristics, it registers an opinion or prejudice that is reflected in land values; it is the ranking of races and nationalities with respect to their beneficial effect upon land values. Those having the most favorable effect come first in the list and those exerting the most detrimental effect appear last:
>
> 1. English, Germans, Scotch, Irish, Scandinavians
> 2. North Italians
> 3. Bohemians or Czechoslovakians
> 4. Poles
> 5. Lithuanians
> 6. Greeks
> 7. Russian Jews of lower class
> 8. South Italians
> 9. Negroes
> 10. Mexicans[49]

FHA administrators advised the developers of residential projects to draw up restrictive covenants barring sales to nonwhites before they applied for FHA-insured financing.[50] Banks were made to understand that even "a single house occupied by a black family in an urban neighborhood, even one tucked away on an inconspicuous side

street, was enough for the FHA to label a predominantly white neighborhood as unfit for mortgage insurance."[51] Through such policies, the federal government required the banks to ensure that new subdivisions were strictly segregated. Thus, federal policy acted as a powerful instrument to establish the social and racial patterns that emerged in urban America in the postwar years.[52] Between 1946 and 1959, blacks purchased less than 2 percent of all of the housing financed with the assistance of federal mortgage insurance.[53] In the Miami area, only one black family received FHA backing for a home loan between 1934 and 1949, and there is "evidence that he [the man who secured the loan] was not recognized as a black" at the time the transaction took place.[54]

When the U.S. Supreme Court ruled in 1948 that racial covenants attached to property deeds could not be constitutionally enforced in courts of law, the FHA was forced to amend its official policies. In 1950, the FHA revised its underwriting manual so it no longer openly recommended racial segregation or restrictive covenants. However, it did nothing to reverse the effects of its previous policies, and took no actions to discourage real estate agents, developers, or lending institutions from discriminating against blacks. Until the passage of the Housing Act of 1968, it was still legal and customary for real estate agents and mortgage institutions to discriminate on the basis of race. Indeed, any real estate agent who broke the industry's unwritten code on this issue was liable to be barred from membership in the local real estate association and from its listings services.

Under Title VIII of the Civil Rights Act of 1968,[55] Congress outlawed racial discrimination in housing. Its provisions were sweeping, barring discrimination in rentals and sales and in the provision of information about cost and availability, advertising, purchasing, construction and repair, and real estate services and practices. The statute mandated that each of the federal regulatory agencies involved with the real estate industry take affirmative steps to enforce both the spirit and the letter of the law.[56]

The 1968 legislation opened the suburban housing market to African Americans. Between 1970 and 1980, the number of blacks who lived in suburbs grew by almost 50 percent, an increase of 1.8 million persons.[57] One in ten blacks living in the central cities in 1970 moved to the suburbs during this period, and the percentage of urban blacks living in the suburbs increased from 16 to 21 percent.[58] In the 1980s, the trend continued. By the 1990 census, about 25 percent of urban black families lived in the suburbs; about 85 percent of white families did so.

Blacks who moved to the suburbs tended to have higher incomes than those who stayed behind.[59] Suburbanization undoubtedly expanded housing choice for blacks, but those who moved to the suburbs in the 1970s and 1980s remained about as segregated from whites as they were before.[60] Blacks moved mostly into older inner-ring suburbs, where they displaced white residents, much as they had previously in central cities.[61] These older suburbs tended to have many of the same problems as central-city neighborhoods. In general, the suburbs to which blacks moved had lower tax bases, higher debts, poorer municipal services, lower socioeconomic status, and higher population densities than did suburbs that were mostly white.[62]

Most suburban whites had little contact with suburban blacks. In the mid-1980s, 86 percent of the white residents of suburbs lived in jurisdictions with a black population of less than 1 percent.[63] Even those suburbs that were statistically mixed tended to be segregated internally, and there is evidence that segregation intensified in the 1980s.[64] Why was the racial segregation characteristic of the cities being replicated in the suburbs? Research indicated that discrimination, not social class or income, tended to determine residential location.[65] Socioeconomic differences between blacks and whites accounted for less than 15 percent of the segregation among suburbs in 1980.[66] Research conducted in the St. Louis area indicated that in the 1980s, nonracial factors such as housing cost and economic factors seemed to be less important in explaining patterns of residential segregation than in any previous decade,[67] and this pattern persisted into the 1990s.[68]

Racial discrimination in housing continued even though legislation had outlawed it, in part because the enforcement provisions of the 1968 legislation were weak. Rather than being granted positive responsibilities for identifying discrimination, the Department of Housing and Urban Development (HUD) was permitted only to receive complaints initiated by individual citizens. By thus assuming a passive rather than an active enforcement role, it was easy for HUD to avoid controversy by treating each case as an isolated occurrence rather than as part of a general pattern. For citizens, the time and red tape involved in initiating a complaint was daunting, and thus all through the 1970s the volume of HUD-processed complaints remained low. Interestingly, enforcement improved somewhat under a Republican president, Ronald Reagan, when HUD took steps to publicize the remedies available under the 1968 civil rights legislation. Partially as a result, the number of complaints that HUD received rose sharply in the 1980s. Still, most citizens bypassed HUD and state and local civil rights agencies and went directly to the courts.[69] By focusing on individual remedies rather than on positive efforts to enforce compliance,

the governmental role in fair housing enforcement remained small and inconsequential.

Some of the policies initiated by the federal government to eliminate housing discrimination benefited blacks, but in very limited ways. The Equal Credit Opportunity Act of 1974, the Mortgage Disclosure Act of 1975, and the Community Reinvestment Act of 1977 (CRA)[70] were intended to ensure that blacks receive equal consideration for home loans and that banks stop redlining areas where blacks lived. (*Redlining* derives its name from the red line drawn on maps to designate neighborhoods too risky for loans, regardless of the creditworthiness of the individual applicant.) Following enactment of the 1974, 1976, and 1977 legislation, banks became the targets of protests and litigation of community groups challenging redlining practices. Rather than contest a blizzard of litigation and to avoid problems with federal regulators, many banks entered into negotiations with community groups. According to one estimate, by 1991 approximately $18 billion in urban reinvestment commitments had been negotiated in more than 70 cities across the country.[71] However, just as it would be premature to conclude that all redlining stopped, it would be inaccurate to assume all individual loan applications were judged strictly on their merits. Social change rarely comes that easily or rapidly. A 1992 study by the Federal Reserve Bank of Boston found that minorities were roughly 60 percent more likely to be turned down for a mortgage, even after controlling for 38 factors affecting credit-worthiness, such as credit history and total debt.[72]

The spatial configuration of today's metropolitan areas still reflects a generation of policies that encouraged suburbanization and racial segregation. These policies had tremendous effects because they altered the dynamics of housing markets decisively in favor of suburban development and racial segregation. The series of legislative remedies enacted in the 1960s and 1970s brought about a change in long-established practices, but these remedies could not be expected to work miracles. Social customs and racial attitudes still influence how social, racial, and ethnic groups become sorted out on the urban landscape.

Suburbs, Highways, and the Automobile

As we have seen, for several decades federal housing and urban renewal policies facilitated the racial and socioeconomic segregation of America's urban areas. The National Defense Highway Act of 1956 amplified the effects of these policies. The highway act financed the construction of a massive system of limited-access freeways that ensured the triumph of the automobile over urban mass transit. "Automobility" enabled Americans to implement a version of Henry Ford's solution to urban problems: "We shall solve the problems of the city by leaving the city."[73] Metropolitan highway systems made Ford's abandonment strategy practical, but mainly for affluent white families able to make the suburban move.

As its title implies, the 1956 National Defense Highway Act was justified partly on military grounds—two of its stated purposes were to aid the movement of troops and supplies and to help evacuate American cities in case of a nuclear attack. The main rationale, however, was that freeways would stimulate the economy by creating a national system of superhighways linking all of the nation's major metropolitan areas. Within urban areas, the new expressways were expected to solve the growing problem of traffic congestion. A committee appointed by President Eisenhower asserted that suburbs were superior to cities and recommended that the new freeway system be used to decentralize American urban areas.[74] That is exactly what the new freeways did.

The 1956 legislation placed federal gasoline taxes and new excise taxes on tires and heavy vehicles into a Federal Highway Trust Fund. Congress established a grant-in-aid formula of a 90 percent federal and a 10 percent state share for construction. The federal government agreed to distribute the funds for the 42,500-mile system on the basis of need. Because costs in built-up urban areas were greater, urban areas got a lion's share of the funds.

In the years leading up to the legislation, urban planners debated with highway engineers about how a national highway system should be built. Urban planners wanted to design highway systems that would shape regional development and revitalize declining central cities. By contrast, highway engineers believed the new interstate system should be designed with one goal in mind: to move people and goods in the most efficient manner from point A to point B. This meant, in effect, that freeways would be routed directly from the suburbs to the central cities and whatever got in the way would have to go. The engineers got their way. The 1956 act was written so that the funds allocated by the federal government would be administered by state highway departments with no input from urban planners. As one historian put it, "Since federal and state road engineers controlled the program, they had few incentives to include urban renewal, social regeneration, and broader transportation objectives in the programming."[75] When highways were built through urban areas, state highway planners chose routes without reference to their effects on existing neighborhoods.

Laying wide ribbons of concrete had different effects in crowded cities than in the open countryside. As the highway builder Robert Moses said in a speech before the National Highway Users Conference in 1964, "You can draw any kind of picture you like on a clean slate … but when you operate in an overbuilt metropolis, you have to hack your way with a meat axe."[76] The meat axe approach turned out to be the main method Moses used to build his highways, displacing 250,000 people in the New York City area alone.[77] Because the highway engineers wanted to cause the least disruption to private commercial land values, highways were routed through residential areas, especially those with the cheapest housing occupied by poor people and minorities.[78] The program was justified not only as highway building but also as slum clearance. According to one estimate, the uncompensated loss to city residents who were displaced averaged between 20 and 30 percent of one year's income.[79]

The methods used to ram freeways through urban areas left a damaging imprint that lingers to the present day. The highways took land off the tax rolls, destroyed intact neighborhoods, and separated downtown areas from their waterfronts. In St. Louis, Interstate 70 erected a barrier between the Mississippi River waterfront from its downtown that made downtown revitalization difficult. By dividing the South Bronx from the rest of the city, the Cross-Bronx Expressway in New York helped turn the South Bronx into an infamous ghetto. Scholars estimate that the unsightliness of the Fitzgerald Expressway in Boston reduced surrounding property values by about $300 million.[80] In 2004, after more than 15 years of work and more than $15 billion in funding, Boston completed a massive project to tear down the expressway and replace it with an underground tunnel. The land once occupied by the freeway was turned into a park.

The meat axe approach favored by the engineers provoked "freeway revolts" all across the nation.[81] One of the first victories for opponents came in 1959 when San Franciscans successfully prevented the completion of the Embarcadero Freeway. If the protests had failed, a freeway would today run along the shores of the San Francisco Bay, making the later development of such tourist attractions as Ghirardelli Square and the Wharf almost impossible. Protests forced highway planners to become more sensitive to aesthetic and social considerations, but not before irreversible harm had been done to hundreds of urban neighborhoods and waterfronts.

By the 1980s, the price tag for building the interstate system exceeded $100 billion. While highway building received huge subsidies year in and year out, urban mass transit was starved. Unlike Europe, where gasoline taxes had always been used to help support mass transit, federal gas taxes in the United States could not be allocated for that purpose until 1975. Funding for urban mass transit gradually increased after the mid-1970s but remained small. Senator Gaylord Nelson of Wisconsin estimated that up to the 1980s, 75 percent of government expenditures for transportation in the United States in the postwar period had been spent on highways and roads, but only 1 percent was allocated to urban mass transit (most of the rest was spent for railroads and shipping).[82]

The result of these policies is that Americans depend on the automobile for urban travel more than people in any other nation. Although other advanced industrial nations such as Germany, Britain, and Japan embraced the automobile, they also maintained modern systems of mass transit as workable alternatives, despite the fact that automobile use has increased sharply in those countries. In the United States, by contrast, between 1950 and 1977, as the volume of automobile traffic on urban roads more than tripled, urban mass transit ridership declined by over half, and it has not rebounded since. For the United States as a whole, only 4 percent of workers used public transit to commute to work in 2000—a decline from a peak of 5.4 percent in 19 8 3.[83] In all but a handful of cities in the Northeast, notably New York City, less than 5 percent of workers use mass transit.

In the 1990s, concerns about urban air pollution and long commuting patterns emerged on the national policy agenda, in considerable part because Democrats enjoyed majorities in Congress. In 1992, Congress passed the Intermodal Surface Transportation Efficiency Act (ISTEA, commonly referred to as "ice tea").[84] The significance of ISTEA is that it took substantial authority over interstate highway funds from politically insulated state transportation departments, which had always been dominated by highway engineers, and put decisions about urban transportation systems into the hands of metropolitan planning organizations (MPOs). Governed by delegates representing municipal governments within urban regions, MPOs assumed authority over funding categories designed to reduce auto congestion and improve air quality.

The ISTEA legislation encouraged regional transportation planning by "flexing" federal highway funds, a process that allowed a portion of motor vehicle taxes to be spent on mass transit and even bicycle and pedestrian uses, if local transportation planners chose to. Between fiscal year 1992 and fiscal year 1999, $33.8 billion was available for transfer from transportation programs to transit projects, but local planners decided to transfer only 12.5 percent, or $4.2 billion, of this amount. Some states, such as New York, Massachusetts, California, and

Oregon, transferred more than one-third of highway funds available to them to transit use; others transferred little or none.[85]

The precedent set for local flexibility was carried over in the 1998 Transportation Equity Act for the Twenty-first Century (TEA 21), which replaced ISTEA. Under this legislation, highway builders were required to submit studies of the air quality effects for major new federally funded projects. But despite the new efforts to encourage the funding of public transportation, as shown in Table 7.3, the proportion of commuters using automobiles rose only slightly from 1990 to 2006, and for most metropolitan areas, less than 4 percent of commuters used mass transit. Improvements in mass transit systems might improve these numbers, but even after the 1998 legislation, adequate funding for that purpose was not made available to most transit authorities. On average, state and local governments still provided 90 percent of the funds for mass transit systems.

In 2008, sharply rising gasoline prices provided incentives for people to reduce the use of their cars. As gas prices climbed to a national average of more than $4 per gallon for regular gasoline during that summer, buses, interurban trains, and light-rail systems became packed with riders. Cities such as New York and Boston, with their well-developed transit systems, showed an increase of 5 percent or more, but by far the largest increases in ridership, in the 10–15 percent range, occurred in urban areas that have been the most dependent on the automobile. However, in most metropolitan areas it will be difficult to significantly change transit patterns. Mass transit systems are not developed well enough to conceivably absorb more than a very small fraction of commuters, even if they run full all the time. In places like Denver, St. Louis, and any number of other cities, light-rail systems are important for transporting visitors to and from airports and for bringing fans to downtown ball games and other events, but they do not, and cannot, carry a large proportion of daily commuters. As a result of decades of investment in highway systems, urban transportation systems are well established and commuting habits are basically fixed. Any significant changes will require very costly infrastructure investments that will take years to complete.

TABLE 7.3 Commuting Patterns 1990–2006, Selected Metropolitan Areas

	Percentage Public Transit 1990	Percentage Public Transit 2006
Boston	10.6%	8.9%
Chicago	13.7	10.8
Dallas	2.4	1.6
Denver	4.2	4.2
Los Angeles	4.6	4.9
New York	26.6	26.2
St. Louis	3.0	2.4
San Francisco	9.3	9.2

Note: Urban area definitions in 2006 are slightly larger than those previously used, and therefore include more low-transit ex-urban areas than before. However, this method does not change ridership statistics significantly.
Source: 1990 data, U.S. Bureau of the Census, Summary File 3, Transit Ridership Share 1990 (July 2004), www.census.gov.

Mass transit systems tend to be chronically underfunded. During the financial crisis of 2008–2009, several metropolitan areas reduced service on their transit systems. The irony is that fiscal problems were occurring at the same time that ridership had increased. This was because only about one-fifth of the revenues from mass transit systems come from fares; the remaining portion is raised through state and local taxes, and these were sharply declining. In early 2009, the Metropolitan Transit Authority of New York City was trying to close a $1.2 billion budget gap. In the St. Louis area, officials were temporarily closing 2,300 bus stops, a move that threatened to raise unemployment levels by stranding workers who relied on the system. Likewise, transit authorities almost everywhere were considering fare increases and service cuts.[86]

The summer of 2017 in New York City was dubbed the "MTA's Summer of Hell," after a mass amount of derailings and massive delays throughout the summer months, especially for commuters from the outer boroughs, and New York Governor Cuomo's declaration of a state of emergency over the condition of the MTA's subway system. Cuomo pledged 1 million dollars in subway repair funds for the MTA,[87] which will hardly be enough to

foot the bill for the necessary improvements.

After the financial crisis, local officials looked to the federal government with high expectations that help was on the way. The American Recovery and Reinvestment Act of 2009, signed into law by President Obama on February 17 of that year, made $27.5 billion available for surface transportation, highways, roads, and bridges. As part of the administration's "green" initiative, about $12 billion was reserved for mass transit. Because the program was regarded mainly as a jobs initiative, federal administrators indicated that the funds had to be spent only on infrastructure projects such as new train cars, track repair, and station renovations.[88] These measures were likely to improve the quality of service, but they would do nothing for the most basic long-term problem for mass transit in the United States: a funding system that worked against investments in systems that might appreciably alter transit patterns in metropolitan areas.

The Damaging Effects of National Policies

It is a tragic irony that the urban programs initiated after World War II contributed to racial segregation and discrimination. While urban renewal clearance programs bulldozed slum housing, public housing projects segregated blacks more than ever. Meanwhile, white middle-class Americans were paid, in essence, to move to the suburbs, and expensive new freeway systems eased their commute to their jobs in the center city. For decades, millions of white middle-class families were able to secure loans guaranteed by the federal government. It allowed them to move into new suburban developments, where housing values appreciated. For white middle-class America in the postwar period, the home became the principal source of family worth and savings, money that could be invested in a child's education, in a bigger or newer house, or saved for retirement. Until the late 1940s, federal policy excluded African Americans from federal home loan programs, and it took until the late 1960s, when open-housing legislation was passed, for African American families to be able to enter the real estate market in any meaningful sense.

With or without federal programs, a high degree of residential segregation would have evolved in metropolitan areas. But if federal housing programs had not actively discouraged banks from lending to blacks, some middle-class African American homeowners would have been able to find affordable and desirable housing by buying new homes, instead of moving into neighborhoods already occupied by whites. With this dynamic in operation, the presence of blacks in a neighborhood would not have become so automatically equated, in the popular imagination, with neighborhood changes and declining property values. Equally important, if African Americans had been able to buy homes wherever they chose much sooner, they also would have been able to invest in the future. For decades, most African Americans were denied this crucial means of life savings and upward mobility.

Despite significant progress in breaking down racial barriers, family wealth remains as one of the enduring differences between black and white American families. In 1995, the median net worth (assets minus debts) for white households was $49,030, compared to $7,073 for black households—a ratio of 1 to 7.[89] The median net financial assets (cash that is immediately available) in the early 1990s was $6,999 for white families but *zero* for black families.[90] This gap, which measures the ability of families to pass on life chances from generation to generation, was created in substantial measure by governmental programs. Many of the effects of these policies may have been unintended, but they were no less powerful because of that fact.

Endnotes

1 John H. Mollenkopf, "The Post-War Politics of Urban Development," in *Marxism and the Metropolis: New Perspectives on Urban Political Economy,* ed. William K. Tabb and Larry Sawers (New York: Oxford University Press, 1978), p. 140.

2 Mark Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities: The Federal Government and Urban America, 1933–1965,* Urban Life in America Series (New York: Oxford University Press, 1975), p. 14.

3 See Nathaniel S. Keith, *Politics and the Housing Crisis since 1930* (New York: Universe Books, 1973), pp. 41–100.

4 Housing Act of 1949, Public Law 81–171, Preamble, sec. 2, 81st Cong. (1949).

5 Martin Meyerson and Edward C. Banfield, *Politics, Planning, and the Public Interest* (New York: Free Press, 1955).

6 Leonard Freedman, *Public Housing: The Politics of Poverty* (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1969), p. 55.

7 Robert H. Salisbury, "The New Convergence of Power in Urban Politics," *Journal of Politics* 26 (November 1964): 775–797.

8 Mollenkopf, "The Post-War Politics of Urban Development," p. 138.

9 Quoted in Robert A. Dahl, *Who Governs: Democracy and Power in an American City* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1961), p. 136. For another insightful example of the use of urban renewal by political entrepreneurs, see Jewel Bellush and Murray Hausknecht, "Urban Renewal and the Reformer," in *Urban Renewal: People, Politics and Planning,* ed. Jewel Bellush and Murray Hausknecht (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, Anchor Books, 1967), pp. 189–197.

10 Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities,* p. 161.
11 Mollenkopf, "The Post-War Politics of Urban Development," p. 140.
12 Ibid., p. 138.
13 Williamson, Imbroscio, and Alperovitz, *Making a Place for Community,* p. 76.
14 Herbert J. Gans, *The Urban Villagers: Group and Class in the Life of Italian-Americans* (New York: Free Press, 1962), Chapter 13.
15 John H. Mollenkopf, "On the Causes and Consequences of Neighborhood Political Mobilization," paper delivered at the Annual Meeting of the American Political Science Association (New Orleans, September 4–8, 1973).
16 Quoted in Clarence N. Stone, *Economic Growth and Neighborhood Discontent: System Bias in the Urban Renewal Program of Atlanta* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1976), pp. 48–49.
17 See Chester Hartman, *Yerba Buena: Land Grab and Community Resistance in San Francisco* (San Francisco: Glide, 1974). The following material on the Yerba Buena controversy draws on this excellent book. In most cases, citations are limited to quotations or specific data.
18 Ibid., p. 31.
19 Ibid., p. 19.
20 Ibid., p. 190.
21 Ibid., p. 128.
22 National Commission on Urban Problems, *Building the American City* (New York: Praeger, 1969), p. 153. This commission, appointed by the president, was established in January 1967 and headed by former Illinois senator and longtime urban policy advocate Paul H. Douglas.
23 Ibid., pp. 164–165.
24 See Martin Anderson, *The Federal Bulldozer: A Critical Analysis of Urban Renewal, 1949–1962* (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1964), p. 65; compare Rossi and Dentler, *The Politics of Urban Renewal,* p. 224.
25 Chester Hartman, "The Housing of Relocated Families," in *Urban Renewal: The Record and the Controversy,* ed. James Q. Wilson (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1966), p. 322, as reprinted from *Journal of the American Institute of Planners* 30 (November 1964): 266–286.
26 Anderson, *The Federal Bulldozer,* pp. 65–66; see also Bellush and Hausknecht, "Urban Renewal and the Reformer," p. 13.
27 Anderson, *The Federal Bulldozer,* p. 65.
28 Mollenkopf, "The Post-War Politics of Urban Development," p. 140.
29 Freedman, *Public Housing,* p. 140.
30 Lawrence M. Friedman, *Government and Slum Housing: A Century of Frustration* (Chicago: Rand McNally, 1968), p. 121.
31 Freedman, *Public Housing,* p. 111.
32 Friedman, *Government and Slum Housing,* p. 123.
33 James Baldwin, *Nobody Knows My Name* (New York: Dial Press, 1961), p. 63, quoted in Freedman, *Public Housing,* p. 117.
34 Friedman, *Government and Slum Housing,* p. 121.
35 Lee Rainwater, *Behind Ghetto Walls: Black Families in a Federal Slum* (Chicago: Aldine, 1970).
36 Housing and Urban Development Act of 1968, Public Law 90–448, 90th Cong. (1968).
37 U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development, *1974 Statistical Yearbook of the U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1976), p. 104.
38 Stephen David and Paul Peterson, eds., *Urban Politics and Public Policy: The City in Crisis* (New York: Praeger, 1973), p. 94.
39 Charles Abrams, *The Future of Housing* (New York: Harper-Collins, 1946), p. 213.
40 Bureau of National Affairs, *The Housing and Development Reporter* (Washington, DC: Bureau of National Affairs, 1976).
41 Ibid.
42 Calculated from data in Congressional Quarterly Service, *Housing a Nation,* p. 6.
43 U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development, *1974 Statistical Yearbook of the Department of Housing and Urban Development,* pp. 116–117.
44 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics of the United States, Colonial Times to 1970,* pt. 1, Bicentennial ed. (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1975), p. 646; for 2002 data, Danter Company, www.danter.com/statistics/homeown.htm
45 Compiling reliable statistics on FHA/VA loans is difficult because of inconsistent data over time. The most accessible source is the *Statistical Abstract of the United States* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office) for various years.
46 For a discussion of this phenomenon, see Murray Edelman, *The Symbolic Uses of Politics,* 7th ed. (Champaign: University of Illinois Press, 1976), pp. 44–76. We are indebted to Jeffrey Gilbert for several of the ideas contained in this section.
47 Michael Stone, "Reconstructing American Housing" (unpublished manuscript), quoted in Chester W. Hartman, *Housing and Social Policy,* Prentice Hall Series in Social Policy (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1975), p. 30.
48 Quoted in Brian J. L. Berry, *The Open Housing Question: Race and Housing in Chicago, 1966–1976* (Cambridge, MA: Ballinger, 1979), p. 9.
49 Quoted in ibid., pp. 9, 11.
50 Luigi M. Laurenti, "Theories of Race and Property Value," in *Urban Analysis: Readings in Housing and Urban Development,* ed. Alfred N. Page and Warren R. Seyfried (Glenview, IL: Scott Foresman, 1970), p. 274.
51 Richard Moe and Carter Wilkie, *Changing Places* (New York: Henry Holt, 1997), p. 48.
52 Charles Abrams, quoted in Norman N. Bradburn, Seymour Sudman, and Galen L. Gockel, *Side by Side: Integrated Neighborhoods in America* (Chicago: Quadrangle Books, 1971), p. 104.
53 Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities,* p. 221.
54 Nathan Glazer and David McEntire, eds., *Housing and Minority Groups* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1960), p. 140.
55 Public Law 90–284, 90th Cong. (1968), Title VIII ("Fair Housing"), sec. 805.
56 D.C. Public Interest Research Group (DCPIRG), Institute for Self-Reliance, and Institute for Policy Studies, *Redlining: Mortgage Disinvestment in the District of Columbia* (Washington, DC: Authors, 1975), p. 3.
57 U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development, *1974 Statistical Yearbook of the Department of Housing and Urban Development,* pp. 116–117.
58 Thomas A. Clark, "The Suburbanization Process and Residential Segregation," in *Divided Neighborhoods: Changing Patterns of Racial Segregation,* ed. Gary A. Tobin (Newbury Park, CA: Sage, 1987), p. 115; Larry Long and Diane Deare, "The Suburbanization of Blacks," *American Demographics* 3 (1981), cited in Douglas S. Massey and Nancy A. Denton, "Suburbanization and Segregation in U.S. Metropolitan Areas," *American Journal of Sociology* 3 (November 1988): 592–626.

59 Kenneth T. Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier: The Suburbanization of the United States* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1985), p. 205.
60 John R. Logan and Harvey L. Molotch, *Urban Fortunes: The Political Economy of Place* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1987), p. 195.
61 Clark, "The Suburbanization Process and Residential Segregation," pp. 115–137.
62 Massey and Denton, "Suburbanization and Segregation in U.S. Metropolitan Areas," pp. 592–626.
63 Logan and Molotch, *Urban Fortunes,* p. 194.
64 Douglas S. Massey and Mitchell L. Eggers, "The Spatial Concentration of Affluence and Poverty during the 1970s," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 29, no. 2 (December 1990). See also S. Roberts, "Shifts in 80's Failed to Ease Segregation," *New York Times* (July 15, 1992), pp. B1-B3.
65 John F. Kain, "Housing Market Discrimination and Black Suburbanization in the 1980's," in *Divided Neighborhoods: Changing Patterns of Racial Segregation,* ed. Gary A. Tobin (Newbury Park, CA: Sage, 1987), p. 68.
66 John Farley, *Segregated City, Segregated Suburbs: Are They the Products of Black-White Socioeconomic Differentials?* (Edwardsville: Southern Illinois University, 1983), cited in Joe T. Darden, "Choosing Neighbors and Neighborhoods: The Role of Race in Housing Preference," in *Divided Neighborhoods: Changing Patterns of Racial Segregation,* ed. Gary A. Tobin (Newbury Park, CA: Sage, 1987), p. 16.
67 John F. Farley, "Race Still Matters: The Minimal Role of Income and Housing Cost as Causes of Housing Segregation in St. Louis, 1990," *Urban Affairs Review* 31, no. 2 (November 1995): 244–254.
68 Public Policy Research Centers, University of Missouri–St. Louis, *Analysis of Impediments to Fair Housing: St. Louis County* (St. Louis: Author, 1995).
69 William E. Nelson and Michael S. Bailey, "The Weakening of State Participation in Civil Rights Enforcement," in *Public Policy across States and Communities,* ed. Dennis R. Judd (Greenwich, CT: JAI Press, 1985), p. 160.
70 Public Law 94-200, 94th Cong. (1975), Title III, and Public Law 95-128, 95th Cong. (1977), Title VIII.
71 Calvin Bradford, *Community Reinvestment Agreement Library* (Des Plaines, IL: Community Reinvestment Associates, 1992), as cited in *From Redlining to Reinvestment: Community Responses to Urban Disinvestment,* ed. Gregory D. Squires (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1992), p. 2.
72 Mitchell Zuckoff, "Study Shows Racial Bias in Lending," *Boston Globe* (October 9, 1992), p. B1.
73 Henry Ford, quoted in J. Allen Whitt and Glenn Yago, "Corporate Strategies and the Decline of Transit in U.S. Cities," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 21, no. 1 (September 1985): 61.
74 Alan Lupo, Frank Colcord, and Edmund P. Fowler, *Rites of Way: The Politics of Transportation in Boston and the U.S. City* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1971), p. 184.
75 Mark Rose, *Interstate Express Highway Politics, 1941–1956* (Lawrence: Regents Press of Kansas, 1979), p. 97.
76 Quoted in Helen Leavitt, *Superhighway—Superhoax* (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1970), p. 53.
77 Robert A. Caro, *The Power Broker: Robert Moses and the Fall of New York* (New York: Random House, 1974), p. 19.
78 Between 1951 and 1974, for example, 89 percent of the 10,000 households displaced by public projects in Baltimore were black. See Anthony Downs, *Urban Problems and Prospects* (Chicago: Marsham, 1970), pp. 204–205.
79 Ibid., p. 223.
80 John R. Meyer and Jose A. Gomez-Ibanez, *Auto Transit and Cities* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1981), p. 177.
81 By 1970 there were 400 struggles under way by community groups to oppose highway construction. Harry C. Boyte, *The Backyard Revolution: Understanding the New Citizen Movement* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1980), p. 11.
82 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* p. 250.
83 U.S. Federal Transportation Administration (USFTA), *Summary of Travel Trends, 1995 National Personal Transportation Survey,* December 1999; USFTA and U.S. Bureau of Transportation Statistics, *National Household Travel Survey,* 2001.
84 This account of ISTEA relies on Paul G. Lewis, "The Politics of Structure in Transportation Policy: Resuscitating Metropolitan Planning Organizations Under ISTEA," paper delivered at the Annual Meeting of the Urban Affairs Association (Toronto, Canada, April 17, 1997).
85 Pietro S. Nivola, *Laws of the Landscape: How Policies Shape Cities in Europe and America* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1999), p. 15.
86 Michael Cooper, "Rider Paradox: Surge in Mass, Drop in Transit," *New York Times* (February 3, 2009), www.nytimes.com/2009/02/04/us/04trans.html
87 Nick Baumgarten, "Public Transit's Summer of Hell" *The New Yorker* (July 24, 2017). Accessed online: www.newyorker.com/magazine/2017/07/24/public-transits-summer-of-hell
88 Michael Cooper, "Rider Paradox: Surge in Mass, Drop in Transit," *New York Times* (February 3, 2009), www.nytimes.com/2009/02/04/us/04trans.html
89 Melvin Oliver and Thomas Shapiro, *Black Wealth/White Wealth: A New Perspective on Racial Inequality* (New York: Routledge, 1997), pp. 85–87.
90 Ibid.

CHAPTER 8

Federal Programs and the Divisive Politics of Race

The Brief Life of Inner-City Programs

The problems of racial segregation and discrimination, poverty, and innercity decline burst onto the nation's political agenda in the 1960s. For a brief time, urban problems became the main focus of national policy. The National Commission on Urban Problems (1958), the National Commission on Civil Disorders (1967), the President's Task Force on Suburban Problems (1967), President Nixon's Commission on Population Growth and the American Future (1972), and a host of state and city task forces decried the segregation of blacks and the poor in ghetto areas of the central cities. A great deal of hope was invested in the social and urban policies of the 1960s, but many of these programs became embroiled in political controversy and proved to be short-lived.

In the 1964 presidential race, the Democratic candidate, Lyndon Johnson, promised to build a Great Society by launching an aggressive effort to solve the pressing social problems of the time. The Democratic landslide that year gave him the legislative majority needed to implement literally hundreds of programs in only a two-year period from 1965 to 1967. By the 1968 election, spending for the Vietnam War had already begun to undermine support for the Democratic agenda, but racial divisions proved to be even more decisive. The landslide win by the Democrats in 1964 masked a development that would soon compromise the party's ability to win presidential elections. The issue of race was tearing apart the coalition the Democrats had fashioned in the 1930s. Although President Johnson won by historic margins elsewhere, he lost in the one part of the country where Democrats had never been challenged, the Deep South. The Republican standard-bearer, Barry Goldwater, received 87 percent of the popular vote in Mississippi, close to 70 percent in Alabama, and substantially more than 50 percent in Louisiana, Georgia, and South Carolina. After 1964, Republican candidates regularly carried the South for the first time since the carpetbagger governments that were imposed on southern states in the years after the Civil War.

Richard Nixon's victory in the 1968 election made it clear that it was impossible to separate the issue of race from the political fate of social welfare and urban programs. This had become obvious as early as the 1930s, when southern Democrats in Congress often expressed their concern that New Deal programs might be used to upset traditional racial relationships. In the postwar years, they successfully fought to ensure that public housing would not be used to promote racial integration. As long as the programs advanced by Democratic liberals did not challenge race relations in the South, southern Democrats were willing to go along. But this tacit bargain ended with the civil rights legislation and the social programs of the 1960s.

In the public's imagination, the Great Society became identified as a constellation of programs that primarily benefited inner-city blacks. The truth is that no significant programs were aimed so narrowly. Funds for Head Start and the War on Poverty, for example, were spread broadly across the country, to urban and rural areas alike, and social programs such as Medicare and Medicaid benefited people regardless of where they lived. But impressions mattered. From 1969 to 1976, when Republican presidents Richard Nixon and Gerald Ford occupied the White House, many of the Democratic-sponsored programs came under attack, and Ronald Reagan's victory in the 1980 presidential election quickly brought an end to most urban programs. Most of the Great Society programs lasted for 20 years or less, and they never received enough resources to plausibly remedy the problems they were meant to address.

OUTTAKE

Racial Divisions Eventually Doomed Urban Programs

The federal urban programs of the 1960s were adopted in response to civil disorders in the cities and the serious social problems highlighted by racial turmoil. The federal response fractured the Democratic Party, which relied upon urban voters from the North and reliable support in the southern and border states. The urban vote had been essential to the Democrats for decades. Time after time, overwhelming Democratic majorities in the big cities balanced out Republican pluralities in the suburbs and small towns, providing the margin of victory in key states holding large blocs of electoral votes. The Democrats would have lost the presidency in 1940, 1944, and 1948 without the big turnout in 12 big cities in the nation. The urban electorate was essential to John F. Kennedy's victory in the close election of 1960. Kennedy beat Nixon by a razor-thin 112,000 votes, a margin of less than one-tenth of 1 percent, but he carried 27 out of the 39 largest cities. In 1964, Lyndon Johnson won by an unprecedented landslide, with the cities delivering lopsided results that exceeded the national average by 10 percent or more.

The attempt to address the longstanding grievances of African Americans alienated white Southerners and white working-class voters almost everywhere. In 1968, the Republicans capitalized on resentment provoked by the successes of the Civil Rights Movement. The Democratic presidential candidate, Hubert Humphrey, carried only one southern state, Texas. Across the South he won just 31 percent of the vote, running behind both Republican Richard Nixon (34.5 percent) and Alabama governor and third-party candidate George Wallace (34.6 percent), who ran as an avowed segregationist. In 1968, the Nixon campaign adopted law and order as its main theme. This had also been the campaign slogan of the Republican nominee in 1964, Barry Goldwater, but he had handled it crudely and ineptly. Goldwater's television ads tried to convey an impression that America's cities were in ruins by showing scenes of blacks rioting. In the scenes meant to portray Goldwater's vision of the American past he would like to restore, blacks were shown picking cotton. The ads that Nixon aired four years later were less blatant, although they were not subtle either. One of his television spots showed scenes of urban riots, with a Nixon voice-over calling for "some honest talk about the problem of order." At least blacks were not shown in a rendition of a bucolic agricultural past.

Richard Nixon won 32 percent of the African American vote in 1960, when he lost to Kennedy, but even though his share fell to 12 percent in the 1968 election, he still beat Hubert Humphrey. One of the president's closest advisers, John Erlichman, told civil rights administrators that "blacks are not where the votes are, so why antagonize the people who can be helpful to us politically?" After the 1960s, the Republican Party mostly wrote off the African American vote. The Republican base became increasingly conservative, embracing working-class whites, a (now) solid Republican South, suburban and Sunbelt Republican voters, and the religious right. The results of the 2000 presidential election, which George W. Bush lost by 500,000 popular votes, suggested that the Republican coalition was losing some of its energy. Bush entered the White House only because the electoral college favors small and less populated states. Nevertheless, it is clear that cities did not figure much in the overall tally. Democrats have drawn the logical conclusion that programs meant for the cities cannot get them much political mileage.

Sources: Statistics and quotations from Theodore H. White, *The Making of the President 1960* (New York: Atheneum, 1961), p. 1201; John Mollenkopf, *The Contested City* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1983), p. 83; Kathleen Hall Jamieson, *Packaging the Presidency: A History and Criticism of Presidential Campaign Advertising* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1984), pp. 202–203; Joseph McGinnis, *Selling the President, 1968* (New York: Trident Press, 1969); Numan V. Barley and Hugh D. Graham, *Southern Politics and the Second Reconstruction* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1975), pp. 126–127; Everett Carl Ladd Jr., "The Shifting Party Coalitions, 1932–1976," in *Emerging Coalitions in American Politics,* ed. Seymour Martin Lipset (San Francisco: Institute for Contemporary Studies, 1978), p. 98; A. James Reichley, *Conservatives in an Age of Change: The Nixon and Ford Administrations* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1981), pp. 145, 186.

The Democrats and the Cities

When President Kennedy took office on January 20, 1961, his administration was already committed to helping the cities. Even before his campaign, Kennedy had concluded that the problem of the cities was "the great unspoken issue in the 1960 election."[1] During the campaign, the Democrats discussed doing something about the urban crisis, whereas the Republicans tried to avoid such issues. "If you ever let them campaign only on domestic issues," confided presidential nominee Richard M. Nixon to his aides, "they'll beat us."[2] President Kennedy "emerged as an eloquent spokesman for a new generation. In presidential message after message Kennedy spelled

out in more detail than the Congress or the country could easily digest the most complete programs of domestic reforms in a quarter century."[3]

The Kennedy administration mapped out an ambitious agenda. Poverty, racial segregation, juvenile delinquency and crime, bad schools, and a host of other social problems were discovered in the 1960s only in the sense that they were no longer "out of sight, out of mind." They had existed for a long time and were no worse and little different by the beginning of the Kennedy administration than they had been under presidents Roosevelt, Truman, and Eisenhower. What made them seem worse was their greater visibility. Martin Luther King Jr. understood the task of creating visibility during the civil rights demonstrations in 1963. "I saw no way," he later commented, "of dealing with things without bringing the indignation to the attention of the nation."[4]

King turned the civil rights issue into a national crisis in Birmingham, Alabama, in the summer of 1963. What started in Birmingham spread across the South and even filtered into northern cities. During the summer, there were 13,786 arrests of demonstrators in 75 cities of the 11 southern states.[5] In the 10 weeks that followed nationally publicized police attacks on demonstrators in Birmingham, the Justice Department counted 758 demonstrations across the nation. It quickly became clear that the administration could no longer avoid dealing with civil rights. The brutal treatment of civil rights demonstrators throughout the South was being televised in the living rooms of millions of American homes. By mid-June, 127 civil rights bills had been introduced in the House of Representatives. The Kennedy administration, like it or not, was being drawn into the nation's most significant and divisive internal conflict since the Civil War.

The political pressures applied by the Civil Rights Movement were reinforced by the influence of the black electorate. As John C. Donovan observed in his book *The Politics of Poverty,* "The greatest strength of the Negro communities lies in its voting power, in its numbers, and in their strategic location."[6] In the South, the black population was geographically diffused and systematically denied the right to the vote. When they moved to northern cities, blacks gained the franchise. Their votes were concentrated in the cities of the states holding a majority of the electoral college votes—Illinois, California, Massachusetts, Ohio, Michigan, New Jersey, New York, Texas, and Pennsylvania. Kennedy targeted his campaign on these key states, and the 68 percent plurality that black voters gave him was crucial to his razor-thin victories in Illinois, Missouri, and other states. In 1956, Adlai Stevenson, the liberal Democratic candidate from Illinois, had received 61 percent of the black vote.[7] If Kennedy had not done better, he would have lost the election: "It is difficult to see how Illinois, New Jersey, Michigan, South Carolina, or Delaware (with 74 electoral votes) could have been won had the Republican–Democratic split of the Negro wards and precincts remained as it was, unchanged from the Eisenhower charm of 1956."[8]

On June 11, 1963, President Kennedy overruled his advisers and announced he would propose a civil rights bill. When Kennedy was assassinated on November 22, the bill had just reached the House Rules Committee. The assassination created an emotionally charged atmosphere that the new president, Lyndon Baines Johnson, adroitly exploited. Opinion polls indicated overwhelming public support for civil rights legislation. Seizing the moment, Johnson added new provisions to the legislation and harried Congress into acting quickly. When Republicans joined with northern Democrats to move the bill out of the House Rules Committee, the bill was sent to the floor, where it passed by a vote of 290 to 130. On June 6, 1964, the Senate mustered the necessary two-thirds vote to overcome a filibuster mounted by Southerners, and the legislation passed.

The Civil Rights Act of 1964 outlawed discrimination in public accommodations, thus effectively striking down the South's Jim Crow laws that had denied blacks equal access to bus stations, restaurants, lunch counters, theaters, sports arenas, gasoline stations, motels, hotels, and lodging houses. It outlawed racial discrimination in the hiring, firing, training, and promoting of workers. It barred discrimination in the administration of federal grants. A year later, Congress passed the Voting Rights Act, which not only outlawed literacy tests and other discriminatory voting restrictions but also provided that federal registrars could replace local registrars in counties where there had been a history of discrimination against black voters.

Taking advantage of the post-assassination atmosphere, President Johnson also pressed for a program to redress economic inequalities.[9] Kennedy's advisers had persuaded him that the time had come for his administration to devise a program to attack poverty and unemployment. In June 1963, Kennedy had told Walter Heller, the chair of his Council of Economic Advisors, to appoint a task force of officials who would be responsible for proposing a program to attack poverty. Although Kennedy's commitment to a program was almost certain by the time of his assassination, it was not clear how hard he would have fought for it.

President Johnson was told about the proposed anti-poverty program only two days after assuming office, but he quickly responded, "That's my kind of program. It will help people. I want you to move full speed ahead."[10] The idea of an ambitious, highly visible program appealed to Johnson's desire to be perceived as a second Roosevelt, as a president who would go down in history as the one who completed the social agenda left unfinished in the 1930s. In his first State of the Union address, on January 10, 1964, President Johnson announced he would seek a "total effort" to end poverty in the United States. Using a grandiose military analogy, he said, "This Administration here and now declares unconditional war on poverty in America, and I urge this Congress and all Americans to join me in that effort."[11] When Johnson signed the Economic Opportunity Act on August 8, he had two big legislative victories, the Civil Rights Act and his "war on poverty," to carry into the presidential campaign.

The 1964 campaign provided the setting for a contentious national debate over the federal government's role and responsibilities. The Republican nominee, Barry Goldwater, was one of the few non-Southerners to vote against the Civil Rights Act in the Senate. He attacked the welfare programs funded through the Social Security Act of 1935 and even questioned the immensely popular old-age insurance program established through that legislation. The Republican Party's platform warned that "individual freedom retreats under the mounting assault of expanding centralized power."[12] Lyndon Johnson, by contrast, called for a Great Society that would eliminate poverty and treat other social ills through federal action on civil rights, the cities, health care, welfare, education, and employment.

Johnson won the election by a historic landslide, receiving 61 percent of the popular vote and picking up 486 electoral college votes to Goldwater's 53. The dimensions of the landslide allowed the Democrats to ignore the fact that Goldwater had swept several southern states that Democrats had always carried. The president's coattails were long; Democrats commanded a 289-to-146 majority in the House to go along with a 67-to-33 majority in the Senate.

The Democrats' overwhelming victory set the stage for a period of legislative activism not seen since Roosevelt's fabled First Hundred Days of 1933. Between 1964 and 1966, Congress authorized 219 new programs, which included some of the most important and enduring social initiatives of the 1960s. In 1965, Congress approved Medicare for the elderly and Medicaid for welfare recipients. The Elementary and Secondary Education Act provided federal grants to schools. Food stamps, an experimental program tried during the Kennedy years, became permanent in 1966. New and expanded educational and job-training assistance was made available for individuals with mental and physical disabilities. The public housing and urban renewal programs were expanded, and a new "Model Cities" program to treat the problems of cities was initiated. In 1966, Congress also created a new cabinet-level department, the Department of Housing and Urban Development (HUD), to administer urban programs.

Figure 8.1 shows that spending on federal regional and community programs rose sharply from 1962 to 1980, but fell even more sharply until 2005; since then, spending has increased slightly to about the level that it was in 1985, at the beginning of President Reagan's second term. In 1962, the federal government spent $3.8 billion on these programs (in constant 2008 dollars; the actual figure that year was $445 million), and $24.2 billion by 1980 (2008 dollars; $9.2 billion in actual dollars). Local governments became increasingly dependent on intergovernmental transfers from federal and state governments. In 1950, grants from states and from the federal government accounted for only 10 percent of the revenues making up local budgets, but this proportion rose to over 26 percent of municipal revenues by 1978. But then the bottom fell out, and by the end of the 1990s only 7 percent of city budgets came from intergovernmental revenues. This proportion rose slightly to 10 percent in 2008.

The explosion in federal spending was energized by the conviction that the national government should take the nation in a new direction. Not since the closing of the frontier in the 1870s had the federal government attempted so forcefully to chart a course for the nation. The Louisiana Purchase of 1803, a succession of township and homestead acts, generous land grants to railroad companies, and an aggressive military policy toward the Indians supported the federal government's intention to open up the West in the nineteenth century.[13] In the 1960s, the president and Congress pursued a national agenda of comparable ambition. This time, the national government set out to eliminate poverty, erase racial discrimination, provide equal opportunity in education and jobs, and revitalize cities and communities.

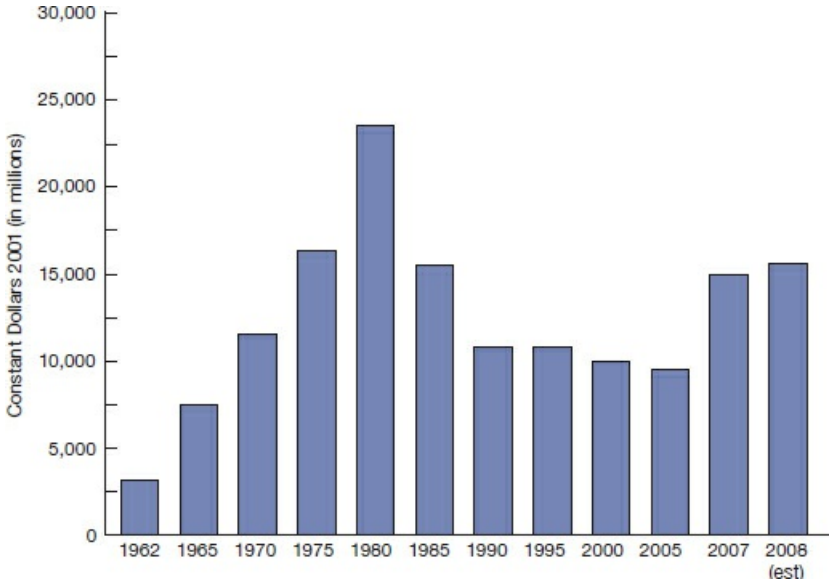


FIGURE 8.1 Federal Spending on Regional and Community Development, 1962–2008 (in 2008 Dollars)

Note: Figures exclude spending on disaster relief.
Sources: U.S. Office of Management and Budget, *Budget of the United States Government, Fiscal Year 2009, Historical Tables* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 2008), pp. 62–71, Table 3.2, Function 450, Community and regional development; Federal Spending on Regional and Community Development, 1962–2002 (in 2001 Dollars).

The national emphasis on equality and social justice was reflected in clear terms in the case of the Civil Rights Act of 1964, when the federal government served notice that its new civil rights statutes would override state and local racial practices. The preambles to the grant programs of Kennedy's New Frontier and Johnson's Great Society articulated a variety of national goals. Consider this example, from the Manpower Development and Training Act of 1962:

> It is in the national interest that current and prospective manpower shortages be identified and that persons who can be qualified for these positions through education and training be sought out and trained, *in order that the nation may meet the staffing requirements of the struggle for freedom.*[14]

Or the Economic Opportunity Act of 1964:

> The United States can achieve its full economic and social potential as a nation only if every individual has the opportunity to contribute the full extent of his capabilities and to participate in the workings of our society. *It is, therefore, the policy of the United States* to eliminate the paradox of poverty in the midst of plenty in this nation.[15]

And the Demonstration Cities and Metropolitan Development Act of 1966 (the so-called Model Cities legislation):

> The Congress hereby finds and declares that *improving the quality of urban life is the most critical domestic problem facing the United States.*[16]

Imagine such statements of intention introducing hundreds of pieces of legislation, ranging from rent supplements to federal school aid to crime control, and the complexity of the new system of grants becomes readily apparent. Hardly an economic or a social problem escaped attention, and each program specified its own complicated methods of implementation. Recipient institutions were subjected to complex rules and close scrutiny. After all, it makes no sense to fund a national priority unless the money is going to be used carefully, according to prescribed guidelines and standards.[17]

The War on Poverty and Model Cities programs attracted attention because they were sold with grandiose promises about what they would accomplish. In 1964, when Lyndon Johnson proposed the War on Poverty, he announced his objective was "total victory."[18] Such a promise could not possibly be fulfilled no matter how well the program might be implemented. As it turned out, the War on Poverty became a lightning rod for controversy, as did the Model Cities program, which was funded through the Demonstration Cities and Metropolitan Development Act of 1966. Under the terms of the War on Poverty, community action agencies were instructed to operate with the "maximum feasible participation" of the poor. Likewise, Model Cities agencies were supposed to galvanize participation by local residents by giving them a role in planning. City halls and other agencies of local

government were cut out of the loop. The idea was to create new institutions in the cities capable of mobilizing the energies of people outside the established power structure. An early program guide distributed by the Office of Economic Opportunity said that to qualify for funding, local antipoverty programs should involve the poor from the very first "in planning, policy-making, and operation."[19]

These programs were, in effect, a means of fomenting a revolution in local politics. According to two scholars, Frances Fox Piven and Richard A. Cloward, many of the Great Society programs were formulated to preserve and strengthen the Democratic Party's advantage in the industrialized states holding the largest blocs of electoral college votes.[20] Frustrated that local politicians had repeatedly shown an unwillingness to mobilize the votes of inner-city blacks, federal administrators tried to work directly with organizations and leaders in black communities. The expectation was that blacks would vote Democratic in return.

A multitude of new agencies was established to receive and distribute federal dollars. Of all the community action funds the Office of Economic Opportunity spent by 1968, only 25 percent was given to public agencies. The remainder went to organizations such as universities, churches, civil rights groups, settlement houses, family services agencies, United Way programs, and newly established nonprofit groups.[21] Likewise, only 10 percent of the funds distributed through programs administered by the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare was passed through to state and local governments.[22]

A handful of programs became controversial when political activists associated with them became embroiled in highly publicized fights with mayors and local government officials. In Syracuse, San Francisco, and the state of Mississippi, local administrators of anti-poverty programs led protest actions against mayors, welfare departments, and school boards, demanding the implementation of programs that responded to complaints from the black community. Although such protests were organized in only a few cities, local authorities were upset when they saw federal monies flowing into their jurisdictions to groups and organizations that regularly opposed city hall. Such organizations encouraged complaints about all sorts of things—police brutality, the hiring of teachers, welfare policies, public housing maintenance—the list could be endless.

Despite such controversies, the War on Poverty and the Model Cities programs continued to receive congressional support mainly because the funds were distributed in a large number of states and congressional districts. Politicians of both parties were able to take credit for delivering federal dollars to local constituencies. To broaden the base of support in Congress, the Johnson administration abandoned its original intention to restrict the anti-poverty and Model Cities programs to a few "demonstration" projects. Instead, the federal funds were spread as thinly as thought necessary to secure annual program budgets. The deleterious effect of this strategy was that it virtually guaranteed that no program in any city could deliver on its promises.

The Republicans and the New Federalism

When Richard Nixon assumed the presidency in January 1969, it seemed likely that the Great Society programs would be dismantled. Somewhat surprisingly, however, from 1969 through 1976, when Republicans held the presidency, aid to state and local governments actually climbed, from $20 to $59 billion, staying well ahead of inflation.[23] Funding continued to rise because the Democrats controlled Congress and a powerful constellation of interest groups influential with both parties rallied to the cause. Even some Republican congressional representatives, governors, and local officials wanted the flow to continue. After a failed attempt to kill the War on Poverty in 1969, President Nixon bowed to political realities and set a middle course by trying to reform rather than eliminate urban programs.

Nixon signaled his desire to fundamentally change how federal programs were administered. He spoke of the grant programs as producing a "gathering of the reins of power in Washington," which he saw as "a radical departure from the vision of federal–state relations the nation's founders had in mind." He proposed a "New Federalism," meant to restore "a rightful balance between the state capital and the national capital."[24] To reduce federal authority, Nixon wanted to take the decisions about how to spend money out of the hands of federal bureaucrats and give the authority to local governments. A revenue-sharing program was the first major initiative of the New Federalism. Revenue sharing gave local officials extraordinary latitude in deciding how to spend federal money. Because of the lack of detailed federal oversight, revenue-sharing dollars were intermingled with other monies that flowed into the treasuries of the more than 39,000 state, county, township, and municipal governments across the nation. As a consequence, they could not be traced beyond the reports filed with the Treasury Department by local officials.

Revenue-sharing monies constituted a small supplement to the tax revenues of state and local governments. In 1974, the $4.5 billion apportioned among 35,077 local governments accounted for an average of 3.1 percent of their revenues for that year.[25] Financially strapped big cities were under pressure to use revenue-sharing funds just to keep things going; as a consequence, they spent nearly all of their revenue-sharing dollars on day-to-day operations and maintenance.[26] Congressional Democrats complained that the programs ignored the needs of disadvantaged populations, but for Republicans that was the whole point. The program continued at a low level until 1986, when President Reagan killed it.

The Community Development Block Grant (CDBG) program, enacted by Congress in 1974 and signed into law by President Gerald Ford in January 1975, remains today as the only significant survivor of the major urban policies enacted in the pre-Reagan era. It has survived so long because it has been useful to so many people. For local officials, it is a source of much-needed funding. It has enjoyed broad bipartisan support because CDBG funds go to thousands of communities. Unlike for general revenue sharing, cities were required to submit an annual application for CDBG funds even though they were automatically eligible. But the process was quite painless. By the end of the program's first year, HUD Secretary Carla Hills reported that her department had reduced the average review period from two years for the programs that the Community Development Act replaced to 49 days, and that applications averaged 50 pages, compared with an average of 1,400 pages for the old urban renewal applications alone.[27]

In the first few years, a recurring issue was that communities were spending their CDBG money in violation of program guidelines. The original legislation included a requirement that cities give "maximum feasible priority" to low- and moderate-income areas.[28] Communities were often accused of ignoring this requirement, a fact documented by the Department of Housing and Urban Development.[29] That community development funds would be spent in affluent areas was hardly a surprising turn of events because local political elites exerted a controlling voice in the allocation process. In most local communities, poorer residents had little influence. As a result of this circumstance, Little Rock, Arkansas, for example, spent $150,000 of the city's block grant funds to construct a tennis court in an affluent section of town. When questioned about this use of funds, the director of the local Department of Human Resources unpersuasively claimed that "ninety-nine percent of this money is going to low- and moderate-income areas." But he revealingly continued, "You cannot divorce politics from that much money. We remember the needs of the people who vote because they hold us accountable. Poor people don't vote."[30]

President Carter and the Democrats' Last Hurrah

In the four years that he was in office, Democratic president Jimmy Carter attempted to give urban programs some of the attention they had received in the past, but his difficulties showed just how much the contours of national politics had changed since the 1960s. There was good reason for Carter to respond favorably to the older industrial cities. Inner-city voters had remained faithful to the Democrats for decades, and they gave Carter his margin of victory in several states in the 1976 presidential election. Accordingly, the administration tried to develop policies that would shore up support among urban voters. The president persuaded Congress to pass an amendment to the revenue-sharing program that added an "excess unemployment" factor to the distribution formula.[31] Cities with high unemployment levels received all the money. He successfully sought increases in CDBG funding and significantly amended the program in 1978 to help the big cities. Large increases were legislated for Comprehensive Employment and Training Act (CETA) programs, which gave money to local training centers and to local governments to put people to work repairing parks and public facilities. Despite these accomplishments, however, by the time Carter left office he seemed to be abandoning urban policy altogether, a process that would reach its logical conclusion under his Republican successor, Ronald Reagan.

Soon after Carter assumed office in January 1977, his administration began efforts to reward key members of his electoral base. An effort was launched to amend the Community Development Act so that more aid would flow to the older industrial cities. As it happened, the original distribution formula adopted in 1974 discriminated against the worst-off cities of the Northeast and Midwest. The older industrial cities were destined to receive a declining share of CDBG funds over time, whereas fast-growing Sunbelt cities were going to receive more.[32] This was mainly because the formula for distributing the money was partially tied to each city's total population. The older cities would lose funds over time simply because they were rapidly shrinking; by contrast, Sunbelt cities were growing.

The administration initiated efforts to persuade Congress to revise the formula to take into account population *loss* in a city.[33] As soon as the legislation was introduced, a bitter feud broke out between representatives from the Northeast and Midwest and the congressional delegations from southern and western states. Ultimately, the new formula won in a vote that divided along regional, not party, lines: representatives from the East and Midwest voted overwhelmingly in favor, while almost all of those from the South and West voted against. Although the legislation passed the house in May 1977, the battle within Congress showed that in the future, regional divisions were likely to become fundamentally important factors in national politics.

The fight over the block grant program marked a watershed. In the Great Society years, urban programs had emphasized social purposes. By contrast, during the Carter administration, urban programs began to stress a different goal: encouraging private investments in troubled cities and neighborhoods. Because this relied on the dynamics of the private market, it attracted support from local officials in both the North and South, regardless of their partisan affiliation. The first test of this bipartisan strategy came in 1978, when Congress approved the Urban Development Action Grants (UDAG) program. Over the years, UDAG were used to build festival malls such as Union Station in St. Louis and Harborplace in Baltimore; to expand convention centers; to repair historic buildings; to support neighborhood improvements; and to build public infrastructure (such as improved streets, new lighting, landscaping, and fountains) that might employ private investment.

As time went on, it became apparent that the administration was retreating from any emphasis at all on social, as opposed to economic, development goals. On March 28, 1978, President Carter announced, with great fanfare, a comprehensive new urban policy that emphasized private investment. Asserting that "the deterioration of urban life in the United States is one of the most complex and deeply rooted problems of our age," the president declared that "the federal government has the clear duty to lead the effort to reverse that deterioration."[34] The centerpiece of President Carter's proposal was a national development bank, which would be authorized to guarantee loans to businesses in depressed urban and rural areas; in addition, the administration wanted to offer tax credits for businesses hiring ghetto youths, a labor-intensive public works program, and more money for housing rehabilitation. The amount of additional money requested was relatively modest (about $4.4 billion), but this did not deter Carter from promising a "new Partnership involving all levels of government, the private sector and neighborhood and voluntary organizations."[35]

President Carter's ringing call for a comprehensive urban policy raised hopes in city halls, but it quickly turned into an abject political failure. The only major legislative proposal enacted into law was the Targeted Employment Tax Credit. The timing was bad for any new legislative initiative.[36] In 1978, California voters passed Proposition 13, which sharply reduced local property taxes. The gathering strength of a tax revolt across the nation helped shape a mood of fiscal conservatism in Congress and a go-slow approach in the White House.[37] Sensing a change in the political climate, Carter did an about-face in the last two years of his term, turning his attention away from urban policy toward the problems of the national economy and the cost and availability of energy. A sharp decline in manufacturing jobs and the flight of manufacturing abroad became the leading domestic issues of the 1980 presidential campaign.

After Carter's election in 1976, Mayor Kenneth A. Gibson of Newark had spoken for many Democratic mayors when he remarked "we have every reason to believe that this is the beginning of a new relationship between the White House and the nation's mayors."[38] The new relationship, however, proved to be short-lived. Even if Carter had won the 1980 presidential race, it is doubtful whether any significant urban programs would have emerged in a second term.

Republicans and the End of Federal Assistance

In the campaigns of 1980 and 1984, the Republicans virtually wrote off the African American vote. Richard Wirthlin, Ronald Reagan's campaign strategist, advised before the 1980 election that the "Reagan for President 1980 campaign must convert into Reagan votes the disappointment felt by Southern white and rural voters."[39] Reagan won only 10 percent of the black vote in 1980 and slightly less in 1984. In 1984, however, three out of four southern whites supported him. The Reagan White House actively worked to undo civil rights guarantees, slashing the budgets of civil rights enforcement units and slowing or stopping enforcement.[40] The Reagan administration also set out to dismantle federal programs designed to help the cities, and over the course of eight years it largely succeeded.

President Reagan's agenda mapped out a radical new departure in federal policy. Philosophically, Reagan

believed that the federal government should stop helping the cities altogether. Instead, he thought, they, and the people who lived within them, should help themselves. In a press conference held in October 1981, President Reagan suggested the residents of cities where unemployment was high should "vote with their feet" and move to more prosperous areas of the country.[41] His remark ignited an instant political controversy, but, in fact, it was consistent with the recommendations of a presidential commission appointed by his predecessor, Jimmy Carter. In a report issued only a few weeks after Reagan took office, the Presidential Commission on the National Agenda for the Eighties urged that the national government stop helping cities. The commission emphasized that federal policies should be used to promote national economic growth, but these policies should be neutral about where that growth occurred:

> It may be in the best interest of the nation to commit itself to the promotion of locationally neutral economic and social policies rather than spatially sensitive urban policies that either explicitly or inadvertently seek to preserve cities in their historical roles.[42]

Recommending that the federal government let the process of decay in some areas and growth in others take its natural course, the commission noted that cities adapt and change in response to economic and social forces. This process of adaptation, said the commission, should be facilitated, rather than altered, by governmental policy:

> Ultimately, the federal government's concern for national economic vitality should take precedence over the competition for advantage among communities and regions.[43] To attempt to restrict or reverse the processes of change—for whatever noble intentions—is to deny the benefits that the future may hold for us as a nation.[44]

The policies subsequently pursued by the Reagan administration signaled a historic turn. For the first time since urban policy was first enacted in the 1930s, policymakers operated on the assumption that cities were valuable only if they contributed in a positive way to the national economy. Three researchers at the University of Delaware called the new policy direction "a form of Social Darwinism applied to cities."[45] Cities would survive if they could manage to regenerate their local economies. Otherwise, they would be allowed to wither away.

The Reagan administration began to slash federal urban aid, proclaiming "the private market is more efficient than federal program administrators in allocating dollars."[46] Cities were instructed to improve their ability to compete in a struggle for survival in which "state and local governments will find it is in their interests to concentrate on increasing their attractiveness to potential investors, residents, and visitors."[47] The assumption was that free enterprise would provide a bounty of jobs, incomes, and neighborhood renewal, and such local prosperity would make federal programs unnecessary. The CDBG and UDAG programs were spared deep cuts in the 1983 budget, as was revenue sharing. The administration had wanted to reduce these programs too, but the White House heard the pleas of governors and mayors, quite a few of them Republican. Local government representatives came away relieved that the budget cuts were less drastic than they had feared. Only two years later, however, the administration realized its goal of eliminating most urban programs.

Urban programs gave way to a new priority: cutting taxes. On February 18, 1981, President Reagan proposed a massive tax cut to stimulate the economy. The legislation quickly sailed through Congress, and when Reagan signed the Economic Recovery Tax Act on August 13, 1981, he proclaimed "a turnaround of almost a half a century of … excessive growth in government bureaucracy, government spending, government taxing."[48] In its final version, the act reduced individual tax rates by 25 percent over three years and also substantially reduced business tax liability. The revenue losses were huge. In just the first two years, $128 billion was lost to the federal treasury, and by 1987 this figure rose to more than $1 trillion.[49] In combination with massive increases in military spending, the 1981 tax cuts created huge budget deficits.

The Tax Reform Act of 1986 reduced federal revenues even further. Tax rates fell only modestly or not at all for most taxpayers, but they were cut drastically for the rich. In subsequent years, a perception that tax burdens fell unfairly on the middle class helped fuel a tax revolt. George H. W. Bush won the presidency in 1988 partly with the promise, "Read my lips: no new taxes." Within a few months, the administration slashed spending for programs for education, housing, health, and welfare. (It should be pointed out, however, that later in his term President Bush went along with a bill raising some taxes in order to reduce the accumulating federal deficit. By some accounts, this cost him his bid for a second term.)

President Reagan initiated the first reductions of consequence in grants-in-aid expenditures since the 1940s. Broad entitlement programs with middle-class recipients, such as the old-age and survivors' benefits funded through the Social Security Act of 1935, veterans' benefits, and Medicare, were affected only marginally. By contrast, deep cuts and new eligibility restrictions were imposed on public assistance programs for the poor.

Medicaid, which was available through the states to welfare recipients, was subjected to tighter eligibility requirements, but Medicaid outlays soared anyway because of rising medical costs. Enrollment in Aid to Families with Dependent Children (AFDC) fell by half a million. A million people lost food stamps. It became harder to get unemployment benefits; whereas 75 percent of the unemployed received benefits during the recession of 1975, only 45 percent were able to qualify during the 1982–1983 recession.[50]

Several urban programs were also killed off by the end of Reagan's first term, including revenue sharing and federally assisted local public works. The UDAG grants were eliminated in 1986, although a trickle of money continued to flow in the administrative pipeline for several years (the total spending fell from an annual level of between $400 and $500 million for the first 10 years of the program [fiscal years 1978–1987] to $200 million in fiscal 1988 and dried up to a nominal $3 million by fiscal 1994).[51] Other budget cuts also affected the cities. Most subsidies for the construction of public housing were eliminated. Only 10,000 new units a year were authorized after 1983, compared with the 111,600 new or rehabilitated units authorized for 1981.[52]

Despite his opposition to urban programs of almost any kind, President Reagan moved to put his stamp on a "Republican" approach to the cities by proposing legislation meant to stimulate private investment in troubled inner-city neighborhoods. On March 7, 1983, Reagan sent his draft of the Urban Enterprise Zone Act to Congress and asserted that the legislation represented a sharp departure from past policy:

> Enterprise zones are a fresh approach for promoting economic growth in the inner cities. The old approach relied on heavy government subsidies and central planning. A prime example was the model cities program in the 1960s, which concentrated government programs, subsidies and regulations in distressed urban areas. The enterprise zone approach is to remove government barriers, bring individuals to create, produce and earn their own wages and profits.[53]

Although the president claimed that the enterprise zone legislation was a "fresh approach," it was actually built on concepts pioneered by the Carter Administration. Since at least 1974, federal policy had stressed the role of government in subsidizing private investment. In the Reagan years, the enterprise zones idea surfaced from time to time, but it was far down on the president's policy agenda. After George H. W. Bush's election to the presidency in 1988, the idea continued to receive an occasional nudge from the White House, but urban policy of any kind did not surface as a meaningful item on the president's legislative agenda until very late in his term.

The administration of George H. W. Bush was not motivated by its electoral base or its ideology to propose any kind of urban legislation. In the 1988 presidential election, Bush used racial issues to mobilize his base. Republicans ran an attack ad that featured a police photograph of Willie Horton, who had raped a woman in Maryland and stabbed her fiancé while on a weekend pass from a Massachusetts prison. The Democratic candidate, Michael Dukakis, had been the governor of Massachusetts at the time. According to Bush's campaign director, Lee Atwater, the fact that Willie Horton was black was the key element explaining the ad's emotional impact.

In the 1992 election, the Bush campaign refined its racial appeals by resorting to a code language that used attacks on cities as a signifier of race and welfare-state liberalism. In one of the opening salvos of the campaign, Vice President Dan Quayle attacked New York City by saying, "The liberal vision of a happy, productive and content welfare state hasn't even worked on 22 square miles of the most valuable real estate in the world."[54] A later Quayle attack prompted a *New York Post* headline: "City to Dan Quayle: DON'T DIS' US!"[55] An editorial in the *New York Times* called Quayle's attacks an attempt to make New York City "The Willie Horton of 1992."[56]

Despite the administration's rhetoric, late in his term President Bush made some faint gestures in the direction of urban policy. The pressure to do so came after serious rioting broke out in Los Angeles on April 29–May 3, 1992. Measured by the number of deaths (53), injuries (2,383), property damage (over $700 million), and the response required to reestablish order, the Los Angeles riot was the country's worst episode of civil disorder in the twentieth century.[57] Many people thought the riot could be used as an opportunity to call attention to the problems of urban America. Two weeks after the riots, 150,000 people descended on Washington for a Save Our Cities/Save Our Children rally. As the atmosphere of crisis faded, however, urban issues got lost in election-year politics. Democratic candidate Bill Clinton initially blamed the riots on "twelve years of denial and neglect" by presidents Bush and Reagan, but fearing he might be accused of advocating new spending programs, Clinton soon muted his criticisms.[58] On Monday, May 5, Bush's press secretary, Marlin Fitzwater, said the Great Society's programs of the 1960s were to blame for the rioting. Nevertheless, in an attempt to look like he was responding positively, President Bush proposed an emergency aid package. In June, Congress passed $1.3 billion in emergency aid that allocated $500 million for summer jobs, $382 million for loans to businesses damaged or

destroyed in the riot areas, and some flood relief for the city of Chicago.

Through the summer and early fall of 1992, Congress worked on a larger and more permanent urban aid bill. A version was finally approved by the House on October 6 and the Senate on October 8. The legislation would have created 25 urban and 25 rural enterprise zones and financed so-called weed and seed programs that combined enhanced law enforcement with job training and education programs. The bulk of the legislation, however, was made up of an array of items that had nothing to do with cities, including liberalized (tax-free) retirement accounts for upper-income people and a provision for the repeal of luxury taxes on yachts, furs, jewels, and planes (Democrats backed this amendment as enthusiastically as Republicans). It was estimated that of the $30 billion the bill would cost over five years, about $6 billion would be used to help depressed areas in cities.[59] By the time the legislation was passed and sent to the White House for President Bush's signature, the election was over. Bush vetoed it, using the excuse that it was contaminated by pork-barrel amendments.

The CDBG program was the only major urban program to survive the Reagan/Bush years. CDBG spending fell from $4 billion in the 1981 fiscal year to $2.8 billion in fiscal 1990 before rebounding slightly in fiscal 1992, the year the Democrats reclaimed the White House. Under President Clinton, CDBG spending rose modestly to $4.6 billion by the 1996 fiscal year,[60] and to $5.1 billion by Clinton's last budget, the 2001 fiscal year (when adjusted for inflation, however, funding for the program actually stayed even). Under President George W. Bush, the level of funding fell, but the program was not eliminated entirely.[61]

Political Reality and Urban Policy

As a self-styled "new Democrat" who wanted to project an image as a friend of the "forgotten middle class," Bill Clinton could not be expected to place aid to cities or to the poor on the front burner. In the 1992 presidential election, the Clinton campaign decided to concentrate on appealing to the white suburban middle class and to assume that inner-city voters would support him anyway because they had no place else to go. Clinton's electoral strategy succeeded in making him the first Democrat to be elected to two full terms since Franklin D. Roosevelt. Clinton succeeded by winning back many of the white suburban voters who had deserted the party in 1980. Even so, he still lost the overall white vote by a 39 to 41 percent margin. He carried huge pluralities in the cities, coming out of New York City, for example, with almost a million-vote lead. His ability to capture 82 percent of the African American vote was crucial to his victory.

A compelling logic informed Clinton's suburban strategy. By the 1990 census, 48 percent of the nation's population lived in suburbs. Because they tended to turn out for elections at a relatively high rate, it seemed certain they would cast a majority of the national vote in the 1992 election.[62] In addition, large proportions of suburban voters were so-called Reagan Democrats, blue-collar and middle-class voters who had abandoned the party to vote Republican in the three previous presidential elections. They were heavily concentrated in the older suburbs in key states such as New Jersey, Michigan, and California, which could deliver the big blocs of electoral college votes coveted by every presidential candidate. To bring them back to the fold, Clinton wanted to avoid identifying himself with policies that were aimed at cities, and especially at blacks.

In developing his strategy, Clinton followed the advice of a well-known African American sociologist, William Julius Wilson, whose 1987 book, *The Truly Disadvantaged,* warned against race-specific policies. Wilson, who was a friend and adviser of the president, recommended a "hidden agenda" in which inner-city minorities might be helped "by emphasizing programs to which the more advantaged groups of all races and classes can positively relate."[63] In an interview before the election, Wilson praised Clinton's programs for targeting "all low- to moderate-income groups, not just minorities."[64]

Clinton ended up devising what two scholars called a "stealth urban policy" composed of programs that were not specifically targeted at cities but would be beneficial to them.[65] In their campaign book, *Putting People First,* Bill Clinton and Al Gore advocated policies designed to help the middle class and the disadvantaged equally. Clinton's highly successful campaign bus tours avoided the inner cities and gave the media ample opportunities to photograph the candidate against small town and rural backdrops. After winning the nomination, Clinton did attend a meeting of the United States Conference of Mayors (USCM) and lent his support to a public works initiative. Clinton stressed, however, that the principal goal was to stimulate the economy and that aiding cities would be a secondary effect.

Clinton began his presidency with the intention of rewarding the cities that had voted lopsidedly for him. To accomplish this, he put together a $19.5 billion economic stimulus bill that included $4.4 billion for public works

(mostly in cities), $2.5 billion for community development grants, and $735 million for inner-city schools and jobs. Led by minority leader Bob Dole (R.-Kans.), Senate Republicans filibustered the bill, refusing to let it come up for a vote. Lacking the 60 votes necessary to end the filibuster, the Democrats were forced to back down. Eventually, all that was passed was a very modest bill not targeted at the cities at all, a $4 billion extension of unemployment benefits for the chronically unemployed.[66]

The only significant new urban initiative that the Clinton administration could claim was the Empowerment Zones/Enterprise Communities (EZ/EC) program, which was included as Title XIII of the Omnibus Budget Reconciliation Act of 1993. Republicans and even many conservatives had supported the enterprise zones idea in the Reagan and Bush years because it was based on a strategy of cutting taxes and regulations in inner cities, with the intention of stimulating investment in depressed neighborhoods. Conservatives liked it because it mirrored the Republicans' national-level policies. The Clinton administration adopted this same free-market approach. To promote investment in EZ/EC zones, tax credits were provided for employers who hired workers who lived in the zone, and businesses located within the zones became eligible for accelerated depreciation on business property and tax-exempt bond financing for new construction. Grant money was also made available to assist zone residents in obtaining education, job training, and child care so that they could work. Ultimately, 31 Empowerment Zones were created across the country, and 74 additional distressed areas (33 in rural areas) also won grants, but these were small in comparison to the full-fledged Empowerment Zones.

Empowerment Zones proved to be the only politically viable urban program left. The mid-term 1994 elections dealt a near deathblow to urban policies. Led by House Speaker Newt Gingrich and his Contract with America (labeled Contract on America by detractors), the Republicans won control of both houses of Congress for the first time in 40 years. The Republicans were hostile to the little that remained of federal urban programs. Speaker Gingrich called for the elimination of the Department of Housing and Urban Development, asserting, "You could abolish HUD tomorrow morning and improve life in most of America." He was blunt about why HUD was being singled out for especially harsh treatment: Its "weak constituency," he said, "makes it a prime candidate for cuts."[67]

In a desperate attempt to stave off disaster, HUD secretary Henry Cisneros proposed to "reinvent" his department in ways pleasing to conservatives. Announced a month and a half after the 1994 election, HUD issued a *Reinvention Blueprint* calling for a consolidation of the department's programs into three flexible block grants that would be administered by cities and states. The plan also proposed converting all public housing aid to vouchers, which would allow recipients to find housing wherever private landlords would accept them. Reinventing HUD became the centerpiece of Clinton's National Urban Policy Report, issued in July 1995.[68]

The decline in public housing and urban programs began well before Clinton came into office, but the fact that a Democrat was now in the White House did not change things very much. In the Reagan and Bush years, HUD experienced the largest cuts of any cabinet-level department in the federal government. HUD budget authority (what Congress authorizes it to spend) fell from 7.5 percent of the total federal budget in 1978 to 1.3 percent by 1990. During the Clinton administration, annual HUD spending recovered slightly, but this only enabled HUD to meet past commitments for housing subsidies. Four programs of special interest to city governments, General Revenue Sharing, Urban Development Action Grants, Local Public Works, and Antirecession Fiscal Assistance, were zeroed out—were eliminated entirely.

The welfare reform bill Clinton signed in August 1996 also hurt the cities. The Personal Responsibility Act of 1996 converted Aid to Families with Dependent Children into a block grant run by the states. In addition to a 64 percent decline in welfare spending from 1990 to 1998, food stamps and community services programs were sharply reduced. Three programs—child nutrition, supplemental (infant) feeding, and housing assistance—increased somewhat only because they were linked to welfare reform efforts. Medicaid costs climbed substantially (by 146 percent), but the big winner was justice assistance, which skyrocketed 1,250 percent in less than a decade. Although some of this money went to cities, the states used most of it to build prisons. Obviously, "crime control" trumped any other social purpose.

The Cities' Fall from Grace

Until the election of Barack Obama to the presidency in November 2008, both political parties had largely abandoned the cities. It was a matter of making a political calculus. In the case of the Republicans, party leaders had long sought to capitalize on white suburbanites' disaffection with the Democratic-sponsored civil rights and

anti-poverty policies of the 1960s. What is more interesting is the way the past friend of the cities, the Democratic Party, has shied away from urban issues. In 1968 the Democrats used the word *city* 23 times in the party platform adopted at their presidential nominating convention. It did not appear even once in the 1988 platform. The substitute term, *hometown America,* signaled a recognition that the suburban vote had grown in importance. In 1992 and 1996, Clinton avoided policies targeted at cities and concentrated his appeals on the suburban middle class. Notably, in the 2000 campaign, Democratic candidate Al Gore mentioned urban sprawl as a significant national issue. By the new century, urban policy no longer referred to central cities but to urban regions.

The near-invisibility of cities in national politics can be explained by a simple fact: today, central-city voters are a very small fraction of the national electorate. The central cities of the 32 largest metropolitan areas reached a high-water mark of 27 percent of the electorate in 1944, but by 1992 they accounted for just 14 percent of the national vote,[69] and 12 percent by the 2000 election. As shown in Figure 8.2, the share of their states' votes cast by their largest cities has fallen steadily for half a century in New York, Illinois, Pennsylvania, Michigan, and Massachusetts.[70] In 1952, New York City voters represented 48 percent of the statewide electorate, but by the 2000 presidential election their proportion of the statewide vote had fallen to 32 percent. Chicago claimed 41 percent of the Illinois presidential vote in 1952 but only 20 percent by 2000.

Cities also lost representation in the U.S. House of Representatives. Between 1963 and 1994, the number of congressional districts with a majority of the population coming from central cities fell from 94 to 84, and over the same period the number of districts with a majority of suburban voters increased from 94 to 214. In 1994, after the Republicans took control of the House, the proportion of leadership positions held by representatives from districts with a sizable proportion of central-city voters fell precipitously, from 30 to 10 percent.[71] Similar trends reduced the influence of the big cities in state governments as well.[72] The number of states with suburban electoral majorities climbed from 3 in 1980 to 14 in 1990, and increased again when seats were reapportioned as a result of the 2000 census.

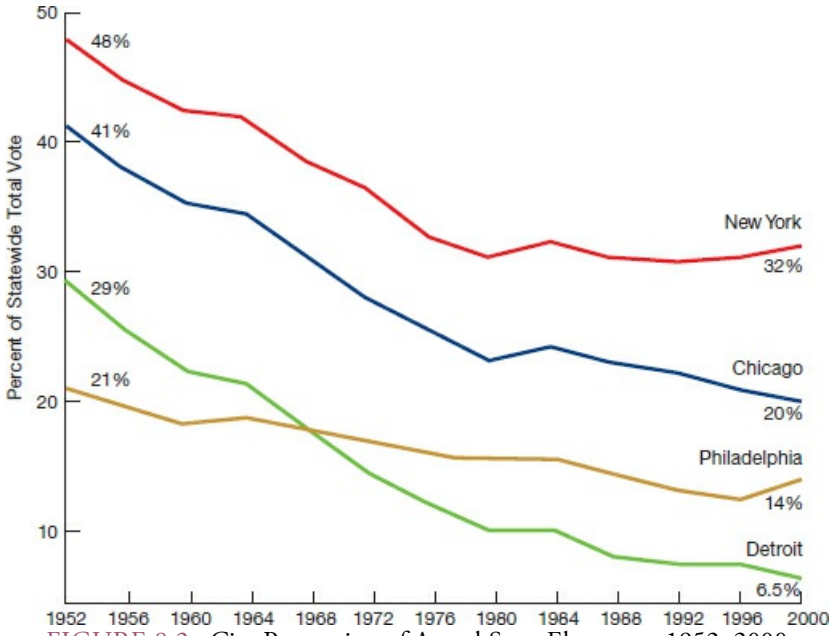


FIGURE 8.2 City Proportion of Actual State Electorate, 1952–2000

Sources: Richard Scammon, *America Votes* (various issues); U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Census of Population and Housing,* various years; and reports of actual city votes from county boards of elections (and newspapers for 1996 election). Data compiled by Richard Sauerzopf. Data from 2000 from Peter Dreier, John Mollenkopf, and Todd Swanstrom, *Place Matters,* 2nd ed. (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 2004), p. 282.

It is generally assumed the suburbs now hold the key to winning national elections. Suburban votes were critical to the presidential victories of presidents Ronald Reagan and George H. W. Bush; Reagan won huge landslides in 1980 and 1984 even though he only carried about a third of the central-city vote. In the 1988 election, suburban voters gave Bush such a comfortable cushion that he could have carried almost all of the northern industrial states without a single vote from the big cities in those states. By contrast, the central-city electorate was an important part of Bill Clinton's winning coalition in 1992 and 1996. In 1992 New York City provided Clinton with 92 percent of his nearly 1-million statewide vote margin, and Clinton lost to Bush in suburban Long Island (Nassau

and Suffolk counties). In 1996, Clinton did even better in the cities, winning 67 percent of the vote in Milwaukee, 74 percent in Boston, 76 percent in St. Louis and New York, and 80 percent in Chicago.[73] In the 2000 presidential election, Al Gore won similar pluralities in the cities, but it was not enough to overcome George W. Bush's near-sweep of southern and less urban, less populated states of the Plains and the West. Gore won the national popular vote by more than 500,000 votes, but Bush was able to win the election by commanding a bare majority of votes in the electoral college.

Even though President Clinton owed a debt to big-city voters for his two election victories, he did not make urban issues a priority. During his presidency, federal spending for the cities continued to fall. Clearly, Clinton felt he could take his urban base for granted, and he was right. This strategy did impose a potential cost on the Democrats, however, because as the federal government turned away from the cities, voter turnout in them went into a steep slide. Indeed, in the past half century, 40 percent of the loss in the proportion of votes cast in the 32 largest cities can be traced to falling turnout and not to shrinking population.[74]

The End of Urban Policy

At first blush it would appear that Barack Obama's election put the voters of central cities and their constituency groups into a more favorable position than they had enjoyed for decades. For the first time since the Carter administration, the president signaled that he might pay attention to urban problems. Only a few weeks after taking office, the Obama administration announced the appointment of Adolfo Carrion, the president of Borough of the Bronx, as its "urban czar," with the charge to coordinate the urban-related programs then on the books. That goal has not been realized. It would be a daunting job merely to identify the programs that influence cities and urban regions. An even harder task would follow. These programs are located in dozens of agencies operating under almost all of the cabinet-level departments. Even with a lot of attention and political muscle from the White House, it is not clear what "coordination" would amount to. Probably for this reason, as time passed little was heard from the urban czar, and there was no prospect that urban issues would be able to compete in a crowded political agenda any time soon.

Still, it should be noted that more than at any time in decades, programs initiated by the Obama administration significantly influenced metropolitan development and improved the fiscal condition of states and cities. The American Recovery and Reinvestment Act, which authorized the expenditure of $787 billion over a 10-year period, was critically important to states and localities. The act allocated $79 billion to provide fiscal assistance to states, an important initiative because the states were imposing deep budget cuts that threatened to make the post-2007 recession worse. In addition, the legislation authorized $144 billion for infrastructure projects, which included $32 billion for transportation projects, $10 billion for rail and mass transit, and $2 billion for airports.[75] School districts were slated to receive $41 billion in grants for construction projects and other activities. The legislation set aside money for a wide array of activities to promote clean energy and conservation. Among other initiatives, the administration also announced a $1 billion program to put 5,500 more police officers on the streets.[76]

Organizations representing urban interests, broadly defined, were invigorated by these programs. On March 14–18, 2009, the National League of Cities convened its Annual Congressional City Conference, a gathering of local officials from across the country. By contrast to previous years, the conference revolved around a wide-ranging agenda featuring discussions of new federal initiatives in many areas, including infrastructure investment, jobs programs, green energy, and transportation. Local officials needed to share information because they found themselves involved in administering a broader variety of new federal programs than they had since the 1960s.

However, all of these programs taken together do not add up to an urban policy, or even a collection of policies with similar aims. Even in the heyday of urban and social welfare programs, when federal administrators of the Great Society showered the cities with money, a coherent urban policy never existed. Programs were created for different reasons and for different purposes, and to satisfy a variety of political needs and influential constituencies. There are still a large number of programs that influence cities, suburbs, and the people that live within them, but hardly any of these actually have "urban" aims. The stimulus package illustrates this fact perfectly: although local governments were deeply affected, the main policy objective was to stimulate the national economy. For a long time "urban" has not been a category that the federal government cares very much about, and that is unlikely to change.

A War on Cities

If cities did not see the much hoped-for improvements under the Obama administration, the Trump administration, after taking office in early 2017, has all but declared war on cities. Cities morphed into the enemy for the urbanite Donald Trump, who is from Queens, and has always identified as a New Yorker. But New York City welcomed him with a lack of electoral support in the November 2016 presidential elections, and with protests upon his first visits as the country's new president.

Already during his campaign, Trump had talked about "inner cities" in a fashion that more resembled the urban crisis of 1970s and 1980s, than cities of the twenty-first century. In his description, "inner cities" were dark dystopian places of crime and prostitution rather than the complex, gentrifying giants of innovation and inequality that they are today.

Trump had already threatened repeatedly during the first six months of 2017 to drastically reduce or cut entirely funding for services for the homeless, housing, and critical social safety net programs in his 2018 budget proposals.[77] This trend was amplified after the administration's clash with urban leaders around the country over undocumented immigrants, and the sanctuary city movement. Furthermore, Trump's tax bill, which was signed into law in December 2017 and will go into effect during the 2018 fiscal year, was an explicit punishment for high-cost urban areas, along the nation's coasts—the economic engines of the country, and the places where Trump saw the greatest electoral losses in 2016.[78] This tax bill is likely to further increase taxes in high-cost areas of the country, as it does not allow for deductions of city- and state income taxes, and is likely to depress housing prices in those places, as the cost of living will increase.[79] Cities can only hope for better days to come—or start moving their limited means and resources towards building resilience against federal government assaults on those urban areas which refuse to go Washington's way.

Endnotes

1 Reported in the *New York Times* (December 1, 1959), p. 27, quoted in Mark I. Gelfand, *A Nation of Cities: The Federal Government and Urban America,* Urban Life in America Series (New York: Oxford University Press, 1975), p. 295. See also John F. Kennedy, "The Great Unspoken Issue," in *Proceedings, American Municipal Congress 1959* (Washington, DC: American Municipal League, n.d.), pp. 23–28; and John F. Kennedy, "The Shame of the States," *New York Times Magazine* (May 18, 1958).

2 Quoted in Theodore H. White, *The Making of the President, 1960* (New York: Atheneum, 1961), p. 206. Nixon's strategy, which White contends was no strategy at all, was a "national" one, in which he committed himself to visit all 50 states; Kennedy, in contrast, used an urban strategy centered on the industrial states with large blocs of electoral votes (see pp. 267–352).

3 John C. Donovan, *The Politics of Poverty,* 2nd ed. (New York: Bobbs-Merrill, Pegasus, 1973), p. 19.

4 Quoted in White, *The Making of the President,* p. 165.

5 Donovan, *The Politics of Poverty,* p. 225.

6 Ibid., p. 104.

7 Nelson W. Polsby and Aaron Wildavsky, *Presidential Elections: Contemporary Strategies of American Electoral Politics,* 7th ed. (New York: Free Press, 1988). The statistics given are for "nonwhite" voters.

8 White, *The Making of the President,* p. 354.

9 For good recent summary accounts, see ibid.; also James A. Morone, *The Democratic Wish: Popular Participation and the Limits of American Government* (New York: Basic Books, 1990), Chapter 6.

10 Quoted in Richard Blumenthal, "The Bureaucracy: Antipoverty and the Community Action Programs," in *American Political Institutions and Public Policy,* ed. Allan P. Sindler (Boston: Little, Brown, 1969), p. 149.

11 *Message of the President to Congress,* reprinted in *Congressional Quarterly Weekly Report* 32, no. 2 (January 11, 1964).

12 *Congress and the Nation, 1945–1964* (Washington, DC: Congressional Quarterly Service, 1965), p. 1379.

13 Refer to Daniel J. Elazar, *The American Partnership: Intergovernmental Cooperation in the Nineteenth Century United States* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1962).

14 Manpower Development and Training Act of 1962, Public Law 87-415, 87th Cong. (1962); emphasis added.

15 Economic Opportunity Act of 1964, Public Law 88-452, 88th Cong. (1964); emphasis added.

16 Demonstration Cities and Metropolitan Development Act of 1966, Public Law 89-754, 89th Cong. (1966); emphasis added.

17 See James L. Sundquist and David W. Davis, *Making Federalism Work: A Study of Program Coordination at the Community Level* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1969), pp. 3–5.

18 Lyndon B. Johnson, "Total Victory over Poverty," Message to Congress, March 15, 1964, reprinted in *The Failure of American Liberalism: After the Great Society,* ed. Marvin E. Gettleman and David Mermelstein (New York: Vintage Books, 1970), p. 181.

19 U.S. Office of Economic Opportunity, *Community Action Program Guide* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1965).

20 Frances Fox Piven and Richard A. Cloward, *Regulating the Poor: The Functions of Public Welfare* (New York: Pantheon, 1971).

21 Ibid., p. 295.

22 U.S. Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations, *Fiscal Balance in the American Federal System,* vol. 1 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1967), p. 169.

23 U.S. Office of Management and Budget, *Special Analyses: Budget of the United States Government: Fiscal Year 1981* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1982), p. 254.

24 Michael D. Reagan, *The New Federalism* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1972), p. 97.
25 U.S. Department of the Treasury, Office of Revenue Sharing, *Reported Uses of General Revenue Sharing Funds, 1974–1975: A Tabulation and Analysis of Data from Actual Use,* Report 5 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1966), p. 5.
26 Ibid., p. 25.
27 "New Directions Cited in First Annual Block Grant Reports," *Housing and Development Reporter* (January 12, 1976), p. 761.
28 Housing and Community Development Act of 1974, sec. 104(a).
29 Reported in *Housing and Development Reporter* (January 10, 1977), p. 684.
30 Interview by Sharon Cribbs (investigator for the Southern Governmental Monitoring Project) with Nathaniel Hill, Director, Department of Human Resources, Little Rock, Arkansas (Summer 1975), quoted in Southern Governmental Monitoring Project, *A Time for Accounting: The Housing and Community Development Act in the South: A Monitoring Report,* ed. Raymond Brown with Ann Coil and Carol Rose (Atlanta, GA: Southern Regional Council, 1976), p. 53.
31 Ann R. Markusen and David Wilmoth, "The Political Economy of National Urban Policy in the U.S.A.: 1976–81," *Canadian Journal of Regional Science* (Summer 1982): 145–163.
32 Rochelle L. Stansfield, "Federalism Report: Government Seeks the Right Formula for Community Development Funds," *National Journal* (February 12, 1977), p. 242.
33 Ann R. Markusen, "The Urban Impact Analysis: A Critical Forecast," in *The Urban Impact of Federal Policies,* ed. Norman Glickman (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1979); see also discussion by Ann R. Markusen, Annalee Saxenian, and Marc A. Weiss, "Who Benefits from Intergovernmental Transfers?" in *Cities Under Stress: The Fiscal Crises of Urban America,* ed. Robert W. Burchell and David Listokin (New Brunswick, NJ: Center for Urban Research, 1981), p. 656; and Stansfield, "Federalism Report."
34 Quoted in Robert Reihold, "President Proposes a Broad New Policy for Urban Recovery," *New York Times* (March 28, 1978).
35 "Excerpts from the President's Message to Congress Outlining His Urban Policy," *New York Times* (March 28, 1978).
36 F. J. James, "President Carter's Comprehensive National Urban Policy: Achievements and Lessons Learned," *Environment and Planning C: Government and Policy* 8 (1990): 34.
37 Markusen and Wilmoth, "The Political Economy of National Urban Policy," p. 15.
38 "Washington Update: Administration Officials, Mayors Have Love Fest," *National Journal* (January 29, 1977), p. 189.
39 Quoted in Theodore H. White, *America in Search of Itself: The Making of the President, 1956–1980* (New York: Harper & Row, 1982), p. 381.
40 D. Lee Bawden and John L. Palmer, "Social Policy: Challenging the Welfare State," in *The Reagan Record,* ed. John L. Palmer and Isabel V. Sawhill (Cambridge, MA: Ballinger, 1992), p. 200.
41 *New York Times* (October 23, 1981), p. 1.
42 President's Commission for a National Agenda for the Eighties, *A National Agenda for the Eighties* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1980), p. 66.
43 Ibid., p. 4.
44 Ibid., p. 66.
45 Timothy K. Barnekov, Daniel Rich, and Robert Warren, "The New Privatism, Federalism, and the Future of Urban Governance: National Urban Policy in the 1980s," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 3, no. 4 (Fall 1981): 3.
46 U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development, *The President's National Urban Policy Report* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1982), pp. 2, 23.
47 Ibid., p. 14.
48 Ibid., p. 135.
49 Ibid., p. 138.
50 Robertson and Judd, *The Development of American Public Policy,* p. 233.
51 U.S. Office of Management and Budget, *Budget of the United States Government, Fiscal Year 1996, Historical Tables* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1996), Table 12.3.
52 Henry J. Aaron and Associates, "Nondefense Programs," in *Setting National Priorities: The 1983 Budget,* ed. Joseph A. Pechman (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1982), p. 119.
53 White House press release, March 7, 1983.
54 Quoted in Robert Pear, "Quayle Criticizes New York as Proof of Welfare's Ills," *New York Times* (February 28, 1992), p. 1.
55 *New York Post* (April 28, 1992), p. 1.
56 "The Willie Horton of 1992," *New York Times* (March 3, 1992), p. 3.
57 James H. Johnson Jr., Cloyzelle K. Jones, Walter C. Farrell Jr., and Melvin L. Oliver, "The Los Angeles Rebellion: A Retrospective View," *Economic Development Quarterly* 6, no. 4 (November 1992): 356–372.
58 Robert Pear, "Clinton, in Attack on President, Ties Riots to 'Neglect,'" *New York Times* (May 6, 1992), p. 1.
59 Clifford Krauss, "Congress Passes Aid to Cities," *New York Times* (June 9, 1992), p. A20.
60 U.S. Office of Management and Budget, *Budget of the United States Government, Fiscal Year 1996, Historical Tables,* Table 12.3.
61 U.S. Office of Management and Budget, *Budget of the United States Government, Fiscal Year 2003* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 2003), Appendix, p. 485.
62 William Schneider, "The Suburban Century Begins," *Atlantic Monthly* (July 1992), pp. 33–44.
63 William Julius Wilson, *The Truly Disadvantaged: The Inner City, the Underclass, and Public Policy* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1987), p. 155.
64 "A Visit with Bill Clinton," *Atlantic Monthly* (October 1992); and William Julius Wilson, "The Right Message," *New York Times* (March 17, 1992).
65 Bernard H. Ross and Myron A. Levine, *Urban Politics: Power in Metropolitan America,* 5th ed. (Itasca, IL: F. E. Peacock, 1996), p. 434.
66 Adam Clymer, "G.O.P. Senators Prevail, Sinking Clinton's Economic Stimulus Bill," *New York Times* (April 22, 1993), p. 1.
67 Quoted in Kenneth J. Cooper, "Gingrich Pledges a Major Package of Spending Cuts Early Next Year," *Washington Post* (December 13, 1994), p. 1.
68 U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development, *Empowerment: A New Covenant with America's Communities* (Rockville, MD: HUD USER, July 1995).
69 Peter F. Nardulli, Jon K. Dalager, and Donald E. Greco, "Voter Turnout in U.S. Presidential Elections: An Historical View and Some

Speculation," *PS: Political Science and Politics* (September 1996): 484.

70 Calculations are from Richard Sauerzopf and Todd Swanstrom, "The Urban Electorate in Presidential Elections, 1920–1992: Challenging the Conventional Wisdom," paper delivered at the annual meeting of the Urban Affairs Association (Indianapolis, April 22–25, 1993). Updated by authors.

71 Hal Wolman and Lisa Marckini, "Changes in Central City Representation and Influence in Congress," paper prepared for delivery at the annual meeting of the Urban Affairs Association, Toronto, Canada, April 17, 1997. See also Demetrios Caraley, "Washington Abandons the Cities," *Political Science Quarterly* 107, no. 1 (1992): 20.

72 Margaret Weir, "Central Cities' Loss of Power in State Politics," *Cityscape: A Journal of Policy Development and Research* 2, no. 2 (May 1996): 23–40.

73 From CNN.com, www.cnn.com/allpolitics/1996/

74 Nardulli, Dalager, and Greco, "Voter Turnout in U.S. Presidential Elections," p. 484.

75 "Stimulus Package Unveiled," *Wall Street Journal,* http://online.wsj.com/article/SB123202946622485595.html

76 National League of Cities, "NLC Applauds Announcement of COPS Hiring Recovery Program," www.nlc.org/documents/Utility%20Navigation/News%20Center/NCW/2009/NCW032309.pdf

77 Mary K. Cunningham, "The Cost of Homelessness Will Spike if Congress Adopts Trump's 2018 Budget Proposal," *The Urban Wire: The Urban Institute* (June 6, 2017). Accessed online: www.urban.org/urban-wire/cost-homelessness-will-spike-if-congress-adopts-trumps-2018-budget-proposal

78 Shane Goldmacher, Maggie Haberman, and Kate Kelly, "On Tax Bill, It's Trump vs. His Hometown," *New York Times* (December 7, 2017). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2017/12/07/nyregion/tax-bill-republican-trump-new-york.html

79 Ibid.

CHAPTER 9

The Rise of the Sunbelt

A Historic Shift

Over the past half century, regional population shifts have brought radical changes to the nation's politics, economics, and culture. Historically, the center of gravity for the nation's politics had been located in the big industrial states and cities of the Northeast and the heartland. Because of its continued reliance on an agricultural economy, the South remained marginalized. Democratic politicians from the southern states could influence national politics only by voting as a bloc in the House and Senate and by maintaining a tenuous alliance with northern Democrats. Most Northerners regarded southern culture as a curious relic of a faded past. But at least its participation in the national party system allowed the South to maintain a presence in national politics. By contrast, until mid-century the Southwest was almost invisible. Its population, small and dispersed was, still defined largely by its frontier legacy. Except for Los Angeles, as late as the middle of the twentieth century there were no other cities of significant size in the vast region stretching from New Mexico to the southern California coast. Over 1.5 million people lived in Los Angeles in 1940, compared to San Diego, with its population of 203,000, Phoenix, at 65,000, and tiny Las Vegas, with just 8,500 residents. But over the next few decades, population growth would be so rapid in cities of the South and the Southwest that these two regions would become fused into a vast region that became known as the Sunbelt.

This historic redistribution of national population irreversibly changed the contours of national politics. The rise of the Sunbelt brought about a conservative shift in American politics. Beginning in the 1950s, business corporations began to move to southern and western states to escape higher labor costs in the industrial North and to take advantage of a vast pool of low-wage, non-unionized labor. Twelve of 15 Sunbelt states have "right-to-work" laws that allow employers to hire workers in a plant even if they refuse to join the plant's union. By contrast, two of the 14 states in the old industrial belt stretching from the Midwest and up through New England have a right-to-work law. These laws have discouraged unionization and kept wages lower than states where unions are stronger.[1] In the Sunbelt these policies have reflected a political culture that is highly individualistic and generally hostile to governmental action, unless that action is geared toward helping business, supporting military bases, or financing water and other federal projects that promote economic development. Due in part to the rising influence of Sunbelt politicians in both parties who represented such values, the nation's political culture began to move rightward in the second half of the twentieth century, and in many respects the Sunbelt became the driving force in the nation's politics.

OUTTAKE

The Electoral College Favors the Sunbelt

The term *Sunbelt* was popularized in the mid-1970s, and it quickly became almost indispensable in everyday discourse about national development and politics. Even though the geographic boundaries of the Sunbelt were rather vague in most people's minds, the term generally conveyed a positive image of a region of the country that was prosperous and growing: "When a person hears the term on radio or on television, or reads it in a magazine or book, or sees it in the telephone book or on a firm's letterhead, it is likely to conjure up an image of growing cities and booming economies in Southern or Southwestern cities with pleasant climates." It would be possible to regard the term as merely a "rhetorical ruse," as one scholar commented, or a "public relations coup," as the president of a corporation helping other companies move to the Sunbelt claimed, were it not for the fact that the long-term

population growth in the region has resulted in a fundamental realignment of political power in the nation. Until Barack Obama, every president since John F. Kennedy came from the Sunbelt. Over the past half century, the reapportionment that follows each decennial census has shifted the balance of power in Congress toward the congressional delegations that represent southern and western states. Without doubt, this realignment of power explains the shift toward conservative social policies in recent decades.

Over time, the Sunbelt was able to flex its muscles in Washington because population equals votes. Politicians could scarcely ignore this reality. The Republicans were strongest in the suburbs of urban regions in the West and, after 1964, the South, all of which were booming. Each decennial census was followed by a reapportionment of seats in the House of Representatives, which, together with the two senators from each state, determines the number of electoral college votes each state casts in a presidential election. The Sunbelt states increased the number of their votes in the electoral college every time the country was reapportioned after 1928; over the same period, states in the Midwest and Northeast steadily lost electoral college votes. In 1928, the 15 Sunbelt states were able to cast 146 votes in the electoral college, compared to the 237 cast by electors representing 14 Midwestern and northeastern states. By the 2000 presidential election, the situation was reversed: the Sunbelt states held 222 votes, but by then the 14 northern states could cast only 180 votes in the electoral college balloting. If Al Gore had won the same states but run for the presidency in 1960 instead of 2000, he would have carried the election by 275 to 262 electoral college votes; likewise, John Kerry would have won the presidency in 2004. Barack Obama's victory in 2008 was achieved mainly because he added some border and western states, plus Florida, to the Democratic tally. By 2024, the Sunbelt states will have an estimated eight more electoral votes, making it all the more important to Democratic candidates that their party continues to make inroads there.

Sources: Bradley R. Rice, "Searching for the Sunbelt," in *Searching for the Sunbelt: Historical Perspectives on a Region,* ed. Raymond A. Mohl (Knoxville: University of Tennessee Press, 1990), p. 217: David R. Goldfield, *Cotton Fields and Skyscrapers: Southern City and Region, 1706–1980* (Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1982), p. 192, cited in Rice, "Searching for the Sunbelt," p. 218; Edward M. Burmila, "The Electoral College after Census 2010 and 2020: The Political Impact of Population Growth and Redistribution," *Perspectives on Politics* 7, no. 4 (December 2009): 839.

In the last couple of decades, however, the politics of the Sunbelt has been changing, so much so that the term is beginning to lose much of its meaning. Blacks have been moving back to the South from northern states, and millions of immigrants have been moving into southern and southwestern metropolitan regions and into smaller towns. The new demographic realities have created a shifting and unpredictable political landscape. Since the 1990s, Hispanics have accounted for almost 40 percent of the population growth in the United States, and Sunbelt cities and suburbs have attracted the largest numbers. In the first decade of this century, the Hispanic population accounted for more than half of the nation's growth. The 2010 census indicated that the U.S. Hispanic population grew 43 percent, from 35.5 million in 2000 to 50.5 million by 2010. This trend is expected to continue. The Census Bureau predicts that the non-Hispanic white population will drop to 50.8 percent of the total population by 2040, and even lower, to 46.3 percent, by 2050.[2]

Twelve of the 18 U.S. cities whose populations changed from a majority of non-Hispanic whites to a majority of minority residents during the 1990s were located in the South and Southwest.[3] In addition, the fast-growing suburbs of Sunbelt cities have attracted large numbers of highly educated professionals, and this group is not as reliably conservative as Sunbelt voters have been in the past.[4] The 2000, 2004, and 2008 presidential elections revealed that Democratic and independent-leaning voters have turned Florida and Arizona from solidly Republican into swing states, and California from a Republican to a solidly Democratic state. With Florida and Virginia peeling away in the presidential vote of 2008, it became apparent that parts of the South may have tipped into the Democratic-leaning column. The Sunbelt appears to be breaking apart as a regional political force. Despite the fact that the 2016 elections turned the South almost solidly red again, and marked the breakdown of the "blue wall" of the Midwestern states, Michigan, Wisconsin, and Iowa, which had traditionally gone for the Democrats, in addition to Colorado and Nevada, Virginia and New Mexico still emerged as solid blue states, continuing the 2008 trend and indicating that change is on the way in the Sunbelt.

If the ongoing sea change in national electoral alignments ultimately favors the Democratic Party, there is likely to be increasing support for an active national presence in health care, urban transportation and infrastructure, and other initiatives that people think of as "liberal." As in the past, changes in the regional balance of power will be of great consequence.

The Concept of the Sunbelt

Kevin Phillips, the chief political analyst for the 1968 Republican presidential campaign, is generally credited for coining the term *Sunbelt.* In his book *The Emerging Republican Majority,* published in 1969, Phillips asserted that the United States was going through a historic electoral realignment that was transforming the Republican Party into the nation's majority party. The basis of this national political realignment, he said, was the movement of millions of Americans out of the old industrial cities of the North to the suburbs and to the South and West. Phillips sometimes lumped the South and the West into an area he called the Sunbelt, although he never actually defined its boundaries; indeed, of the 47 maps in his book, none portrays such a region.[5]

Phillips' prediction that regionalism would increasingly influence the direction of national politics turned out to be correct. In 1973, an embargo on the sale of oil imposed by the Arab oil-producing nations drove the world price of oil sharply upward. The economies of oil-producing states such as Texas, Louisiana, Oklahoma, and Colorado boomed, and new jobs were created throughout the southern and western states. At the same time, energy-dependent industries and consumers in the northern states were hit hard. In 1974 and 1975, northern states went through an economic depression that saw hundreds of thousands of layoffs in industrial jobs. By the spring of 1975, New York City was facing bankruptcy and had to ask the federal government for loan guarantees. President Gerald Ford initially refused to help.[6] Congressional legislative battles began to divide along regional lines, pitting a prosperous South and West against an economically troubled North.

In this atmosphere, Kirkpatrick Sale's book *Power Shift,* published in 1975, quickly became a national bestseller.[7] Sale wrote that the states of the South and West—a region he called the Southern Rim—were gaining national political power at the expense of the older industrial states. Trying to find a way to report on the political issues raised by the new regional antagonisms, the media revived Phillips' notion of the Sunbelt, and the term soon came into common use. In February 1976, the *New York Times* published a five-part series documenting the demographic and political trends favoring the Sunbelt. In May, *Business Week* devoted its feature article to "The Second War between the States."[8] The regional war became one of the hot topics helping sell newspapers and magazines in 1976 and 1977.

Although the concept of the Sunbelt quickly became part of the everyday language of Americans (the term has been included in dictionaries since the late 1970s), the precise boundaries of the region were hard to pin down. In a letter to a scholar researching the politics of the Sunbelt, Kevin Phillips defined it as the "territory stretching from the eastern Carolina lowlands down around (and excluding) Appalachia, picking up only the Greater Memphis area of Tennessee, omitting the Ozarks and moving west to Oklahoma, thence virtually due west," possibly also including Colorado.[9] It is understandable that Phillips would want to draw his boundaries to exclude pockets of poverty in the Border States, but his description was extremely imprecise. Sale's definition, displayed in Figure 9.1, encompassed the entire portion of the United States below the 37th parallel, extending across the country from North Carolina to the West Coast, including southern California and part of southern Nevada.[10] (For statistical purposes, we include all of California and Nevada in our discussion.) Thus, Sale's map put 15 states in the Sunbelt. The 14 states of the Northeast and the upper Midwest were lumped together into a region that for a time was called the *Frostbelt,* a term that has since pretty much disappeared from the national political discourse.

Right from the beginning, a significant number of scholars considered the concept of the Sunbelt to be suspect. For one thing, the vast region encompassed by Sale's definition was far from uniformly prosperous. The most rapid economic and population growth was occurring in Florida, parts of Texas, Arizona, southern Nevada, and southern California. Rural areas all across the Sunbelt and many urban areas of the South remained untouched by the prosperity that was proclaimed as the Sunbelt's principal defining feature, a fact that led two scholars to note that the Sunbelt had "collapsed into only a few 'sunspots.'"[11]

A second problem with the Sunbelt concept was that it assumed the South and the Southwest were similar enough to be lumped together under a single label. Until its image was burnished by its rhetorical association with the prosperous Sunbelt, the South was often thought of as a backward, poverty-ridden, violent region with a peculiar caste system. Most political studies of the South focused on issues of race, the enduring effects of the Civil War and Reconstruction, and the dominance of a single, authoritarian party (until the 1960s, the Republican Party rarely ran candidates in most southern states)—the elements making up a conservative political culture that had changed little since the Civil War. The main industries that had located in the South were those associated with low-wage labor. In the 1930s, Franklin Roosevelt and the New Deal administrators looked at federal programs as a way to bring economic development to this backward region.[12]

FIGURE 9.1 The American Sunbelt and Frostbelt

Source: Adapted from Richard M. Bernard and Bradley R. Rice, eds., *Sunbelt Cities: Politics and Growth Since World War II* (Austin: University of Texas Press, 1985), p. 7.

The image of the West, by contrast, tended to be "urban, opulent, energetic, mobile, and individualistic, a region of economic growth and openness to continual change which matched America's self-image."[13] If the image of perpetual sunshine gave the Sunbelt its name, then certainly this image fit the West better than the South. Because Los Angeles was the home of the movie and television industries, America's popular culture became increasingly identified with western images. Los Angeles served as a vision of America's future, with its sprawling suburbs, freeways, shopping centers, and even its smog.

Some observers argued that the idea of the Sunbelt was overplayed. Nicholas Lemann, who edited the *Texas Monthly* in the 1980s, observed that "millions of people were living in the Sunbelt without one of them realizing it. They thought of themselves as Southerners or Texans, or Los Angelenos."[14] The concept of the Sunbelt was regarded with suspicion not only because there were so many differences within it but also because all regions of the United States seemed to be becoming more alike. The industrial belt was becoming less industrial, urban populations were spreading out into suburbs in all parts of the country, and a media-based national culture was replacing regional cultural differences. "Just try to find a town anywhere in the United States without a McDonald's or a television happy-news format featuring an anchorperson with an unidentifiable accent."[15]

Despite the shortcomings of the Sunbelt/Frostbelt dichotomy, it remains useful as a starting point for understanding the regional demographic movements of the past half century, and how the these population shifts have contributed to the conservative turn in American national politics. The move away from urban and social welfare policies has occurred both because people moved out of the central cities and because large numbers of people left the old industrial heartland. For a variety of reasons, both the South and the Southwest have produced a political culture that is suspicious of government. For a brief time it seemed that the 2008 presidential election may have signaled a decisive change in direction, but the Republican gains in the congressional elections of 2010 made that very doubtful, though it still appears that population shifts have moved the region into political uproar. As of late 2017, with the election of a Democratic senator in Alabama for the first time in 25 years, and a tumultuous midterm election coming up in 2018, the jury on political shifts in the Sunbelt is still out.

Regional Shifts

For the past half century, population and economic activities in the United States have been moving away from older urban areas. This population movement contrasts sharply with a long-standing pattern of national growth. Since the early years of the nineteenth century, the industrial cities had acted as magnets, drawing millions of immigrants from abroad and luring a steady stream of people from the countryside. The industrial cities were the engines of the nation's economy, and population movements reflected this fact. In 1950, 65 percent of the nation's metropolitan population lived in or near the industrial belt that reached from Boston and New York in the Northeast across to the Great Lakes and down to St. Louis.[16] More than two-thirds of the manufacturing jobs and 10 of the nation's 14 urban areas of more than a million people were stretched across this industrial zone. Over the next half century, however, a decisive shift in the regional distribution of population occurred.

In the five decades between 1940 and 1990, the population of the 15 Sunbelt states increased by 163 percent

(to 103,868,000), compared to a population gain in the 14 Frostbelt states of 48 percent (to 92,818,000).[17] Over this half century, the fastest-growing states were Nevada (+50 percent), Arizona (+35 percent), Florida (+33 percent), and California (+26 percent). The only Frostbelt state to show a significant gain was New Hampshire (+20.5 percent), which grew because it was attracting commuters from elsewhere in the Northeast urban corridor.[18] As shown in Figure 9.2, these trends continued into the twenty-first century. Every state with a growth rate faster than 13.2 percent for the decade (the national average) was located in the West or in the Sunbelt, with the addition of Virginia. Three of the states that gained more than 25 percent in population—Colorado, Utah, and Idaho—were located in the West, as were two other rapidly growing states, Oregon and Washington.

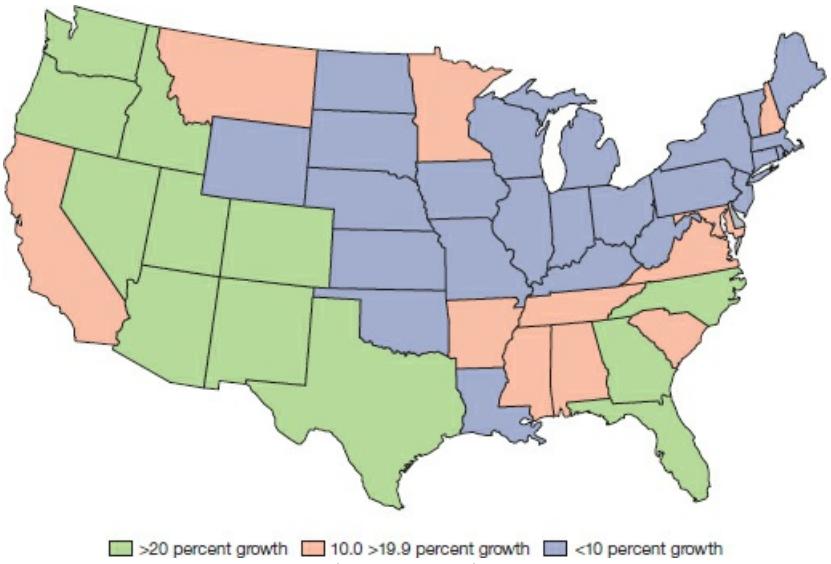


FIGURE 9.2 Population Growth in States, 1990–2000

Source: U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 2001* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 2001), p. 7.

Most metropolitan areas of the Sunbelt expanded so quickly after World War II that it was difficult to build infrastructure fast enough. Table 9.1 compares the growth rates for seven Sunbelt metropolitan areas with population change in six Frostbelt urban regions from 1950 to 2000. All seven of the Sunbelt metropolitan areas boomed in the half century from 1950 to 2000, in many cases growing by more than 40 percent per decade. Phoenix had a population of 107,000 in 1950 but morphed into a metropolitan region of more than 3 million people in half a century. Las Vegas was transformed from a dusty, seedy gambling town of 24,000 in 1950 to a major metropolis (and entertainment city) of 1.4 million by 2000. Several smaller metropolitan areas in the Sunbelt grew even faster than the larger urban areas. For example, Fort Myers, Cape Coral, Ocala, Sarasota, and Naples (all in Florida) attracted large numbers of retirees. Other smaller cities in the Sunbelt and the West, such as Austin, Texas; San Diego and San Jose, California; Boise, Idaho; and Provo, Utah, thrived because of an influx of high-tech industries.

TABLE 9.1 Population Growth of Selected Metropolitan Areas, 1950–2000

Metropolitan Area (Ranked by % Growth in 1970s)	Percentage Increase in Population					
	1950–1960	1960–1970	1970–1980	1980–1990	1990–2000	2000–2008
Sunbelt and West						
Denver–Boulder	52%	32%	31%	44%	32%	15%
Houston	52	40	45	21	25	21.5
Las Vegas	123	115	69	61	85.5	35.6
Los Angeles– Long Beach	45.5	16	6	18.5	10	4.1
Phoenix	100	46	55	40	45	31.7
San Diego	85.5	32	37	34	12.6	6.7
Frostbelt						
Boston	7.5%	6%	–5%	6.5%	6%	3%
Chicago	20	12	2	0.2	11	5.2
Detroit	28	12	–2	–2	5	–0.6
New York City	12	8	–4.5	3	9	3.7
Pittsburgh	9	20	–5	–7	–1.5	–3.3
St. Louis	20	12	–2	3	4.6	4.4

Sources: U.S. Bureau of the Census, 1970 Census of Population, vol. 1, Characteristics of the Population, pt. A (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1973), p. 171, Table 32; U.S. Bureau of the Census, 1980 Census of Population, Supplementary Reports, Standard Metropolitan Statistical Areas and Standard Consolidated Statistical Areas (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1981), p. 3, Table 1; U.S. Bureau of the Census, State and Metropolitan Area Data Book: 1991 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1991), Table A; U.S. Bureau of the Census, Standard Metropolitan Area Data Book: 1997–98 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1999), pp. 60–65, Table B-1; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States: 2010* (129th ed.) (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office), Table 21: 50 Largest Metropolitan Statistical Areas in 2008—Components of Population Change: 2000 to 2008.

Meanwhile, the six Frostbelt metropolitan areas listed in Table 9.1 went in exactly the opposite direction. Until the late 1960s, the Chicago, Detroit, and St. Louis regions continued to prosper as industrial centers even though their central cities were losing populations. But the bottom fell out during the deindustrialization of the 1970s and 1980s. Modest gains in the 1950s and 1960s were followed by stagnation or population loss; indeed, five of the six Frostbelt metropolitan areas shown in Table 9.1 lost population in the 1970s. Manufacturing firms picked up and moved abroad or to cheaper sites in the South or Southwest, where labor unions were weak. Older metropolitan areas were able to reverse this trend in late century only by attracting the same kinds of service or high-tech firms that had already brought growth to the Sunbelt.

The old manufacturing cities fared much worse than their regions. In the 1970s, as deindustrialization reached its zenith, St. Louis lost 27 percent of its population but the St. Louis region shrunk just 2 percent because the suburbs were growing significantly, by more than 6 percent. All of the cities in the industrial belt were going through a similar process; for example, in the 1970s Chicago's population fell by 11 percent, Detroit's by 20.5 percent, and Cleveland's by 24 percent, but the suburbs in each of these urban regions continued to grow (although slowly). Most of these cities hemorrhaged population in the 1980s, but in most cases the rate of loss slowed in the last decade of the century. In fact, during the 1990s New York, Chicago, and a few other older industrial cities held their own or even added population for the first time in 20 or 30 years.

By contrast, in the Sunbelt most central cities grew in step with their metropolitan regions. One reason Sunbelt cities did well was that many of them were newer and less built-up than the cities in the North. Another is that they were not usually encircled by suburbs. David Rusk has categorized cities according to their degree of "elasticity"—their ability to add population either by filling in undeveloped land or by annexing new territory. Of the 52 metropolitan areas of more than 200,000 population that Rusk rated as having "high" or "hyper" elasticity in 1990, 49 were located in the Sunbelt. No Frostbelt city made the list.[19]

Older cities have found it impossible to change their boundaries, mostly because they have long been surrounded by independent suburban municipalities able to resist annexation or merger. Even in the Sunbelt, the older cities fit this profile; Atlanta, for instance, lost 14 percent of its population during the 1970s, but in the same decade its suburbs grew by 46 percent. Likewise, Denver's population fell (by 4.5 percent) even while its suburbs were growing (by 60 percent). The newer Sunbelt cities were able to annex large tracts of land before they became land-locked. Oklahoma City, for example, spread out from about 51 square miles in 1950 to 636 square miles by 1970, and Phoenix expanded from just 17 square miles in 1950 to 469 square miles by 1996.[20] Sunbelt cities gobbled up a substantial amount of surrounding land in the 1950s and 1960s, and at least some additional territory after that.[21]Although some of these Sunbelt cities were hit hard by the foreclosure crisis that began in

2008,[22] any notion that the region had fallen into decline turned out to be mistaken. Research supports the notion that the Sunbelt will maintain a faster rate of growth than the rest of the nation for some time.[23]

Why the Sunbelt Prospered

The movement of people to the Sunbelt has been matched by a redistribution of the nation's economic resources. In recent decades, job growth has heavily favored the South and West. Table 9.2 shows that in 1960, 58 percent of the nation's workforce was located in the Northeast and Midwest. The West still lagged behind, with only 15 percent of U.S. employment. By the 1980s, the share of jobs located in the Northeast and Midwest had slipped to 49 percent, and to 46 percent by 2000. Meanwhile, big gains were registered in the South and West, which together accounted for 56 percent of U.S. employment by 2000 (21 percent in the West). More recent census data seem to underline this trend. According to the 2015 census, the 10 fastest growing states were all in the South and West, with the exception of the District of Columbia, as shown in Table 9.3.

The reasons for the Sunbelt's economic success are many and complex. Infrastructural and technological factors played a major role.[24] The urban infrastructure of the older Frostbelt cities was geared to the high-density patterns of production of the industrial period. Sunbelt cities had an advantage because they could start afresh to build infrastructure suited to the postindustrial economy. The building of the interstate highways network provided the foundation for a national economy that favored the decentralization of economic activities. The adoption of air conditioning made the Sunbelt more attractive both for living and for white-collar work.[25] The materials used in manufacturing shifted from heavy metals such as iron and steel to lighter materials such as aluminum and plastic, and the newer manufacturing plants could be located on relatively cheap, easily available land in Sunbelt metropolitan areas. Most important, the source of energy for industry and for homes shifted from Frostbelt coal to Sunbelt oil. Oil jumped from meeting less than half of the nation's energy needs in 1940 to almost 78 percent by 1975. By the mid-1970s, coal supplied no more than 17 percent of the nation's energy.[26]

TABLE 9.2 Comparison of Regional[a] Shares of U.S. Employment and Shares of U.S. Job Growth, 1960–2000 (in Percentages)

	Share of U.S. Employment			Share of Job Growth	
	1960	1980	2000	1960–1980	1980–2000
Northeast	29%	23%	21%	13.5%	12%
Midwest	29	26	25	21.5	20
South	27	32	34	39.5	42
West	15	19	20	25.5	26

Note: [a] Regions defined according to Bureau of the Census definition; North Central changed to Midwest in 1989.
Sources: Adapted from U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1973* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1973), using 1960 and 1970 census data, p. 227; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *U.S. Statistical Abstract of the United States, 2001* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 2001), using 1990 and 2000 census data; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1996* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1996), using 1980 census data.

TABLE 9.3 The 10 Fastest Growing States, July 2014–July 2015

Rank	State	Percent Change
1	North Dakota	2.28
2	Colorado	1.89
3	District of Columbia	1.88
4	Nevada	1.85
5	Florida	1.84

6	Texas	1.82
7	Utah	1.75
8	Washington	1.52
9	Arizona	1.48
10	Oregon	1.45

Source: United States Census Bureau (2015) Press Release: "North Carolina Becomes Ninth State with 10 Million or More People, Census Bureau Reports." December 22. Accessed online: www.census.gov/newsroom/press-releases/2015/cb15-215.html

Changing demographics and lifestyles also favored the Sunbelt. More leisure time and a greater emphasis on recreation lured people to warmer climates. After World War II, tourism accounted for a larger share of the national economy. Major recreational and tourist facilities developed in Florida and California (homes of Disney theme parks) and in New Orleans and Las Vegas. Entire communities, such as Lake Havasu, Arizona, arose to serve the needs of an expanding class of retired people who preferred Sunbelt lifestyles and the lower cost of living found there.

However, demographic and economic trends do not explain why the Sunbelt prospered as much as it did. Federal spending exerted a powerful impact in stimulating local economies. In particular, the Pentagon budget induced military-dependent sectors to migrate to the Sunbelt. No other major industrialized nation used military spending so forcefully to relocate economic activity from one region to another.[27] The Great Depression ended in the United States when government spending for military procurement climbed steeply in 1940 in response to the devastating success of the Nazi blitzkrieg in Europe. As military contracting soared, the War Production Board made a policy decision to spread out defense installations and productive capacity to make bombing and a potential invasion more difficult. The South and West possessed the advantage of favorable weather for aircraft training facilities. Overall, an estimated 60 percent of the $74 billion wartime expenditures went into the 15 states of the Sunbelt at a time when those states contained less than 40 percent of the national population.[28]

The metropolitan areas of the South experienced the most rapid growth of any region. World War II jumpstarted the urbanization of the South and West by pulling thousands of workers into the cities in search of relatively well-paid industrial employment. In the three years between 1940 and 1943 the population of the metropolitan counties of the South grew by 4 percent and those of the West by 3 percent; by contrast, the metropolitan counties in the upper Midwest increased by only 2 percent and the northeastern metropolitan areas contracted by 0.6 percent.[29] Some cities, most of them located in the South and West, became overnight boomtowns. Between April 1940 and October 1941, 150,000 people poured into Los Angeles, increasing the city's population by a third. During the war years, San Diego's population shot up by 27 percent and Wichita, Kansas, by 20 percent.[30] The wartime boom taxed the housing stock, infrastructure, and public services in these cities to the breaking point.

Near the end of World War II, war production began to shift from heavy industry (tanks and guns) to high-tech weaponry such as missiles, jet airplanes, and sophisticated communications systems. All through the Cold War the nation's military spending remained high, and most of it went to the Sunbelt. One study showed a "definite regional shift" from the Northeast to the Sunbelt between 1950 and 1976 in the awarding of defense contracts.[31] During that period, the total number of defense employees in the nation increased by more than 35 percent; even so, their numbers fell by 3 percent in the 16 northeastern and upper Midwestern states.[32] By 1975, the defense budget contributed only 4 percent to personal incomes in the Northeast, compared to 9 percent in the states comprising the Sunbelt.[33]

Defense spending shifted to the Sunbelt not just because the region was an efficient location for some kinds of military production. For a long time, Democratic senators and representatives from the South had a lock on their seats because of uncontested one-party elections. Their long service in Congress gave them control of powerful committees because assignments were made on the basis of seniority. Congressional representatives from the South used their positions as committee chairs to steer defense spending and major infrastructure investments, such as dams and water projects, to their states and districts. Perhaps the best example is Mendell Rivers, who represented Charleston, South Carolina, for 40 years, from 1930 to 1970. As chair of the House Armed Services Committee, Rivers succeeded in getting the federal government to build in his hometown "an Army depot, a Marine Corps air

base, a Marine boot camp, two Navy hospitals, a Navy shipyard, a Navy base, a Navy supply center, a Navy weapons center, a Navy submarine base, a Polaris missile base, two Air Force bases, and a federal housing development."[34] Because senators and representatives from more pluralistic and diverse Frostbelt districts usually served fewer terms in Congress before being defeated for reelection, they were not able to accumulate comparable seniority and congressional clout.[35]

Other federal spending programs also benefited the Sunbelt. Federal subsidies for highway building favored the Sunbelt because the long distances between cities and the larger size of metropolitan areas increased federal expenditures. Federal grants for the construction of sewer and water systems and for dams and water projects were also critically important to Sunbelt development. Some federal spending programs such as public employment programs and social welfare spending were biased toward the older industrial cities, but these did not tend to stimulate sustained economic development. By contrast, federal spending in the Sunbelt created permanent federal payrolls and infrastructure to support whole new industries, such as microelectronics. One of the most important ingredients of economic growth is a skilled labor force. The military actively recruited highly trained white-collar workers, engineers, and scientists to areas near Sunbelt military installations. Writing in the late 1980s, one scholar noted that "Every year the Department of Defense pays a number of companies a large sum of money to move college-educated (often at the public expense) engineers and scientists from the Midwest and other regions to the Southwest."[36]

In addition to direct spending, provisions in the federal tax code also favored the Sunbelt. In 1954, accelerated depreciation allowances deducted from corporate income taxes provided tax breaks for constructing new commercial and industrial structures but not for rehabilitating old buildings. Accelerated depreciation thus speeded up the flow of capital out of older industrial cities to suburban and Sunbelt locations.[37] Between 1954 and 1980, this subsidy was worth $30 billion in reduced taxes to corporations. The investment tax credit, which President Kennedy introduced in 1962, granted a dollar-for-dollar reduction in corporate taxes for investments in new plants and equipment. In this way the federal tax code encouraged companies to abandon older plants in the Frostbelt and build new plants in the Sunbelt. Between 1962 and 1981, this subsidy was worth $90 billion,[38] and in 1982 alone it was worth $20 billion.[39] A study conducted in the early 1980s of nine tax subsidies that promoted the mobility of investment (such as accelerated depreciation allowances on old plant and equipment and allowances for new equipment) found they were worth more than twice the total budget of the U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development.[40]

Regional inequities in federal policy attracted the attention of public officials in the Midwest and Northeast. In June 1976, a group of governors formed the Coalition of Northeast Governors, and in September 1976 congressional representatives from 16 states formed the Northeast-Midwest Economic Advancement Coalition (today called the Northeast Midwest Institute). To counter the influence of the Frostbelt politicians, the Southern Growth Policy Board, which had been formed in 1971, stepped up its lobbying efforts.[41] Regional disparities in federal spending narrowed somewhat between 1975 and 1979,[42] but Ronald Reagan's election in 1980 decisively shifted the momentum the other way.[43] Once in office, Reagan sharply cut programs targeted to older central cities.[44] Between 1980 and 1987, grant programs of special importance to cities, such as mass transit, public housing, social welfare, and job training, were cut by 47 percent.[45] At the same time, his administration increased defense and highway programs that disproportionately benefited the Sunbelt.

The federal budget became a way to redistribute national resources from other regions of the country, in the process rewarding the constituencies that favored Republicans the most. Between 1983 and 1998, the citizens of just two states, New York and New Jersey, paid $500 billion more into the federal treasury than they received back in benefits.[46] In 1997, the citizens of nine southern and Border States paid $45 billion less in federal taxes than they paid into the federal treasury; in the same year, eight northern states paid an $82 billion surplus. Put simply, northern taxpayers subsidized much of the economic prosperity of the Sunbelt.

The Changing Politics of Sunbelt Cities

Since the 1980s, the culture and the politics of Sunbelt cities have been undergoing a sea change. Only half a century ago, the South was an economically backward, generally poor region mired in a racist political tradition. The Southwest was an area of the country heavily dependent on military installations and agriculture, with a politics mainly devoted to securing more federal dollars for water projects and military bases. Today, from Florida to southern California, cities that have been growing rapidly since the 1950s are still on an upward trajectory. The

population increases have been driven by the growth of services and high-tech industries, and the workers drawn to them; retirees; and a huge influx of immigrants, mainly from the Western Hemisphere. The politics of the Sunbelt have changed in step with these historic processes.

Before World War II, most Sunbelt cities were governed by caretaker governments presided over by politicians from long-established, sometimes prominent, families. The leadership structures looked a lot like party machines led by bosses or cliques that had been around for a long while, but in other respects they bore little resemblance to the turn-of-the-century machines of the northern cities. Working-class voters of the South were manipulated by scare-mongering about race and the alleged influence of outsiders. The political leadership of these cities wanted, above all, to protect local culture against change. Such organizations governed Tampa, Florida; San Antonio, Texas; and many other cities until well after World War II. New Orleans was run by a longtime machine, the Regular Democratic Organization, until de Lesseps S. Morrison was elected mayor in 1946.[47]

These tight-knit political machines were ill prepared for the changes set in motion by the defense buildup during World War II. After the war, a new generation of political activists came onto the scene. In city after city, "G.I. revolts" sprang up in which "bright young candidates marched against corrupt or inept city hall cliques under the banner of progress."[48] They appealed to middle-class voters who had few ties to the existing political establishment. Coalitions of white-collar professionals, business leaders, and growth-oriented city managers and bureaucrats came together to form business-dominated reform governments committed to modernization, new infrastructure, and growth.

This wave of reform transformed the political landscape throughout the Sunbelt, especially in cities of the Southwest. Between 1945 and 1955, San Antonio, Houston, Dallas, Oklahoma City, Albuquerque, Phoenix, and San Jose all adopted significant reforms, usually installing nonpartisan city-manager systems with at-large electoral arrangements.[49] These movements, instigated by such organizations as the Phoenix Charter Government Committee, the Albuquerque Citizens Committee, and San Antonio's Good Government League, were led by middle- and upper-class Anglo professionals and business leaders.

San Antonio produced a typical example of the Sunbelt version of municipal reform. In 1949, A. C. "Jack" White won the mayoralty with the support of good government reformers and the business community. It was not until 1951, however, that reformers put aside their disagreements and voted in a council-manager charter. Subsequently, the Good Government League began endorsing candidates. From 1955 to 1971, the league endorsed or recruited 77 out of San Antonio's 81 city council members. The Good Government League became the functional equivalent of a political party, a "sort of upper-middle-class political machine, officing not in Tammany Hall, but in a savings and loan association, whose electoral wonders are impressive to behold."[50]

The Good Government League succeeded in passing a series of bond referenda to finance infrastructure improvements to facilitate San Antonio's growth; for example, by 1986 the league had built a massive 98-mile freeway system within the city limits. It also sponsored urban renewal clearance and revitalization of the central business district and facilitated the construction of the HemisFair tourism and shopping project on 149 acres southeast of the Alamo. The HemisFair was a classic example of civic boosterism, with local government providing subsidies to a project that the private sector largely planned and operated.[51]

These postwar business-dominated coalitions campaigned for support from white middle-class voters, and minorities were as strictly excluded as they had been in the past. Over the years, whites had used various methods, both legal and extralegal, to discourage African Americans and Latinos from voting. The white primary, which kept blacks from casting ballots in Democratic primary elections, worked as an effective means of keeping blacks completely out of politics. In the southern states, the white primary was tantamount to disenfranchisement because Democratic candidates always ran unopposed in general elections there. In 1944, the U.S. Supreme Court struck down the white primary as a violation of the Fifteenth Amendment of the Constitution.[52]

Other methods continued to be used to dilute the electoral influence of blacks and Latinos. Many cities used at-large election districts to ensure that minority neighborhoods would be outvoted in the citywide totals. The 1965 Voting Rights Act, however, gave federal judges the power to strike down voting systems that systematically reduced minority representation. In 1975, the act was extended to Latinos. Both Houston and Dallas were forced to modify their at-large systems by adopting ward boundaries that would maximize representation for blacks and Latinos. Likewise, Los Angeles was forced to redraw its ward boundaries. Minority voters helped pass new city charters that provided for ward-based representation in San Antonio, Fort Worth, Albuquerque, San Francisco, Atlanta, Richmond, and several other cities.[53]

These measures began opening up political systems all across the Sunbelt, but even without reform the growing populations of African Americans and Latinos would have made political change impossible to resist. By 1990 blacks and Latinos made up a majority of the population in many cities in Florida and in a belt stretching from Texas to California, with Latinos outnumbering blacks about two to one. In Miami, more than 90 percent of the population was minority, compared to 60 percent in Los Angeles, Houston, and San Antonio. Minorities constituted more than 50 percent in most Sunbelt cities with populations of more than 500,000.

Minority populations in the suburbs of Sunbelt metropolitan areas shot upward in the 1990s—by more than 18 percent in the Fort Lauderdale area and by more than 11 percent in the Oakland, Las Vegas, Atlanta, San Jose, Houston, Orange County (California), Miami, and Dallas areas, among others.[54] Within Sunbelt areas, the biggest increases were in the suburbs. As a result of three decades of immigration, by the census of 2000 minorities made up at least 40 percent of the population of the suburbs in 20 metropolitan areas in the Sunbelt. Table 9.4 shows that the urban areas with the highest proportions of minorities in the suburbs are located in the Sunbelt. Latinos accounted for 69 percent of the suburban population in the Los Angeles urban region by 2000, nearly 80 percent of the suburban population in the Miami and Honolulu areas, and 90 percent or more of the suburban populations of El Paso and McAllen, Texas.

This trend appears to be continuing and spreading into the 2010s. One demographic scholar predicted in 2014 that there will be a profound suburban population shift over the next two decades, leaving whites in the minority in suburbs across the country, even in the Northeast and Midwest.[55]

This marks a new trend for the Frostbelt: In the past, fewer minorities lived in the suburbs of Frostbelt regions. In fact, in the middle-sized urban areas in the industrial belt—anchored by such areas as Scranton and Harrisburg, Pennsylvania; Youngstown, Akron, Toledo, and Columbus, Ohio; and Buffalo, Albany, and Rochester, New York—minority suburban populations used to be in the single digits. By 2030, the Urban Institute predicts significant population losses among whites in all regions across the country, making the Sunbelt a trendsetter for the nation as a whole.[56]

The number of African American and Latinos winning public office has kept pace with population change. Nationwide, the number of black elected officials increased from 1,469 in February 1970 to 9,040 in January 2000,[57] and to then 10,500 in 2011.[58] African Americans were elected mayors in some of the largest Sunbelt cities, including Los Angeles, New Orleans, Atlanta, and Birmingham, as well as in suburban and non-metropolitan cities and counties. With about 20,000 Latino immigrants gaining citizenship and the right to vote each year, Hispanic gains have been especially dramatic, with the number of Hispanic public officials increasing from 3,147 in September 1985 to 5,205 in September 2000[59]; by 2008 the number was 5,240.[60] In the 1990s Hispanics were elected mayor in Miami, Denver, San Antonio, and many smaller cities.

TABLE 9.4 Suburban Minority Populations in Metro Areas with Population over 500,000 (Census of 2000)

Rank	Highest Suburban Minority Percentage		Lowest Suburban Minority Percentage	
	Metro Area[a]	Percentage	Metro Area[a]	Percentage
1	McAllen, TX	92%	Scranton, PA	3%
2	El Paso, TX	90	Fort Wayne, IN	4
3	Honolulu, HI	79	Knoxville, TN	5
4	Miami, FL	78.5	Syracuse, NY	5
5	Los Angeles, CA	69	Youngstown, OH	5.5
6	Jersey City, NJ	62.5	Indianapolis, IN	6
7	Albuquerque, NM	56	Akron, OH	6
8	Fresno, CA	55	Milwaukee, WI	6
9	Riverside, CA	53	Buffalo, NY	6
10	Bakersfield, CA	51.5	Albany, NY	6

11	Oakland, CA	48	Allentown, PA	6
12	Ventura, CA	45	Toledo, OH	7

Note: [a]Several of the metropolitan areas list two or more central cities. In this table, they are identified only by the name of the first central city, as listed in alphabetical order by the Census Bureau.
Source: Adapted from William Frey, *Melting Pot Suburbs: A Census 2000 Study of Suburban Diversity* (Washington, DC: Center on Urban and Metropolitan Policy, Brookings Institution Press, June 2001), p. 5, Table 1.

The incorporation of minorities into the political systems of Sunbelt cities has brought significant policy change. Atlanta is a good example. African American mayors have governed Atlanta since 1973. The majority of the city council and of the school board is black, and blacks hold a majority of the key appointed and civil service positions in the city government. Under the city's first African American mayor, Maynard Jackson, the African American proportion of the police department rose from 19 to 35 percent in only four years, and complaints about police brutality fell.[61] The city established 24 neighborhood councils, each with professional staff, so that neighborhoods could influence city planning and development decisions. A preferential program begun under Jackson's first term raised the percentage of minority firms holding city contracts from one-tenth of 1 percent to 35 percent by 1988.[62]

Similar gains have been achieved in Birmingham, Alabama, and New Orleans, which have had African American mayors since 1979 and 1977, respectively. In both cities, political participation by minorities has increased significantly, and community organizations have become active in local politics. In both cities, police brutality, a major concern for blacks, has become less important as a policy issue.[63]

Hispanics have become incorporated into local political structures as well. In Miami, Hispanics have become the most important electoral constituency in the city because they are the largest population group and have become successful economically. In the 1990s, Hispanics succeeded in overturning at-large election systems that had disadvantaged them in Miami and surrounding counties. As a result, they have been able to win public offices at all levels, and Hispanics and African Americans have been well represented on boards and commissions and in public employment.[64] Similarly, African Americans and Hispanics have become powerful forces in the political system of Denver (a city with many Sunbelt characteristics). In 1983, with the election of Frederico Peña, Denver became the first American city without a Hispanic majority to elect a Hispanic mayor (at the time, 18 percent of Denver's population was Latino). After Peña's two terms, Wellington Webb was elected as the city's first black mayor at a time when blacks made up 11 percent of the city's population. Hispanics and blacks have become well represented on the city council and on city boards and commissions, in public employment, and on the civilian police board.[65]

Regional Convergence and National Politics

For a long time, scholars have predicted that the different regions of the nation would become increasingly similar.[66] At least to some degree their predictions have turned out to be accurate. Economic forces have diversified the economies as well as changed the demographic profiles of cities all over the nation. In the Frostbelt, corporate white-collar employment, services, and tourism have become critically important to urban regions and to downtown economies. Frostbelt metropolitan regions are less heavily blue collar and union than in the past, and central cities in the North have been attracting a significant proportion of affluent households. At the same time, many of the characteristics traditionally associated with older industrial cities—rapid mmigration, concentrated poverty, and racial and ethnic conflict—have come to the cities of the Sunbelt. Cities all over the country are now multiracial and multiethnic.

Reflecting this convergence in demographics and politics, over time the public policies of cities have become more alike. Older industrial cities of all sizes have moved aggressively to become more "entrepreneurial" in their pursuit of business investment.[67] Accordingly, many of them have shifted resources away from social services and toward developmental programs that subsidize investment.[68] Large volumes of public money have been devoted to building facilities such as sports stadiums, convention centers, and redevelopment districts.[69] By investing in high-tech and corporate services and developing an infrastructure to support tourism and recreation, Frostbelt cities have become more like the cities of the Sunbelt.

Likewise, regional differences in voting behavior and party identification have become less extreme. In the past,

the Sunbelt favored the Republican Party and pulled the country in a conservative direction. Recent research, however, shows that Democrats are gaining in metropolitan areas in both the North and the South, and in suburbs as well as central cities.[70] This trend is supported, in part, by immigration flows; African Americans, Latinos, and Asians, when combined, are about 75 percent Democratic. White-collar professionals, heavily concentrated in suburbs and in central cities with hightech sectors, made up 21 percent of the electorate in 2000. They tend to be moderate on social issues and to support environmental protection, civil rights, and women's rights, and their numbers are rapidly growing throughout the Sunbelt. Notably, 54 percent of voters in the fastest-growing 50 counties in the nation—nearly all located in the Sunbelt—supported Al Gore in the 2000 election. In 2002 two scholars argued that these trends meant that a "Democratic majority" was emerging in national politics.[71]

Their predictions seemed to come to fruition in the 2008 presidential election. A tier of southern states still went heavily Republican, but the electoral map showed big gains for the Democratic Party almost everywhere else. Four southern, four Midwestern, and three western states supported John McCain by more than 55 percent margins, while California, Nevada, Colorado, New Mexico, and Florida voted as blue states. Republicans made a big comeback in the congressional elections of 2010, but this happened in all regions of the country. Whatever utility the Sunbelt concept had in the past, in 2008 and 2010 it did not seem to explain the election result. Even the 2016 presidential election, which saw massive gains for the Republicans in many states across the nation (especially in the Midwest) which were thought to be securely in Democratic hands, showed that certain changes in Sunbelt voting behavior are solidifying: New Mexico and Nevada seem to be relatively reliable blue states, and much of that is due to immigration.

It would be tempting to interpret the Arizona anti-immigration law signed by Governor Jan Brewer on April 32, 2010, as a step backward to an earlier time in Sunbelt politics. Doubtlessly the law, which requires people to carry immigration papers and empowers police officers to determine immigration status, was motivated by deep resentment against not only illegal immigrants, but against all Hispanics in the state. Indeed, a June 2012 *Huffington Post* article asked: "Is Arizona the worst place in the country to be a Latina?"[72] Texas followed suit in June 2011, when the state Senate passed a bill giving police officers broad powers to question those detained regarding their citizenship status. In fact, 2011 was a record year for antiimmigration legislation. Alabama, Georgia, Indiana, South Carolina and Utah all passed anti-immigration bills modeled on Arizona's 2010 law. Sunbelt states were no exception; from 2010 to 2011, all Sunbelt states passed at least one anti-immigration law, with the average number ranging between three and six laws.[73]

In other places there was a strong reaction to these kinds of measures. On May 13, 2010, the Los Angeles city council passed a resolution banning the expenditure of any city funds for travel to Arizona. The debate over the resolution was highly emotional, with speakers mentioning the Holocaust and the World War II internment of Japanese Americans. From Miami to Los Angeles, cities with large Hispanic populations are sprinkled throughout the Sunbelt. Clearly, the Sunbelt—if there is any longer such a thing—does not speak with one voice, but with many.

In October 2017, in reaction to the Trump administration's crackdown on undocumented immigration, California governor Jerry Brown signed a statewide "sanctuary bill," California Senate Bill 54, into law. The bill took effect in January 2018, and limits the cooperation of any state authority with federal immigration authorities. This means that individuals' immigration statuses will not be investigated by California state authorities or reported to federal immigration authorities, except if they have committed serious crimes.[74,75]

The economic meltdown that began in the fall of 2008 put into question the vaunted economic advantages of the Sunbelt. More than anywhere else, much of the wealth of Sunbelt cities depends upon real estate and construction. These sectors were hit the hardest in the economic downturn, and as a result, the nation's highest home foreclosure rates and declines in housing values occurred in metropolitan areas of the South and Southwest: in the year from October 2007 to October 2008, housing values in Phoenix and Las Vegas fell by a third, compared to a decline in the New York region of 7.5 percent.[76] People in the Sunbelt must have been startled to see that after years of feeling sorry for those left behind in the frozen North, the shoe was on the other foot, at least for a time.

Endnotes

1 Robert Goodman, *The Last Entrepreneurs: America's Regional Wars for Jobs and Dollars* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1979), p. 42.

2 Sudeep Reddy, "Latinos Fuel Growth in Decade," *Wall Street Journal* (March 25, 2011), http://online.wsj.com/article/SB10001424052748704604704576220603247344790.html
3 Alan Berube, "Racial and Ethnic Change in the Nation's Largest Cities," in *Redefining Urban and Suburban America: Evidence from Census 2000,* ed. Bruce Katz and Robert E. Lang (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2003), p. 142.
4 John B. Judis and Ruy Teixeira, *The Emerging Democratic Majority* (New York: Scribner/A Lisa Drew Book, 2002).
5 Kevin P. Phillips, *The Emerging Republican Majority* (New Rochelle, NY: Arlington House, 1969).
6 Prompting the famous headline, "Ford to City: Drop Dead!" *New York Daily News* (October 29, 1975), p. 1.
7 Kirkpatrick Sale, *Power Shift: The Rise of the Southern Rim and Its Challenge to the Eastern Establishment* (New York: Random House, 1975).
8 "The Second War between the States," *Business Week* (May 17, 1976).
9 Quoted in Carl Abbott, *The New Urban America: Growth and Politics in Sunbelt Cities* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1987), p. 6.
10 Sale, *Power Shift,* p. 11.
11 Bernard Weinstein and Harold Gross, interview quoted in Abbott, *The New Urban America,* p. 4.
12 Bruce J. Schulman, *From Cotton Belt to Sunbelt: Federal Policy, Economic Development, and the Transformation of the South, 1938–1980* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1991), Chapter 2.
13 Abbott, *The New Urban America,* p. 22.
14 Quoted in David R. Goldfield and Howard N. Rabinowitz, "The Vanishing Sunbelt," in *Searching for the Sunbelt: Historical Perspectives on a Region,* ed. Raymond A. Mohl (Knoxville: University of Tennessee Press, 1990), p. 224.
15 Ibid., p. 231.
16 William H. Frey, "Metropolitan America: Beyond the Transition," *Population Bulletin* 45, no. 2 (July 1990): 14.
17 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1980,* 101st ed. (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1981), p. 10; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1992,* 112th ed. (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1992), p. 22.
18 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1992,* p. 22.
19 David Rusk, *Cities without Suburbs* (Washington, DC: Woodrow Wilson Center Press, 1993).
20 Timothy Egan, "Urban Sprawl Strains Western States," *New York Times* (December 29, 1996), p. 6.
21 Rusk, *Cities without Suburbs.*
22 Haya El Nasser and Paul Overberg, "Slump Stunts Sun Belt Growth," *USA Today* (July 7, 2010), www.usatoday.com/news/nation/census/2010-06-22-census_N.htm
23 Edward M. Burmila, "The Electoral College after Census 2010 and 2020: The Political Impact of Population Growth and Redistribution," *Perspectives on Politics* 7, no. 4 (December 2009): 839.
24 For a thorough analysis of the growth of the Sunbelt that emphasizes economic and technological factors, see John D. Kasarda, "The Implications of Contemporary Redistribution Trends for National Urban Policy," *Social Science Quarterly* 61, no. 3 (December 1980): 373-400.
25 Raymond Arsenault, "The End of the Long Hot Summer: The Air Conditioner and Southern Culture," in *Searching for the Sunbelt,* ed. Mohl, pp. 176-211.
26 Kirkpatrick Sale, "Six Pillars of the Southern Rim," in *The Fiscal Crisis of American Cities,* ed. Roger E. Alcaly and David Mermelstein (New York: Random House, Vintage Books, 1977), p. 174.
27 Ann R. Markusen, *Regions: The Economics and Politics of Territory* (Totowa, NJ: Rowman and Littlefield, 1987), p. 113.
28 Sale, "Six Pillars of the Southern Rim," p. 170.
29 Phillip J. Funigiello, *The Challenge to Urban Liberalism, Federal–City Relations during World War II* (Knoxville: University of Tennessee Press, 1978), pp. 12-13.
30 Abbott, *The New Urban America,* p. 103.
31 Maureen McBreen, "Regional Trends in Federal Defense Expenditures: 1950–76," in *Selected Essays on Patterns of Regional Change: The Changes, the Federal Role, and the Federal Response,* submitted by Senator Henry Bellmon to the Senate Committee on Appropriations (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1977), p. 527.
32 A report issued by the Northeast-Midwest Economic Advancement Coalition, cited in Edward C. Burks, "16 Northeast and Midwest States Find Inequities in Defense Outlays," *New York Times* (September 22, 1977).
33 Richard S. Morris, *Bum Rap on America's Cities: The Real Causes of Urban Decline* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1978), pp. 148-149.
34 Sale, *Power Shift,* p. 149.
35 Since the early 1970s, both parties have permitted exceptions to the seniority rule, and the power of committee chairs has been reduced.
36 Ann R. Markusen, "Regional Planning and Policy: An Essay on the American Exception," Working Paper no. 9 (Brunswick, NJ: Center for Urban Policy Research, Rutgers University, July 1989).
37 See George Peterson, "Federal Tax Policy and Urban Development," in *Central City Economic Development,* ed. Benjamin Chinitz (Cambridge, MA: Abe Books, 1979), pp. 67-78.
38 Michael I. Luger, "Federal Tax Incentives as Industrial and Urban Policy," in *Sunbelt/Snowbelt: Urban Development and Regional Restructuring,* ed. Larry Sawers and William K. Tabb (New York: Oxford University Press, 1984), pp. 204-205.
39 John F. Witte, "The Growth and Distribution of Tax Expenditures," in *The Distributional Impacts of Public Policies,* ed. Sheldon H. Danziger and Kent E. Portney (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1988), p. 179.
40 Peter Marcuse, "The Targeted Crisis: On the Ideology of the Urban Fiscal Crisis and Its Causes," *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 5, no. 3 (1981): 339.
41 See Markusen, *Regions,* Chapter 8. The Southern Growth Policy Board relinquished its federal monitoring activities to the Congressional Sunbelt Council in January 1981.
42 "Neutral Federal Policies Are Reducing Frostbelt-Sunbelt Spending Imbalances," *National Journal* (February 7, 1981), pp. 233-236.
43 For evidence on the Sunbelt bias in direct federal military expenditures during the Reagan administration, see the data compiled in the *New York Times* (December 20, 1983), cited in Michael Peter Smith, *City, State, and Market: The Political Economy of Urban Society* (New York: Blackwell, 1988), p. 57.
44 Harold Wolman, "The Reagan Urban Policy and Its Impacts," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 21, no. 3 (March 1986): 311-336.

45 Peggy L. Cuciti, "A Nonurban Policy: Recent Public Policy Shifts Affecting Cities," in *The Future of National Urban Policy,* ed. Marshall Kaplan and Franklin James (Durham, NC: Duke University Press, 1990), p. 243.
46 Thad Williamson, David Imroscio, and Gar Alparovitz, *Making a Place for Community: Local Democracy in a Global Era* (New York: Routledge, 2002), p. 56.
47 See Gary Mormino, "Tampa: From Hell Hole to the Good Life," in *Sunbelt Cities: Politics and Growth Since World War II,* ed. Richard M. Bernard and Bradley R. Rice (Austin: University of Texas Press, 1983), pp. 138-161; and Abbott, *The New Urban America.*
48 Abbott, *The New Urban America,* p. 247.
49 Amy Bridges, "Politics and Growth in Sunbelt Cities," in *Searching for the Sunbelt,* ed. Mohl, p. 2.
50 Robert L. Lineberry, *Equality and Urban Policy: The Distribution of Municipal Public Services* (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1977), pp. 55-56, quoting Abbott, *The New Urban America,* p. 139.
51 Our account of San Antonio's business-dominated reform movement relies on Abbott, *The New Urban America.*
52 *Smith v. Allwright,* 321 U.S. 649 (1944). See the discussion in V. O. Key, *Politics, Parties, and Pressure Groups,* 5th ed. (New York: Crowell, 1964), p. 607.
53 Abbott, *The New Urban America,* p. 217.
54 William Frey, *Melting Pot Suburbs: A Census 2000 Study of Suburban Diversity* (Washington, DC: Center for Urban and Metropolitan Policy, Brookings Institution Press, June 2001), p. 8.
55 Kriston Capps, "White People Aren't Driving Growth in the Suburbs," *CityLab* (July 29, 2015). Accessed online: www.citylab.com/equity/2015/07/white-people-arent-driving-growth-in-the-suburbs/399659/
56 Ibid.
57 Joint Center for Political and Economic Studies, *Black Elected Officials: A Statistical Summary, 2001* (April 2001), p. 250, www.jointcenter.org/databank/graphs/99beo.pdf
58 *Roster of Latino Elected Officials* (Washington, DC: National Association of Hispanic Elected and Appointed Officials, annual).
59 Ibid., citing original source as *National Roster of Latino Elected Officials* (Washington, DC: National Association of Hispanic Elected and Appointed Officials, annual).
60 U.S. Bureau of the Census. *Hispanic Public Elected Officials by Office, 1985 to 2008, and State, 2008.* Table 421.
61 Michael Leo Owens and Michael J. Rich, "Is Strong Incorporation Enough? Black Empowerment and the Fate of Atlanta's Low-Income Blacks," in *Racial Politics in American Cities,* 3rd ed., ed. Rufus P. Browning, Dale Rogers Marshall, and David H. Tabb (New York: Longman, 2003), pp. 209-210.
62 Timothy Bates and Darrell Williams, "Preferential Procurement Programs and Minority-Owned Business," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 17, no. 1 (1995): 1.
63 Huey L. Perry, "The Evolution and Impact of Biracial Coalition and Black Mayors in Birmingham and New Orleans," in *Racial Politics,* ed. Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, pp. 228-254.
64 Christopher L. Warren and Dario V. Moreno, "Power without a Program: Hispanic Incorporation in Miami," in *Racial Politics,* ed. Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, pp. 281-306.
65 Rodney E. Hero and Susan E. Clarke, "Latinos, Blacks, and Multiethnic Politics in Denver: Realigning Power and Influence in the Struggle for Equality," in *Racial Politics,* ed. Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, pp. 309-330.
66 Theodore J. Lowi, "The State of Cities in the Second Republic," *Fiscal Retrenchment and Urban Policy,* ed. J. P. Blair and D. Nachmias (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1979), pp. 43-54; John H. Mollenkopf, *The Contested City* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1983); Paul Kantor, *The Dependent City Revisited: The Political Economy of Urban Development and Social Policy* (Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1995).
67 Peter K. Eisinger, *The Rise of the Entrepreneurial State: State and Local Economic Development Policy in the United States* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1988).
68 For evidence of this shift, see Kenneth K. Wong, *City Choices: Education and Housing* (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1990), p. 16.
69 Dennis R. Judd, ed., *The Infrastructure of Play: Building the Tourist City* (Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 2003).
70 Judis and Teixeira, *The Emerging Democratic Majority.*
71 Ibid.
72 Jessica Gonzales-Rojas, "Is Arizona the Worst Place in the Country to Be a Latina?" *Huffington Post* (June 20, 2010), www.huffingtonpost.com/jessica-gonzalezrojas/arizona-worst-for-latinas_b_1612776.html
73 Ian Gordon and Tasneem Raja "164 Anti-Immigration Laws Passed Since 2010? A MoJo Analysis," *Mother Jones* (March 1, 2010), http://motherjones.com/politics/2012/03/anti-immigration-law-database
74 The California Legislature, *Senate Bill No. 54,* Chapter 495 (October 5, 2017). Accessed online: https://leginfo.legislature.ca.gov/faces/billNavClient.xhtml?bill_id=201720180SB54
75 Jazmine Ulloa, "California Becomes 'Sanctuary State' in Rebuke of Trump Immigration Policy," *Los Angeles Times* (October 5, 2017). Accessed online: www.latimes.com/politics/la-pol-ca-brown-california-sanctuary-state-bill-20171005-story.html
76 Richard Florida, "How the Crash Will Reshape America," *The Atlantic* (March 2009), p. 54.

PART III

The Fractured Metropolis

CHAPTER 10

The Rise of the Fragmented Metropolis

Metropolitan Turf Wars

A deeply ingrained distrust of cities has long been an important feature of American culture. Only a few years after the Constitution was ratified, Thomas Jefferson wrote, "I view great cities as pestilential to the morals, the health, and the liberties of man."[1] In the 1970s, John V. Lindsay, the former mayor of New York, observed that "in the American psychology, the city has been a basically suspect institution."[2] Although the harshest judgments have slowly melted away, a distrust of urban life has persisted despite the fact that, according to the 2000 census, 80 percent of Americans live in metropolitan areas.[3] But it is unclear what it means to observe that America is an urban nation. Residents of Phoenix or Dallas may feel they have little in common with residents of New York City or Boston, or even with the city just a few miles away. The feeling of separation is one of the important effects of the fragmented American metropolis.

Even before the suburban movements of the twentieth century, people living in the cities were sorting themselves out into different neighborhoods. New developments in transportation technology (from trolleys to streetcars to, eventually, the automobile) accelerated social- and income segregation by making it possible for the wealthy to live further away from urban production zones and commute to work and play. These developments culminated in the proliferation of the car as a middle-class commodity, and the explosive construction of the interstate highway system in the 1950s. The Suburban Movement that followed accentuated this tendency in two respects: it drastically increased the geographic distances between social and ethnic groups, and it gave the residents of the more privileged neighborhoods a set of tools for excluding racial and ethnic groups they considered undesirable. Suburban governments employed a variety of means to protect themselves from unwanted change. Early in the twentieth century, zoning laws emerged as the principle device for preserving land values and maintaining social class and racial segregation. A sharp separation among residential areas was also enforced by developers, who routinely imposed deed restrictions forbidding property owners from selling to blacks and other groups they deemed to be a threat to property values. It took decades, but eventually deed restrictions were overturned by the courts. Zoning laws, however, have continued largely unchanged, and suburban governments still use them as a means of determining patterns of development.

If they have the choice, suburban jurisdictions try to attract mainly affluent homeowners and the kinds of economic development that contribute positively to the local tax base. This calculus sets up an intensely competitive metropolitan game that often pits one local government against another. People living in suburbs with high property values and/or plenty of business investment are able to pay lower taxes even while they enjoy higher levels of public services than the residents of poorer municipalities. In the past, central cities were disadvantaged in this game, and as a consequence they became "the receptacle for all the functions the suburbs [did] not care to support."[4] Originally, the strategies used by suburbs to maintain residential segregation were aimed specifically at minorities, new immigrants, and the poor, most of whom remained clustered in decayed neighborhoods in central cities and, sometimes, in nearby older suburbs. But with the rise of multiethnic suburbs in the 1980s, the metropolitan turf wars have become more complicated. In many urban regions, higher-income residents have been moving to the historic central city even while some older suburbs have attracted poor people and waves of foreign immigrants. Some scholars have termed this phenomenon "The Great Inversion," essentially, a grand population shift of poor, ethnic and racial minorities away from the gentrifying cities, into the older suburbs, and the white upper- and upper middle classes from the suburbs back to the cities.[5] Alan Ehrenhalt, who coined the term, argues that American metros are moving towards increasingly resembling European metros, with wealthy urban areas

surrounded by poor and working class suburban rings.[6] This description, however, oversimplifies the complicated demographic developments in American metro areas. It also masks the fact that there are significant country-specific differences among European metros. What is clear, however, is that the ethnic, racial, and social composition and distribution of people in the American metropolis has become much more complicated with the advent of the twenty-first century. For instance, Alan Berube and Elizabeth Kneebone of the Brookings Institution found that poverty in Atlanta's suburbs grew by 159 percent between 2000 and 2011.[7] Paul Jargowsky, who studies urban poverty in the American metropolis, finds a reconcentration of poverty in metro areas throughout the U.S. However, he finds the redistribution of poverty changed[8]: Jargowsky reports that poverty throughout American metros has declustered: high-poverty tracts can now be found in urban, suburban *and* rural communities.[9] This creates a highly complicated metropolitan mosaic of poverty and wealth.[10] These developments have had the predictable consequence of keeping the metropolitan game, and the metropolitan fragmentation that it sustains, very much alive.

Recently, the strategies used by municipalities to attract affluent residents and "higher" land uses have been reinforced by the privatization and walling off of residential developments. By creating privately governed common interest developments (CIDs), homeowners are able to escape many of the burdens of the public realm altogether. Gated communities have become ubiquitous in all urban areas in all regions of the country. Surrounded, as they often are, by a perimeter of walls, fences, or other barriers, they have the effect of segmenting urban populations to a finer degree than was possible through the policies imposed by suburban governments. The effect they exert on metropolitan politics and geographic patterns is still evolving, but certainly they possess the potential to create an urban landscape that is, in key respects, even more fragmented than in the past.

OUTTAKE

There Is a Debate about Gated Communities

The proliferation of gated communities (perhaps more accurately called *common interest developments,* or *CIDs)* is fragmenting the urban landscape into a mosaic of publicly governed municipalities and privatized residential enclaves. A lively debate is being fought over the question: is privatized government a good or a bad thing? Arguments on each side of the issue should be considered.

One of the points Evan McKenzie makes in his groundbreaking book *Privatopia,* is that gated communities constitute a strategy for segregating affluent urban residents from those who rely upon public services. He maintains that CIDs facilitate a "gradual secession" of the affluent from the political and social life of cities, potentially making them "financially untenable for the many and socially unnecessary for the few." He points out that the homogeneous populations that make up most CIDs also undermine any sense of shared social responsibility. Sheryll Cashin echoes this sentiment when she notes that residents of CIDs "tend to view themselves as taxpayers rather than citizens, and they often perceive local property taxes as a fee for services they should receive rather than their contribution to services local government must provide to the community as a whole." This change in perspective has consequences: private security guards replace police, and walled-off recreation areas replace community centers and swimming pools.

CIDs have defenders, too. Robert H. Nelson argues that they make it possible for residents to "protect their own neighborhood environment, and also provide a wider range of choice for new residents in search of a neighborhood physical and social environment corresponding to their own individual preferences." In his view, privately governed associations respect one of the most basic rights of human liberty, the right of free association. He maintains that homogeneity within individual neighborhoods is not necessarily a bad thing, since it is based upon the freedom to associate: "the special case of race aside, the right of a neighborhood association to discriminate among potential new unit owners should be protected as a basic matter of defending the right of freedom of association under the U.S. Constitution."

Gated communities, common interest developments, or whatever we wish to call them, are becoming the norm in America's metropolitan regions. They are here to stay. As a result, in the next few years, the debate is likely to shift toward a middle ground, involving questions such as whether to compel neighborhood associations to respect constitutional rights and rules of procedural democracy. To this end, one scholar has proposed a bill of rights for private residential government. This might be an effective remedy for the rights of people living within CIDs, but it would not reduce the spatial fragmentation of metropolitan areas.

Sources: Evan McKenzie, *Privatopia: Homeowner Associations and the Rise of Residential Private Government* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1994), p. 186; Sheryll D. Cashin, "Privatized Communities and the 'Secession of the Successful': Democracy and Fairness beyond the Gate," *Fordham Urban Law Journal* 28 (2001): 1679; Robert H. Nelson, *Private Neighborhoods and the Transformation of Local Government* (Washington, DC: The Urban Institute Press, 2005), pp. 260–261, 400; Susan F. French, "The Constitution of a Private Residential Government Should Include a Bill of Rights," *Wake Forest Law Review* 27 (1992): 345–352.

How the Suburbs Became Segregated

A deeply ingrained distrust of cities has long been an important feature

Many narrative threads make up the story of how American suburbs became fragmented into a patchwork of segregated neighborhoods, subdivisions, and independent suburban jurisdictions. There is, to begin with, a cultural explanation: beginning in the early years of the Republic, Americans nurtured a negative attitude toward cities, and this anti-urban bias was reinforced by the concentration of immigrants in cities during the nineteenth century and the massive demographic movements of the twentieth century. There is an economic interpretation, too, that stresses the material benefits that the residents of suburban jurisdictions realized by gaining control of local tax and spending policies. A third explanation, which we treat in this section, links the rise of the suburbs to the actions of developers who found residential segregation to be an effective marketing strategy for selling their product. Which came first: consumer preferences, or marketing? There may be no definitive answer to this question, but it is worth pondering nevertheless.

Clearly, there has been a popular preference for suburban living for a long time. The pent-up demand for housing coincided with new government policies to promote homeownership. Never before had it been so easy to secure a loan. In 1934, Congress created the Federal Housing Authority to insure the home loans made by banks. The legislation was followed in 1944 by a law authorizing the Veterans Administration to make loans to returning veterans for no money down and for long amortization periods. These policies made it possible for millions of middle-class families to buy homes even if they had few savings—or none at all, in the case of returning veterans. The new home-buyers eagerly seized the opportunity to move out of overcrowded urban neighborhoods.

Federal policies and the real estate industry powerfully shaped the attitudes that favored suburban life. The policies of FHA (Federal Housing Administration) and VA (Veterans Administration) administrators and bank loan officers encouraged builders to promote construction almost exclusively outside the cities. In this sense, it may be said that the suburbs were created first by developers and the housing industry, and only later by the preferences of buyers. Developers influenced the character of the suburbs by selecting the clientele that could best supply profits, and by molding the tastes and preferences of potential buyers. Realtors, developers, and financial institutions aggressively marketed the suburbs because new housing construction maximized their profitability and it was easier to do than the rehabilitation of older neighborhoods.[11] Developers were quick to realize that an enormous market had been opened up, and they seized the opportunity. Within a few years, big development firms became the frontline agents that shaped the development of the suburban subdivisions that quickly spread across the urban landscape. As one scholar observed:

> The plain fact is that … the main force in our process of urban development is the private developer. The primacy of the bulldozer in transforming rural land to urban uses, the capacity of the private company to build thousands of homes on quiet rolling hills is a predominant fact of American urban life.[12]

What the developers put in place during the suburban boom of the postwar years became the foundation for the pattern of settlement that still exists in America's urban areas.

In many ways, the United States is unique among industrialized countries in its extensive suburban developments. This is, among other things, due to the low population density of the United States as a country in general: According to the World Bank, the United States ranks among the top 60 countries with the least population density in the world, the same as other former colonies, such as Australia, and Canada.[13] This fact made suburban land extraordinarily cheap and available to developers and buyers.

To market the houses they built, developers promised not only a home but also an entire way of life. They were not merely the builders of houses; they were "community builders" interested in shaping the character of entire neighborhoods.[14] In their attempt to market the new subdivisions, developers virtually invented an iconic image of the American dream—the suburban house. The suburbs were promoted as ways to achieve instant social status, escape the problems of the cities, and live in a closely regulated social environment. Thus, the suburbs became

sharply differentiated from the cities, both in people's minds and in reality. Developers were careful to target the potential homeowners who could add to their bottom line. This strategy proved to be especially effective for the developers of exclusive subdivisions, who found that the bigger the house and the higher the income of buyers, the more money they could make.

One of the first and most influential of the community builders was Jesse Clyde Nichols, who pioneered the concept of planning entire communities decades before it became common practice. Born on a farm close to Kansas City, Kansas, Nichols attended the University of Kansas and later studied economics at Harvard. In 1900, Nichols took a trip to Europe, where he admired the beauty and grandeur of European cities. He saw no reason why cities in the United States could not be even more majestic than those of Europe. In 1905, Nichols began buying up land southwest of downtown Kansas City, where he intended to build and sell top-market residences.

Nichols was different from the typical small-time real estate operator, or "curbstoner," who bought a few small parcels of land on the edge of the city, divided them into lots, and hoped to make a speculative profit. Nichols believed in a scientific approach to land development. In a speech before a real estate convention in 1912, Nichols attracted national attention by criticizing those small-time land developers who went for the fast sale and the quick profit. Instead, he advocated a more comprehensive approach. He shocked his contemporaries by arguing that planning was not only compatible with private profit but could actually increase profits over the long run. As he later put it in a landmark article on suburban shopping centers, "good planning is good business."[15] Over the years, Nichols became a persuasive advocate for planned suburban development. He was a leader in the National Association of Real Estate Boards (NAREB), and in 1935 he founded the Urban Land Institute (ULI), which is influential in the housing industry to this day. In his lifetime, he saw the private planning he pioneered become public policy through local subdivision regulations, zoning laws, and federal loan guarantee programs.

Nichols put his principles into practice by developing the Country Club District on the edge of Kansas City, considered by many at the time to be the most beautiful suburb in the nation. Nichols appealed to his wealthy clientele with extraordinary aesthetics—he modeled the suburb's shopping center, the first in the nation, on the architecture of Seville, Spain. Nichols also applied the latest in household technology, such as a piped gas and electricity supply, in a period when servants were becoming less common. Nichols' suburban houses promised to provide a secure haven far from the stresses and tensions of city life. Husbands could go off to work in the city secure in the knowledge that their wives and children were safe in the idyllic environment of the Country Club District.

Nichols' projects were strictly limited to affluent homeowners. To guarantee that his development would remain an exclusive preserve long after he completed his work, Nichols devised the self-perpetuating deed restriction, which required owners to follow requirements laid down by the developer.[16] The deed restrictions specified minimum lot sizes, minimum cost for houses, setbacks from the street, and even the color and style of houses. And the deeds specified that the houses could be bought by and sold to whites only.[17] These restrictions became an important marketing tool because they promised to protect exclusivity and secure property values.

Until the years after World War II, developments like those built by Nichols were available mainly to the upper-middle-class homebuyer. This began to change in the postwar years. In the late 1930s, Levitt & Sons succeeded as a medium-sized developer of plain tract housing for upper-middle-class families leaving New York City for Long Island, but the company's big break came during World War II, when it won contracts to build thousands of houses for the U.S. Navy around Norfolk, Virginia. It is here that the Levitts worked on the mass-production techniques that revolutionized home building throughout the United States. Within a few years after the war, the firm founded by William J. Levitt, his father Abraham, and his brother Alfred became the largest home builder in the United States.

Unlike Nichols, William Levitt drifted into building houses. Caring little for school, Levitt dropped out of New York University after his third year because, as he put it in a *Time* magazine cover story, "I got itchy. I wanted to make money. I wanted a big car and a lot of clothes."[18] In 1936, after he passed through several jobs, Levitt and his father decided to build a house on a Long Island lot they had been unable to sell. They made a profit. From this small beginning, Levitt launched his extraordinary career.

The Levitts quietly began buying up land from Long Island farmers and building inexpensive homes by using assembly-line methods. The basic process involved laying a concrete slab for a foundation, erecting preassembled walls, then tying the structure together with a roof trucked to the site. The Levitts broke down the complex process of building a house into 26 operations, and then assigned each step to a separate contractor. Because each

contractor did the same job over and over again, it was possible to achieve incredible speed.[19] Levitt avoided unions and used piecework incentives to speed the process even more.[20] At the Levitt lumberyard, one man was able to cut parts for 10 houses in one day.[21] By 1950, the firm was producing one house every 16 minutes.[22] By preassembling as many components as possible, Levitt reduced the amount of skilled labor necessary on the job site, and by purchasing directly from the manufacturers, he eliminated middlemen's fees. Overall, Levitt was able to build a typical house for about $6,000, an affordable amount even for some working-class families.[23]

Between 1947 and 1951, the Levitts converted 4,000 acres of potato farms in Hempstead, Long Island, into the largest housing development in the nation's history.[24] Ultimately housing 82,000 residents, Levittown, as it came to be known, became a huge success. Because of the huge pent-up demand for inexpensive housing following World War II, in the first years people lined up and camped out for days waiting to purchase one of the homes. The basic Cape Cod model sold for $7,990. With federal guarantees for the loan and no down payment required for veterans, an ex-GI could buy a Levitt house for only $56 a month.[25]

Like Nichols, Levitt believed that tight controls over buyers and their behavior were the best way to guarantee rising real estate values. Restrictive covenants required the grass to be cut each week (if not done, one of Levitt's men would cut it and send a bill) and disallowed fences (but allowed hedges). Laundry could not be hung out on a clothesline. In addition, the covenants barred tenants or homeowners from selling to or even allowing their property to be used by blacks. The standard lease for the first homes in Levittown, in which the tenant had an option to buy, contained this language: "The tenant agrees not to permit the premises to be used or occupied by any person other than members of the Caucasian race. But the employment and maintenance of other than Caucasian domestic servants shall be permitted."[26] Levitt argued that economic realities required him to recognize that "most whites prefer not to live in mixed communities,"[27] but his determination to enforce his racial prejudices went beyond mere economics; he evicted two tenants who had allowed black children to play in their homes.[28] In 1960, not a single black family lived in Levittown,[29] and even 30 years later only about one-fourth of 1 percent of its residents were African American.[30]

In the mid-1950s, Levitt decided to build two more Levittowns, one in Pennsylvania and one in New Jersey. Opened in October 1958 and finished in 1965, Levittown, New Jersey, provided several new features. Fearing that an unfavorable image of sterile uniformity would damage sales, the company offered several house styles and floor plans. The idea of mixing styles was offered by William Levitt's wife and implemented by him over the objections of his executives.[31] Levitt did not offer changes from a standardized model to provide more aesthetically pleasing suburban residential areas. His motives were strictly economic; in order to sell houses, he needed to ensure that the houses would continue to appeal to the aspiring middle class.

Levitt attracted purchasers by other means as well. Long-term financing with low monthly payments was made possible through the firm. He also carefully selected the buyers by excluding applicants who did not conform to middle-class values in conduct and appearance. All homes were designed for families with young children. Advertisements stressed that it was a planned community with schools, churches, swimming pools, and parks. In all of these respects, the Levitt company constructed the kind of community that fit the developer's ideas about suburban life. If middle-class homebuyers wanted something different, they would have been hard put to find any other places to live, at least in the suburbs.

Levitt's fortunes began to change in 1968 when he sold his development company to the International Telephone and Telegraph Corporation (ITT) for $60 million in ITT stock. Soon after the sale, the stock, which he used as collateral for loans, plunged in value. Because of a clause in his sales contract, Levitt was forbidden to renew his building activities for 10 years, except in cities where ITT had no interest. Levitt invested $20 million in a project in Iran, but that country's new government took it over after the 1979 revolution. In 1987, at the age of 80, Levitt was forced to declare bankruptcy and was evicted from his New York City offices.[32]

The careers of Nichols and Levitt demonstrate the power of private developers to shape the suburbs to fit their own tastes and attitudes. Residential segregation on the basis of incomes and lifestyles was a natural result of the logic of profitability and marketing. These observations may be applied to contemporary suburbs as well. Whether a developer builds luxury single-family homes, townhouses for young middle-class homebuyers, condominiums for singles, or a gated community, the character of the community that results will reflect the developer's business plan. Buyers choose their environment before they move, but once they have decided where they are going to live, they "are very largely prisoners of that environment with but little opportunity of changing it."[33]

The Imperative of Racial Segregation

The rise of the twentieth-century American suburb went hand in hand with a cultural imperative of racial segregation. The precedents for segregation enforced by social custom, law, and the policies of the housing industry were established very early, and by the time these practices were abandoned in the late 1970s, a metropolitan land use landscape of racial segregation had become basically fixed.

Beginning in the early twentieth century, restrictive covenants became the main instrument used by the real estate industry to enforce racial segregation. When a buyer purchased a house, the deed often came with a printed covenant that restricted its subsequent sale. Typically, blacks were identified as a restricted group on the back of the deed, but sometimes Jews and "consumptives" (anyone with tuberculosis) were also named. Restrictive covenants became, in effect, governmental policy when the supreme courts of 14 states upheld their legality and ruled they could be enforced in the courts.[34] It is estimated that restrictive covenants applied to homes sold in half of the subdivisions built in the United States before 1948, when the U.S. Supreme Court ruled they could not be enforced in courts of law.[35]

The National Association of Real Estate Boards (NAREB) was established in 1908 to represent the interests of builders and real estate agents. Everyone involved in the housing business accepted as a fundamental principle that the value of property was connected to the homogeneity of neighborhoods. Based on this premise, the NAREB "racialized" land use in urban areas by promoting the idea that whites and blacks must be strictly segregated.[36] From 1924 until 1950, Article 34 of the realtors' national code (circulated to realtors everywhere by the NAREB) read, "A Realtor should never be instrumental in introducing into a neighborhood a character of property or occupancy, members of any race or nationality, or any individual whose presence will clearly be detrimental to property values in the neighborhood."[37]

To enforce this policy, local real estate boards issued written codes of ethics prohibiting members from introducing "detrimental" minorities into white neighborhoods. The textbooks and training materials used in real estate training courses took care to emphasize that real estate agents were ethically bound to promote homogeneous neighborhoods. The leading textbook used in such courses in the 1940s compared some ethnic groups to termites eating away at sound structures:

> The tendency of certain racial and cultural groups to stick together, making it almost impossible to assimilate them in the normal social organism, is too well known to need much comment. But in some cases the result is less detrimental than in others. The Germans, for example, are a clean and thrifty people …. Unfortunately this cannot be said of all the other nations which have sent their immigrants to our country. Some of them have brought standards and customs far below our own levels…. Like termites, they undermine the structure of any neighborhood into which they creep.[38]

Any real estate agent found breaking the code by selling to members of the wrong groups was subject to loss of license and expulsion from the local board. Even brokers who were not affiliated with the national association felt compelled to accept the realtors' guidelines because most of their business depended upon referrals.

In 1948, in the case of *Shelly v. Kraemer,* the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that racially restrictive covenants violated the Fourteenth Amendment's guarantee of equal protection of the law, and that they could not therefore be enforced in the courts.[39] Despite the ruling, covenants sometimes continued to be written, but now they were enforced not by the courts, but by pressure exerted by realtors, developers, homeowner associations, and neighbors. Banks refused to make loans to blacks trying to buy in white neighborhoods; in any case, realtors refused to show them the homes. The suburbs did not begin opening up to blacks until Congress passed the 1968 Housing Act, which barred racial discrimination in the sale and rental of housing.

OUTTAKE

Integrating Levittown, PA: the Trauma of Deepgreen Lane

Daisy Myers and William Myers, Jr. were the first African American family to move to Levittown, PA. Residential integration, and the trauma that came with it, especially for African Americans, is easily talked about from afar. The personal trauma of the hostility, which many African Americans experienced, is better illustrated along the lines of personal experiences. The Myers moved to Levittown in the late summer of 1957, facing staunch resistance from local residents. This resistance was vividly captured in a 1957 documentary *Crisis in Levittown, PA,* produced by Dan W. Dodson, a former professor of sociology at New York University. Born in 1907, Dodson

was a Texan by birth, and the son of a sharecropper. He was raised in acceptance of Jim Crow laws, but came to embrace and promote racial equality. Dodson's film documents blatant white racism: many of the individuals interviewed claim to be concerned about property values, but they also openly worry about mixed marriages, and racial equality. Several note that among their motivations for moving to Levittown was the promise of living in an all-white community.

Daisy Myers recalls "the rocks through the windows, the taunts and name-calling and cross-burnings and the day-and-night blaring of 'Old Black Joe' that greeted her arrival as a member of the first African American family in Levittown, PA."

Daisy Myers holds two M.A. degrees, and her husband William was an engineer. They did not perceive themselves as political activists for racial integration, but instead were looking for a larger home, as their family was expanding. Mrs. Myers was initially mistaken for the maid when the mailman delivered the first mail to the house. When she cleared up the mistake, the mailman informed the rest of the community of the new arrivals, and within a few hours, loiterers gathered in front of the Myers' house, throwing rocks, screaming racial slurs, and, eventually burning crosses. The community was divided, with some residents supporting the Myers' as new members of the community, bringing food, and helping out. Two petitions were gathering signatures, one by the "Levittown Betterment Committee," protesting the possible racial integration of Levittown, and one by the "Citizens Committee for Levittown" condemning the violence against the Myers. The story drew national and even international attention in the media. When a vacant house in the vicinity of the Myers' home was turned into a "clubhouse" for the "resistance" to Levittown's integration, flying a confederate flag, and blaring racist music at all hours of the day and night, William Myers, Jr. appealed to then-Attorney General Thomas D. McBride for help. McBride charged eight residents with "evil conspiracy" and asked the Bucks County Court to end the harassment against the Myers. The court issued an injunction on October 23, 1957. A year later, a second African American family moved into the community. The organized opposition to racial integration of Levittown, PA had finally broken down.

Sources: Robert McG. Thomas, Jr., "Dan W. Dodson, 88, Foe and Scholar of Racism," Obituary, *New York Times* (August 19, 1995). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/1995/08/19/obituaries/dan-w-dodson-88-foe-and-scholar-of-racism.html; Dan W. Dodson: *Crisis in Levittown, PA.* Documentary, Dynamic Films, Inc., 1957; Lacy McCrary, "Trauma of Levittown Integration Remembered History: In August 1957, an African-American Family Moved to Deepgreen Lane and Was Greeted by a Mob Screaming Racial Epithets and Making Threats," *Baltimore Sun* (August 21, 1997). Accessed online: http://articles.baltimoresun.com/1997-08-21/news/1997233064_1_daisy-myers-levittown-epithets; David B. Bittan, "'A Flaming Cross': Pennsylvania, August 1957–August 1958," in *Reporting Civil Rights: American Journalism 1941–1963* (The Library of America).

By the time the housing act became law, patterns of racial segregation had already been firmly established, and they would have been hard to change even if racial discrimination, by some act of magic, had disappeared overnight. Change was also made more difficult because of the rise of common interest developments, which proved to be a remarkably efficient device for preserving the social-class uniformity of new housing developments. When homebuyers purchase a home in a CID, they automatically agree to abide by a list of restrictions on the use of their property. They also pay fees for their share in the cost and maintenance of services and amenities held "in common" (thus the term "common interest") with other residents. The "community" of homeowners is governed by a homeowners' association, which is responsible for enforcing the long list of covenants, contracts, and restrictions (CC&Rs). Such rules can be used to enforce the homogeneity of neighborhoods even more effectively than restrictive covenants, with one principal exception—they cannot be used explicitly to sort out buyers on the basis of race, ethnicity, or gender.

The number of CIDs, which includes cooperative apartments, condominiums, and single-family housing developments, exploded from fewer than 500 in 1964 to 10,000 by 1970 and to 150,000 by 1992, when 32 million Americans lived within them.[40] CIDs were concentrated especially in the Sunbelt, with California, Florida, and Texas leading the way. All through the Sunbelt, large numbers of retired people moved into gated communities. By 2005, 54.6 million people lived in 274,000 developments governed by homeowner associations.[41] In many metropolitan areas, they have become so common that new homebuyers who do not want to live in one will find it hard to find a house anywhere else. Since 2000, 80 percent of all homes built in the United States are governed by homeowner associations that administer privately provided amenities.[42]

CIDs became the main device used by developers to become "community builders" in the tradition of Jesse Clyde Nichols. The CC&Rs that homebuyers agreed to were drawn up by the developer before the first resident

moved in. Developers could point to the CC&Rs to reassure homebuyers that the future of their investment was secured against unwanted change. The CID mechanism also solved a pressing problem that immediately threatened developers' profits. By the late 1950s, suburbia had become synonymous with low-density tract housing, an equation that reflected the developers' success in marketing the suburbs as an escape from the cities. By the 1960s, however, this version of the suburban dream began to yield lower profits because the market for single houses constructed on individual lots was diminishing. Perceptive developers realized that there were huge demographic and income groups, such as retirees and young singles and married couples without children, which remained as vast untapped markets.

The problem for developers was that by the 1960s, the constantly rising price of suburban land meant that they could build homes affordable for the middle class only if they could achieve much higher densities than before. Accordingly, the housing industry initiated a campaign to market a revised version of the suburban dream that would include row houses and apartment buildings. Almost overnight, attached housing, which developers had always associated with inner-city neighborhoods, became desirable. By the late 1960s, the American Society of Planning Officials, the ULI, developers, and the Federal Housing Administration (FHA) became sudden critics of the "gridiron" housing tracts and large-lot, low-density development they had promoted for so long. The CID idea anchored a campaign to convince local governments and consumers that higher-density development was compatible with the maintenance of property values, exclusion, and status.[43]

In a report published in 1963, the Urban Land Institute pointed out that CIDs could exclude unwanted residents better than any alternative form of development: "Existing as private or semi-private areas they may exclude undesirable elements or trouble-makers drifting in."[44] In 1961 the FHA agreed to insure loans for condominiums in multiunit buildings. Two years later, the FHA released its first manual explicitly encouraging developers to build planned units that would be governed by homeowner associations. In 1964, the FHA and the ULI copublished a 400-page volume describing the history of CIDs and setting forth detailed directions on how to establish CC&Rs and the homeowner associations to enforce them.[45] Since the early 1970s, the two biggest secondary mortgage purchasers, the Federal National Mortgage Association and the Federal Home Loan Corporation, have insisted on formulating and reviewing guidelines for residential associations before purchasing the loans on properties that will be governed by them. In only two decades, the institutional pressures applied by the housing industry and the federal government changed the face of the suburbs.

In popular parlance, CIDs are generally referred to as "gated communities," though this term is imprecise because many privatized developments are not actually physically gated. For developers, gates and walls are often used as a marketing tool; these features allow them to play upon themes of security, seclusion, and exclusivity.[46] Developers establish the rules and regulations and set up the homeowner association even before the first property is sold; in this way, they are able to promise to buyers that all residents who move in later will follow closely prescribed norms of behavior and decorum. The list of covenants and restrictions enforced by residents' associations is typically very long and detailed. They may dictate such things as the minimum and maximum ages of residents, hours and frequency of visitors, color of paint on a house, style and color of draperies hung in windows, size of pets and number of children (if either is allowed), parking rules, patios and landscaping, and even minute details like what vehicle a resident can park in the driveway. Many CID residents no doubt find such regulations comforting. For others, the restrictions become intolerable, as evidenced by the high number of lawsuits filed against community associations.

Gated communities are planned as remarkably homogeneous environments. Some of them are developed and marketed to appeal to people on the basis of particular shared interests or life conditions; for instance, communities have been built exclusively for retirees, golfers, singles, and even nudists. Green Valley, Nevada, a massive gated community just outside Las Vegas, is segmented not only by different architectural styles, but also by the cost and size of houses.[47] Each of these "villages" (as the developer calls them) carries the accoutrements of community: a name (Silver Springs or Valle Verde, for example), a community center, a school, a recreational center, and sometimes a park.[48] The separation between this private city and the outside world is, in effect, embellished by a finer-grained separation within.

The Housing Act of 1968 made it illegal to discriminate on the basis of race in the selling or rental of housing. To some degree, however, the intensified social-class segregation facilitated by CIDs acts as a partially effective substitute for earlier means of discrimination. In 2009, the median income for African Americans was 61 percent of the average earnings for non-Hispanic white families.[49] Because, after centuries of race-based oppression,

exploitation, and segregation of racial minorities, racial inequality is strongly reinforced by economic inequality, any effective remedy to residential segregation would require policies that directly interfere with the basic operations of the housing market. Since these would be politically and legally unacceptable, there is no practical way to fundamentally alter the patterns of segregation inherited from the past.

Walling Off the Suburbs: Incorporation

The many suburban jurisdictions that exist in a typical metropolitan region act as a powerful force preserving racial and socioeconomic segregation. In all older metropolitan areas, exclusive suburbs dating back to the late nineteenth century dot the landscape. When the automobile made it possible for more people to make the suburban move, a ring of middle-class suburbs grew up just beyond the city limits. The suburban boom following World War II created a true patchwork of white working-class, middle-class, and upper-class suburbs—for example, Levittown was a middle-class bastion on Long Island, but it remained worlds apart from the wealthier enclaves only a few miles away. Over time, this process fragmented urban areas into a multitude of jurisdictions, each eager to preserve its character and history.

For a variety of reasons the number of suburbs outside the big cities remained relatively small until the 1920s. Some of the people who moved beyond the city limits in the post–Civil War era sought annexation rather than separation because public services were otherwise too expensive or hard to get. At other times, suburban residents were coerced into joining the city. From the turn of the century to the 1920s, for example, Los Angeles used its monopoly over water supply to force neighboring communities, such as Hollywood, Venice, Lordsburg, Sawtelle, Watts, Eagle Rock, Hyde Park, Tujunga, and Barnes City, to become part of the city. This coercive behavior came to a halt with the formation of the Metropolitan Water District in 1927, which ended Los Angeles' monopoly over water.[50] A subsequent agreement among local governments, called the Lakewood Plan, made it possible for suburbs to obtain municipal services by contracting with the county government.[51] Almost overnight, the number of suburbs outside Los Angeles began to multiply.

There are many reasons why suburbs proliferated so rapidly. On occasion, simple economic self-interest supplied a sufficient motive to incorporate. E. J. "Lucky" Baldwin was a notorious gambler and entrepreneur in California in the early twentieth century. He got his nickname by making a fortune gambling on mining stocks,[52] and he was the defendant in a number of seduction and paternity suits that culminated in spectacular trials. Baldwin wanted to build a racetrack, but he knew he would be opposed by southern California's 'foes of sin', led by the Anti-Saloon League. Accordingly, Baldwin decided to create his own suburb, called Arcadia. As the name implied, he intended the town to be his personal utopia. He imported his own employees as residents and handed out free watermelons on election day. Not surprisingly, they approved incorporation unanimously and elected a city council composed of Baldwin and his employees. Baldwin realized his dream when the Santa Anita raceway opened on December 7, 1907.[53]

On other occasions, suburban governments came into being to protect businesses from taxes and regulation. Efforts to incorporate were almost always successful when they were led by powerful companies.[54] In 1907, meatpacking companies incorporated National City on the northern border of East St. Louis, Illinois, to escape being taxed by East St. Louis. A few years later, the Monsanto Chemical Company created the city of Sauget on East St. Louis' border for the same purpose. In the 1950s, a group of industrialists tried to form a separate suburban jurisdiction in Los Angeles County as a means of avoiding having to pay for the services of a growing suburban population. When they found that the area did not include the 500 residents required for incorporation, they redrew the boundaries to include 169 patients of a mental sanitarium, which put them over the top. Appropriately, they named their new town "Industry."[55]

In most cases, though, the desire to incorporate was driven by more complicated motives. Put simply, the people who had left the city wanted to wash their hands of it. The only effective way to ensure they could never be annexed by the city they had fled was to draw legal boundaries around themselves. The formal incorporation of a new jurisdiction turned out to be a good strategy for gaining control of taxes and services, and in the bargain it provided a means of keeping out the riffraff of the city. At the turn of the century, residents of Oak Park on the border of Chicago feared that the Slavic population might spill over from neighboring Austin. Their motive for incorporating, according to one author, was that "Slavic persons with little aversion for alcohol were rapidly settling the Austin area, and the native American Protestant population of Oak Park feared the immoral influences that might accompany these foreigners."[56] Between 1899 and 1902, Austin joined the city of Chicago, but Oak

Park formed a separate suburban government.

People began creating independent municipalities beyond the boundaries of all the big cities. In 1890, Cook County, whose principal city is Chicago, had 55 governments; by 1920 it had 109. Similarly, the number of generalpurpose governments in the New York City area grew from 127 in 1900 to 204 by 1920. There were 91 incorporated municipalities in the Pittsburgh area in 1890 but 107 in 1920.[57] During the 1920s, new suburbs were formed by the score.

Legal incorporation had not always been so easy to accomplish. Local governments are not mentioned in the U.S. Constitution; legally, they are creatures of the states. In the early part of the nineteenth century, the incorporation of a local government was viewed as a privilege bestowed by state legislatures. In their struggles to persuade state legislators to allow them to form their own governments, the residents of a place typically claimed that smaller governments were closer to the people and were therefore the best possible expressions of democracy.[58] Because legislators tended to view the cities with a measure of distrust anyway, their pleas got a favorable reception.

Gradually, state legislatures made it so much easier for groups of citizens to create new towns and cities that incorporation shifted from a privilege to a right.[59] Eventually, the legislatures of all of the states liberalized the rules by which citizens could come together to form a municipality. "By the early twentieth century suburbanites had begun carving up the metropolis, and the states had handed them the knife."[60] By 1930, every state legislature in the country had adopted liberalized incorporation laws that put the decision of whether suburban residents would or would not be annexed by the central city firmly into the hands of those who had already fled from it.

Suburban residents have pursued incorporation with great enthusiasm. According to the census of 2002, there were 19,431 municipalities in the United States.[61] The pace slowed somewhat late in the twentieth century, but by then it hardly made any difference. According to the 2002 census there were more than 35,000 municipalities in the United States. St. Louis County, Missouri, had 92; DuPage County, outside Chicago, had 38. As in the past, the proponents of incorporation are been motivated by a variety of concerns, but mainly they want to ensure that their communities will continue to develop in a way that fits with their own values. In June 2005, 94 percent of the affluent residents of Sandy Springs, Florida, voted to support incorporation to achieve smaller government so that "Sandy Springs can control its own destiny," or as another put it, "My major thing, let's make the decisions here rather than downtown."[62]

Mostly, the residents of Sandy Springs were upset that some of their tax money supported services supplied to less affluent people living in their home county. A simple desire for government closer to home combines with bare-knuckled economic self-interest in most incorporation proposals. The principle most often cited in these battles is the desire to gain control over tax revenues and land use decisions. In 2005, a resident supporting the incorporation of the Village of the Falls in Dade County, Florida (outside Miami), said, "We want to be able to have a say how our tax dollars are spent," and, he added, "we want to control zoning of our neighborhood to maintain and improve our quality of life."[63]

Control over land use decisions is important because these policies are directly connected to local economic growth. In the most affluent communities, residents may wish to keep out malls, big-box stores, and all other development they deem to be undesirable. The residents of less fortunate suburbs, however, are more likely to desire exactly the opposite. All but the richest suburban governments simply cannot raise revenues sufficient for providing adequate service levels unless they attract business; if they cannot do so, homeowners end up paying high property taxes. By the mid-1950s, local governments were fighting hard for the first generation of shopping centers, which later morphed into enclosed malls. Local officials encouraged development through direct subsidies to private firms, abatement of local taxes, and the provision of infrastructure such as access roads. In the process, those officials sometimes took money on the side, thus creating a culture of corruption that has grown up in many places.[64]

The competition for growth is especially intense in the 28 states that have authorized local sales taxes. Receipts from sales taxes can generate 40 percent or more of local revenues. Accordingly, local officials go to great lengths to land a mall, big-box store, and smaller retailers. The competition is fierce; in the words of a vice president of the Utah Taxpayers Association, "It's kind of a Cold War mentality. Basically what you have is cities competing against each other for sales tax dollars."[65] Ventura, California, provides an apt example of what local officials are willing to do. To ensure the continued viability of the Buenaventura Mall, the city agreed to a $12.6 million subsidy package that obliged it to rebate 80 percent of the sales tax revenues that would be realized by an

expansion and makeover of the mall. When a neighboring municipality, Oxnard, proposed a plan to share sales tax revenues among local governments, a Ventura city official summarily rejected the offer: "Now because their shopping center deteriorated … they want to share. I haven't seen any movement from them wanting to share Wal-Mart and all those stores along the … Freeway."[66] Battles motivated by attitudes exactly like this are constantly playing out in metropolitan areas all over the country.

Walling Off the Suburbs: Zoning

Zoning is the most powerful tool that municipalities can use to control land use. It may be used for many purposes, but without a doubt its origins are rooted in the desire to make it difficult or impossible for less affluent people to settle nearby. The nation's first zoning law was enacted in New York City on July 25, 1916. By the end of the 1920s, 768 municipalities with 60 percent of the nation's urban population had enacted zoning ordinances.[67] Quick adoption was made possible when real estate interests discovered what a useful tool zoning could be for protecting valuable land from uses deemed less desirable. As promoters of New York's ordinance explained it to audiences around the country, "The small homeowner and the little shopkeeper were now protected against destructive uses next door. Land in the lower Fifth Avenue section, which had been a drag on the market when zoning arrived, was now undergoing so successful a residential improvement that rents were on the rise. 'Blighted districts are no longer produced in New York City.'"[68] The principle claim made for zoning was that it kept land values high by segregating "better" from "inferior" land uses. In state after state, real estate groups and politicians lobbied for state laws enabling cities to zone their property.

New York City's zoning ordinance arose from the fear that fashionable sections of Fifth Avenue might be invaded by loft buildings from the garment district on the West Side. Their concerns were well founded. From 1850 to 1900, New York's population increased from 661,000 to 3,437,000. Such growth rewarded speculators and entrepreneurs who had been discerning enough to predict the path of the city's expansion. But there was a downside for the upper-class residents who kept establishing themselves at the city's edge, only to be pushed out again by encroaching waves of immigrants and businesses.

By the turn of the century, the upper class had established a mansion district and an exclusive shopping area on upper Fifth Avenue. The wealthy residents of the area felt threatened by the teeming masses only a few blocks away. The garment district, characterized by tall loft buildings in which thousands of poorly paid immigrant garment workers and carters worked, threatened to destroy the exclusive shopping district. A way—a legal way—had to be found to protect Fifth Avenue, which was often described (especially by the wealthy residents along the avenue) as the cultural fulcrum of New York, "a unique place" in "the traditions of this city and in the imagination of its citizens," "probably the most important thoroughfare in this city, perhaps any city in the New World," an area with a "history and associations rich in memories," "the common pride, of all citizens, rich and poor alike, their chief promenading avenue, and their principal shopping thoroughfare."[69] In 1916 the Fifth Avenue Association, which employed lawyers to invent this kind of lofty rhetoric, pleaded that Fifth Avenue was a special area that should be protected from encroachment. Fifty-four years later, the rationale behind zoning had changed little: "We moved out here … to escape the city. I don't want the city following me here," explained a Long Island resident.[70]

The Fifth Avenue Association looked for a way to keep loft buildings out. At first they tried to limit the building height, but soon hit upon a more ambitious scheme. In 1916, the Buildings Heights Commission, which had been appointed in 1913 to investigate the problems of tall buildings in New York City, proposed carving Manhattan into areas designated to ensure a "place for everything and everything in its place."[71] According to the commission, "the purpose of zoning was to stabilize and protect lawful investment and not to injure assessed valuations or existing uses."[72]

New York's law specified five zones, each defined by the uses and values of land. In the zoning pecking order, residential uses assumed first place even though commercial and industrial land was often more valuable. Next down the ladder were commercial business districts, differentiated on the basis of building height (the taller the buildings, the lower the place in the zoning hierarchy). Warehouses and industries were allotted last place.

New York City officials fanned out to other cities to publicize their law, in part to ensure it would be widely adopted before courts could challenge its constitutionality. "By the spring of 1918 New York had become a Mecca for pilgrimages of citizens and officials" who wanted to enact a similar ordinance. Within a year after passage of the legislation, more than 20 cities had initiated "one of the most remarkable legislative campaigns in American

history."[73] Zoning was literally mass produced; most cities copied the New York ordinance and adopted it virtually verbatim. Zoning soon became the chief weapon used by urban real estate interests to protect land prices. By 1924, the federal government had given zoning its seal of approval. A committee of the Department of Commerce drafted the Standard State Zoning Enabling Act, which served as a model zoning law for all of the nation's cities.

In 1926, the U.S. Supreme Court reviewed a case from Ohio, *Village of Euclid v. Ambler Realty Co.,* and in a landmark decision it declared that zoning was a proper use of the police power of municipal authority.[74] One interesting facet of the case revealed how zoning would be used in the future. Ambler Realty had purchased property in the village of Euclid in hopes it would become valuable as commercial property. In 1922, the village zoned Ambler's property as residential, which had the effect of instantly lowering its market value. In bringing suit against the village, Ambler argued that Euclid's zoning law had lowered its property values without due process of law. In its decision, the Court set forth a classic statement in defense of restrictive zoning, arguing that the presence of apartment, commercial, and industrial buildings undermined residential neighborhoods. The justices took care to spell out the preferred hierarchy of uses:

> With particular reference to apartment houses, it is pointed out that the development of detached house sections is greatly retarded by the coming of apartment houses … the coming of one apartment house is followed by others, interfering by their height and bulk with the free circulation of air and monopolizing the rays of the sun which otherwise would fall upon the smaller homes, and bringing, as their necessary accompaniments, the disturbing noises incident to increased traffic and business, and the occupation, by means of moving and parked automobiles, of larger portions of the streets, thus detracting from their safety and depriving children of the quiet and open spaces and play, enjoyed by those in more favored localities—until, finally the residential character of the neighborhood and its desirability as a place of detached residences is utterly destroyed.[75]

In its decision, the Court ruled that separating residential from other land uses was a legitimate use of the city's police power to promote the order, safety, and well-being of its citizens.

Zoning became popular at the very time that well-to-do suburbs began to ring the central cities—Beverly Hills, Glendale, and a multitude of other communities outside Los Angeles; Cleveland Heights, Shaker Heights, and Garfield Heights near Cleveland's city limits; and Oak Park, Elmwood Park, and Park Ridge outside Chicago. It is not difficult to understand why communities like this championed the concept of zoning. The possibility that the poor might disperse throughout metropolitan areas threatened people living in exclusive neighborhoods, both in central cities and in suburbs. From its inception, zoning became the legal means to ensure what informal social class barriers or the housing market might not have been able to achieve— the exclusion of the inner-city Great Unwashed.

To accomplish this separation, restrictive residential zoning attempted to exclude apartments, to set minimum lot sizes, or to stop new construction altogether. Apartments in the suburbs represented the possibility of class, lifestyle, or racial changes. The residential character of a tree-lined, curved-street subdivision with individual homes set well back seemed to be threatened by apartment buildings. "We don't want this kind of trash in our neighborhood" was an attitude applied even to luxury apartments. Apartments symbolized the coming to suburbia of city problems:

> The apartment in general, and the high-rise apartment in particular, are seen as harbingers of urbanization, and their visibly higher densities appear to undermine the rationale for the development of the suburbs, which includes a reaction against the city and everything for which its stands. This is particularly significant, since the association is strong in suburbia between the visual characteristics of the city and what are perceived to be its social characteristics.[76]

Any proposal to build an apartment complex invariably alarmed the residents of affluent suburban communities. An executive living in Westport, an exclusive suburb in Connecticut, exclaimed, "Thank god we still have a system that rewards accomplishment, and that we can live in places where we want to live, without having apartments and the scum of the city pushed on us."[77] Most suburbs banned the building of apartments entirely. In the 1970s, over 99 percent of undeveloped land zoned residential in the New York region excluded apartments.[78] Although this did not mean apartments could not be constructed, it did require apartment builders to secure zoning variances, a process that favored opponents.[79]

Subdivision regulations and building codes made developers go through a costly review process that artificially increased the cost of new houses and gave local residents an opportunity to oppose new developments. But the most common device for raising the minimum cost of new construction was (and is) large-lot zoning. Sometimes the regulations requiring large lots also specified minimum floor-space requirements, the use of particular building materials, and minimum street setbacks. These kinds of regulations raised the cost for the homebuyer and thus

helped protect exclusive neighborhoods.

Large-lot zoning is an effective device to keep out people with lower incomes. In some upper-class communities, this means keeping out the middle class; in some middle-class communities, it means excluding the working class. A defender of 4-acre lot minimums in Greenwich, Connecticut, said that large-lot zoning is "just economics. It's like going into Tiffany and demanding a ring for $12.50. Tiffany doesn't have rings for $12.50. Well, Greenwich is like Tiffany." A New Jersey legislator defended large-lot zoning as a means of making sure "that you can't buy a Cadillac at Chevrolet prices." An official of St. Louis County, where 90,000 acres were zoned for 3-acre lots in 1965, indicated that his suburban county welcomed anyone "who had the economic capacity [to enjoy] the quality of life that we think our county represents … be they black or white."[80]

The way the U.S. tax code is written in many ways invites such exclusionary zoning. Since taxes are among the few ways for municipal governments to generate direct income, residence literally comes at a price. In many suburban communities, however, this price also guarantees exclusivity. For instance, in many white suburbs, community pools for local residents only sprung up during the suburbanization period.[81] This had far-reaching societal consequences, leading, for instance, to large disparities in access, and, consequently, the ability to swim, between whites and African Americans.

Exclusionary zoning often makes room for industrial and commercial investment that will provide more in taxes than it consumes in services. Of course, affluent communities want the kinds of industry that does not produce bothersome pollution and traffic or bring in the wrong kind of workers. Sy Schulman, a Westchester County (New York) planning commissioner, wryly noted that the ideal industry "is a new campus-type headquarters that smells like Chanel No. 5, sounds like a Stradivarius, has the visual attributes of Sophia Loren, employs only executives with no children and produces items that can be transported away in white station wagons once a month."[82] Because the demand for such clean industry exceeds the supply, there is a fierce competition for it.

The Challenge to Exclusionary Zoning

As a tool for perpetuating residential exclusion, zoning went largely un-contested in the federal and state courts for more than half a century.[83] But in the 1970s, it was challenged in the federal courts as a violation of the equal protection clause of the Fourteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. Lawton, Oklahoma, just southwest of Oklahoma City, had attempted to use its zoning ordinance to keep out apartments, but in 1971 the federal appellate court for its circuit ruled that municipalities could not enact zoning ordinances that had the effect of excluding minorities unless they could show a nondiscriminatory intent concerning their land use objectives.[84] In April 1971, another case gave even more hope to proponents of residential integration. The U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit rejected an attempt by the city officials of Lackawanna, New York, to block the building of a black housing subdivision in a white neighborhood.[85] Clearly, suburban municipalities were under the gun to show that their zoning ordinances were not adopted simply to keep out blacks.

In a case from Black Jack, Missouri, the courts imposed a tougher standard yet, one that made it appear that exclusionary zoning might be in danger of collapsing altogether. In September 1974, a federal appeals court ruled that the city's new zoning ordinance forbidding the construction of multiunit housing had a discriminatory *effect* even if it did not have a discriminatory intent, and therefore it violated the U.S. Constitution. In June 1975, the U.S. Supreme Court refused to review the circuit court's decision, thereby upholding it. The Black Jack decision had an enormous potential to change suburban land practices in the United States: If the court's decision stood, local governments would lose their most effective weapon for keeping "undesirables" out.

It took only two years, however, for the Supreme Court to back away from their decision. The zoning ordinance of Arlington Heights, Illinois, barred a federally subsidized townhouse project from being built, a restriction identical to Black Jack's. After agreeing to hear a challenge to the law, the Court declared that the effect of zoning laws could not be used as the only argument against them; rather, they had to be shown to have been enacted with the intent to discriminate: "Disproportionate impact is not irrelevant, but it is not the sole touchstone of an invidious racial discrimination."[86]

The Supreme Court had already made it much more difficult for litigants to challenge zoning ordinances by requiring them to show a "distinct and palpable injury."[87] By 1977, then, the courts had gotten out of the business of reviewing local zoning laws except in the rare case when it could be shown that they were adopted specifically to discriminate against minorities.

The courts have consistently held that discrimination on the basis of income or class is not prohibited by the

U.S. Constitution. If suburbs can show that their zoning laws are designed to protect the tax base and the exclusive residential character of the local community, their laws will not be declared unconstitutional even if they happen to discriminate against poor people. In 1971, the Supreme Court upheld an amendment to the California constitution, passed in 1950, which required that low-rent housing could not be built without prior approval by a referendum of the voters of the city. Although clearly biased against those seeking low-income housing, the Court ruled that discrimination on the basis of income was not unconstitutional under the equal protection clause of the Fourteenth Amendment.[88] In the intervening years, that Court ruling has stood the test of time.

Since the federal courts have been unwilling to use the U.S. Constitution to break down the walls of suburban exclusion, state courts have become the main avenue of redress. But two well-publicized and highly controversial cases from Mount Laurel, New Jersey, reveal the formidable hurdles that stand in the way of meaningful change. In 1970, Mount Laurel, located not far from Camden and Philadelphia, was a mostly rural community. The area contained a small African American community that had been there since before the Civil War. Quakers had made Mount Laurel a sanctuary for runaway slaves on the Underground Railroad, and their descendants still resided in the area. Many of them lived in small shacks and converted chicken coops, and when these were condemned by the city of Mount Laurel, the residents realized they would be forced to move to the slums of Camden. They formed an action committee and applied for federal funds to build a subsidized housing project, but in 1970 the local planning and zoning board turned down the committee's proposal.

The residents then turned to the courts. They found three idealistic lawyers working for the Camden Region Legal Services who agreed to pursue a challenge to Mount Laurel's zoning laws, which allowed only single-family homes and specified big lots, large building sizes (a minimum of four bedrooms), and substantial setbacks from the street. In 1972 a trial court found that Mount Laurel's zoning laws violated language in the New Jersey constitution that guaranteed equal protection of the law for all persons. Further, the court ruled that not only Mount Laurel but all of New Jersey's 567 municipalities had an obligation to provide land uses that would meet regional housing needs. The U.S. Supreme Court subsequently refused to hear an appeal of this decision.

A few years later, in 1982, the chief justice of the New Jersey Supreme Court heard six cases showing that the city of Mount Laurel was ignoring the original trial court's decision. He combined the cases into one proceeding, and in 1983 the court issued a pathbreaking unanimous decision, widely known as *Mount Laurel II.* The court noted that the town of Mount Laurel had made no real attempt to comply with the original judicial directive; it had simply rezoned 33 of its 14,176 acres, and not one of the 515 low-income housing units required to meet the court's decision had been built.[89] To compel compliance with its original decision, *Mount Laurel II* required that New Jersey municipalities set aside land for low-income housing, if necessary, and make low-income housing attractive to developers through such devices as tax incentives and subsidies. Second, to encourage builders to pursue lawsuits against exclusionary zoning, the court established "builder's remedies," which allowed developers of low- and moderate-income housing to sue cities that tried to keep them out.

As a result of *Mount Laurel II,* New Jersey's suburban municipalities were besieged with lawsuits, and politicians were increasingly pressured to do something about the situation. Republican governor Thomas H. Kean, who won office in 1981, came out against what he called an "undesirable intrusion on the home rule principle." In a 1984 interview, Kean stated, "I don't believe that every municipality has got to be a carbon copy of another. That's a socialistic country, a Communistic country, a dictatorship."[90] Kean proposed an amendment to the New Jersey constitution that would place local zoning policy beyond review by state courts. Meanwhile, he signed legislation that moved exclusionary zoning cases out of the courts and into arbitration before a nine-member Council on Affordable Housing (COAH), to be appointed by the governor.[91] Cities and towns were given a grace period to achieve their "fair share" regional housing goals.

In actuality, most communities were let off the hook completely. Municipalities were allowed, for example, to allocate up to 25 percent of their "fair share" to elderly people, and any city was allowed to transfer up to half of its fair-share obligation to another city in the region (if the receiving city approved), along with the funds to help the receiving town pay to build the housing. Older central cities were put in the position of competing against one another for subsidies from wealthier suburbs so they could obtain funds to meet the pressing housing needs of their low-income residents. What had begun as an effort to open up the suburbs ended up doing exactly the opposite.

Despite the years of the political thunder and lightning, the payoff from the long, drawn-out Mount Laurel process was meager. Most New Jersey municipalities did nothing at all. In Mount Laurel, only 12 families had

moved into low-cost mobile homes by the late 1980s, 12 more had put down deposits on similar units, and 20 low-cost subsidized condominiums had been completed. This was the grand total of low-income housing after 17 years and millions of dollars of litigation, and protracted political uproar.[92]

The New Jersey case illustrates the difficulty of changing local land use practices when a political consensus is lacking. Mount Laurel represents the clash between two deeply held American values: equal protection of the law, on the one hand, and local home rule, on the other. Americans are reluctant to support policies that force local governments to give up their autonomy. In an era when the federal government has cut housing subsidies drastically, even if local zoning laws could be successfully challenged, it is doubtful much low-income housing would be built in the suburbs. If the New Jersey experience offers a lesson, it is that exclusionary zoning, and the residential segregation that comes with it, is here to stay.

The New Face of Enclave Politics

Over time, the suburbs have changed. People of all racial and ethnic groups have become suburban. A lot of poor people, too, have finally made the move out of the central city. Middle- and working-class suburban homes built in the immediate postwar period tended to be small tract homes or bungalows that lacked the amenities and conveniences expected by a new generation of homeowners.[93] These older subdivisions were generally located in suburbs with depressed housing prices and a low level of public services, and some of them became a new kind of urban slum, but much more isolated from jobs and transportation networks than slums located in the urban core. Many of them are located in inner suburbs close to the central cities, but others are sprinkled in the spaces between more affluent suburbs located somewhat further out.[94]

Poor people and recent immigrants find it easier to find housing in older suburbs because there is less demand for housing in those areas, often because the homes are small and long out of fashion. In the 1990s, for example, Levittown and other 1950s-era suburbs of Long Island began to attract recently arrived immigrants from the Middle East, Central and Latin America, and Asia.[95] Some families crowded illegally into homes, and their children flooded into local schools. They remained hidden from the larger society in part because they were walled off into municipalities that had few resources—and therefore they were unable to make effective claims on the political system. A pair of writers asked, "Suburbs are now becoming—albeit not always willingly—multiclass, multiethnic, and multiracial…. Can older suburbs accommodate these new ethnic groups, or will outmoded, decentralized government structures and prejudice keep them hidden *baja del agua*—underwater?"[96]

When poor residents—immigrants or otherwise—are pushed into the suburbs, an additional issues arises: Most suburban communities are not equipped to deal with residential poverty. They were formed as middle- and upper class communities, and lack the social service infrastructure of a big city. This may require a fundamental restructuring of many suburban bureaucracies. A 2015 article in the *Atlantic* points out:

> The problem speaks to a different kind of erosion of the American Dream, in which families strive to get to the much-vaunted suburbs, only to find out there's nothing for them there. And as suburbs see more and more poverty, they become the same traps that impoverished, urban neighborhoods once were, where someone born there has few chances to improve his economic standing.[97]

Low-income service jobs and affordable housing are increasingly located in the older, first ring suburbs, but these communities, in turn, lack transportation infrastructure, which is detrimental to new residents who may not be able to afford a car. Many suburban communities are alien to social programs, such as food stamps, which have long been available in cities.

The tendency to push marginalized groups "underwater" is reinforced by the rise of privatized enclaves of people trying to sever all connection to central cities and even with nearby neighborhoods.[98] Some gated communities built in the 1980s and 1990s seem like fortresses built to keep the menacing hordes at bay. The emphasis on security in some of these developments is akin to a state of war. Leisure World, a California retirement community, is surrounded by 6-foot walls topped with barbed wire. Quayside, a planned community in Florida, blends the atmosphere of a Norman Rockwell small town of the 1920s with the latest in high-tech security; laser beams sweep the perimeter, computers check the coded entry cards of the residents and store exits and entries from the property in a permanent data file, and television cameras continuously monitor the living and recreation areas. The many trappings of security constantly remind the inhabitants that the world beyond their walls is dangerous, so that "'being inside' becomes a powerful symbol for being protected, buttressed, coddled, while 'being outside' evokes exposure, isolation, and vulnerability."[99] In 2006, a Texas developer marketed a new

subdivision as a "sex-offender free" development; prospective buyers would have to pass a criminal background check.[100]

By the 1990s, fortress enclaves had become a ubiquitous feature of suburban development all across southern California. In search of high-tech security, architects for the affluent were "borrowing design features from overseas embassies and military command posts," building hardened walls, improvising secret passages and doors, and installing a dazzling array of sophisticated electronic surveillance devices.[101] The demand for gated communities in the Los Angeles suburbs was so high that they quickly replaced all other kinds of development. This same process has occurred from coast to coast, and it has led the residents of some gated communities to try to withdraw support for services supplied by local governments, on the theory that paying for privatized as well as public services constitutes "double taxation." Political movements like this make it clear that the urban crisis of the twentieth century may have come to an end only to be replaced by a different kind of politics, one that not only pits suburb against suburb, but also enclave against enclave and privatized privilege against public needs.

Endnotes

1 Quoted in James A. Clapp, *The City: A Dictionary of Quotable Thoughts on Cities and Urban Life* (New Brunswick, NJ: Center for Urban Policy Research, Rutgers University, 1984), pp. 128-129.
2 Quoted in ibid., p. 148.
3 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Census 2000,* www.census.gov/cens2000
4 Robert C. Wood, *Suburbia: Its People and Their Politics* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1958), p. 106.
5 Alan Ehrenhalt, *The Great Inversion and the Future of the American City* (New York and Toronto: Random House, 2012).
6 Ibid.
7 Elizabeth Kneebone and Alan Berube, *Confronting Suburban Poverty in America* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2013).
8 Paul A. Jargowsky, *Concentration of Poverty in the New Millenium. Changes in Prevalence, Composition, and Location of High Poverty Neighborhoods* (New York and New Jersey: The Century Foundation and Rutgers Center for Urban Research and Education, 2013).
9 Ibid.
10 Ibid.
11 See Mark Gottdiener, *Planned Sprawl: Private and Public Interests in Suburbia* (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1977).
12 Robert C. Wood, "Suburban Politics and Policies: Retrospect and Prospect," *Publius, The Journal of Federalism* 5 (Winter 1975): 51.
13 Food and Agriculture Organization and World Bank population estimates, "Population Density (People per sq. km of Land Area)," *The World Bank Data,* 2016. Accessed online: https://data.worldbank.org/indicator/en.pop.dnst
14 The term is taken from Mark Weiss, *The Rise of the Community Builders* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1987).
15 J. C. Nichols, "The Planning and Control of Outlying Shopping Centers," *Journal of Land and Public Utility Economics* 2 (January 1926): 22. By concentrating in one location and using leasing policy to determine store "mix," "Nichols created the idea of the planned regional shopping center," Kenneth T. Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier: The Suburbanization of the United States* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1985), p. 258.
16 Gwendolyn Wright, *Building the Dream: A Social History of Housing in America* (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1981), p. 202.
17 Mark H. Rose, "'There Is Less Smoke in the District,' J. C. Nichols, Urban Change and Technological Systems," *Journal of the West* 25 (January 1986): 48. Rose adds, "As late as 1917, no more than five Jewish families resided in the district, the result of resales."
18 "Up from the Potato Fields," *Time* (July 3, 1950), p. 70.
19 Ibid.
20 "The Most House for the Money," *Fortune* (October 1952), p. 156.
21 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* p. 234.
22 Wright, *Building the Dream,* p. 252.
23 "Up from the Potato Fields," p. 68.
24 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* p. 234.
25 "Up from the Potato Fields," p. 68.
26 Bruce Lambert, "Levittown Anniversary Stirs Memories of Bias," *New York Times* (December 28, 1997), p. 14.
27 Quoted in Herbert Gans, *The Levittowners: Ways of Life and Politics in a Suburban Community* (New York: Pantheon Books, 1967), p. 372.
28 Lambert, "Levittown Anniversary," p. 14.
29 Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier,* p. 241.
30 Lambert, "Levittown Anniversary," p. 14.
31 Gans, *The Levittowners,* pp. 8-9.
32 Joe R. Feagin and Robert Parker, *Building American Cities: The Urban Real Estate Game,* 2nd ed. (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1990), p. 211.
33 Robert Goldston, *Suburbia: Civic Denial* (New York: Macmillan, 1970), p. 68.
34 Kevin Fox Gotham, *Race, Real Estate, and Uneven Development: The Kansas City Experience, 1900–2000* (Albany: State University of New York Press, 2002), p. 38.
35 Ibid.
36 Ibid., pp. 34-37.
37 National Association of Real Estate Boards, *Code of Ethics* (1924), art. 34 (Washington, DC: Author).
38 Harry Grant Atkinson and L. E. Frailey, *Fundamentals of Real Estate Practice* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1946), p. 34, quoted in Evan McKenzie, *Privatopia: Homeowner Associations and the Rise of Residential Private Government* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1994), pp. 61-62.
39 *Shelly v. Kraemer,* 334 U.S. 1 (1948). The Court had struck down racial zoning some 30 years earlier in *Buchanan v. Warley,* 245 U.S. 60

(1917).
40 McKenzie, *Privatopia,* p. 11.
41 Community Associations Institute, Association Information Services, CtreeseAIS@aol.com (2006).
42 Ibid.
43 McKenzie, *Privatopia,* pp. 158-164.
44 Ibid., p. 158.
45 Ibid., pp. 163-164.
46 Dennis R. Judd, "The Rise of the New Walled Cities," in *Spatial Practices,* ed. Helen Liggett and David C. Perry (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage, 1995), pp. 144-166.
47 David Guterson, "No Place Like Home: On the Manicured Streets of a Master-planned Community," *Harper's* (November 1992), 55-64.
48 Ibid., pp. 60-61.
49 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *The 2009 Statistical Abstract of the United States,* Table 669, www.census/gov/compendia/statab.
50 Gary J. Miller, *Cities by Contract: The Politics of Municipal Incorporation* (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1981), p. 12.
51 Ibid.
52 C. B. Glasscock, *Lucky Baldwin: The Story of an Unconventional Success* (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs-Merrill, 1933), p. 140.
53 Jon C. Teaford, *City and Suburb: The Political Fragmentation of Metropolitan America, 1850–1970* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1979), pp. 18-19.
54 Charles Hoch, "City Limits: Municipal Boundary Formation and Class Segregation," in *Marxism and the Metropolis: New Perspectives in Urban Political Economy,* 2nd ed., ed. William K. Tabb and Larry Sawers (New York: Oxford University Press, 1984), pp. 101-119.
55 Miller, *Cities by Contract,* pp. 49-50. Another good example of an industrial suburb is Teterboro, New Jersey, which in 1977 had only 24 residents but employed 24,000 nonresidents. Michael N. Danielson and Jameson W. Doig, *New York: The Politics of Urban Regional Development* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1982), p. 92.
56 Teaford, *City and Suburb,* p. 18.
57 Data cited in Wood, *Suburbia,* p. 69; and in National Municipal League, Committee on Metropolitan Government, *The Government of Metropolitan Areas in the United States,* prepared by Paul Studenski with the assistance of the Committee on Metropolitan Government (New York: National Municipal League, 1930), p. 26.
58 See Anwar Syed, *The Political Theory of American Local Government* (Clinton, MA: Random House, 1966).
59 Teaford, *City and Suburb,* p. 6.
60 Ibid., p. 31.
61 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Census 2000.*
62 Jon C. Teaford, *The American Suburb: The Basics* (New York: Routledge, 2008).
63 Quoted in ibid., p. 132.
64 Dolores Hayden, *Building Suburbia: Green Fields and Urban Growth, 1820–2000* (New York: Pantheon Books), p. 168.
65 Quoted in Teaford, *City and Suburb,* p. 115.
66 Quoted in ibid., p. 112.
67 Seymour I. Toll, *Zoned America* (New York: Grossman, 1969), p. 193.
68 Ibid., p. 197.
69 Ibid., p. 159.
70 Quoted in Michael N. Danielson, *The Politics of Exclusion* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1976), p. 54.
71 Toll, *Zoned America,* p. 183.
72 Ibid., pp. 182-183.
73 Ibid., p. 187.
74 *Police power* refers to the implied powers of government to adopt and enforce laws necessary for preserving and protecting the immediate health and welfare of citizens. The meaning of this, of course, is subject to a wide variety of interpretations.
75 *Village of Euclid v. Ambler Realty Co.,* 272 U.S. 365, 47 S.Ct. 114, 71 L. Ed. 303 (1926).
76 Danielson, *The Politics of Exclusion,* pp. 53-54.
77 "The End of the Exurban Dream," *New York Times* (December 13, 1976).
78 Danielson, *The Politics of Exclusion,* p. 53.
79 Because of the fears concerning apartment developments, the planning process involving their construction was complicated, requiring petitions for zoning variances, public hearings, and lengthy review proceedings. For an excellent account of these complexities, see Daniel R. Mandelker, *The Zoning Dilemma: A Legal Strategy for Urban Change* (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs-Merrill, 1971).
80 Quoted in Danielson, *The Politics of Exclusion,* p. 60.
81 Rose Hackman, "Swimming While Black: The Legacy of Segregated Public Pools Lives On," *Guardian,* August 4, 2015. Accessed online: www.theguardian.com/world/2015/aug/04/black-children-swimming-drownings-segregation
82 Quoted in Merrill Folson, "Westchester Finds Influx of Business a Worry," *New York Times* (April 18, 1967); cited in Danielson and Doig, *New York,* p. 90.
83 A detailed discussion of the legal status of zoning is not included in this section. For further information, the following sources are especially useful: Danielson, *The Politics of Exclusion;* Richard F. Babcock, *The Zoning Game* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1969); Richard F. Babcock and Fred P. Bosselman, *Exclusionary Zoning: Land Use Regulation and Housing in the 1970s* (New York: Praeger, 1973); Daniel R. Mandelker, *Managing Our Urban Environment* (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs-Merrill, 1971); Randall W. Scott, ed., *Management and Control of Growth,* vol. 1 (New York: Urban Land Institute, 1975); and David Listokin, ed., *Land Use Controls Present Problems and Future Reform* (New Brunswick, NJ: Center for Urban Policy Research, Rutgers University, 1975).
84 *Dailey v. City of Lawton,* 425 F.2d 1037 (1970).
85 *Kennedy Park Homes v. City of Lackawanna,* 436 F.2d 108 (1971).
86 Quoted in *St. Louis Globe-Democrat* (January 11, 1977).
87 In 1975 the Supreme Court made it more difficult to challenge exclusionary zoning in federal courts by "refusing standing"—dismissing a case on the grounds that the plaintiffs had no right to sue. Those who want to challenge an exclusionary ordinance must prove "distinct and palpable injury"; a suit cannot be based on general injury to those who do not live in the town but want to live there; see *Warth v. Seldin,* 442

U.S. 490 (1975).

88 See *James v. Valtierra,* 91 S.Ct. 133 (1971), and *Shaffer v. Valtierra,* 402 U.S. 137 (1971).

89 Joseph F. Sullivan, "Restless Seeker for Justice," *New York Times* (January 22, 1983); Robert Hanley, "After 7 Years, Town Remains under Fire for Its Zoning Code," *New York Times* (January 22, 1983); Anthony DePalma, "N.J. Housing Woes Are All Over the Map," *New York Times* (April 17, 1983).

90 Robert Hanley, "Some Jersey Towns, Yielding to Courts, Let In Modest Homes," *New York Times* (February 29, 1984).

91 1985 J.J. Sess. Law Serv. 222 (West).

92 Anthony DePalma, "Subsidized Housing Hurt in Ailing Market," *New York Times* (May 15, 1990).

93 Ibid., pp. 42-43.

94 Ibid.

95 Rosalyn Baxandall and Elizabeth Ewen, *Picture Windows: How the Suburbs Happened* (New York: Perseus Books, 2000), p. 239.

96 Ibid., p. 250.

97 Alana Semuels, "Suburbs and the New American Poverty." *The Atlantic* (January 7, 2015). Accessed online: www.theatlantic.com/business/archive/2015/01/suburbs-and-the-new-american-poverty/384259/

98 Peter O. Muller, *Contemporary Suburban America* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1981), p. 180.

99 Trevor Boddy, "Underground and Overhead: Building the Analogous City," in *Variations on a Theme Park: The New American City and the End of Public Space,* ed. Michael Sorkin (New York: Noonday Press, 1992), p. 139.

100 Betsy Blaney, "Texas Developers to Build Sex Offender-free Subdivision," *Chicago Tribune* (June 15, 2005), p. 34.

101 Mike Davis, "Fortress Los Angeles: The Militarization of Urban Space," in *Variations on a Theme Park,* ed. Sorkin, p. 173.

CHAPTER 11

Governing the Fragmented Metropolis

The Byzantine (Dis)Organization of Urban Regions

Population movement from the urban core is a feature of urban development all over the world. With transportation breakthroughs such as automated rail systems and the automobile, urban areas in the advanced Western countries have been spreading out for at least a century.[1] But what distinguishes the urban pattern in the United States most clearly from that of other Western nations is not the extent of sprawl, but the fracturing of metropolitan areas into a multitude of separate governments. In many countries in Europe, as well as in most other nations, there are fewer suburbs because cities tend to encompass a large part of their metropolitan areas. In addition, national and regional governments finance and administer crucial services that are, in the United States, provided by municipalities and special districts. American suburbs are autonomous entities that make taxation, spending, and land use decisions without any oversight from higher levels of government. There are a lot of them. The 2012 federal census of governments counted 90,106 local governments in the United States.[2] Statistics like these have led to a consensus that the "degree of governmental fragmentation in the United States is unique among the urban-industrial societies."[3]

The extreme fragmentation of urban regions makes it hard to find solutions to problems that are truly regional in scope. These difficulties have been overcome, to some degree, by the construction of a staggeringly complex maze of governmental responsibilities. Typically, urban counties do such things as administer building codes, run systems of parks and libraries, operate health clinics, offer police services, build roads and bridges, manage jails and courts, and sponsor 911 emergency services. Special-purpose districts also supply a variety of services that overlap municipal boundaries, and some of these, such as sewer and water and mass transit districts, are metropolitan-wide in scope. But most of the dozens of special districts within metropolitan areas are much smaller and virtually invisible. They raise taxes for and manage everything from hospitals to fire protection to mosquito abatement, plus a great number of other very specialized services. The jerry-rigged nature of these arrangements makes a degree of regional service provision possible, but a coherent system of regional governance remains out of reach. It also makes many people wish for a system of regional governance that would be more democratic, efficient, and effective.

At a time when conversations have started shifting from "cities" to "metro regions," and "megalopolises," we have started to overlook the governmental fragmentation of our metro regions throughout the country. In a political sense, the "bigger picture" of the metropolitan region is near meaningless, because barely any administrative or bureaucratic structures exist to connect such regions internally.

OUTTAKE

The Costs of Sprawl Are Hotly Debated

The urban specialist Neal Peirce has called Americans "the champion land hogs of history" because the country's urban areas are growing in land area at a rate four to eight times faster than the growth of the national population. The cost of sprawl, he said, is "frightening" because it brings "despair in the inner cities, environmental degradation, undermining of old neighborhoods and suburbs."

Peirce and other critics of urban sprawl have amassed convincing evidence to demonstrate its negative effects. They cite the many studies to show that it is more expensive to supply infrastructure—new highways, streets, and bridges; schools; sewer and water systems; street lighting; gas, electric, and telephone hookups; libraries and parks

—to low-density areas than to high-density areas. They demonstrate that sprawl has contributed to the decline of the central cities and the abandonment of neighborhoods in the cities and older suburbs. And finally, they show that governmental fragmentation slows the economic growth of urban regions.

Critics of sprawl also argue that it creates serious environmental problems. Evidence to support their point of view is not difficult to find. Thousands of acres of farmland, wetlands, and open space disappear each year. Runoff from highways, parking lots, and lawns pollutes streams and rivers; auto and truck traffic spews ozone-depleting and greenhouse gases into the atmosphere. Excess energy consumption and air pollution are implicated in global environmental problems. Urban residents in the United States consumed about four times as much gasoline per capita as did urban residents in Europe in 1990. Urban sprawl was the basic reason for this difference. In the late 1980s, annual consumption in sprawled-out Houston was 567 gallons per person, compared to 335 gallons in New York City, where high population density facilitated the use of mass transit. (In Manhattan, gasoline consumption was only 90 gallons per person.)

Furthermore, a 2014 study conducted by researchers at the University of California–Berkeley found that the massive suburban sprawl around dense urban centers is cancelling out the positive effects of the inner cities. The researchers, who compared per household carbon emissions, found that those households with the highest carbon emissions were located about 15 to 45 minutes outside the city center.

Despite the accumulating weight of such facts, it should not be supposed that there is only one point of view about urban sprawl. In fact, it is a hotly contested issue. Fred Siegel, a prominent scholar and writer, has argued that sprawl is a logical outcome of prosperity and the pursuit of the American dream, "an expression of the upward mobility and growth in home-ownership generated by our past half-century of economic success." Expanding on this theme, he maintains that people on the lower end of the economic scale are able to find opportunities to escape from poor neighborhoods by moving into housing left behind by the middle class. In this way, he says, the construction of new housing at the metropolitan edge helps to expand opportunities for all residents of the metropolis. Siegel's logic is hard to refute. As their incomes go up, people usually move from high-density to low-density neighborhoods in a search for more space and better amenities. Low-density neighborhoods are usually located in newer communities located at some remove from the urban core. Until the Great Recession of 2008–2010, one in seven of newly constructed homes exceeded 3,000 square feet, a size reserved only for wealthy families in the past.

On the other hand, the creation of such new living spaces in the suburbs is less and less likely to make space for poorer people in the inner cities, as downtown areas are also becoming increasingly expensive places to live. And even so, the challenges of climate change will sooner or later have a strong impact on life and welfare for all people, but especially the poor in developing countries. Therefore, it is important to start the conversation about more sustainable alternatives to urban sprawl.

The two perspectives on urban sprawl suggest that there is a contradiction between freedom to choose, on the one hand, and regulation and planning, on the other. When forced to choose between these two values urban residents often seem to be of two minds. Americans have always been keenly sensitive about anything that intrudes on their individual property rights, but suburban residents have generally been willing to make an exception when it comes to land use controls such as zoning, growth control measures that impose a limit on housing permits, green belts to preserve open space, and ordinances restricting new infrastructure development. The problem is that local control over such policies comes at the cost of metropolitan-wide planning. The paradox is that even when people are disturbed about unplanned and runaway urban growth, their deep attachment to small-scale governance makes it hard to devise metropolitan-wide solutions to unplanned urban growth.

Sources: Neal Peirce, "The Senselessness of Urban Sprawl," *National Journal* (September 25, 1993), p. 2326; Robert Burchell, Naveed Shad, David Listokin, and Hilary Phillips, *The Costs of Sprawl—Revisited* (Washington, DC: National Academy Press, 1998); Arthur C. Nelson and Kathryn A. Foster, "Metropolitan Governance Structure and Income Growth," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 21, no. 3 (1999): 309-324; Peter G. Newman and Jeffrey R. Kenworthy, "Gasoline Consumption and Cities," *Journal of the American Planning Association* (Winter 1989): 26-27; Christopher Jones and Daniel M. Kammen, "Spatial Distribution of U.S. Household Carbon Footprints Reveals Suburbanization Undermines Greenhouse Gas Benefits of Urban Population Density," *Environmental Science and Technology* 48, no. 2 (2014), 895–902; Fred Siegel, "Is Regional Government the Answer?" *The Public Interest* (Fall 1999): 86.

Over the years, there have been many attempts to bring some order to the task of governing metropolitan regions. The remedies that have been proposed may be grouped under four labels: Metro Gov, the New

Regionalism, Smart Growth, and the New Urbanism. The Metro Gov movement, which began about a century ago, has been based on the ambitious idea that urban regions should be governed, as far as possible, by a single metropolitan-wide government or by a few consolidated governmental bodies. A drive through the many towns and suburban jurisdictions that make up a typical urban area makes it obvious to even the casual observer that metro reform has failed to achieve most of its aims. The *New Regionalism,* which dates back to the late 1980s, was founded on the premise that the flight from the cities to the suburbs has produced an unacceptable degree of inequality within urban areas. Rather than trying to reduce the number of governments, the advocates for a "new regionalism" have emphasized the importance of achieving cooperation among local governments to moderate the intense interjurisdiction competition for economic growth and reduce extreme differences in tax burdens and service quality. In the late 1990s, the *Smart Growth* movement came together around a collection of proposals designed to achieve "balanced" regional development by regulating land use and promoting community and environmental planning. At about the same time, the *New Urbanism* came onto the scene. This movement was energized by the idea that better urban design and architecture are the necessary ingredients for countering sprawl and achieving healthy neighborhoods and communities. Each of these movements confronts a formidable obstacle: the incredibly complicated governmental mosaic that already exists in America's urban regions.

The New Urban Form

The sprawled metropolis has spawned a set of chronic and sometimes vexing problems. Commuting is expensive, and is likely to become more so over the long run. In 2014, a gallon of gasoline cost about $3.20 in the United States, although it was still cheap compared to the nearly $10 that people in the United Kingdom paid, or the more than $7 per-gallon price on average in the Eurozone countries. Commuters experience traffic congestion and gridlock almost every day. The public has become concerned about such issues as air pollution, the loss of open space and farmland, and polluted water. Urban sprawl has blossomed as an important public policy issue. Growth control measures began to appear in the early 1970s, and the movement to regulate the pace and location of development continued to gain momentum over time. People want the freedom to move where they please, but they are not happy when their neighborhoods seem threatened by a steady stream of newcomers.

However serious the problems associated with sprawl may be, it is here to stay. One reason is that local governments jealously guard their powers. The other equally important reason is that the geographic structure of metropolitan areas has become basically fixed. The old urban form, which found a big city surrounded by rank on rank of spreading suburbs, has given way to a metropolis organized around many nodes of activity.[4] Once the suburbs were wholly dependent satellites of cities, where most of the jobs and businesses were located. Today, however, the center is only one of several clusters of activity. For a long time, suburban development was mainly a residential movement, but by the late 1940s jobs began to decentralize even faster than population.[5] Retailing followed in when regional shopping malls began to spring up to cater to the shopping and entertainment needs of suburban consumers.[6] Suburban residents no longer needed to go downtown, and thus a historic link between cities and suburbs was severed.

Manufacturing has been moving out of the old industrial cities for almost a century because of technical innovations that freed factories from a dependence on rail connections. Electrification made single-story plants more economical than multistory buildings that housed belt-driven machinery powered by water or steam. In the twentieth century, federal tax law allowed manufacturers to take tax deductions through "accelerated depreciation of assets" when they abandoned inner-city factories; at the same time, investment tax credits allowed manufacturing firms to write off the cost of new plant and equipment. In these ways the federal tax code subsidized the flight of industrial jobs to the suburbs and to the Sunbelt.[7] Manufacturing firms also left northern urban areas because they viewed them as hotbeds of union organizing and unrest.[8] By 1970, a majority of the manufacturing jobs in metropolitan areas were located outside the central cities, and many were moving out of older urban areas to the Sunbelt or abroad.

The service sector was the last to leave. Historically, professional and business activities were concentrated in or near central business districts, but the building of integrated urban highway systems fundamentally changed the urban landscape. As employees left the city and commuted greater distances to work, it made less sense for firms to stay downtown. Routine service employment, the so-called back-office functions such as copying and secretarial services, left expensive downtown office space. In 1975, for the first time, the volume of office construction in the suburbs exceeded the pace of construction in central cities. Higher-level and higher-paid corporate services,

however, such as legal assistance, corporate consulting, accounting services, and investment services, continued to be located in the downtowns of large cities, partly for prestige reasons. Corporations, though, have many components, so that even if they kept their management and professionalservice functions downtown they generally moved everything else either to suburbs or out of the country. Suburban office parks evolved as still another option. By moving their professional staff onto self-contained campuses, companies were able to recreate many of the characteristics of central business districts in the suburbs.

Within a few years, the suburbs became basically independent of their core cities. Cross-commuting became common; by 1980, twice as many people commuted from suburb to suburb as from the central city to suburb.[9] The historic urban form, in which a city is surrounded by dependent suburbs, was replaced by the "polynucleated metropolis" made up of several nodes of concentrated activity that combined residential, retail, recreational, light industry, and service firms. This geographic pattern has sometimes been called *exurbanization* or even *counterurbanization*,[10] plus a variety of odd and often confusing labels, such as "urban villages, technohubs, suburban downtowns, suburban activity centers, major diversified centers, urban cores, galactic city, pepperoni-pizza cities, a city of realms, superburbia, disurb, service cities, perimeter cities, and even peripheral centers."[11] What these entities have in common is that they keep springing up at the outer boundary of urban regions, often near freeway interchanges and airports.

Significant numbers of the new suburbs are large—in fact, some have grown bigger than their nearby central cities. Two researchers coined the term "boomburbs," which they define as suburbs that have grown by at least double-digit rates for every decade since 1970, and finally reaching a population of at least 100,000 by the census of 2000.[12] They discovered that 54 cities across the nation met this statistical standard, and that 12 of them contained more than 200,000 people. The total number of boomburbs in the nation might seem small, but they held one-quarter of all residents living in small- and medium-sized urban areas.[13] The census of 2006 showed that 17 boomburbs had joined the ranks of the 100 largest U.S. cities.[14]

Despite their sudden appearance, boomburbs have attracted little attention, probably because they tend to lack the physical form and identity that might make them stand out. They generally do not have tall buildings and heavily favor the automobile over pedestrians, office workers tend to be clustered in office parks, and a large proportion of shopping is done in strip malls and mall clusters. Perhaps the most surprising fact about boomburbs is that they often defied the suburban stereotype. Forty-five of the 54 contained a larger percentage of Hispanic residents and 42 have a higher proportion of Asians than did the national population.[15]

Boomburbs are, in essence, fully developed cities, with a mixture of office, retail, residential, and sometimes light industry. They differ markedly from one another, but few, if any, fit the profile of the exclusive residential suburb or of the one-dimensional bedroom community. High-rise office and condominium towers are beginning to sprout in some of them and new housing construction often favors townhouse and condominium construction over free-standing homes. The growth of the boomburbs makes it clear that urban sprawl is tightly woven into the fabric of urban regions. The multi-nodal metropolis is here to stay.

The Concerns about Sprawl

The term *urban sprawl* generally refers to low-density residential development. Research published in 1974 defined it as residential density of two dwellings per acre, but a late 1980s study and another conducted by the Environmental Protection Agency in the early 1990s defined it as residential density of three dwellings per acre or less.[16] Even if we use the latter definition sprawl is rare in Europe and Asia, where land is scarcer than in the United States and land use controls are the norm. In such contexts, urban areas may be spreading outward, but not in such a way as to create the social and political dynamic that characterizes sprawl in the United States: low-density development at the edge of metropolitan regions that consumes huge tracts of land and entails the abandonment of older areas at the urban core.

When people move farther out, they generally are choosing lower-density suburbs as places to live. The result is that land is gobbled up at a rate all out of proportion to the population growth of urban regions—indeed, sprawl occurs even in metropolitan areas with steady-state or declining populations. For example, although the New York region's population grew by only 5 percent between 1964 and 1989, in the same years the amount of developed land increased by 61 percent.[17] Similarly, from 1950 to 1995, the population of the St. Louis region increased by just 35 percent, but the area of developed land exploded by more than 10 times that much, by 355 percent.[18] Even in slow-growth regions people have been drifting to the outer edges. From 1986 to 2001, 73,000 people moved

from St. Louis County out to St. Charles County; in the same period St. Charles County attracted only 5,500 people from outside the metropolitan region. St. Charles County is now filling up, and its growth is now outpaced by Warren County, which lies still even farther out.[19] This restless movement to the urban edge is why almost all urban regions continued to sprawl in the 1990s, regardless of their population growth rates.[20]

Why does land disappear so fast even in slow-growth urban regions? First, families have become smaller in recent decades because of the increasing number of single-parent families, childless and unmarried couples, and singles. The smaller size of the typical suburban family requires more dwellings for a given population size and makes many of the single-family houses built only a couple of decades ago obsolete. Second, although average family sizes have been declining, the size of homes has steadily increased in step with a desire for more luxuries and amenities (although, it should be noted, the Great Recession arrested this trend for a time). And third, when people move within metropolitan areas, they tend to leave higher-density neighborhoods nearer the urban core for lower-density subdivisions farther out; only a small percentage move in the other direction. In a study conducted in the early 1990s, more than two-thirds of the survey respondents said that they preferred to live in low-density, single-family neighborhoods than in denser neighborhoods closer to the central city.[21]

Despite an overwhelming preference for low-density living, many suburban residents have discovered that there is a downside. Commuters experience some of the negative effects of sprawl every day, firsthand and close up. By the last decades of the twentieth century highway congestion had increased to the point that the daily commute has ceased to be merely annoying. In November 1999, *USA Today,* in a special report on national gridlock, offered up one horror story after another. The average commuter's daily experience seemed to be summed up by a Chicago driver's description of a bottleneck called "the Hillside Strangler": "It's not even a traffic jam. It's my enemy. It's my daytime bad dream."[22] In 2001, the knot of off-ramps that made up the Strangler was finally eliminated, but many other gridlocked spots remained. A study conducted in 2005 ranked Chicago second in the nation as the most congested (Los Angeles had the honor of first place). The report estimated that in 2003 Chicago-area commuters spent 58 hours in traffic jams each year, an increase of 55 hours from only three years earlier. The authors concluded that the term "rush hour" had become virtually meaningless.[23] However, by 2016, Chicago had slipped down the congestion index, ranking only 10th among the most congested cities nationwide.[24] This, according to the most recent study conducted by the navigation system maker TomTom, was based on the fact that traffic congestion is strongly correlated with economic job growth.[25] In the United States, post-economic crisis recovery has been uneven, centering on the East and West coasts.[26] Therefore the latest index features almost exclusively coastal cities with Honolulu (ranked 6th) and Chicago (ranked 10th) being the exceptions. Furthermore, the West coast cities seem to dominate in terms of traffic congestion, with L.A. and San Francisco ranking 1st and 2nd respectively, and New York City (ranked 3rd), Miami (ranked 7th), and Washington, DC (ranked 8th) being the only featured East coast cities.[27]

If commuters think that urban highways have become more crowded in the last few years, they are right. In the 1970s, there were 61 yards of roadway per vehicle in the United States, but by 1986 this space had shrunk by more than one-third, to 39 yards.[28] The number of vehicles on the roads has increased dramatically. Trucks by the dozen fill rearview mirrors because they have substantially eclipsed trains for the movement of goods. The number of licensed drivers jumped 65 percent between 1970 and 1997, but registered vehicles increased even more, by 87 percent. Demographic changes accounted for the higher traffic volumes. Although the U.S. population rose by only 32 percent between 1970 and 1997, the number of women in the workplace jumped by 240 percent.[29] As more women entered the workforce and recreational vehicles joined the family car in the garage, two- and three-car families became the norm. At the same time, cross-commuting gradually replaced trips to the metropolitan center. Even by 1980, years before sprawl reached its current dimensions, over 40 percent of all work trips were suburb to suburb, and only 20 percent were from suburb to the central city in the average metropolitan region.[30] Reverse commuting—travel by central-city residents to jobs in edge cities or elsewhere in the suburbs—also increased.[31] Longer commutes combined with increasing gas prices drove up the costs of getting to work. In 2000, some residents of sprawled-out metropolitan areas such as Houston and Atlanta spent more on transportation than on housing.[32]

A rising concern about sprawl became evident by the mid-1990s. In May 1995, *Newsweek* magazine devoted a cover story to the problems of urban sprawl in New York, Memphis, Miami, Los Angeles, San Francisco, and Washington, DC. In all of these regions, said the *Newsweek* reporters, sprawl had created "blighted metropolitan landscapes" of strip malls, traffic, and monotonous sameness. In reference to California, they observed, "No

wonder they're so sterile—sterility is designed into them!" They wrote about "the new American phenomenon, the suburban slum," with aging tract housing interspersed with strip development.[33]

Four years later, in its July 19, 1999, issue, *Newsweek* featured sprawl again, this time declaring it had become an urgent public issue, part of a "livability" agenda being promoted by affluent suburban residents, suburban politicians, and Vice President Al Gore. The key elements of this agenda, according to *Newsweek,* included "the triple evils of sprawl: air pollution, traffic congestion, and visual blight."[34] In the fall of 1999, as part of its continuing "Challenge to Sprawl Campaign," the Sierra Club released its annual ratings of how effectively the states were regulating sprawl.[35] News stories about the report were carried in national and numerous local newspapers, often as feature stories.

Even the conservative *Wall Street Journal* chimed in with an article describing a battle between community groups and developers in the suburbs surrounding Colorado Springs, Colorado. According to the *Journal,* the conflicts in Colorado Springs were only one of the many skirmishes occurring in the rapidly growing metropolitan areas of the Rocky Mountain West. Always an advocate of an unfettered market, the *Journal* nevertheless noted the efforts of Boulder, Colorado, to slow growth through land-use regulation.[36] A couple of months later, in January 2000, the *Journal* reported that campaigns against sprawl had inspired a political revolution that was toppling pro-growth politicians.[37] Apparently trying to change public sentiment in its urban area, the *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* ran one of a series of articles on sprawl under the headline "Urban Sprawl Is a Hot Topic." The paper seemed puzzled by the attitude of its readers, observing, "But Missouri's attitude seems to be: 'What, us worry?'"[38]

Some politicians joined the media by turning sprawl into a political issue. In 1999, the editors of *Governing,* a magazine widely read by state and local public officials, devoted two issues and several other articles to the topic of urban sprawl.[39] In January 1997, Democratic governor Parris Glendening of Maryland promised to fight for an initiative to curb sprawl, and the next year the Republican governor of New Jersey, Christie Todd Whitman (appointed in 2001 by President Bush to head the Environmental Protection Agency), shepherded an even stronger bill through her legislature. In the latter half of the 1990s, more than half the nation's governors took on issues related to sprawl.

Years before it came onto the national scene the growth control movement was well underway. Leaders of local anti-growth crusades promoted caps on the pace of new construction, impact fees (imposed on developers as a way of paying some of the public costs of growth), linkage fees (which require developers to help pay for costs linked to development, such as affordable housing, schools, and day care), and a variety of other measures. Growth controls spread rapidly in the 1970s; by 1975, they were in effect in over 300 jurisdictions across the country.[40] Between 1971 and 1986, more than 150 growth control measures appeared on local ballots; 50 measures appeared on ballots in 1986 alone, with three-quarters of them winning.[41] More than a decade later, in 1998, voters passed 70 percent of the 240 local no-growth measures placed on ballots.[42]

Interestingly, regulations meant to curb growth were pushed hardest in politically conservative areas of southern California. In 1986, over the objections of Mayor Tom Bradley, Los Angeles voters passed Proposition U, which effectively ended most new office construction in residential neighborhoods on the West Side and in the San Fernando Valley.[43] In the same election, voters in Newport Beach in Orange County, a bastion of conservatism, defeated plans for a $400 million mixed-use complex overlooking the harbor. The no-growth forces won even though they were outspent in the campaign by $500,000 to $10,000.[44]

Growth control was especially popular in wealthier cities. Ventura County, California, provides an example of the kinds of regulations commonly adopted. In November 1998, voters passed several initiatives to create urban growth boundaries, which were designed to limit new development at the edges of the county's cities and towns. The new rules specified that areas of land located within designated growth boundaries could not be rezoned for development until 2020. To ensure their wishes could not be overridden by public officials, these laws even took the power to rezone land protected from development out of the hands of the county's board of supervisors.[45] In the same month, New Jersey voters approved $1 billion to protect about half of the state's undeveloped open land from urban development.[46] More than 2,000 miles away, in November 2002, Nevada voters approved a conservation bond issue to protect open lands from unplanned sprawl. The impetus for the measure came in response to a spurt of unbridled growth; in only 30 years the state's population had soared from less than a half million people to more than 2 million. By 2000, only 21 percent of Nevada residents were natives. The newcomers were trying to keep the Las Vegas and Reno urban areas from becoming as crowded as the places they

had left.[47]

In the new century, anti-sprawl politics began to go well beyond measures designed to directly merely regulate the pace of growth. In 2004, a statewide initiative passed that sharply curbed Oregon's aggressive land use laws, but three years later voters reversed that decision when it got tagged as promoting sprawl and taxpayer-funded bailouts for greedy developers. Transportation projects that seemed to promote sprawl often went down in crushing defeat. For example, voters in the Virginia suburbs of Washington, DC, fearful of a new stream of movement from the city, defeated Governor Mark Warner's 2002 proposal for a sales tax to finance new highway and transit construction.[48]

Despite voters' concerns, sprawl has remained a local rather than a national issue because there are so many other things on the nation's public policy agenda, such as the state of the economy, national security, health care reform, battles over social issues, and environmental regulation. In January 1999, Vice President Al Gore announced a proposal (never adopted) by the Clinton administration to spend $9.5 billion to preserve open space, build roads and public transit, and encourage local communities to plan new schools.[49] At one point, Gore promised to make urban sprawl an issue in the 2000 presidential campaign. Calling it his "livability agenda," Gore said the issue of urban sprawl would appeal to people caught in "tidal flows of traffic" who spent too much time trying to get to work and back, at the cost to their family lives. According to Gore, "There have been races for governor and mayor all over this country where the voters have made it very clear that this is an issue about which they feel passionately, and I plan in the next 13 months to take this issue to the voters of America."[50] When challenged on the question of whether such a complex topic could be turned into a hot political item, Gore answered, "Give me time."

In the end, the issue of sprawl played no role at all in the campaign. For his part, Republican presidential candidate George W. Bush refused to talk about it, saying it should be left to state and local governments.[51] In the 2004 presidential campaign, neither candidate mentioned urban sprawl at all, and neither did the candidates in the 2008 campaign for the White House. A very modest, though indirect, effort to address the problem appeared with the passage of the American Recovery and Reinvestment Act, signed into law by President Barack Obama on February 17, 2009. It reserved $12 billion for mass transit improvements, though not for the expansion of existing systems.[52]

Interestingly, public concerns about sprawl peaked just as some started to see a change in growth trends in and around cities. In 2004, two researchers from Rutgers University, a demographer and an economist, published a major study using data from 31 counties in the NYC metro region.[53] They found that, after the suburbs had grown explosively for a half century after 1945, exclusively suburban growth had come to an end in the late 1990s.[54] Since then, according to this study, growth in the urban core had increased, largely matching the growth in the suburbs.[55] While this may not end sprawl, it at the very least indicates a densification of housing developments in the suburbs *and* the city. While its long-term consequences are still unknown, Hughes and Seneca identified a new and important trend in their study, which continues to take shape—with slight regional modifications—in metro regions across the country.

In any case, it is clear that urban sprawl cannot be curbed without far-reaching changes in public policies and governance arrangements. There is an obvious tension, however, between governmental regulation and the deeply held cultural values of individualism and free enterprise that define American politics. Leaders of four movements —Metro Gov, the New Regionalism, Smart Growth, and the New Urbanism—have attempted to negotiate the treacherous terrain between personal autonomy and regional planning. Over the years, there have been numerous campaigns to reform the governance of metropolitan regions, but the successes have been relatively few. The New Regionalism has been directed mainly at more modest efforts to bring about interlocal agreements, share tax burdens, and achieve a level of cooperation in providing services as a way of reducing the extreme inequalities of local governments. The proponents of Smart Growth also shy away from large-scale solutions and believe that local governments must take the lead in reducing the environmental effects of unregulated urban growth and unplanned land use. For their part, the New Urbanists focus on land use and architectural regulations meant to facilitate development on a "human scale." We now will discuss these four movements in turn.

A History of Metro Gov

The idea that governments should be guided by a singular ideal—the efficient provision of public services at the lowest possible cost—goes back a century, to the Progressive Era and the municipal reform tradition. The

reformers who focused on municipal corruption and machine governance in the old industrial cities were cut from the same cloth as the reformers who pushed for metropolitan governance. The same principles of "good government" that applied to the cities were also relevant, they thought, to the governance of the metropolis. In both instances, efficiency and a clear distinction between politics and public administration were considered to be the main pillars of reform.[56] Reformers compared the proliferation of governments in urban regions to electoral wards in the cities—in their view, wards were nothing but hotbeds of parochial politics, with their representatives lacking the capacity or the perspective to attend to the overall problems of the city. Likewise, they said, too many governments at the regional level made it impossible to deliver urban services at the lowest cost. Thus, writing in 1912, one reformer said, "Here [in metropolitan Boston] are thirty-eight towns and cities as intimately related to everything that concerns daily life as the wards of an American city, but with no power or means … of constructing, or improving public works or of taking public action that is for the metropolitan district as a whole."[57] Obviously this analysis led to only one conclusion: metropolitan areas should be governed in the simplest and most cost-effective manner, that is, by a single governmental entity.

Almost 20 years later, an influential reformer picked up the same theme when he described what he saw as the parochialism and chaos arising from the fragmentation of local government: "They [the many governments] tend to divert attention of the inhabitants from the fact that they are members of one large community and lead them to act as members of separate units. They result in great variation in municipal regulations … and in standards of services, in sectional treatment of problems which are essentially metropolitan."[58] The "metro gov" reformers who promoted the idea that urban regions should be governed by a single governmental unit agreed to the principle, "Only a government with community-wide jurisdiction can plan and provide the services, physical facilities, guidance, and controls necessary to relate functional plans with real plans. None of the metropolitan areas has such a government today."[59]

The metro gov reformers were fired by the conviction that truth and virtue were on their side. Such confidence fueled the bitter disappointment they felt when voters rejected their proposals. In metropolitan areas all across the country, campaign after campaign, decade after decade, the reformers put proposals before the voters, and they came up empty handed almost every time. Between 1921 and 1979, reformers went to voters 83 times in various metropolitan areas in an attempt to gain approval of city–county consolidations. They succeeded just 17 times, and only two of those successes came in metropolitan areas of 250,000 or more (Nashville–Davidson County, Tennessee, 1962, and Jacksonville–Duval County, Florida, 1967). (The consolidation of Indianapolis with Marion County, Indiana, in 1969 was imposed by the state legislature and not by a popular referendum.)[60]

In other cases, reformers tried to consolidate governments by creating two-tier systems (a metropolitan district with specific service responsibilities, but with municipalities and counties continuing to possess important powers). The most notable success came with the creation of Metropolitan Dade County (Miami) in 1957. Under this reform, the county assumed many of the responsibilities (such as fire and police protection, traffic control, parks and recreation, health and welfare programs, air pollution control, and some other activities) formerly assumed by municipal governments.

Most of the ambitious schemes to impose metropolitan government went down in flames because both suburban and central-city voters wanted to preserve local control. The experience in the St. Louis metropolitan area was typical, except there the reformers tried, and failed, more times than anywhere else: in 1926, 1930, 1959, 1962, and 1989. In 1926, the voters in St. Louis County defeated a proposal to consolidate the city of St. Louis with the county. Four years later, the county's voters vetoed a somewhat less ambitious proposal that would have placed the city and county under a regional government, except for a few services and public functions.[61]

In 1959, local advocates for metropolitan reform gave it another try. This time they floated the idea of a Greater St. Louis City–County District that would have assumed responsibility for forging a regional plan and for promoting economic development; managing regional mass transit and traffic control on major streets and highways; administering all sewage facilities; and supervising all police training, communications, and civil defense. Municipalities would have been left with the responsibility of regulating local street traffic and providing police and fire protection and garbage pickup. Municipal officials reacted with a furious campaign of opposition, and voters soundly defeated the plan.[62] Tempers had not even completely cooled before reformers made another try. This time, in 1962, the "borough plan" would have placed the city and county under a single government and divided the county into 22 boroughs, each exercising some limited powers. This plan would have eliminated all existing municipalities. The plan was defeated by a 4-to-1 landslide, an even more lopsided margin than in 1959.

Despite the long string of ignominious defeats, the battle for reform in the St. Louis area was still not over. In 1989, an elected board of freeholders placed a consolidation plan before the voters of St. Louis County (language in the Missouri constitution empowered such a board of "freeholders"—property owners—to make such proposals). In addition to reducing the number of municipalities in the county from 90 to 37, the plan would have transferred most land use, zoning, and building inspections to the county and also created a county commission to oversee fire and emergency services. It quickly became obvious that opposition to reform was alive and well even though almost three decades had passed since the previous reform effort. An acrimonious campaign ensued, and both sides readied for the scheduled June 20, 1989, referendum. Before election day, however, the U.S. Supreme Court declared the board of freeholders illegal because it denied equal protection of the law to non-property holders.[63]

The successive generations of reformers failed even though it was easy for them to demonstrate that tax burdens and service levels varied wildly among municipalities. It was also transparently obvious that the city of St. Louis was in economic decline and had been since the 1920s. A pattern of racial and social-class segregation between the city and county, and between municipalities within the county, was a defining feature of the St. Louis region, and the zoning ordinances of the numerous suburban jurisdictions demonstrably helped establish and preserve such segregation. But St. Louis' citizens did not necessarily regard such facts in a negative light. Even if they had, it is doubtful that any reform cause could have overcome the deep attachment people felt to their local communities.

Some of the things that the metro gov reformers saw as problems—such as varying taxing levels and service provisions—others saw as solutions. Most suburban residents had long felt this way, and in the 1980s they began to find support for their point of view in academic quarters. In September 1988, just a few months before the vote on the freeholders' plan, the influential Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations proclaimed that urban residents benefited when they were given the ability to shop around for different bundles of taxes, services, and amenities offered by municipalities.[64] This conclusion, which was also supported by several scholars, undermined the most sacred principle of the metropolitan reform movement. Finally, after several decades it became possible for the defenders of local autonomy to cite scholarly approval for the view that they were doing nothing but exercising their free choice to live wherever they wished rather than appearing to defend parochial self-interest.

The advocates for metro reform were given renewed hope in 2001, when the city of Louisville merged with Jefferson County, Tennessee. Reformers thought that this unusual event might break a long-standing logjam—a successful city–county consolidation had not been accomplished anywhere in the nation since a partial merger between Indianapolis and Marion County in 1969. Immediately, advocates for metropolitan reform in Albuquerque, Buffalo, Cleveland, Memphis, Milwaukee, and San Antonio picked up the cause.

The merger between Louisville and Jefferson County was made possible because an interlocal compact had already prepared the ground. In 1985, the city threatened to annex some economically attractive areas in the county. County officials found this proposal threatening because if the annexations were carried out the county would lose much of its revenue base. After three years of bickering, in 1988, the city and county agreed to divide occupational tax collections and to establish a centralized planning and development agency, which was charged with the task of reducing the competition among local governments for economic development. Even before the compact, voters had become accustomed to a cooperative agreement in which the city and county jointly ran a water and sewer authority, park, zoo, library system, and a consolidated metropolitan school district. Thus, by the time the vote for a merger was held in 1985, it did not seem threatening or even especially consequential to political elites, the business community, or to much of the electorate.

As a means of accomplishing a merger of taxes, services, and governmental administration, Louisville was officially absorbed into Jefferson County. Suburban voters gained a lot from the new arrangement. The fact that approximately two-thirds of the voters and metro council seats came from the former suburbs tilted political power in favor of affluent suburbanites at the expense of blue-collar inner-city residents, particularly African Americans. This realignment should have come as no surprise; in other metropolitan regions, inner-city voters have steadfastly opposed consolidation proposals precisely because it dilutes their influence.

As it turns out, the Louisville example did not become a rallying cry for reformers elsewhere because the political conditions that made reform possible there were hard to duplicate. An instructive example came in November 2004, when a proposal to merge Des Moines with its surrounding county, Polk (Public Measure Letter A), failed by margins of almost two to one in both the city and county.[65] If history is any guide, the Des Moines

experience offers a more reliable glimpse into the future prospects for metro reform than the Louisville case. And for reformers there is another sour note. The main selling point for the Louisville merger—that services would become more efficient through streamlined administration—has not been realized to any measurable degree.[66] Neither has the merger resulted in a more equitable distribution of services than before.[67]

The successive generations of metro gov reformers have demonstrated a remarkable resolve even in the face of repeated failure. What accounts for this record of stubborn persistence? The explanation can probably be traced to the power of the ideal they promote. Almost everyone agrees that government should be efficient and that it should be able to solve the most pressing problems that citizens face. By these standards, the extreme fragmentation of America's urban regions is hard to defend, and thus the search for some alternative is impossible to resist. But it should be pointed out that despite a century of failure for metro gov, in many places more modest arrangements have been put in place to accomplish some of the reformers' goals. In this sense, perhaps reform has not been the abject failure that it sometimes appears to be.

Public officials who are close to the problems have shown a pragmatic willingness to reach across jurisdictional boundaries when the need arises. In some urban regions, an urban county has agreed to provide critical services that cannot be supplied by individual municipalities. Interlocal agreements among two or more governments have become a way of sharing and administering services. Sometimes tax collection and assessments, data processing, and other routine administrative tasks have also been pooled. Small steps of this kind may seem to be mundane and boring, but that is exactly the point: they sidestep the bitterly contested fights that inevitably break out when more ambitious schemes are proposed.

Some examples reveal both the promise and the limitations of piecemeal reform. In the 1940s, voters agreed to a new charter for St. Louis County (then the principal suburban county in the St. Louis region) that allowed the county to expand its service and administrative responsibilities. The county soon adopted a building code, and in the next few years it began to conduct electrical inspections of new construction in unincorporated areas; it also contracted with municipalities to provide this service. By 1964, the county was running 32 parks and an extensive library system. Following another charter revision in 1954, the county formed its own police force. Over the years, the county police department has contracted with numerous cities for police enforcement. In 1971, voters approved still another charter amendment, this one giving the county control over waste disposal and authorizing it to set minimum training and educational standards for firefighters. Today, the county also administers 911 emergency services, runs a system of health clinics, builds roads and coordinates transportation, and operates a system of jails and courts.[68]

Similarly, counties in other urban regions have expanded their responsibilities. By the mid-1980s, DuPage County, west of Chicago, ran an extensive parks system and coordinated municipal services for those cities that volunteered to participate. Through a regional planning commission, it provided planning expertise and advice to cities and applied for federal grants on behalf of municipalities and special districts.[69] Oakland County, Michigan, north of Detroit, has also, step-by-step, taken on more responsibilities, finally running an airport, providing contracted services to municipalities, and running a public library system and emergency services. Over time it has become, in effect, a regional government that coordinates public works projects.[70] By the early 1970s, Orange County, California, had evolved into an administrative structure sufficient to provoke repeated protests from local officials. Like other urban counties, it had grown less through big reform than by a gradual accumulation of responsibilities.

Urban areas have also been able to overcome many of the effects of governmental fragmentation by creating still more governments: special districts charged with providing a particular service. In 2002, there were 87,900 local governments in the United States; of these, fewer than one in four—19,431—were municipalities.[71] The fastest-growing form of local government is the special district—an authority granted taxing and spending powers so it can undertake designated responsibilities such as administering sewer systems, running toll tunnels and bridges, and providing mass transit services. Special districts are generally run more like private corporations than like governments, and most of them are virtually invisible.[72] Not only that, but special districts also often involve private partners, who, together with local and state government representatives, form special district authorities. Most of them come into existence to supply services to new developments (they are often organized, in fact, by developers for the purpose of providing public services to new subdivisions, malls, or other developments), but others, such as, for instance, the Port Authority of New York and New Jersey, are truly metropolitan in scope.

Urban counties, interlocal agreements, and special districts have facilitated improved service delivery even in the

face of governmental fragmentation. It should be pointed out, however, that intergovernmental agreements and special districts constitute an interlocking web of incredible complexity. This is troubling because it undermines democratic accountability. Except for municipalities, almost everything local governments do generally occurs out of sight and mind. Special districts are run like private corporations that are not responsible to voters.[73] The Byzantine system of regional governance persists because each part solves a practical problem. It is hard to imagine that this system is efficient, but it is flexible enough to provide a level of public infrastructure and services that most people find satisfactory. It is a curious irony that local government officials and citizens have found a way to solve some of the most pressing problems posed by the crazy-quilt pattern of regional government by haphazardly stitching more pieces into the fabric.

Reform has taken this route because few people think of themselves as regional citizens; instead, they identify with a particular town or city.[74] Referring to the residents of the St. Louis area, E. Terrence Jones has observed, "They desire governments that are comfortable, like that old sweater in the closet [that] feels so snug when you put it on each winter."[75] The attachment to place and community is a powerful urge, and appeals based on the premise that people should be willing to give it up in exchange for the abstract and unknown benefits of regional governance have, in most cases, fallen on deaf ears. Resourceful people find practical ways around the problem of regional governance, and this is one of the reasons many of them do not consider it to be much of a problem at all.

The New Regionalism

In the late 1980s, the decades-long crusade for metropolitan reform took a turn when a new generation of reformers began to march under a banner calling for a New Regionalism. The New Regionalism brought together people who shared a conviction that "flight creates blight."[76] It is hard not to notice that governmental fragmentation divides metropolitan areas into a multitude of fiscal fiefdoms, with better-off cities able to provide superior services because they have access to good tax sources while poorer cities struggle. Several urban scholars have argued that such inequality undermines the economic health of metropolitan regions, and not just of the disadvantaged governments within them.[77] Of 13 studies conducted between 1989 and 1996, all but one showed that central-city economic performance was associated with the economic performance of suburbs and of metropolitan areas; in addition, studies revealed a negative relationship between greater interjurisdictional inequality and regional economic performance.[78] The lesson the New Regionalists draw from such evidence is that intergovernmental inequalities must be reduced if metropolitan regions are to prosper.

Probably more often than any other state, Minnesota legislature has entertained proposals for curbing the tendency toward polarization and competition among jurisdictions. Bills have been considered that would require all municipalities to accept a "fair share" of affordable housing, pool their tax bases, give up local land use decisions to a regional planning authority, and regionalize critical public services. The years of controversy in Minnesota reveal how hard it is to accomplish this kind of reform even in a state where the political reformers have had political clout.

In 1967, the state legislature approved the creation of a Metropolitan Council for the Minneapolis urban region. Four years later, in what advocates called the "Minnesota Miracle" because of the unlikely compromises that made it possible, the state legislature approved a plan to partially equalize local revenues by requiring cities and towns in some parts of the state to participate in tax-sharing plans.[79] Local governments surrounding Minneapolis participated in a regional tax-sharing arrangement that required each city to place the taxes gained from an increase in the value of commercial industrial growth into a common pool. The purpose of this tax-sharing scheme was to curb the tax abatements and direct subsidies used by municipalities to lure shopping centers and other businesses. The original legislation, amended in 1971, gave the Metropolitan Council the authority to review the master plans of local communities, but with no authority to penalize local governments that did not cooperate. As long as the legislature stuck to modest tax-sharing and cooperative planning arrangements the reforms provoked little controversy. This changed quickly in 1993 when Democratic majorities managed to push through a fair-share housing bill. The Republican governor, Arne Carlson, promptly vetoed it. In its original form, the legislation would have allowed the Metropolitan Council to penalize local communities that used their zoning and regulatory powers to stop affordable housing (these communities would lose funds from a local revenue-sharing pool and would be barred from using tax abatements or tax increment financing for development). Even after all the penalties were removed in an attempt to placate the governor and his allies, Carlson still exercised his

veto. As it happens, the governor would not have had to take such action after the 1994 elections because Republicans gained seats in the state House and Senate, and this brought an end to fair-share housing legislation.

In 1994, a coalition of struggling suburbs joined representatives from Minneapolis and St. Paul to push a Metropolitan Reorganization Act through the legislature, which Governor Carlson agreed to sign. The Metropolitan Council for the Twin Cities suddenly became a $600 million regional government that operated sewer and transit services and supervised the regional airport.[80] In the same year, the legislature also took a step toward regional land use planning when it passed the Metropolitan Land Use Reform Act. The legislation did little—it only protected farmers from public assessments and tax increases that often forced them to sell to developers—but it provided a framework for a future that has never been realized, in large part because of the passionate opposition ignited by proposals that would curb the autonomy of local governments and the subsidy-seeking behavior of developers.

In 1995, a bill was introduced in the legislature that would have pooled all municipal taxes collected on homes valued above $150,000 and redistributed the money to local governments. The legislation was defeated. Another much weaker tax-sharing bill on residential property, this one completely voluntary, became the lightning rod for a vicious partisan battle. Jesse "The Body" Ventura, the pro wrestler who became Minnesota's governor in 1998, went on the offensive against Myron Orfield, the Democratic state representative who had introduced the legislation. Ventura's rhetoric harkened back to the communist-hunting days of the 1950s: "Representative Myron 'the Communist' Orfield, his latest wealth-sharing strategy, I mean this guy really needs to go to China. I mean I think he'd be most happy there…. Oh Myron, Myron, Myron. You never realized the communists folded for a reason. You didn't figure it out, did you Myron?"[81] The tax-sharing legislation went down in defeat.

Despite its limitations, New Regionalists still consider the tax-sharing plan of the Minneapolis region to be the best example of its kind in the nation, and they continue to hold out hope it will be emulated elsewhere. Likewise, they point to Portland, Oregon, as the "best practices" example of far-reaching land use reform as a way of achieving a metropolitan approach to growth and economic development. The Portland, Oregon, metropolitan region has the most rigidly enforced growth boundary in the United States. Because it is drawn around a rapidly growing city, the boundary is easy to see both from the air and from the ground—on one side townhouse developments and subdivisions crowd together; on the other, cows graze, grapevines leaf out, and wheat fields ripen. The growth boundary came about as a result of legislation passed by the Oregon state legislature in 1973 that required all local governments in the state to prepare a comprehensive land use plan and submit it to the State Land Conservation and Development Commission for approval. On the basis of the Commission's report, the legislature subsequently empowered an elected regional authority, the Metropolitan Service District, to establish and enforce a growth boundary in the Portland region. Portlanders began referring to the District as Metro, and in 1992 the name was made official when voters approved a referendum giving it expanded powers.[82]

In most states and metropolitan areas, an effective means of coordinating regional growth would be unthinkable because business organizations, developers, and local governments possess the power to stop the necessary state legislation. Oregon's unique political culture explains why it remains an exception. Environmental organizations and farmers supplied critical support for drawing a growth boundary around the state's largest city, Portland. A coalition supporting Portland's boundary worked hard to broaden its appeal with the argument that planned growth actually helps promote local prosperity.[83] After losing three attempts to overturn the growth boundary (in 1976, 1978, and 1982), businesses and developers seemed to become accustomed to the boundary because they "know what the rules are,"[84] but in 2004 a coalition led by developers managed to persuade the voters to approve Measure 37, a statewide initiative requiring local governments to compensate land owners if they could demonstrate that land-use restrictions had reduced their property values. It did not take long before voters began to understand that the law had given developers a way to tap into the public purse through a blizzard of lawsuits. In 2007, an overwhelming majority of voters approved Measure 49, which overturned the measure passed just three years before.[85]

Since the adoption of Measure 49, development that has leaped beyond the growth boundary has tended to occur in clusters sprinkled in and around the smaller cities and towns located within commuting distance of Portland. The subdivisions that normally sprawl across the landscape at the edges of urban areas are notably absent. The state government's willingness to override municipal governments is the key to preserving this unusual pattern. Historically, municipalities in all states have vigorously resisted attempts to control their land use decisions, and most state legislatures and administrative agencies have been reluctant to step into the fray. Oregon

is exceptional in its attitude that "We've had some problems with them [municipalities] and had to whip them into line."[86]

The Minneapolis and Portland cases are bound to remain as exceptions because local governments guard their control over taxation and services, economic development, and land use with a special passion. But the problems of urban sprawl will not go away, and so suburbanites try to find ways of solving some of the problems of unplanned and uncontrolled growth without sacrificing the autonomy they so highly prize. *Smart Growth* has provided an answer.

Smart Growth

Smart Growth is a term coined in 1997 by Governor Parris Glendening of Maryland to describe policies he proposed that were aimed at building public infrastructure in designated growth areas while at the same time protecting other areas from development.[87] Because of its positive connotations, in the next few years Smart Growth became a label covering a diverse collection of land use policies and environment regulations meant to curb uncontrolled urban development. A wide range of groups, most notably the Sierra Club, the National Trust for Land Preservation, and the National Association of Home Builders, have embraced the principles of Smart Growth. The central message of the movement is that planned development is the answer to urban sprawl: growth must occur, but it should be "quality development," that improves blighted areas, promotes environmental quality, lowers energy consumption through better transportation systems and improved urban design, assesses the cost and need for new public infrastructure, and protects open space.[88]

The environmental message of the Smart Growth movement has attracted support from across the political spectrum. To overcome the aversion to anything regarded as too radical, public officials have usually avoided the rhetoric of regional planning in favor of policies that promote the preservation of open space. In lieu of direct land use regulation, land trusts are commonly used to protect undeveloped areas. From 1988 to 1998, 4.7 million acres of open space were set aside in this way. In 1998, voters in New Jersey agreed to spend $98 million in state and local taxes and issue $1 billion in bonds to preserve open space. In the same year, the Florida legislature established a $3 billion bond program and Illinois committed $160 million for land acquisition. New York's governor launched a task force to study ways to favor redevelopment over new development, and Connecticut's governor set a goal of tripling the amount of open space within urban areas.[89]

Although the rhetoric of the Smart Growth movement generally stresses that urban development must be seen in metropolitan perspective, the phrase has often been used to promote more narrow objectives, namely to promote development that keeps poorer people or minorities from coming into a community. There is a rarely acknowledged contradiction at the heart of the movement. On the one hand, citizen and environmental groups may agree to the assertion, as stated in a study sponsored by the Bank of America, that "we continue to abandon people and investments in older communities as development leap-frogs out to fringe areas to accommodate another generation of low-density living."[90] In fact, however, the fate of older communities is rarely of any concern to affluent suburban residents; they care whether their new communities can avoid the problems associated with urban sprawl and new residential development.

Serena Kataoka,[91] speaking in the context of Vancouver, and what she calls "Vancouverism"—a sort of fusion between urban and suburban imagery—argues that these new ideas for urban (or metropolitan) design represent an implicit acceptance of what she calls "urban complexity," paired with a longing for the suburban pastoral. New visions of urban design, such as Smart Growth, or Vancouverism, according to Kataoka, while promoting (or even marketing) livability, environmentalism, and lifestyle, even diversity, in reality remain exclusive visions of urban design, which restricts accessibility to those who can afford it.

The tensions within the Smart Growth movement were laid bare by a controversy that broke out in November 1999 in Loudoun County, Virginia, when developer John Andrews ran into furious opposition to his plans to subdivide a cornfield into 69 one-acre lots. He intended to build an upscale housing development so he anticipated no problems, especially in a county dominated by Republican voters. But in the November elections, a new group calling itself Voters to Stop Sprawl swept all eight seats on the county's board of supervisors. Reading the tea leaves, the planning commission of the tiny town of Hamilton, which held zoning jurisdiction over the new development, did the unthinkable. It voted against it.

This revolt of the affluent against the affluent grew its roots in the same fertile soil found on the margins of every metropolitan area in America. Located 16 miles from Washington, DC, until the 1980s Loudoun County

was dotted with farms and horse barns. By the turn of the twenty-first century its population had quadrupled, and even though the new residents were prosperous they brought with them traffic congestion, overcrowded schools, and new subdivisions. Explaining the sudden success of the revolt against sprawl, the newly elected Republican chair of the county board observed, "This wasn't a Republican or a Democrat thing. They [the new county board] did everything out there that the Republican Party should have done, but failed to do."[92]

Even in Loudoun County, Smart Growth carried a variety of meanings. In the part of the county that was already developing, the major issues included the costs of infrastructure and the quality and aesthetics of new development. In the sections of the county that were still mostly rural, the preservation of open space and the character of the landscape dominated the discussion.[93] Opposition to new growth in Loudoun County was also provoked by the spread of gated communities that had fragmented the county into a maze of protected enclaves. These developments came with a variety of names meant to signify affluence and high social standing: Brambleton, Forest Manor, Forest Run, Belle Terra. They left the longtime residents of the county isolated within "scraps of communities … where people live in the old-fashioned way: in a house, on a road open to other roads, forming a place that anyone might pass through on the way to somewhere else."[94]

The issues raised in Loudoun County highlight a desire by affluent suburbanites to regulate development so that the problems associated with metropolitan development can be kept from their front door. Smart Growth appeals so broadly across the political spectrum precisely because it means so many different things to so many people. Often it seemingly brings together an unlikely alliance of conservatives and environmentalists, but just as often it drives them apart. It all depends upon the particular issue at hand. As a result, the application of Smart Growth principles across the United States is uneven and is likely to remain so.

A few communities have been aggressive in their attempts to regulate development and protect the environment. In May 2000, Congress authorized $42 billion to be spent over 15 years to protect open space from development, with the intention of encouraging the governments in urban regions to take action.[95] In Boulder, Colorado, the city and county have taken steps to reduce growth by designating a green belt around the city, establishing scenic areas, and refusing to supply public infrastructure or improvements except in areas approved for growth.[96] Montgomery County, Maryland, designated three corridors that distinguished between existing communities, fringe growth areas, and rural and agricultural areas, and adopted a timed growth plan intended to control the rate of development in each of these corridors.[97] Several metropolitan areas adopted the idea of corridors, or "tiers," and land use specialists of the American Bar Association got behind the idea.[98]

Despite this history it is clear that the proponents of Smart Growth still have a lot of work left to do. In many metropolitan areas there continues to be resistance to planning of any sort. In the St. Louis region, for instance, Republicans in suburban St. Charles County objected to the term *urban sprawl,* asserting they simply were exercising their "urban choice" when they moved to the suburbs. By this logic, sprawl is a positive good, simply a consequence of the freedom to live wherever one wants. This philosophy was reflected in a statement by a scholar, Fred Siegel, when he argued that sprawl "is not some malignancy to be summarily excised, but, rather, part and parcel of prosperity."[99] Siegel claims that fragmented government offers abundant advantages. It enables people who live in badly governed central cities to escape to other jurisdictions that provide an array of alternative places to live, shop, and conduct business. Most of all, he believes that fragmented government avoids the heavy hand of a single, powerful regional government that restricts choice.[100]

An even more biting critique has been leveled by Robert Bruegmann, who challenges the widely shared assumption that sprawl, if defined as low-density development, has even been occurring. His data show that much of suburban development of recent years has actually been of relatively high density. His description of Los Angeles' urban pattern makes it clear why this may be so: "From the air, virtually the entire Los Angeles basin appears as a dense carpet of buildings, with most houses packed together on lots that are considerably smaller than their counterparts in eastern cities. In addition, and in sharp contrast to many eastern cities, there are few vacant lots."[101] Bruegmann also presents evidence showing that the pace of decentralization is slowing down, having reached its peak in the 1960s and declining since. In the past, the suburban ideal was the freestanding house on a large lot. But row houses and small lots have now become the norm, and any empty spaces are being filled. Thus, in the Chicago region nearly one-fourth of recent new housing units are row houses, and similar practices have come to cities in the South and West as well.[102]

From such evidence Bruegmann draws the conclusion that anti-sprawl campaigns and the Smart Growth movement are misguided because they are aimed at fixing problems that are already being solved by the housing

market and by consumer choice:

> every individual has some role in determining how the city looks and functions. If I shop at a suburban Wal-Mart rather than a downtown department store or choose to live in an apartment near the old downtown rather than in a single-family house on five acres in exurbia, these choices have an urban form. If my choices are echoed by those of many other people, they can have a profound effect."[103]

In other words, says Bruegmann, people's choices, not public policy, should mainly determine the shape of the metropolis.

Whatever the merits of the arguments made by the contenders in the sprawl debate, the outcome will be decided less by ideology than by practical politics. Smart Growth policies gain support to the degree that suburban residents are persuaded that land and environmental regulations are likely to improve the quality of their lives. Their judgments are more likely based on personal experience and immediate self-interest than on evidence marshaled by proponents of regional planning.

Several studies have demonstrated that the costs of public infrastructure are higher when urban development is left unregulated.[104] When infrastructure such as highways, sewers, water lines, and utilities are supplied in areas with low-density development, costs are much higher than in high-density areas. Infrastructure costs are also driven up when the existing public facilities in older areas are abandoned. A Smart Growth advocate has pointed out that in the 20 years between 1970 and 1990, a Maryland county spent $500 million to close 60 schools while opening 60 more, just to keep the schools located in areas where people had moved. He also cited a study estimating that by 2020 Maryland residents would spend $10 billion on new roads, sewers, and water systems in newly developed areas. From this evidence, he concluded that regional planning was necessary to stop the twin processes of abandonment and new investment.[105]

For most suburban residents, the argument that sprawl drives up the cost of infrastructure is not likely to carry much weight, especially because those costs are widely distributed, hard to measure, and paid for in large part by the states and the federal government. It is even less likely that suburban residents will suddenly be struck with remorse by the thought that by moving out they have contributed to the decay of older cities and neighborhoods. Possibly, however, suburbanites may pay some attention if an effective case can be made that decay at the urban center threatens the economic viability of their own communities. In an attempt to make the argument that everyone loses from unplanned development, some researchers have turned the familiar refrain that sprawl brings "despair to the inner cities"[106] on its head by claiming it may ultimately bring despair to the suburbs as well. Thirteen studies conducted between 1989 and 1996 found that the economic performance of metropolitan areas was associated with the economic performance of the nearby central cities. Such evidence makes it seem that it may be in the interest of even affluent suburban residents to pay some attention to larger issues facing their region.

Aside from the rather technical nature of such studies, it is hard to imagine that most suburban residents will buy into abstract arguments about how their own fate is linked to that of their poorer neighbors. Self-interest tends to be immediate—a lower tax bill, a better school, rising property values. These normally are regarded as purely local issues. Only with some reluctance do most urban residents support measures that focus on the larger region. Still, there is a widespread feeling among suburbanites that paradise is being sacrificed to the sheer ugliness of sprawl. For them, the New Urbanism may have special appeal because it offers benefits with practically no downside.

The New Urbanism

The New Urbanism was founded on the belief that a combination of land use changes, urban design, and architecture can revive a sense of community and make the urban environment more livable. The charter for the New Urbanism, as adopted in the first membership meeting in 2000, asserts that "individual architectural projects should be seamlessly linked to their surroundings," that "the economic health and harmonious evolution of neighborhoods, districts, and corridors can be improved through graphic design codes," and that "civic buildings and public gathering places require important sites to reinforce community identity and the culture of democracy."[107] In effect, the New Urbanists are making the case that cities and suburbs can be made more livable from the ground up as much as from the top down.

Inspired by Jane Jacobs' notion of "eyes on the street" and her vision of lively urban neighborhoods, which combined living, working, and playing, New Urbanism became an aspiration not only for saving suburbia from monotony, but also for (re-)planning inherently urban neighborhoods. Jane Jacobs' ideas of this ideal urban

neighborhood were often framed as the antidote to New York City's mid-century planning czar, Robert Moses, who saw the automobile as the way of the future, and organized his plans of urban development around this idea. Grandiose like the New York City itself, which inspired his planning, Moses thought and planned in superblocks and high rises, instead of single family homes and mom-and-pop stores.

History tends to often frame the past in blacks and whites rather than grays, and the Jacobs–Moses rivalry, which culminated in their stand-off regarding the West Village neighborhood, which Moses wanted to bulldoze to build the never-realized Lower Manhattan Expressway, or LoMEx, often pits the conscious urbanist Jacobs against the brutalist modernist planner Moses. The truth, as always, lies somewhere in-between. While Jacobs' New Urbanism-inspired visions of the multi-use urban neighborhood with lively streets, parks, family stores, and playspaces, may appear much more appealing and humane to us than Moses' superblocks and modernist high rises, Moses' vision was probably more realistic for an overcrowded city than that of Jacobs. Urban economist Edward Glaeser notes:

> A great deal of evidence links the supply of space with the cost of real estate. Simply put, the places that are expensive don't build a lot, and the places that build a lot aren't expensive. Perhaps a new 40-story building won't itself house any quirky, less profitable firms, but by providing new space, the building will ease pressure on the rest of the city. Price increases in gentrifying older areas will be muted because of new construction. Growth, not height restrictions and a fixed building stock, keeps space affordable and ensures that poorer people and less profitable firms can stay and help a thriving city remain successful and diverse. Height restrictions do increase light, and preservation does protect history, but we shouldn't pretend that these benefits come without a cost.[108]

Glaeser emphasizes, in the face of gentrifying urban neighborhoods, the importance of affordable space, and closely associates historical preservation with urban gentrifiers and the skyrocketing of urban property values into unaffordable dimensions. This notion, however, is not without its critics. Kaid Benfield notes that historical preservation laws have not prevented New York City from becoming one of the densest metropoles in the United States.[109] She argues instead that environmental regulation and historical preservation make cities healthy and attractive places to live.[110] New Urbanism remains a popular urban design prescription for urban and suburban neighborhoods alike.

In the suburbs, the New Urbanist movement is energized by a diagnosis of what they regard as a terrible disease —"blighted metropolitan landscapes," "banal places with the souls of shopping malls, affording nowhere to mingle except traffic jams, nowhere to walk except in the health club."[111] The proposed antidote is made up of transportation networks designed to reduce reliance on the automobile and carefully designed urban environments with harmonious streetscapes and pleasing design features (such as buildings with dormers, gables, and porticos) that integrate home, business, recreation, and community life. By fostering a sense of community in the suburbs, advocates of the New Urbanism hope to calm the restlessness that makes people constantly move on to the next subdivision in their search for a suburban Eden.

The alleged disease of the American suburb has long been the subject of commentary. The writer James Howard Kunstler begins his book *The Geography of Nowhere* with this vivid summary:

> Eighty percent of everything ever built in America has been built in the last fifty years, and most of it is depressing, brutal, ugly, unhealthy, and spiritually degrading—the jive-plastic commuter tract home wastelands, the Potemkin village shopping plazas with their vast parking lagoons, the Lego-block hotel complexes, the "gourmet mansardic" junk-food joints, the Orwellian office "parks" featuring buildings sheathed in the same reflective glass as the sunglasses worn by chain-gang guards, the particle-board garden apartments rising up in every little meadow and cornfield, the freeway loops around every big and little city with their clusters of discount merchandise marts, the whole destructive, wasteful, toxic, agoraphobia-inducing spectacle that politicians call "growth."[112]

In Kunstler's narrative, suburban residents have learned to live "in places where nothing relates to anything else," a landscape in which daily activities—home, work, shopping, recreation—are pulled apart into large-scale segregated developments accessible only by automobiles: "The houses are all in their respective income pods, the shopping is miles away from the houses," and schools, malls, and office parks are also set apart, together with their seas of cars glistening on massive parking lots.[113] Kunstler's storyline describes a dystopia in which human beings are forced to sit in their cars, gridlocked, or find themselves in the embrace of a gated community, school, or shopping mall—worst of all—in a nameless suburban subdivision.

Like clear-cutting a forest, a parking lot, mall, or a housing subdivision can be most efficiently built by means of industrial methods; the first step is a bulldozer that removes everything in the way. Such methods link efficiency and wastefulness in an intimate dance. Urged on by advertising, constant changes in product lines and styles, and the proliferation of disposable packaging, "most consumer goods are destined for a one-night stand."[114] Applied to land and places, such a consumer habit has far-reaching social consequences—"cycling of people through places,"

a mobility and rootlessness that replaces community with the hope of renewal that comes from moving, "a kind of magic that keeps expectations high."[115] If the new place disappoints, the answer will be found in another move, and still another one after that.

Lifeless suburbia, the most meaningful symbol of this sort of late capitalist consumer mentality, has even been a recurring theme in popular culture throughout the 1980s and 90s, which also marked the (re-)discovery of New Urbanism as a counter-movement. The 1999 movie *Office Space,* for instance, in a humorous fashion, portrays the soul-killing office park, including its cubicles and neon-light fixtures, the uninspiring, cookie-cutter restaurants, the plain suburban subdivisions, the numbing traffic jams, which accompany the commute from A to B to C.

The band Green Day, in the song *Jesus of Suburbia,* takes a similar stance:

> At the center of the earth
> In the parking lot
> Of the 7-11 where I was taught
> The motto was just a lie
>
> It says home is where your heart is
> But what a shame
> 'Cause everyone's heart
> Doesn't beat the same
> It's beating out of time
>
> City of the dead
> At the end of another lost highway
> Signs misleading to nowhere
> City of the damned.[116]

Loved, but also increasingly revered, suburbia, the twentieth-century symbol of the American Dream, also became associated just before the millennium with deadbeat capitalism and consumer culture, inspiring the calls for reform.

Together with transportation systems that favor the automobile, the zoning regulations adopted by local governments keep in place the land use patterns that bother the followers of the New Urbanism. Virtually all suburban jurisdictions follow a standard zoning or planning regime that separates residential, commercial, and industrial development in big chunks. The effect is to make neighborhoods less walkable, because corner stores, strip malls, barber and beauty shops, and other things that people need are rigorously zoned out of large residential subdivisions, thereby forcing people to drive a long way for basic services. Can suburban environments be designed to discourage such practices? The founders of the New Urbanism think they can do it by designing neighborhoods that nurture community, transportation systems that get people out of their cars, and urban environments built to human scale. In its founding charter the Congress for the New Urbanism declared that it considers "divestment in central cities, the spread of placeless sprawl, increasing separation by race and income, environmental deterioration, loss of agricultural lands and wilderness, and the erosion of society's built heritage as one interrelated community-building challenge."[117] Although the Congress for the New Urbanism goes to some pains to point out that "we recognize that physical solutions by themselves will not solve social and economic problems," the New Urbanist approach is almost entirely oriented to the physical redesign of urban space. The 27 principles endorsed by the Congress emphasize "the neighborhood, the district, and the corridor as the essential elements of development." These principles stand in opposition to the style of urban development that has relied on the bulldozing of vast spaces for single uses such as subdivisions, shopping centers, and office parks. Such segmentation has created an urban pattern that favors cars over human beings, forcing people to spend time on the highway that might be spent at home or in a community setting.

In place of monotonous subdivisions of look-alike houses, "the goal of the New Urbanism is to promote diverse and livable communities with a greater variety of housing types, land uses, and building densities—in other words, to develop and maintain a melting pot of neighborhood homes serving a wide range of household family sizes, cultures, and incomes."[118] As an alternative to shopping centers, the New Urbanists urge the building of pedestrian-friendly shopping areas on streets and squares, within walking distance of nearby residences. Office parks are to be banned because they segregate work from home and shopping; like shopping centers, they entail the proliferation of huge parking lots and maximize reliance on the automobile.[119] The New Urbanists recognize "automobiles are a fact of modern life," but they urge that the grid of high-speed streets and highways intersecting urban areas be replaced by highway corridors clearly separated from neighborhoods. Within neighborhoods, they

want to slow traffic by narrowing streets and creating traffic circles and other "traffic calming" devices. They also promote the idea that bicycle paths and sidewalks should be built along all streets and that mass transit must be made convenient.[120]

If fully realized, environments that incorporated all of these elements would not only constitute a revolution in urban planning and landscape and architectural design, they would also help cement bonds of community that have been severed by large-scale suburban development. Neighborhood residents would be walking and bicycling to a café, restaurant, or the drug store; stopping to visit with their neighbors; walking to work. Unfortunately, the New Urbanist developments do not fulfill that dream, and it is not likely they ever can.

For residents to be able to walk and bicycle to shop, work, and play, all while living in the same neighborhood, densities would have to be as high as those that exist in the downtowns of major cities. Density is a necessary condition for the clustering of diverse activities and services, and it can only be achieved through high-rise living. The problem is that most New Urbanist developments are composed of relatively low-density townhouses or single-family homes located within gated communities, which facilitate, rather than reduce, residential segregation. For this reason, the New Urbanism may actually contribute to urban sprawl.

The urban scholar Dolores Hayden describes her experience when she visited Celebration, the Disney Company's New Urbanism development near Orlando and Disney World: "After an hour and a half stuck on crowded freeways within Orlando, I spotted the white three-rail fence that wrapped the exterior of the development, an imitation of the rural fences used on the old horse farms and ranches of central Florida."[121] In one deft touch Hayden captured two issues arising from New Urbanist developments: residential projects by themselves do not (and cannot) change the geography of urban regions, and they are prone to nostalgic reconstructions that symbolize but do not create a sense of community. Both of these elements are apparent in New Town, a New Urbanist development in St. Charles, Missouri, a distant satellite suburb (or perhaps edge city) of St. Louis. The two-story antebellum porches and pillars of New Town are meant to echo a past—but is it Missouri's? A more consequential problem is that it is not located near any mass transit; clearly, it is built for commuters who drive cars. A critic observed, "You see these new developments and they look like something out of a magazine from the Urban Land Institute. They say they're sustainable development but they're in the middle of a friggin' desert. They're not connected to any public transportation. You still have to drive to get there."[122]

Urban residents may be tired of freeway congestion and gridlock, and they may sometimes revolt against the ugliness of large-scale development—especially when it is in their backyard—but unless it tackles such issues, the New Urbanism is likely to become little more than a recipe for design features that developers can use mainly for marketing purposes. In Celebration, all houses have front porches, a touch from the past that seems designed to encourage people to visit with their neighbors. As it happens, it is too hot in Florida for this to work. The houses also have other design features meant to signify a romanticized version of suburban life from another era—gables, neo-Victorian trim, picket fences. One suspects that Celebration is much like the Frontier Village or Main Street in Disneyland, California—"authentic reproductions" that evoke vague feelings of the real thing. If affluent homebuyers come to prefer the design features of the New Urbanism, developers will be happy to accommodate them. Many of the architectural touches of the New Urbanism—stone and copper facades, porches, elaborate door lintels and balconies—cost money, and thus they serve as markers more of social class than of community. They add to the real estate markup.

To serve as an effective remedy for urban sprawl, the New Urbanism must be able to realize a goal no other reform movement has been able to reach: persuade suburbanites that it is in their interest to support effective regional planning. This requires a long-term strategy for changing people's attitudes and building a political coalition sufficient for accomplishing the task. This is a tall order. Are suburban residents ready to give up their single-family homes, lawns, and multiple cars? Are they willing to tax themselves to support mass transit and rebuild highways? Are they willing to support sweeping land use reform? Do they really care about community? Judging from the history of suburban development, the answers to these questions are not likely to be reassuring.

Americans are deeply attached to their local governments. Racial and social class differences among jurisdictions continue to reinforce the tendency to separate, as does the fact that affluent residents benefit from fragmentation through lower taxes and higher service levels. State governments become involved in issues of local governance only reluctantly.[123] These facts of life have made the task of reform always difficult, whether the cause is Metro Gov, the New Regionalism, or Smart Growth. The New Urbanism escapes this constraint mainly because it focuses on small-scale and incremental steps that are only distantly related to urban sprawl.

The Prospect for Reform

Suburban residents are caught in a bind, and the way out is likely to be painful. They are fed up with gridlock and runaway development, especially when these threaten the quality of life they so highly value. In trying to solve the problems of the sprawling metropolis, there are three approaches available to them. One solution is to support reforms that will make it possible to achieve metropolitan planning and a high degree of cooperation among governments. A second solution directly contradicts the first: use the powers of municipal government as an instrument to forestall change. A third strategy they may exercise is to retreat as far as possible behind the walls of gated communities. In fact, suburban residents have used all three, but in the last few decades the last of these options has been enthusiastically embraced. Clearly, municipal autonomy and the proliferation of privatized gated communities make it much harder than ever to build support for metropolitan reform.

New Jersey's experience with land trusts suggests how difficult it will be to find ambitious solutions that go beyond parochial interests. In 1998, Governor Christie Todd Whitman announced that New Jersey's program—with its goal of acquiring more than a million acres of open space—could serve as a national model. But in the end, New Jersey was reluctant to place environmental concerns ahead of economic development. In 2000, when Merrill Lynch announced it would leave the state unless it was granted permission to build in a rural area, politicians quickly caved. An assistant in the governor's policy office explained, "They wanted a suburban-style campus, so it was either here or Pennsylvania."[124] Even in the unlikely event that politics elsewhere might be different, land trusts can do little more than preserve islands of open space in a moving stream of development.

As the urban historian Jon C. Teaford has observed, "change appears to be the ultimate enemy."[125] Local control of land use, economic development, and local taxes and services gives people a sense that they are masters of their own destiny. Governmental fragmentation will continue to be a fixture of the American metropolis, as will sprawl and its attendant problems. This is why the art of muddling through will continue to define the regional policy agenda.

Endnotes

1 For a comparative analysis of suburban development in advanced industrial countries, see Donald N. Rothblatt and Daniel J. Garr, *Suburbia: An International Assessment* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1986), and Christopher M. Law, *The Uncertain Future of the Urban Core* (London: Routledge, 1988).

2 Carma Hogue, "Government Organization Summary Report: 2012" *Government Division Briefs, U.S. Bureau of the Census,* Released September 26, 2013. http://www2.census.gov/govs/cog/g12_org.pdf

3 Kenneth Newton, "American Urban Politics: Social Class, Political Structure, and Public Goods," in *Readings in Urban Politics: Past, Present and Future,* 2nd ed., ed. Harlan Hahn and Charles H. Levine (New York: Longman, 1984).

4 Jon C. Teaford, *Post-Suburbia: Government and Politics in the Edge Cities* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997), p. 1.

5 James Heilbrun, *Urban Economics and Public Policy,* 2nd ed. (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1981), p. 48.

6 Peter O. Muller, *Contemporary Suburban America* (Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1981), p. 123.

7 George E. Peterson, "Federal Tax Policy and Urban Development," in *Central City Economic Development,* ed. Benjamin Chinitz (Cambridge, MA: Abe Books, 1979), pp. 67-78.

8 David M. Gordon, "Capitalist Development and the History of American Cities," in *Marxism and the Metropolis: New Perspectives in Urban Political Economy,* 2nd ed., ed. William K. Tabb and Larry Sawers (New York: Oxford University Press, 1984), p. 41.

9 Robert Cervero, "Unlocking Suburban Gridlock," *Journal of the American Planning Association* 52, no. 4 (Autumn 1986): 389.

10 Brian J. L. Berry, *The Open Housing Question: Race and Housing in Chicago, 1966–1976* (Cambridge, MA: Ballinger, 1979).

11 Joel Garreau, *Edge City: Life on the New Frontier* (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1991), p. 6.

12 Robert E. Lang and Jennifer B. LeFurgy, *Boomburbs: The Rise of America's Accidental Cities* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2007).

13 Ibid.

14 R. E. Lang, Arthur C. Nelson and Rebecca R. Sohmer: "Boomburb Downtowns: The Next Generation of Urban Centers." *Journal of Urbanism: International Research on Placemaking and Urban Sustainability* 1, no. 1 (2008). Accessed online: http://rsa.tandfonline.com/doi/full/10.1080/17549170801903694?scroll=top&needAccess=true

15 Robert E. Lang and Jennifer B. LeFurgy, *Boomburbs: The Rise of America's Accidental Cities* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2007). pp. 56-57.

16 Office of Technology Assessment, Congress of the United States, *The Technological Reshaping of Metropolitan America,* OTA-ETI-643 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1995).

17 Anthony Downs, *The Costs of Sprawl: Environmental and Economic Costs of Alternative Development Patterns of Metropolitan America* (Washington, DC: Real Estate Research Corporation, 1974), p. 2.

18 Neal Peirce and Curtis Johnson, "St. Louis: Exploded Galaxy?" *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (March 16, 1997), p. 6B.

19 Martha T. Moore, "Cool Climates, Hot Suburbs, Mixed Blessings," *USA Today* (November 11, 2003), p. 18A.

20 Russ Lopez and H. Patricia Hynes, "Sprawl in the 1990s: Measurement, Distribution, and Trends," *Urban Affairs Review* 38, no. 3 (January 2003): 325-352.

21 Office of Technology Assessment, *Technological Reshaping,* Chapter 8.

22 Scott Bowles, "National Gridlock," *USA Today* (November 23, 1999), p. 2A.
23 Texas Transportation Institute, Texas A&M University, *The Urban Mobility Annual Report* (Lubbock, TX, 2006).
24 Mark Bowerman: "And the City with the Worst Traffic in the U.S. Is …" *USA Today Network* (March 22, 2016). Accessed online: www.usatoday.com/story/news/nation-now/2016/03/22/worst-cities-traffic-united-states-tom-tom-traffic-index/82108390/
25 Ibid.
26 Ibid.
27 Ibid.
28 Kenneth L. Wald, "How Dreams of Clean Air Get Stuck in Traffic," *New York Times* (March 11, 1990), p. 1.
29 Bowles, "National Gridlock," p. 2A.
30 Cervero, "Unlocking Suburban Gridlock," p. 389.
31 H. V. Savitch and Ronald K. Vogel, *Regional Politics: America in a Post-City Age* (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage, 1996), p. 18.
32 Janet Frankston, "Suburban Sprawl's Sticker Shock," *Chicago Tribune* (January 5, 2003), Section 16, pp. 1-2.
33 Jerry Adler, "Bye, Bye Suburban Dream," *Newsweek* (May 15, 1995), pp. 40-45.
34 Daniel Pederson, Vern E. Smith, and Jerry Adler, "Sprawling, Sprawling …," *Newsweek* (July 19, 1999), pp. 23-27.
35 Ibid.
36 Vicki Lee Parker, "Western Cities Grapple with Rapid Growth," *Wall Street Journal* (September 22, 1999), p. B16.
37 John J. Fialka, "Campaign against Sprawl Overruns a County in Virginia, and Soon Perhaps Much of Nation," *Wall Street Journal* (January 4, 2000), p. A24.
38 Bill Lambrecht, "Urban Sprawl Is a Hot Topic," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (February 7, 1999), p. A6.
39 *Governing: The Magazine of States and Localities,* January 1999 and August 1999 issues.
40 D'vera Cohn, "Big Is No Longer Beautiful for Many U.S. Communities," *Santa Barbara News-Press* (March 4, 1979), cited in John R. Logan and Harvey L. Molotch, *Urban Fortunes: The Political Economy of Place* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1987), p. 159.
41 Mark Baldassare, "Suburban Support for No-Growth Policies: Implications for the Growth Revolt," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 12, no. 2 (1990): 198.
42 Sierra Club, *Solving Sprawl: The Sierra Club Rates the States* (Washington, DC: Sierra Club, 1999), p. 2.
43 Robert Reinhold, "Growth in Los Angeles Poses Threat to Bradley," *New York Times* (September 22, 1987).
44 Charles Lockwood and Christopher B. Leinberger, "Los Angeles Comes of Age," *Atlantic Monthly* (January 1988), p. 48.
45 William Booth, "For Voters, the Target Is Sprawl," *Washington Post National* (December 7, 1998), pp. 30-31.
46 Ibid., p. 31.
47 Martin Griffith, "Alarmed by Growth, Nevadans Go 'Green,'" *Chicago Tribune* (December 19, 2002), p. 39.
48 See www.nosprawltax.org/
49 Terence Samuel, "Gore Pushes a Plan to Help Curb Problems Related to Urban Sprawl," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (January 12, 1999), p. A8.
50 Terence Samuel, "Al Gore Makes Sprawl Central to His Campaign," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (October 12, 1999), www.postnet.com
51 Fialka, "Campaign against Sprawl," p. A24.
52 Ibid.
53 James W. Hughes and Joseph J. Seneca: "The Beginning of the End of Sprawl?" *Rutgers Regional Report,* no. 21 (March 2004).
54 Ibid.
55 Ibid.
56 G. Ross Stephens and Nelson Wikstrom, *Metropolitan Government and Governance: Theoretical Perspectives, Empirical Analysis, and the Future* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2000), pp. 31-32.
57 Quoted in ibid., p. 33.
58 Paul Studenski, *The Government of Metropolitan Areas in the United States* (New York: National Municipal League, 1930), p. 29.
59 Victor Jones, "Local Government Organization in Metropolitan Areas: Its Relation to Urban Redevelopment," in *The Future of Cities and Urban Redevelopment,* ed. Coleman Woodbury (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1953), pp. 604-605.
60 Vincent Marando, "City–County Consolidation: Reform, Regionalism, Referenda, and Requiem," *Western Political Quarterly* 32, no. 4 (December 1979): 409-422.
61 Teaford, *Post-Suburbia,* p. 110.
62 Ibid., pp. 110-112.
63 Ibid., p. 195.
64 Ibid., p. 194.
65 Hank V. Savitch, Ronald K. Vogel, and Lin Ye, "Beyond the Rhetoric: Lessons from Louisville's Consolidation," *American Review of Public Administration* 1 (2009).
66 The source for this discussion of the Louisville merger is H. V. Savitch and Ronald K. Vogel, "Suburbs without a City: Power and City–County Consolidation," *Urban Affairs Review* 39, no. 6 (July 2004): 758-790; also see Alan Greenblatt, "Anatomy of a Merger," *Governing* 16, no. 3 (December 2002): 2025.
67 Hank V. Savitch, Lin Ye, and Ron Vogel, "Promise versus Performance: The Louisville–Jefferson County Merger," paper delivered at the annual meeting of the Urban Affairs Association, (Seattle, WA, April 2007).
68 Teaford, *Post-Suburbia,* pp. 136-138.
69 Ibid., pp. 145-146.
70 Ibid., p. 152.
71 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2002 Census of Governments,* Report GC02-1P (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 2002).
72 Nancy Burns, *The Formation of American Local Governments: Private Values in Public Institutions* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1994).
73 Gerald E. Frug, "Beyond Regional Government," *Harvard Law Review* 115, no. 7 (May 2002): 1785.
74 E. Terrence Jones and Elaine Hays, "Metropolitan Citizens of St. Louis," paper prepared for a poster session at the annual meeting of the American Political Science Association (September 1, 2001); reprinted in Dick Simpson, *Inside Urban Politics: Voices from America's Cities and Suburbs* (New York: Longman, 2004), pp. 286-292.
75 E. Terrence Jones, *Fragmented by Design: Why St. Louis Has So Many Governments* (St. Louis: Palmerston and Reed Publishing, 2000), Foreword.

76 Fred Siegel, "Is Regional Government the Answer?" *The Public Interest* (Fall 1999): 88.
77 William R. Barnes and Larry C. Ledebur, *The New Regional Economies* (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage, 1998).
78 Rosalind Greenstein and Wim Wiewel, eds., *Urban–Suburban Interdependencies* (Cambridge, MA: Lincoln Institute of Land Policy, 2000), pp. 25-28.
79 See the Minnesota Historical Society, "Public Education: The Minnesota Miracle," www.mnhs.org/library/tips/history_topics/18public.html
80 Myron Orfield, *Metropolitics: A Regional Agenda for Community and Stability* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, and Cambridge, MA: Lincoln Institute of Land Policy, 1997), p. 13.
81 Quoted in ibid., p. 149.
82 Paul G. Lewis, *Shaping Suburbia: How Political Institutions Organize Urban Development* (Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press, 1996), pp. 105-107.
83 Christopher Leo, "Regional Growth Management Regime: The Case of Portland, Oregon," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 20, no. 4 (1998): 363-394.
84 Lewis, *Shaping Suburbia,* p. 115.
85 For a discussion on Measure 37 and Measure 49, see www.oregon.gov/LCD/MEASURE49/index.shtml
86 John DeGrove, *Land, Growth, and Politics* (Chicago: APA Planners' Press, 1984), pp. 249-250.
87 Elizabeth Gearing, "Smart Growth or Smart Growth Machine? The Smart Growth Movement and Its Implications," in *Up Against the Sprawl,* ed. Jennifer Wolch, Manuel Pastor Jr., and Peter Dreier (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2004), p. 280.
88 Robert H. Freilich, *From Sprawl to Smart Growth: Successful Legal, Planning, and Environmental Systems* (Washington, DC: American Bar Association, 1999), p. 323.
89 Terence Samuel, "Suburban Communities Grab Up Land to Keep Developers at Bay," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (May 14, 2000), p. A8.
90 Bank of America, "Beyond Sprawl: New Patterns of Growth to Fit the New California" (San Francisco: Bank of America, 1995).
91 Serena Kataoka, "Vancouverism: Actualizing the Livable City Paradox," *Berkeley Planning Journal* 22, no. 1 (summer 2009): 42-57.
92 Fialka, "Campaign against Sprawl," p. A24.
93 Ibid.
94 Stephanie McCrummen, "Subdivisions Impose Social Divide," *Washington Post* (May 1, 2005), www.washingtonpost.com
95 Ibid.
96 Ibid., pp. 195-196.
97 Ibid., pp. 131-132.
98 Ibid.
99 Siegel, "Is Regional Government the Answer?" p. 85.
100 Ibid., pp. 85-98.
101 Robert Bruegmann, *Sprawl: A Compact History* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2005), p. 68.
102 Ibid., pp. 63-65.
103 Ibid., p. 225.
104 For a comprehensive review, see Office of Technology Assessment, *Technological Reshaping,* Chapter 8.
105 Edward T. McMahon, "Stopping Sprawl by Growing Smarter," *Planning Commissioners Journal* 26 (Spring 1997): 4-7.
106 Peirce and Johnson, "St. Louis: Exploded Galaxy?" p. 6B.
107 Congress for the New Urbanism, *Charter of the New Urbanism* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 2000).
108 Edward Glaeser, "How Skyscrapers Can Save the City," *The Atlantic* (March 2011), accessed online: www.theatlantic.com/magazine/archive/2011/03/how-skyscrapers-can-save-the-city/308387/
109 Kaid Benfied, "The Man Who Thinks Manhattan Isn't Dense Enough," *Grist* (May 20, 2011). Accessed online: http://grist.org/urbanism/2011-05-19-the-man-who-thinks-manhattan-isnt-dense-enough/
110 Ibid.
111 Adler, "Bye, Bye Suburban Dream."
112 James Howard Kunstler, *The Geography of Nowhere* (New York: Touchstone, 1993), p. 10.
113 Ibid., p. 118.
114 John A. Jakle and David Wilson, *Derelict Landscapes: The Wasting of America's Built Environment* (Savage, MD: Rowman and Littlefield, 1992), p. 182.
115 Ibid., p. 40.
116 Green Day, "Jesus of Suburbia" (song), released 2004 on the album *American Idiot.*
117 Congress for the New Urbanism, *Charter of the New Urbanism.*
118 Marc A. Weiss, in Congress for the New Urbanism, *Charter of the New Urbanism,* p. 91.
119 Elizabeth Moule, in ibid., pp. 105-108.
120 Douglas Farr, in ibid., pp. 141-146.
121 Dolores Hayden, *Building Suburbia: Green Fields and Urban Growth* (New York: Pantheon Books, 2003), p. 206.
122 Chad Garrison, "Brave New Town," *Riverfront Times* (June 1–7, 2006), p. 19.
123 For an excellent discussion of all these points, see Donald F. Norris, "Prospects for Regional Governance under the New Regionalism: Economic Imperatives versus Political Impediments," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 23, no. 5 (2001): 562-566.
124 Iver Peterson, "In New Jersey, Sprawl Keeps Outflanking Its Foes," *New York Times* (March 17, 2000), pp. A1, A19.
125 Jon C. Teaford, *The American Suburb: The Basics* (New York: Routledge, 2008).

CHAPTER 12

The Metropolitan Battleground

The Competition for Fiscal Resources

To the average citizen, local debates about taxes and spending may seem to be mostly routine and even boring. For urban officials, however, nothing could be more consequential. Without adequate resources, a city simply cannot offer the level of services and amenities that most people demand. This, basically, is the bottom line, and local officials may find themselves thrown out of office if they do not meet it. In finding revenues to finance these activities, though, municipal officials generally find that the choices available to them are extremely limited. One limitation is legal: state laws dictate the kinds of taxes fees that cities are allowed to impose. The other limitation is political: citizens and businesses do not like taxes. Local officials must be mindful that raising taxes past a certain point might tempt residents and businesses to other jurisdictions in search of a better deal. Because these considerations are always present, local fiscal policy is determined within a battleground in which cities are always trying to outbid one another, and there will be winners and losers.

Local officials devote a lot of attention to policies crafted to improve their competitive position. The stimulus package passed by Congress in 2009 revealed just how the competition among governmental jurisdictions works, whether for private or public dollars. When Congress authorized $144 billion for infrastructure projects, it set off a race that pitted states against states, states against cities, and cities against one another. Like every other public official in the country, Frank C. Ortis, the mayor of Pembroke Pines, Florida, declared, "We have a wish list."[1] In his case, the wish was to repair sewer lines. But it was clear that the federal money would not stretch far enough to fund all the wish lists across the country. States and cities scrambled to make the case that their projects were especially urgent, and that they fit the "shovel ready" criteria laid down by the Obama administration.

The stimulus package established a battleground among jurisdictions. The sudden availability of federal dollars made it newsworthy, but in fact this kind of interjurisdictional competition for sources of revenue goes on all the time. What cities compete for is virtually endless, ranging from federal and state dollars, to malls, big-box stores, office parks, sports stadiums, tourism facilities, and on and on. Depending upon one's point of view, this competition is a positive and dynamic feature of the U.S. system, or it is a waste of public dollars when governments offer subsidies just to influence the location of activities that would occur anyway. The reality, though, is that the system is sustained by the fiscal needs of the governments that make it up, and this is one of the reasons why city budgets are intensely political, and why they matter.

OUTTAKE

Hundreds of Little Hoovers Make the Economic Crisis Worse

Many historians and economists have commented on the blunder by President Herbert Hoover and the Republican Congress in 1932, when they increased taxes and cut spending in an attempt to balance the federal budget. The nation had already slid into a serious economic downturn, and their actions took money out of the economy at a time when it was desperately needed. In a similar fashion, during the economic crisis that began in the late summer of 2008 states and cities took money out of the economy by raising taxes and cutting services. In this way, states and cities made the recession worse and, in effect, canceled out much of the economic stimulus provided by the federal government.

The American Recovery and Reinvestment Act, as passed by Congress on on February 13, 2009, sent $79

billion of fiscal assistance directly to the states and authorized $144 billion for infrastructure projects undertaken by state and local governments, and $41 billion for school districts. The stimulus package provided a greater influx of federal money than at any time since the 1930s, but it did not do much to spare local governments from making deep cuts in their budgets. The federal dollars were designated for building and reparing infrastructure; cities were not allowed to use them to solve current budgetary problems. As a result, cities slashed their budgets deeper in 2010 than they had the year before.

To make ends meet, states and local governments took increasingly desperate measures. By February 2009, 83 percent of cities had cut expenditures and services. By December, Philadelphia had closed 11 of its 54 libraries and announced that 67 of its 81 pools would not open in the summer. Beginning January 1, San Diego eliminated all six of the centers it had established to help citizens with city services, and cut the number of new police recruits by half. Seattle reduced spending on youth violence and homeless services. The hardest-hit cities began cutting even essential services; for example, Pontiac, Michigan, closed 8 public schools and reduced the number of police officers from 200 to only 73. Baltimore decided to consider allowing advertisements on their fire trucks to raise funds after closing several firehouses. Local governments even struggled to bury the indigent. The impact of such measures was magnified by budget cuts being imposed by state governments, which were feeling the same pressures. In March, 2009, 34 states were cutting a wide range of social-services programs.

A fundamental characteristic of the American intergovernmental system requires states and cities to balance their budgets despite the fact that they provide services that are essential to the immediate health and welfare of their citizens. The economist Paul Krugman wants to change the system so that it stops asking so much from the governments least equipped to adjust during times of economic hardship. He has proposed that the costs of most forms of medical care, education, and infrastructure be assumed by the federal government rather than by states and local governments. Most people, however, see strengths as well as weaknesses in America's intergovernmental system, and in any case the political mood of the last few years favors an even lesser federal role. For these reasons, fundamental changes like those suggested by Krugman are not likely to come any time soon, but he is right when he says that economic crises raise issues about the way that the United States finances its governmental activities.

Sources: Paul Krugman, "Fifty Herbert Hoovers," *New York Times* (December 28, 2008), www.nytimes.com/2008/12/29/opinion/29krugman.html; also Mary Williams Walsh, "Under Strain, Cities Are Cutting Back Projects," *New York Times* (September 30, 2008), www.nytimes.com/2008/10/01/business/01muni.html; Chris Hoene, "Fiscal Outlook for Cities Worsens in 2009," *Research Brief on America's Cities,* by National League of Cities, Issue 2009_1 (Washington, DC: National League of Cities, 2009), www.nlc.org; "Legislative News," *Governing* (April 9, 2009).

Cities in the U.S. Federal System

Cities in the United States operate within a very peculiar system of governments, at least when compared with the practices in most of the world: "By not providing capital resources to subnational governments from the central government, the United States stands apart from almost every other advanced capitalist state, even other federal states."[2] In many Western nations, much of the basic infrastructure and many of the services provided to citizens are financed by the central governments even when they are administered by local governmental units. By contrast, cities in the United States derived only about 4 percent of their revenues from the national government in 2007, compared to 14 percent in Japan (in 2003) and one-half or much more in western European countries.[3] In addition, most cities outside the United States do not have to rely on private lenders to raise money for capital projects; those are generally financed by national governments; such a system means that, unlike in the United States, local economic conditions only partly influence the ability of a city to find the revenues necessary to provide for critical services and build infrastructure.

Municipal governments in the United States are located at the bottom of a three-tiered federal system of governance. At the top, the federal government enjoys the greatest freedom to impose taxes and go into debt. At its discretion, it may make states and cities implement policies that are costly (such as drunk driving, education testing, and antipollution laws), but it does not necessarily provide the money for such "unfunded mandates." The federal government has access to the best, most flexible sources of revenue: the personal income tax, payroll taxes (for social security), and corporate income taxes. States are next in line, collecting personal income taxes (but at a lower rate), and impose sales and receipts taxes. The states are not allowed to run deficits year to year, and neither are their cities. Ninety-nine of the 100 largest cities in the nation are, by law, required to balance their budgets.[4]

State and county governments spend money within cities for such things as education, pollution control, and infrastructure such as roads, bridges, water and sewer lines, health clinics, and the like, but the cities finance nearly all of the basic municipal services and a great many infrastructure projects with their own revenues. A consequence of being at the bottom of the federal system is that cities have fewer sources of revenue and operate under more stringent budget rules than governments at any other level.

Local governments may be at the bottom in powers, but not in responsibilities. As shown in Table 12.1, in 2007 local governments employed 13.2 million workers, with the largest employers being school districts, municipalities, and counties. This was more than four times the 2.7 million people who worked for the federal government and more than six times as many federal workers when postal workers and civilian military personnel are excluded. Local governments also employed more than twice as many workers as the states.[5] Even so, the federal government collected $1.8 trillion in revenue in fiscal year 2002, three times as much as the $597 billion in own-source revenue collected by cities. One notable fact is that although local governments collect less revenue and spend less money, they hire far more workers than any other level of government because the services that local governments provide are extremely labor intensive, such as education, police, fire, and sanitation.

The budgetary policies of the federal or state government filter down to local governments. In December 2002, in the midst of a recession, state budget deficits reached levels not seen since World War II or, in some cases, since the Great Depression of the 1930s. Because the deficits had reached 13–18 percent of state expenditures, states took steps to slash spending. Because a substantial portion of state spending goes on functions that are extremely important to local residents, the impact of budgetary cuts made by the cities was magnified. When Congress passed the economic stimulus package in February 2009, it was the first time in many years that the national government had provided substantial new resources to help cities, but the assistance was temporary.

TABLE 12.1 Federal, State, and Local Government Employment and Revenues, 2013/14

Employment (in Thousands) 2014	
Federal civilian	2,700
Federal less U.S. Postal Service and Department of Defense	1,378
State	5,344
Local	13,911
Counties	2,928
Municipalities	3,001
Townships	510
School districts	6,925
Special districts	821
Revenues (Own Source; in Billions of Dollars)	
Federal	$2,106
State	1,159
Local	947

Note: The revenue figures do not include intergovernmental transfers or borrowing.
Sources: U.S. Census Bureau, *2014 Annual Survey of Public Employment and Payroll:* Federal Government Civilian Employment and Payroll Data; State Government Employment and Payroll Data; Local Government Employment & Payroll Data: http://www.census.gov/govs/apes/. U.S. Census Bureau, *State and Local Finances by Level of Government and by State 2013,* 2013 Census of Governments: Finance: Survey of State and Local Government Finances. http://factfinder.census.gov/faces/tableservices/jsf/pages/productview.xhtml?src=bkmk

Where the Money Goes

Only occasionally do the everyday operations of urban governments hit a nerve because most of what they do seems pretty routine. Because of this, it is difficult to appreciate the critical role that cities play in providing basic services. In a nation where nearly 40 percent of citizens lack health insurance, cities are frontline providers of health services provided through public hospitals and clinics, not only for the poor but also for families of the underinsured middle class. They provide essential housing services, even if most of this takes the form of

contributing to or maintaining homeless shelters. During cold and heat emergencies, cities are expected to assist in providing immediate help.

Collectively, local governments in the United States spend huge sums of money. In fiscal 2005, for example, they spent $1.14 trillion; cities accounted for about one-third of this total. In terms of expenses, the leading municipal budget by far is New York City, with $76.8 billion in planned expenditures and appropriations for the 2015 fiscal year, compared to Chicago at $8.6 billion and Los Angeles at $8.6 billion.[6] These huge volumes of money finance everything from everyday services such as police and fire protection, maintenance of water and sewer pipes, and 911 emergency phone services. They tend to be virtually hidden from view because they are ubiquitous and expected aspects of our daily lives.

City spending is driven by powerful forces that are largely beyond the control of local officials and voters. City governments are not sovereign entities. Higher levels of government (state and federal) allocate responsibilities—generally called *mandates*—to city governments within the intergovernmental system. Equally important, no matter how dire their budgetary situation may be, cities must provide a minimum level of services and infrastructure maintenance necessary for preserving the physical well-being of city residents and the viability of a city: public health, police and fire protection, education, water distribution, sewage collection, parks, highways, museums, and libraries.

The relative distribution of municipal expenditures among various services and responsibilities for 2006 is shown in Table 12.2. Most cities spend their money on a variety of services that most citizens take for granted, such as education, highways, parks and recreation, sewage and waste disposal, and police and fire protection. However, the biggest cities tend to devote a larger proportion of their budgets to social programs such as housing and community development, health and hospitals, and public welfare; indeed, the six cities with more than 1 million residents allocated a combined 11.6 percent for public welfare—more than twice the proportion spent by cities with populations of 400,000 to 1 million. It should be noted that most cities, even most big cities, do not run the schools within their boundaries; normally, education is financed through independent school districts. The exceptions include some older cities, such as New York, Boston, San Francisco, and Baltimore, which built schools before it had become the usual practice to finance education through special districts, and Chicago, where the mayor took over the schools in 1995.

TABLE 12.2 Direct Expenditures for Selected Services in the Largest U.S. Cities (Based on 2007 Population)

Expenditures	Cities of 1,000,000 Population	Cities of 400,000 to 999,999 Population
Education	18.3%	10.9%
Community development and housing	5.5	4.2
Public welfare	11.0	10.3
Health and hospitals	11.3	7.5
Police protection	9.5	11.0
Fire protection	3.9	5.7
Corrections	1.8	1.9
Highways	3.3	5.8
Parks and recreation	2.3	6.0
Sewerage	4.4	7.7
Waste management	2.0	3.6
Governmental administration	3.1	6.5
Interest on debt	5.7	6.1

Note: General expenditures only.
Source: Recalculated, using U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 2012* (2006), Table 458 (online data book: www.census.gov/compendia/statab/).

Except for education, many of the social services the cities provide would be considered by most people as

redistributive in nature, in the sense that they disproportionately benefit less affluent residents. However, failure to treat the problems of the poor can reverberate through the urban community and affect everyone. Public hospitals and health clinics, for example, are used mostly by people without health insurance. In the absence of public health facilities, many families would quickly become reduced to desperation and penury in an attempt to find such services. Considered on its own merits, this would be a social disaster, but in addition, rates of communicable and contagious diseases such as tuberculosis and AIDS would spread more quickly.

Homelessness is another social problem that most big cities attempt to treat in a somewhat compassionate manner. Virtually all large cities have a population of homeless people wandering downtown streets. Law enforcement can manage but cannot solve the problem. In January 2003, Chicago's mayor, Richard M. Daley, announced an effort to end homelessness in the city by 2013 by closing homeless shelters and using the money to fund permanent housing and social services. The mayor's proposal, which was drafted by nonprofit organizations working with city administrators, was motivated, in part, by the expense and intractability of the problem. It cost $1,200 a month to provide temporary shelter for a family of three—money that could, instead, be devoted to rental of permanent housing and social services.[7] Alas, homelessness in Chicago did not end in 2013. In 2011, the state of Illinois had cut $2.3 million in funding for a city program providing rides to shelters for the homeless. As a consequence, the newly elected mayor, Rahm Emanuel, cut the program altogether. When this sparked vigorous criticism among the aldermen, Emanuel reinstated the program (and its workers) on city money. The State of Illinois eventually refunded the program.[8]

Chicago's millionaire mayor has come up with myriad ways to cut city costs in dealing with homelessness since, many of which have earned a lot of criticism. In January 2016, the mayor announced his support of a new 4 percent tax on AirBnb rentals aimed at subsidizing the city's efforts to get homeless people into permanent housing. Many of his critics claimed that the mayor was less interested in permanently solving issues of homelessness in Chicago, rather than getting homeless "tent cities" away from the city beaches in time for the summer (and tourist season).[9]

Public health services account for a large chunk of the budgets of large cities, and they are too important to abandon. Cities and counties engage in restaurant inspections and move quickly when cases of food poisoning break out. Health clinics offer free flu shots and screening for diseases. There are constant reminders of the importance of such services. In the summer of 2002, an epidemic of the West Nile virus, which is carried by birds, spread throughout the Midwest, with a heavy outbreak in Illinois. The state of Illinois and city officials in Chicago moved fast in an attempt to track the disease. Local governments throughout the Chicago area sprayed ponds and rivers where mosquitoes might breed, and launched an aggressive campaign of eradication at the start of the mosquito-breeding season in the spring of 2003. But such measures do not reveal how critical public health services are to the urban population. A flu pandemic would overwhelm the public health systems of most cities.

Although smaller cities spend about the same proportion on health and hospitals, they spend less on other social services. Big cities take on more responsibilities for a variety of reasons: their citizens demand more and better services (for example, well-trained police officers and firefighters), they pay higher salaries to their public employees, and they experience the high service costs made necessary by high-density populations, aging buildings and infrastructure, and high rates of poverty and unemployment. Because they do more, they spend more; on average, the cities with populations exceeding a million people spend about twice as much for each citizen as the average U.S. city and many times more than most small cities.

City expenditures rose sharply in the second half of the twentieth century, not only in total amount but also relative to the economy as a whole, increasing from 5 percent of the gross national product (GNP) in 1949–1950 to a high of 9 percent in 1975–1976. But after the recession of 1974–1975, the brakes were applied to municipal budgets. The six biggest cities experienced a 10 percent drop in their budgets from 1975 to 1980, when inflation is taken into account. After adjusting for inflation, cities of all sizes, on the average, did not increase spending at all over the same years. Since 1980, spending has declined slightly (after adjustment for inflation) for cities of all sizes.

Because they rely so much on their own sources of revenue, there is a close relationship between expenditure levels and local economic vitality. As shown in Table 12.3, some cities in the Frostbelt were forced to make deep cuts in their budgets in the 20-year period from 1975 to 2006. Measured in constant 2006 dollars (to account for inflation), Baltimore's budget shrank by 36 percent, Cleveland's by 16 percent, and St. Louis's by 28 percent. Of the Frostbelt cities shown in Table 12.3, only New York and Chicago were able to increase their budgets. The contrast with Sunbelt cities is striking. Of the five shown, four increased their budgets substantially; indeed,

Phoenix more than doubled its spending. It is true that the populations of several Frostbelt cities fell during this period at the same time that Sunbelt cities grew rapidly. However, city expenditures are not related one to one with population; if anything, older cities bear a bigger burden because of old infrastructure and serious social problems.

The economic health of cities varies tremendously. Historically, central cities have been significantly disadvantaged compared to the suburbs in their capacity to generate revenue and in the ability to reduce the cost of services. A sample of 62 cities taken in 1962 revealed that central city residents earned, on average, $105 for every $100 earned by suburbanites. Clearly, more than a decade after the flight to the suburbs had begun, a large number of affluent families had still not made the move. However, by 1989 the city–suburban ratio had reversed; now the average city resident made 84 percent as much. At the same time, in 1989 the poverty rate in central cities was 18 percent, which was more than double the metropolitan average of 8 percent.[10]

Almost all the older industrial cities experienced significant population losses due to the flight of the middle class to the suburbs. As the population of the central cities fell, the cost of providing infrastructure and basic services, such as police and fire, did not decline correspondingly.[11] Even if they have fewer people than in the past, cities still have the same sewer and water lines—often old and in need of frequent repair—and the same miles of streets to plow and patrol. Once the middle class has fled there are fewer taxpayers to pay for these services, and those who are left make less taxable income and own less valuable property than those in surrounding jurisdictions.

TABLE 12.3 Total Expenditures for Selected Frostbelt and Sunbelt Cities, 1975–2006 (in Millions of 2005 Dollars[a])

	Fiscal Year 1975 Expenditures	Fiscal Year 1996 Expenditures	Fiscal Year 2006 Expenditures	Percentage Change 1975–1996	Percentage Change 1991–1996	Percentage Change 1996-2006
Frostbelt Cities						
Baltimore	$3,842	$2,442	$2,783	–36%	0%	14%
Chicago	3,932	5,271	5,731	34	12	9
Cleveland	1,043	873	–	–16	2	–
New York	46,855	52,507	62,917	12	2	20
St. Louis	916	660	–	–28	–14	–
Sunbelt Cities						
Dallas	$839	$1,622	$2,084	93%	32%	29%
Denver	1,277	2,325	2,004	82	48	–14
New Orleans	901	883	–	–2	–15	–
Phoenix	773	1,654	2,462	114	6	49
San Jose	514	1,070	1,618	108	5	51

Note: [a]Adjustments for inflation are calculated using the GNP Price Index for state and local government purchases, U.S. Bureau of Economic Analysis, *Survey of Current Business, Aug. 2012,* p. 199, Table 3. Accessed online: https://www.bea.gov/scb/pdf/2012/08%20August/0812%20gdp-other%20nipa_series.pdf

Sources: U.S. Bureau of the Census, *City Government Finances: 1975–76,* GF 76, no. 4 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1977), Table 5; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1995* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1995), Table 493; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1999* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1999), p. 335, Table 531, and U.S. Bureau of the Census, Statistical Abstract of the United States, 2012, p. 297, Table 458.

It is worth noting, however, that those Frostbelt cities, for which data from 2006 was available, seem to have recovered in terms of their budgets and expenditures. As shown in Table 12.3, the growth rates in spending seem to have somewhat leveled out between Sunbelt and Frostbelt cities, even though Phoenix and San Jose are still growing explosively. This may be due to what has been referred to as the Great Inversion. Industrial cities, which had been struggling economically and losing tremendous amounts of population during the second half of the twentieth century, have once again become attractive places to live. Where the middle class was once "escaping" the old industrial cities, it is now, at least to a certain extent, returning. Urban rents and real estate values are on the rise, and gentrification has become a buzzword in reference to urban neighborhoods.

Poverty boosts public spending not only for welfare and social services but also for a broad range of other services. Central-city governments spend money on lead paint poisoning prevention (a problem prevalent in older

homes), rat control, and housing demolition. Courts have ordered cities to provide shelter for the homeless at a significant expense to local governments. In 1987, for example, a court order required New York City to provide emergency shelter to its homeless population, which cost the city $274 million.[12] Poverty also drives up the cost of everyday services. Fire protection, for instance, costs more in high-density areas where deteriorated and aging structures pose a high fire risk, and police protection is also more difficult in such environments.

Another factor that drives up the cost of city services is the panoply of expensive mandates forced on cities by higher levels of government. Cities are not mentioned in the U.S. Constitution; legally, city governments are the creatures of the states. Although many cities have home rule charters that allow them to govern themselves internally within broad guidelines, municipal corporations are not fully sovereign. The scope of a city's service responsibilities is beyond its control. State and federal governments can, and frequently do, order cities to provide particular services or meet minimum standards of service provision, and cities only rarely receive more money to cover the costs of the mandated standards and services.

Since the mid-1960s, the numbers of unfunded federal mandates imposed on cities have proliferated. In the case of concurrent powers shared by the federal and state governments, Congress has the power to preempt (override) state and local laws. According to the supremacy clause (Article VI) of the Constitution, when there is a conflict between a national law and a state (or local) law, the national law prevails. The Supreme Court upheld federal preemption in the 1985 *Garcia* decision.[13] In *Garcia,* the Court upheld the constitutionality of the 1974 amendments to the Fair Labor Standards Act, which applied minimum wage and overtime pay provisions to public transit workers in San Antonio. This decision made it clear that state and local governments are not protected from federal preemption statutes by the Tenth Amendment (which reserves powers not granted to the federal government to the states). Their only protection comes from political pressure they can put on Congress. In 1986, the U.S. Department of Labor estimated that the cost to state and local governments of complying with the new labor standards exceeded $1.1 billion.[14] The Clean Air Act of 1990 required 100 cities to install anti-pollution devices on their garbage incinerators at an estimated average cost of $20 million per incinerator.[15] The U.S. Environmental Protection Agency estimated that the total cost of environmental mandates for local governments increased from $7.7 billion in 1972 to $19.2 billion in 1987.

Responding to complaints from state and local officials, in March 1995 Congress passed, and President Clinton signed, the Unfunded Mandates Reform Act, which required Congress to weigh the costs and benefits of new rules and to help pay the costs if state and local governments were forced to implement them. This legislation came rather late in the day for most cities, and in any case, it has been ignored. In 2002, President Bush promised to defray the increased cost of security borne by cities because of the "war on terrorism." As of April 2003, no aid was forthcoming, and the amount proposed was considered inadequate by local officials. During the Bush administration, mandates (though they are rarely called that) have become commonplace as a way of passing legislation without paying for the resulting programs. The No Child Left Behind Act, which took effect in 2002, makes federal aid of any kind to school districts dependent upon the ability of students in those districts to pass standardized tests. Though the federal government promised to pay for some of the costs of the testing, by 2005 it was $25 billion behind in reimbursements.[16]

Various economic and political forces beyond the control of local officials impact local government expenditures. Economic downturns, concentrated poverty, unfunded mandates, and terrorist threats impose unpredictable costs. As one fiscal expert observed,

> A city's fiscal health … depends on economic, social, and institutional factors that are largely outside the city's control. Poor fiscal health is not caused by poor management, corruption, or profligate spending, and a city government's ability to alter the city's fiscal health is severely limited.[17]

Over the last half century, older cities became accustomed to dealing with chronic economic problems and a high level of poverty. Unfunded mandates added to the burden, and terrorist threats added still more responsibilities. The Great Recession dealt a blow to cities of all sorts, new and old, urban and suburban. For the first time in many years, they are all in the same boat.

Where the Money Comes From

The sources of the revenues that cities collect are dictated by two basic considerations: what state laws allow, and what local officials feel they can impose without harming their ability to compete for investors and middle-class residents.[18] There are many different ways to solve the problem; the challenge is to find a way to raise revenue

without inciting too much resentment and opposition. Over time, local officials have learned that property taxes are not popular, and as a result these have become less important to city budgets than in the past. A few states allow their cities to impose earnings or corporate income taxes, but these tend to be modest because they may drive away workers and their employers. In recent years, for obvious reasons, "stealth" taxes have become more and more common. These are charges imposed on citizens that amount to a tax, but go under some other name: a fee for entering a museum, for example, or higher parking charges, or fines. It is, in effect, a shell game that everyone agrees to play.

Almost all cities are allowed by their states to impose property taxes, probably because this tax has such a long history. Twenty-eight states allow their cities to impose taxes on retail sales, but only 8 percent of cities (most of them in Ohio and Pennsylvania) are able to impose income taxes.[19] Most of them are also allowed to charge user fees for such facilities as public parking, museums and zoos, ice rinks, and swimming pools, and in the same spirit, most cities are permitted to collect taxes that target visitors, such as hotel/motel and entertainment taxes. Cities also rely on a continuous flow of intergovernmental revenues, and a small amount from the federal government (e.g., for pollution control and law enforcement), but most of this is passed through the states or allocated by the states for particular functions; especially important are road construction and maintenance, corrections, and public safety. It is difficult to find a pattern that fits all cities.

The revenue source that saved the cities from the worst fiscal effects of the urban crisis in the years following World War II came in the form of federal aid in the 1960s and beyond. Between 1965 and 1974, intergovernmental transfers to all cities rose 370 percent, more than twice the 153 percent increase in municipal expenditures.[20] Figure 12.1 shows that federal aid to cities increased sharply after the mid-1960s, peaked at 26 percent of cities' own-source revenue in 1978, and then dropped like a stone. President Reagan ended the special relationship that had been forged between the federal government and cities under previous Democratic administrations. By 1992, federal aid bottomed out at 4.5 percent of city revenues, climbed slightly to 6.4 percent by 1997, and fell to 4 percent by 2002.[21]

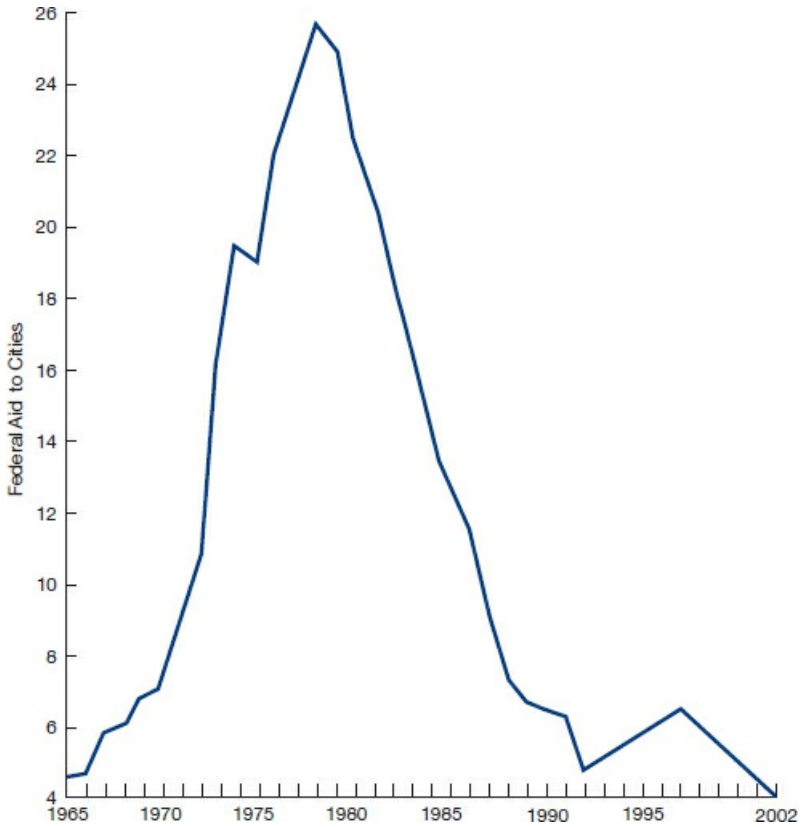


FIGURE 12.1 Direct Aid to Cities as a Percentage of Own-Source Revenue, 1965–2002

Sources: Helen F. Ladd and John Yinger, *America's Ailing Cities: Fiscal Health and the Design of Urban Policy,* updated ed. (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989), p. 270. Updated using U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2000 Census of Governments,* vol. 4, *Government Finances of Municipal and Townships Governments,* Report GC 97 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, September 2000); U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2002 Census of Governments,* vol. 4, no. 5, *Compendium of Government Finances* (2002), Table 2, www.census.gov/prod/2005pubs/gc024x5.pdf.

Since the era of significant federal aid ended, cities have been very resourceful in finding ways to raise revenue. The creativity of local officials has been checked mainly by two considerations. First, when taxes reach a high enough level, taxpayers are prone to rebel, as evidenced by the taxpayer revolts against property taxes that swept the nation in the 1970s. Second, local officials are always aware that an excessive level of taxation may chase away businesses and middle-class taxpayers. This checks and balances system does not work perfectly, of course, but it does impose some general rules of the game.

The property tax was once the principal source of revenue for local governments. The most important and widely used form of property tax is the ad valorem real property tax, a levy imposed as a percentage of the value of land and its improvements. From colonial times through the early years of the republic, real property was taken to be the best indicator of both wealth and the ability to pay taxes. At the time, this assumption was accurate. Most of the wealth of the era was tied to the land, and fortunes were made in land speculation. Therefore, a tax on real property seemed to be the fairest and most reliable way to finance state and local governmental services.[22]

Taxation of personal (or nonreal) property—that is, assets other than real estate and improvements—evolved as the cities became more complex. As trade and manufacturing grew in importance, more and more wealth became represented in bank accounts, merchandise, patent rights, machinery, capital stock, and corporate assets. Cities (and states) began to levy taxes on such sources of wealth in order to maintain a reliable relationship between individual tax burdens and personal wealth. Such assets were often hard to find and assess, however, and in any case wealthy people used their considerable influence to discourage this kind of taxation. For these reasons, although the numbers of people with significant personal assets mushroomed after the Civil War, the proportion of the property tax attributable to personal property actually fell.[23]

Because they stir resentment among residents and businesses, in recent years property taxes have steadily fallen as a proportion of the revenues collected by cities. In 1902, personal and real property taxes accounted for 73 percent of all municipal revenues, with license and franchise fees accounting for most of the rest. These taxes continued to provide approximately three-fourths of the tax receipts until the late 1930s and early 1940s, but after World War II the cities began finding new revenue sources.[24] By 1962, property taxes yielded barely 50 percent of municipal revenues in the 72 largest metropolitan areas (even though the property tax continued to generate almost all the revenue for school districts). Only a few years later, in fiscal year 1975, property taxes accounted for little more than a third (35 percent) of the revenues in the largest metropolitan areas, despite a 130 percent increase in the average per capita levy since the early 1960s.[25] Clearly, other tax sources had gone up much faster, and they have continued to do so. The hot new revenue sources have been sales taxes, user fees, and charges for such entertainment costs as hotels, motels, and rental cars. Because of this trend, by 1996 reliance on the property tax had dropped to 19 percent for cities over 400,000 in population, and to 15 percent by 2002, when in some big cities property taxes accounted for less than 10 percent of the budget.[26]

Over the past half-century, the property tax was an increasingly significant source of revenue growth only in the rapidly growing cities of the Sunbelt. This was possible because of rising property values. In Phoenix, the value of taxable property rose 251 percent from 1965 to 1973; by contrast, in Newark it increased only 2 percent and in Detroit 14 percent during the same period.[27] However, the decades-long march upward disappeared during the recession of 2008–2009, when property values fell even faster in the Sunbelt than elsewhere, with real estate values falling by more than 40 percent in Florida, Arizona, and California. Property tax revenues were predicted to fall by 10 percent in California over a three-year period, but it would be even worse if property tax assessments actually kept up with changes in the value of real estate. Santa Clara County, which had experienced a 7 percent increase in property tax revenues the year before, was bracing itself for a 2 percent reduction by June 2009, and the assessor expected to review almost half the properties in the county before the next year.[28] These delays buy cities time to reconcile shrinking budgets; however, some cities have faced five consecutive years of shrinking budgets due to property assessment delays. Across the nation, a tax revolt began brewing because homeowners who saw their property values fall expected their tax bills to fall as well, but this often did not happen. Tax assessors offices were inundated with appeals.[29]

Another disadvantage of the property tax is that a high proportion of property is tax-exempt. According to one study, almost one-third of all real property in the United States is subject to some kind of exemption.[30] In 1982, in just 23 states and the District of Columbia, there was $15 billion in exempt property for religious institutions, $22 billion for educational institutions, $15 billion for charitable institutions, and $128 billion for government property.[31] In recent decades the proportion of tax-exempt property has increased. Many cities have provided tax

relief for homes owned by elderly or poor people ("circuit breaker" laws). States and cities have tried to attract or retain businesses and investors by forgiving or reducing their property taxes. Many states have exempted from taxation various forms of business property, such as machines and inventory, without consulting local governments.[32]

The rationale behind the decisions regarding tax-exempt status for nonprofits is not always entirely transparent. As scholar Michael Pagano pointed out in a piece in *The Atlantic's* "CityLab" in 2012, the extent of public services that non-profits are assumed to provide as a basis for their tax-exempt status is not always reasonably adequate. Furthermore, a substitute tax, which is sometimes paid by non-profits to local governments on a voluntary basis (Payments in Lieu of Taxes, or PILOT), seem to be determined in a non-transparent and often seemingly random way.[33] Pagano concludes:

> Taxpayers should engage in a broad-based dialogue about which entities should be provided services without charging them for the cost of service delivery and which entities should pay the full freight. If tax-exempts are providing quasi-city services, such as indigent care at hospitals, the taxpayer-voters might conclude that an equitable trade-off has been agreed to. Wherever any one falls on the tax-exempt/taxable divide, the taxpayer-voter ought to at least know which entities are subsidized at what tax-price, so that a deliberative dialogue on "who benefits" can be honestly and openly debated.[34]

The burden of tax-exempt property falls most heavily on those cities that are least able to afford it because central cities have twice as much exempt property located in them as their surrounding suburbs.[35] In 1985, more than 51 percent of the real property in Boston was tax exempt, up from 41 percent in 1972.[36] A 1983 article traced a 3.2-mile route through Boston where a walker would not set foot on a single parcel of taxable property.[37] Cities must provide services for these properties, including police and fire protection, but the owners pay no taxes. The situation in New York so incensed one taxpayer that he sued the city tax commission over the "subsidy of religion," going all the way to the U.S. Supreme Court before finally losing the case.[38]

Taxpayers' revolts that started in the 1970s forced governments to reduce their reliance on property taxes. During that period, at least 14 state legislatures enacted laws that limited property tax rates or spending by local governments.[39] Citizen initiatives went even further. The first widely publicized of these was Proposition 13 in California, which was passed by popular referendum in June 1978. From March to November 1978, 16 states held initiatives or referenda to limit taxes or spending, although not all were binding on public officials.[40] Thirteen of the citizen initiatives passed. More such proposals were approved after 1978. Since that time, public officials have tended to regard any proposal to raise property taxes as the third rail of politics that they dare not touch. This, as much as any other consideration, explains why local officials have searched hard for alternatives.

More cities might use earnings taxes if their states allowed them to, but few do. Only about 8 percent of municipalities of 50,000 or more levy income taxes.[41] State law limits its use to Ohio, Pennsylvania, and Kentucky, although some of the larger cities in some other states, such as New York City, Kansas City, and St. Louis, use it, but 90 percent of the cities that collect income taxes are in Pennsylvania and Ohio.[42] Figure 12.2 shows what types of taxes cities rely on by state. Cities in some states rely on property taxes, others on sales taxes, and even more on combinations of taxes.

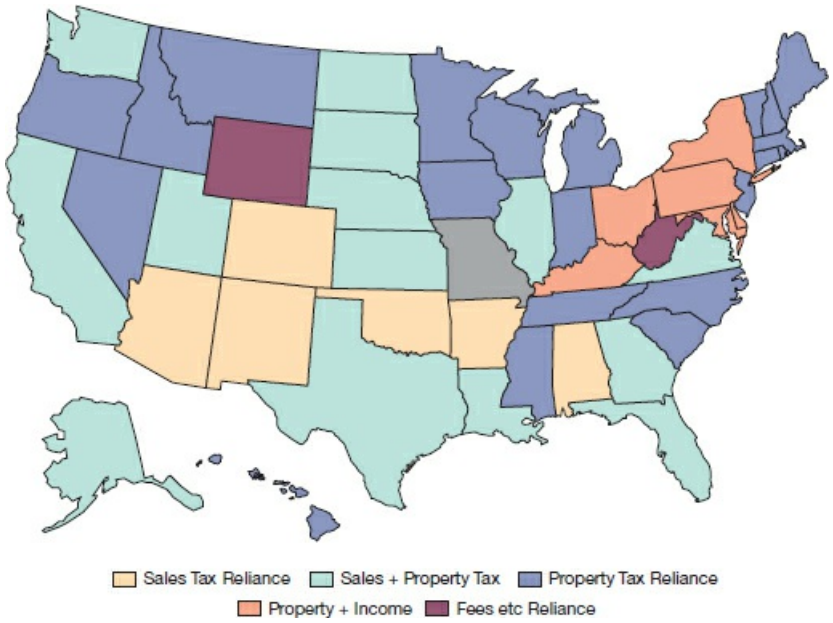


FIGURE 12.2 Municipal Tax Reliance by State

Sales taxes, user fees, and fees for permits and special services have been the taxes of choice since the 1970s. Currently, 35 states allow their local governments to impose retail sales taxes.[43] Sales taxes have been useful because they are highly flexible. Taxes on retail sales can yield big revenues even when they are adjusted by tiny increments, and a substantial portion of the tax is paid by people not living within the city's boundaries. This is especially valuable for cities with large retailing centers serving a regional market, such as malls and big-box stores. Cities will go to great lengths to land big retailers, as revealed at the April 2009 meeting of the International Council of Shopping Centers held in Las Vegas. Economic development specialists and city officials from across the nation flocked to the convention to schmooze with developers and representatives of chain store retail outlets. For local officials, the stakes were both economic and symbolic: "Mom-and-pop stores may provide local flavor, but chain stores are societal benchmarks. Mayors hear it from their constituents all the time: 'Why don't we have a Trader Joe's? Why don't we have a Bass Pro Shops? What are we, some kind of backwater?'"[44] Changes in economic conditions question the long-term viability of sales taxes. While sales taxes cover the purchase of many goods, few cities extend their taxes to services. The expanding service sector promises advantages of economic growth and downtown renaissance but provides few added resources to the city's tax coffers.

With the fiscal bottom line and the reputation of local public officials riding on the outcome, the competition among jurisdictions for retail is extremely intense. Accordingly, governments try to outbid one another by offering subsidies to developers and retaining consultants to help them make deals. Businesses are skilled at shopping around, and they reap rewards for their efforts: in 1995 and 1996, state and local corporate subsidies added up to almost $49 billion.[45] To put such numbers in perspective, it may be helpful to consider a 1998 study, which reported that the combination of federal, state, and local incentives offered to influence the location of business cost "every working man and woman in America the equivalent of two weekly paychecks" a year.[46]

However attractive they may be, reliance on sales taxes can be hazardous. Stores that move in can move out just as easily, and if this happens subsidies appear to be a poor deal for local governments. During the 2008–2009 recession, the take from retail taxes dropped sharply because of declining sales and store closings. Officials in cities that relied heavily on sales taxes reported greater declines in revenues than those cities that had a more diverse mix of tax sources.[47]

In response to taxpayer revolts and economic downturns, city officials have found ingenious ways to extract money from taxpayers without admitting that they are actually imposing new taxes. Since 2000, two episodes have prompted bursts of remarkable creativity. The terrorist attacks of September 11, 2001, changed the cities' economic fortunes very quickly. Travel and tourism plummeted, along with the stock market and retail sales. By March 2002, sales taxes had declined to 97 percent of earlier estimates, and income and tourist taxes had fallen to 90 percent.[48] Cities were squeezed between falling revenues and increases in costs for law enforcement and security. As a result, they began making deep cuts in expenditures. They had barely recovered from those

budgetary problems when the economy plunged into recession in 2008.

To create an illusion that they are not raising taxes at all, cities have imposed an astonishing variety of user and special-services fees. The trend began in earnest in the early 1990s. In 1991, 73 percent of cities increased user fees and 40 percent adopted new charges for at least one city service.[49] Fees for parking, museums, botanical gardens, zoos, aquariums, planetariums, ice rinks, and swimming pools were increased, and many of the institutions and programs supporting these services were expected to be self-supporting. In many cities, garbage collection became a private service for which each household pays instead of being a public service paid for out of general tax revenues.

In response to mounting budget deficits in 2003, states and cities all over the nation redoubled their efforts to raise revenues by imposing new fees or hiking those already on the books. When Michael Bloomberg, a Democrat turned Republican turned Independent, was New York's mayor he increased fees by $139 million while also proposing that the city's income tax rate be reduced. Literally dozens of fees were involved, including a 33 percent increase in subway and bus fares, a 7 percent jump in tuition for public colleges, increases in parking fines, and higher fees to obtain a marriage license or birth certificate or to place a cellphone call from within the city. Fees had already been hiked for the use of public tennis courts and baseball diamonds. In California a long list of new fees increased the costs of college tuition, car licenses, hunting and fishing licenses, admission to museums and parks, and even tuberculosis (a proposed $50 charge for anyone testing negative and $400 for positive).

The Great Recession prompted city officials to become more inventive than ever. Winter Haven, Florida, now levies a fee to cover the services provided by police and firefighters when they respond to auto accidents. Londonderry, New Hampshire, decided to charge a $25 fine for any dog owner who failed to renew a dog license on time. Cities learned that they could reap a steady revenue stream by hiring private companies to install and monitor cameras at intersections to record traffic violations. One mayor floated the idea of a "streetlight user fee" of $4.25 to pay for the city's cost of operating streetlights. Honolulu, Hawaii, considered raising its fees for zoo parking by 500 percent.[50] The real problem that arises from raising money through fees rather than taxes is that it is extremely regressive in nature: the fee costs the same regardless of the income of the person paying it. Over the last few years, less regressive forms of taxation (which is what fees are, in reality) have remained steady or even dropped.[51]

However creative local officials may be, there are times when even the most extraordinary efforts may fall short. In 2013, Michigan's Governor Rick Snyder put the city of Detroit into receivership and appointed an emergency manager, Kevyn Orr, to oversee its fiscal affairs. The task Orr inherited was challenging in the extreme. The city was within months of becoming the largest city in the United States history to go bankrupt; against a $15–17 billion debt and pension obligation, its total revenues added up to only $14.7 billion. In June 2013 Orr announced that the city would have to sell off assets to meet its obligations to creditors. Everything might be on the auction block: Detroit's half of the Detroit–Windsor Tunnel (worth more than $65 million); Belle Isle Park, with its miles of waterfront; the contents of the Detroit Historical Museum (which has, for example, a collection of 60 classic cars); even artwork from the Detroit Institute of Art. It was possible that almost anything might be considered distressed property—even animals at the zoo.[52]

Detroit's situation is extreme; indeed, bizarre. The measures taken to save the city will affect the economy and quality of life for citizens of the region for years to come. Other questions arise: "the possibility of selling off city assets also leads directly to questions such as, how much does a giraffe cost? And how does a citizenry cope with no-win scenarios pitting one indispensable gem against another?"[53] The questions facing other cities may not rise to same level, but the issues are similar. When cities make normal services and amenities more expensive and its revenue sources more regressive, working-class families and poor are deeply affected. In this way, the fiscal policies of local governments go a long way toward canceling efforts by the federal government to erect a social safety net for people in need.

The Municipal Bond Market

If cities relied on taxation alone they would never have been able to build the physical infrastructure on which all city life depends. Cities are authorized by state legislation to issue long-term bonds to pay for capital improvements, such as schools, highways, bridges, and hospitals, which will benefit city residents over a long period. To successfully compete in the market for municipal bonds, they must keep their credit rating as high as possible, and this requires them to please the rating services that advise investors about the soundness of the

investment.[54] In the process, cities compete in a marketplace that is vastly larger than the metropolis. By competing for capital in this way, cities are subject to the same logic that drives the competition within urban regions: they must pursue policies that promote local economic growth. For private corporations, profits are a key indicator of health; for cities, it is the ability to generate enough revenues to provide adequate services and make the payments on long-term bonded debt.[55]

The continuing need to build and maintain public infrastructure makes access to the municipal bond market essential for the well-being of cities. Borrowing typically represents 20–25 percent of all state and local spending, making the municipal bond market a significant sector of the national economy. In 2007, the total long-term debt amortized by bond issues for all local governments amounted to $561 billion.[56] The reason municipal bonds are attractive to investors is that they are tax exempt, and for this reason investors are willing to buy municipal bonds at a lower interest rate than they would pay for corporate bonds. In effect, the federal government provides cities with a subsidy by exempting municipal bonds from taxation. Although the U.S. Supreme Court has ruled that state and local governments have no constitutional right to borrow at tax-exempt rates, it is very unlikely that Congress would ever take away this subsidy to state and local governments.[57]

Municipal bonds are purchased by commercial banks, casualty insurance companies, pension funds, and, increasingly, wealthy individual investors, who find the federal tax exemption especially attractive.[58] The federal subsidy to cities through the bond market is inefficient because only part of it, in the form of lower interest rates paid to investors, goes to cities. The rest of the federal subsidy is siphoned off to investors who avoid paying federal taxes by buying the tax-exempt municipal bonds. Legislation was proposed, but never passed, that would allow municipalities to float bonds at normal interest rates in exchange for a direct subsidy by the federal government.[59] In this way, the subsidy would go entirely to cities and not, indirectly, to investors.

Cities issue two types of long-term bonds: general obligation bonds and revenue bonds. General obligation bonds pledge the "full faith and credit" of the city's taxing powers to pay off the bonds, generally require approval by voters or a representative body, and are used to build public infrastructure such as bridges and parks. Revenue bonds are paid off by anticipated future revenues from the facilities that are constructed. They are usually issued by public authorities established by state-enabling legislation.[60] When revenues are not sufficient to pay bond premiums (and they sometimes are not), local governments generally must make up the difference. Convention centers typically fail to generate enough revenue to fully cover bond payments, and sports stadiums sometimes fail to do so as well. In such cases, a general-purpose government (such as a municipality) must step in to cover the difference. Even so, because the debt will, in theory, be paid entirely through revenues, revenue bonds do not require a public referendum. This feature makes them especially popular with local officials.

Almost any facility that can charge user fees—sports stadiums, convention centers, museums, aquariums—is financed through revenue bonds. Local government borrowing through revenue bonds has risen sharply since the 1970s. Until the 1970s, general obligation bonds represented about 60 percent of outstanding local long-term debt.[61] By 2002, however, non-guaranteed revenue-bond debt represented 60 percent of all outstanding debt issued by city governments and special authorities.[62]

Revenue bonds permit cities to use their tax-exempt borrowing privileges to support private programs and activities. In the late 1970s, cities began issuing mortgage revenue bonds to subsidize interest rates for middle-income homebuyers, although in 1980 Congress restricted this practice with the passage of the Mortgage Subsidy Act. In an attempt to stimulate economic growth, in the 1970s and 1980s cities increasingly issued industrial revenue bonds to subsidize a broad assortment of businesses, including big-box retailers such as Walmart or Kmart, fast-food franchises such as McDonald's, and a mix of other businesses ranging from liquor stores to law offices. Critics charged that the tax-exempt borrowing was being used for private purposes that did not serve any public interest. Examples of flagrant abuses abounded. Chester County, Pennsylvania, for example, issued revenue bonds for an adult bookstore and topless go-go bar in downtown Philadelphia. Congress, noting the hemorrhage of federal tax revenues, restricted the use of revenue bonds by passing the Tax Equity and Fiscal Responsibility Act of 1982 and the Deficit Reduction Act of 1984.[63] The Tax Reform Act of 1986 placed state-by-state limits on what it termed governmentally subsidized "private-activity bonds."[64]

Besides being used for questionable private purposes, municipal bonds have been subject to a number of other abuses. Even before the economic crisis of 2008–2009, some local governments got into trouble by borrowing money and putting it into high-risk investments, hoping to make substantial profits. Unwilling to raise taxes, in 1993 Orange County, California, attempted to maintain services by putting the proceeds of bond sales into risky

investments called *derivatives* that were essentially gambling on the direction of interest rates. When interest rates plunged, Orange County lost $1.6 billion. In April 1994, Orange County became the largest local government in history to file for federal bankruptcy protection under Chapter 9. More than 180 other governments lost money in similar high-risk investment pools in the same period.

Until the recent recession, however, such episodes were the exception rather than the rule. But the 2008–2009 downturn exposed serious deficiencies in the way the municipal bond market was run. In fact, the tip of the iceberg had been sighted years before. In the early 1990s, the municipal bond market had been rocked by charges that underwriters, in order to obtain lucrative government bond business, kicked back profits to public officials in the form of campaign contributions.[65] In April 1994, the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC) enacted Rule G–37, which barred campaign contributions by municipal bond bankers. To get around this ban, municipal finance companies provided funding for lavish receptions at the 1996 Democratic and Republican conventions where bond underwriters could mingle with top state and local officials. At the Republican convention in San Diego, this included golf and tennis parties, a fishing expedition, and a luncheon honoring House Speaker Newt Gingrich.[66] A 1996 lawsuit alleged that underwriters overcharged municipalities for escrow accounts by as much as $1 billion.[67] Such abuses have led to repeated demands that the municipal bond industry be more closely regulated.[68]

As soon as the Great Recession began unfolding in the fall of 2008, hundreds of municipalities encountered problems with their bond investments. Like individuals, local government officials usually rely on experts in the financial industry to advise them on investments. One such advisor was David Rubin, who founded one of the leading consulting firms for municipal bonds, CDR Financial Products, in Beverly Hills, California. Beginning in the early 1990s, Rubin toured the country drumming up business, advising local government officials to refinance debt with risky interest-rate provisions (much like the adjustable-rate mortgages [ARMs] offered to home owners) and invest in high-yielding but risky derivatives of the same kind that brought about the 2008 economic crisis. Rubin made campaign contributions even when these appeared to violate a ban imposed by the Securities and Exchange Commission. Some of his bonds ran up unusually high fees.[69] In Tennessee, Morgan Keegan was one of several firms invited by the state to run a seminar for local officials in 2008. By then the company had already cornered the market in municipal bonds within the state; since 2001 it had sold $2 billion in bonds to 38 towns and counties. Because Morgan Keegan, like other financial firms, made higher commissions on derivative bonds rather than fixed-rate bonds, it took care to steer the clients into them. Right at the time that cities and towns in Tennessee began to see their municipal revenues fall, the interest rates they paid on the bonds soared because they were now considered risky.[70]

News broke in January 2009 that three federal agencies and several state attorneys general had been gathering evidence on price-fixing and collusion among municipal bond brokers. The sums involved were vast: states and cities bought $400 billion in bonds each year. Brokers, banks, and other firms divided up the spoils by secretly parceling out the business by fixing bids, which allowed them to reap higher fees. A system of campaign contributions and suspicious payments to governmental officials helped keep the system in place. An antitrust lawyer representing state and local governments referred to it as "one of the longest-running, most economically pervasive antitrust conspiracies ever to be uncovered in the U.S."[71] Federal officials suggested that Congress adopt new regulations, but as late as February 2014 Congress had not taken up the matter. However, it is certain that federal and state agencies will continue their investigations, and more is bound to come to light.

In early 2016, the *Wall Street Journal* reported that stricter federal disclosure regulations on brokerage fees for corporate and municipal bonds were pending.[72] The Financial Industry Regulation Agency (FINRA), Wall Street's self-imposed watchdog organization, and its sister agency, the Municipal Services Rulemaking Board, had finally agreed to enact similar disclosure rules. These rules, however, were still to be reviewed by the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC), a federal agency, later in the year.

Cities are at the mercy of the bond market because the cost of borrowing is basically determined by their bond ratings. A bond rating purports to represent the relative credit quality of the issuing municipality and thus determines the rate of interest a city must pay. A high rating means a lower interest rate, on the theory there is less risk for the investor. When a city's bond rating is lowered due to fiscal problems, a bond may be more difficult to sell, and the additional interest paid over the amortized life of the bond can amount to millions of dollars.

Bond ratings are published by several national rating firms, but the big three include Moody's Investors Service, Standard and Poor's Corporation, and Fitch's Investor Service. Cities pay to have their bonds rated, but they have

no choice but to seek a rating if they want to be able to market their bonds. Although the purpose of the rating is to assess risk, in fact municipal bond ratings are totally unrelated to the likelihood of default. (Default may not mean the loan was not repaid; a payment may simply have missed a deadline.) The discrepancy in the interest rates between the highest and lowest investment grade bonds is inexplicable on the basis of relative risk.[73] From 1929 to 1933, when 77 percent of all municipal defaults of the twentieth century occurred, the highest rated bonds recorded the highest incidence of default.[74] These statistics seems to indicate that ratings are almost worthless as a guide to investment, even though they give the ratings agencies a powerful voice in municipal fiscal policies.

It would be more or less impossible for the ratings to accurately reflect risk because cities so rarely fail to pay their debts. True, from the first recorded default in 1838 (Mobile, Alabama) through 1969 more than 6,000 bond defaults were recorded by local governments. Less than a third of these, however, involved incorporated municipalities (cities); most of the rest were small special districts that provided particular services such as irrigation. Seventy-five percent of all such failures occurred between 1930 and 1939, and less than 10 percent after the Great Depression.[75] During the worst period for municipal bonds, 1929 through 1937, only 8 percent of all cities and 20 percent of their bonded debt were ever in default, and almost all of the debts were eventually paid.[76]

From World War II through early 1970, a total of 431 state and local units defaulted on their obligations. The total principal involved was $450 million, approximately 0.4 percent of the outstanding state and local debt. Three special authorities, the West Virginia Turnpike Commission, the Calumet Skyway Toll Bridge, and the Chesapeake Bay Bridge and Tunnel Commission, accounted for over 74 percent of this amount (virtually all local governments are considered municipal in the bond market). Only 2 of 24 major default situations ($1 million or more) were related to general obligation bonds.[77] Of 114 defaults of less than $1 million, almost all were temporary or technical defaults. Of these, only 34 involved general obligation bonds, and all of these involved cities with populations under 5,000 people.[78]

An analysis of cases filed in federal district courts between 1938 and 1971 reveals that nine cities took advantage of federal municipal bankruptcy legislation. With one exception (Saluda, North Carolina), all the cases came from rather obscure cities in Texas (Ranger, Talco, Benevides) or Florida (Manatee, Medley, Center Hill, Webster, Wanchula). Only in the case of Benevides (population 2,500) were general obligation bonds of post–World War II origin involved. In all other cases, the defaulted debt was of prewar origin, related to revenue bonds, or unrelated to bonds altogether.[79]

Before the state of Michigan put Detroit into receivership in 2013, no city had ever defaulted on its obligations, though in a very few cases there were brief delays in paying bondholders. On December 15, 1978, Cleveland became the first major city to default, even in a technical sense, since 1933. On that day, the city failed to make payments on $14 million in short-term notes; the city renewed payments a few months later and officially ended default in 1980.[80] For the first time in decades, several cities defaulted on their loan payments during the Great Recession. Stockton, California, Jefferson County (Birmingham), Alabama, and Detroit declared bankruptcy. In these notable cases investors may have to settle for less than full payment. Although we now know that in rare and extreme circumstances cities may default, it would be virtually unthinkable that a state ever would, no matter how dire its budgetary situation might be.

The overwhelming weight of evidence indicates that except in unusual circumstances when it is clear that a city is in trouble (one does not need a bond rater to determine such cases) there is little justification for the differential rating of city bonds except to make money for ratings services, brokers, and investors. Nevertheless, the market in municipal bonds exerts a powerful influence on public officials by imposing a tight fiscal discipline, and by reinforcing the dynamic of the metropolitan chase for business investment and affluent residents. The fact that local governments must finance nearly all their own activities without a regular source of aid from the national government forces them to place a high priority on promoting local economic development.

The Rise of Special Authorities

The terms “municipal debt” and the “municipal bond market” are convenient language devices used by just about everyone, but they are misleading in a very important respect: in fact, the biggest development and infrastructure projects are not financed directly by municipalities, but by independent special-purpose authorities that issue revenue bonds. If cities had been forced to rely on their own resources they could not possibly have sustained the incredible level of public investment that has been poured into new urban infrastructure in recent decades. More

than $2 billion was spent annually in the first half of the 1990s on sports facilities and convention centers alone.[81] By 2007, there were more than 35,000 special authorities in the United States and they had issued $288 billion in new long-term debt.[82] In addition, billions of public dollars have been spent on urban entertainment and cultural districts, renovated waterfronts, aquariums, marketplaces, festival malls, and the other elements of urban lifestyle and the tourism/entertainment complex. Local officials have been resourceful in finding ways to finance public investment on this scale. The main instrument they have relied upon is the special-purpose authority.

Beginning in the 1980s, a generation of visionary mayors accepted the fact that they would have to find ways to regenerate their own economies. These "messiah mayors" preached a gospel of self-help for cities in desperate need of new ideas and directions. As noted by the historian Jon Teaford, "if nothing else the messiah mayors … boosted the spirits of many urban dwellers and made them proud of their cities."[83] But much more was involved than cheerleading. These mayors also pioneered the creation of institutions capable of financing and administering projects considered important for promoting the economic viability of the city. Thus, sports authorities were created for the purpose of building sports stadiums, mall authorities were incorporated to build and administer mall and entertainment complexes, and development corporations came into being to implement local development projects. These special-purpose authorities—institutions created to accomplish a specific public purpose—were essentially public development institutions run like a private corporation, established specifically to receive a combination of public subsidies and private investment funds.[84] They were empowered to earmark taxes, charge user fees, issue bonds, establish trust funds, and use other mechanisms for bringing public and private money together to finance big undertakings.[85]

This institutional device gave municipal officials a way out of the straitjacket of debt limitations imposed on municipal governments, because they were now able to offload the costs of development onto institutions that were capable of generating their own resources; in this way, general obligation bonds backed by the municipal government could be replaced by revenue bonds issued by a separate entity. These public-private institutions were generally established through enabling legislation passed by state legislatures, and they were run by boards appointed by a governor and mayor, the mayor alone, or some combination of public officials. They were not bound by the rules that frustrated public initiatives by general-purpose governments. They could make decisions without worrying about what voters thought. Because they were run much like private corporations, they were able to protect their information and books from public scrutiny, but at the same time, because they pursued public objectives, they could act just like governments and generate revenue, receive funds from other governments, and borrow money and sell tax-free bonds.

The sprawling McCormick Place convention center and the renovated Navy Pier entertainment complex in Chicago provide good examples of how this works. Both are administered by the Metropolitan Pier and Exposition Authority, which is governed by a board appointed by the mayor of Chicago and the governor of Illinois. The state of Illinois designates $98 million annually, derived from revenues from taxes (mainly a tax on cigarette sales) to pay off previous bonds for construction and remodeling.[86] In addition to this subsidy, in 2000 the Pier and Exposition Authority floated a $108 million tax-exempt bond issue to build and own the Hyatt Regency McCormick Place Hotel,[87] and completed a massive $750 million expansion in 2008. A combination of state subsidies and income from exhibitors and ticket sales for such events as the Chicago Auto Show, as well as rental fees for office space and other services, provide the center with the revenues to retire bonds and pay current operating expenses.

It is a mistake to describe special authorities as mere mechanisms for financing and administrating large undertakings. They are also political in nature, in the sense that they are always on the lookout for ways to promote their own projects and enhance their fiscal and administrative capacity. In the case of the professional football and baseball stadiums in Baltimore, for example, an agency of the state government, the Maryland Stadium Authority, financed the two stadiums through proceeds from a sports lottery offered through the Maryland State Lottery.[88] The campaign to build the sports stadium was guided by this new agency, which commissioned studies to show a powerfully positive impact on Baltimore's economy. However, another study by a state agency estimated that the economic impact would be much lower, and independent studies sharply contested even the lower estimate as unrealistic, concluding that stadium development brought virtually no measurable economic benefit.[89]

The political nature of special authorities is illustrated in the case of the Denver Metropolitan Stadium District, which the Colorado legislature created in 1990 as a means of pushing forward plans for a new baseball stadium.

The bill establishing the district did not contain financing mechanisms, because any that would have been proposed would have ignited controversy. Instead, the task of lining up political support for a new stadium was left to the seven-member stadium district board. Securing financing was more a political than a fiscal exercise. In close collaboration with the city of Denver, the board ran an astute campaign that kept voters in the metropolitan counties outside Denver in the dark about whether the stadium might be built close to or within their own jurisdictions. The uncertainties about location carried the day. In August 1990, voters in the six-county district passed a sales tax levy to build the stadium; large majorities in the city and an adjacent county overcame a losing margin elsewhere.[90] Just as many voters had suspected, the fix had been in all along, and the stadium was built in downtown Denver. As this example illustrates, special purpose authorities are key players in the decision-making process about urban development, but they exhibit a serious lack of political transparency. In addition, their board members are appointed, not elected, which means that they do not face any electoral repercussions from disappointed voters.

Special-purpose authorities have sprung up to administer the many components that make up the tourism/entertainment complex in cities. In addition to the authorities established to finance and administer particular facilities such as convention centers, festival malls, and sports stadiums, redevelopment corporations have proliferated to refurbish business districts, revitalize neighborhoods, and provide amenities desired by local residents and visitors. In addition, since the 1980s, the number of tax increment finance (TIF) districts has multiplied. TIFs generate their revenues by marketing bonds to investors based on the taxes that are expected to be collected when a parcel of land is redeveloped. A TIF board, for example, might condemn homes in a residential neighborhood in order to take it for a new mall, which would be expected to generate sales tax revenue. These revenue projects would be used as the basis for a bond issue, which would provide the TIF district with the funds to make public improvements required by the mall developer. TIFs have become one of the main mechanisms for development in today's cities. For example, in 2002 there were more than 130 TIFs in the city of Chicago, and 217 in suburban Cook County.[91]

The proliferation of special-purpose authorities throughout metropolitan areas has removed more and more of the most important public policies from general-purpose municipalities. Although municipalities are run democratically—with mayors, city councils, and other elected officials—special-purpose authorities operate out of the public eye. Some of the most expensive and sometimes controversial undertakings have been assigned to special-purpose authorities. Convention centers and stadiums are built with public money, but with little or no public input. An absence of public accountability always raises troubling questions. In the 1950s urban renewal authorities regularly abused their powers. Transportation authorities rammed highways through urban neighborhoods. Then, as now, the application of governmental authority without adequate public accountability led to abuses. The fiscal politics of metropolitan competition tempts governments to build now, and ask questions later. In the competitive environment of today's metropolitan areas, it is a lesson worth remembering.

Fiscal Gamesmanship

Countless activities financed by cities are essential to the health and well-being of citizens. In a nation in which nearly 40 percent of citizens lack health insurance, they are frontline providers of health services provided through public hospitals and clinics, not only for the poor but also for families of the under-insured middle class. They provide essential housing services, even if most of this takes the form of contributing to or maintaining shelters for the homeless. These are only the normal, day-to-day activities; in times of emergency they are expected to do much more.

Between July 17 and 20, 1995, the city of Chicago was hit by a heatwave in which temperatures reached 106 degrees. City officials were not only unprepared, but they also did not feel it was in their purview to respond except through normal emergency services. By the time the heatwave had run its course, the number of excess deaths attributed to it reached 739. Realizing that a repeat of such a disaster would become a public relations nightmare as well as a social catastrophe, the city subsequently (but quietly) put into place an emergency plan to mobilize its personnel and resources should a similar disaster strike.[92] The tragic events of that summer revealed a simple truth: cities simply cannot opt out of their responsibilities without endangering the welfare of their citizens.

The ability of city officials to respond when needed is determined by the resources at hand, and these are always subject to change. Economic downturns play havoc with local budgets, but there is little or nothing that cities can do to avoid them. They try to control what they can, and this leads them to a developmental politics that

promotes growth, sometimes at the expense of other objectives. Paul Peterson, a leading scholar of urban politics, has taken the position that because economic or market standing is fundamentally important to cities and their citizens, they should do nothing that might compromise the possibility of achieving economic success.[93] This logic leads him to conclude that cities should avoid policies that redistribute resources from wealthier to poorer residents; obviously, health clinics and homeless persons' shelters (for example) would fit into this category. This position may provoke disagreement, but urban leaders often act as if they believe it is true. This makes them play a delicate game in which they try to balance the needs of their most vulnerable citizens against the goal of preserving a climate that lures new investment, and keeps middle-class residents and businesses from moving elsewhere. It is a game made all the more dicey because most of the rules are set by other governments and by the institutions of the private economy.

Endnotes

1 Monica Davey, "States and Localities Angle for Stimulus Cash," *New York Times* (February 15, 2009), www.nytimes.com/2009/02/16/us/politics/16stimulus.html

2 Thomas H. Boast, "A Political Economy of Urban Capital Finance in the United States" (Ph.D. dissertation, Cornell University, 1977), p. 114.

3 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2007 Census of Governments* (2007), Table 2, www2.census.gov/govs/estimate/07slsstab2a.xls. For national government transfers as a proportion of local revenue in Japan, see Japanese Ministry of Internal Affairs and Communications, White Paper on Local Public Finance (2005), www.soumu.go.jp/iken/zaisei/17data/jyoukyou_e.pdf

4 Carol W. Lewis, "Budgetary Balance: The Norm, Concept, and Practice in Large U.S. Cities," *Public Administration Review* 54 (November/December 1994): 517-518.

5 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2002 Census of Governments,* vol. 3, *Public Employment* (2002), Tables 1 and 3, www.census.gov/prod/2004pubs/gc023x2.pdf; *2002 Census of Governments,* vol. 4, no. 5, *Compendium of Government Finances* (2002), Table 4; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 2003* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office), p. 322, Table 475.

6 City of New York, "Adopted Budget Fiscal Year 2015: Expense Revenue Contract," p. i, www.nyc.gov/html/omb/downloads/pdf/erc6_14.pdf; City of Chicago, "2016 Budget Overview," p. 140, www.cityofchicago.org/content/dam/city/depts/obm/supp_info/2016Budget/2016BudgetOverviewCoC.pdf; City of Los Angeles, "Fiscal Year 2015–2016 Budget," p. 438, http://cao.lacity.org/budget15-16/2015-16Proposed_Budget.pdf

7 Gary Washburn, "City Maps Long-term Homeless Program," *Chicago Tribune* (January 22, 2003), p. 3.

8 John Byrne, "Emanuel turns over homeless services to Catholic Charities," *Chicago Tribune* (August 23, 2012), accessed online: http://articles.chicagotribune.com/2012-08-23/news/chi-emanuel-turns-over-homeless-services-to-catholic-charities-20120823_1_homeless-shelters-homeless-youth-homeless-services

9 John Byrne, "Emanuel Makes Moves on Homelessness; Critics Still Boo," *Chicago Tribune* (May 2, 2016), accessed online: www.chicagotribune.com/news/politics/ct-rahm-emanuel-homeless-airbnb-tax-20160503-story.html

10 Larry C. Ledebur and William R. Barnes, *City Distress: Metropolitan Disparities and Economic Growth* (Washington, DC: National League of Cities, 1991), pp. 2, 6. Figures based on the 85 largest metropolitan areas.

11 Roy Bahl, Jorge Martinez, and Loren Williams, "The Fiscal Conditions of U.S. Cities at the Beginning of the 1990s," Urban Institute Conference on Big City Governance and Fiscal Choices, Los Angeles (June 1991), pp. 5-6.

12 Jonathan Kozol, *Rachel and Her Children: Homeless Families in America* (New York: Crown, 1988), p. 14.

13 *Garcia v. San Antonio Metropolitan Transit Authority,* 469 U.S. 528 (1985).

14 Employment Standards Administration, *Minimum Wage and Maximum Hours Standards Under the Fair Labor Standards Act* (Washington, DC: U.S. Environmental Protection Agency, 1986), pp. 110-111; U.S. Congress, House Committee on Education and Labor, *Report to Accompany H.R. 3530,* 99th Cong., 1st sess., 1985. H. Rept. 99-331, p. 30; both cited in Joseph F. Zimmerman, "Federally Induced State and Local Governmental Costs," paper delivered at the annual meeting of the American Political Science Association (Washington, DC, August 29–September 1, 1991), p. 14.

15 Todd Sloane, "Clean Air Act Likely to Burn Many Municipalities," *City and State* (November 19, 1990), p. 2, cited in Zimmerman, "Federally Induced State and Local Government Costs," p. 12.

16 Alan Greenblatt, "The Washington Offensive," *Governing* 19, no. 1 (January 2005): 27.

17 Helen F. Ladd and John Yinger, *America's Ailing Cities: Fiscal Health and the Design of Urban Policy,* updated ed. (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989), p. 291.

18 Any summary of revenue sources for all cities is misleading and therefore not presented in this chapter. Cities simply vary too much for such summaries to be meaningful; earnings taxes can be collected by a few cities, but not most, sales taxes are allowed by 28 states, and so forth.

19 Michael A. Pagano, *City Fiscal Conditions in 2002: A Research Report on America's Cities* (Washington, DC: National League of Cities, 2002), p. 3.

20 Eric A. Anderson, "Changing Municipal Finances," *Urban Data Services Reports* 7, no. 12 (Washington, DC: International City Manager Association, December 1975), p. 2.

21 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2002 Census of Governments,* vol. 4, no. 5, *Compendium of Government Finances* (2002), Table 2.

22 Refer to Richard T. Ely, *Taxation in American States and Cities* (New York: Crowell, 1888), pp. 109-113; and Sumner Benson, "A History of the General Property Tax," in *The American Property Tax: Its History, Administration, and Economic Impact,* ed. C. G. Benson, S. Benson, H. McClelland, and P. Thompson (Claremont, CA: College Press, 1965), p. 24.

23 E. R. A. Seligman, *Essays in Taxation,* 9th ed. (New York: Macmillan, 1923), p. 24.

24 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Historical Statistics of the United States: Colonial Times to 1970,* Bicentennial ed., pt. 2 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1975), p. 1133.

25 Calculated from the data in U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Local Government Finances in Selected Metropolitan Areas and Large Counties: 1969–70,* GF 70, no. 6 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1970), p. 7; U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Local Government Finances in Selected Metropolitan Areas and Large Counties: 1974–75,* GF 75, no. 6 (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1976), p. 7.

26 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2002 Census of Governments,* vol. 4, no. 4, *Finances of Municipal and Township Governments* (2002), Table 1, www.census.gov/prod/2005pubs/gc024x4.pdf

27 George Peterson, "Finance," in *The Urban Predicament,* ed. William Gorham and Nathan Glazer (Washington, DC: The Urban Institute, 1976), p. 52.

28 Karen de Sa, "Santa Clara County Assessor Warns of Dramatic Plunge in Home Values, Lowered Taxes to Result," MercuryNews.com, www.mercurynews.com/ci_12068004?source

29 Patrik Jonsson, "As Home Values Fall, Property Tax Revolt Brews," *Christian Science Monitor* (April 2, 2009), features.csmonitor.com/economyrebuild/2009/04/02

30 Alfred Balk, *The Free List—Property Without Taxes* (New York: Russell Sage Foundation, 1971), pp. 10-12.

31 J. Richard Aronson and John L. Hilley, *Financing State and Local Governments,* 4th ed. (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1986), p. 136.

32 Ladd and Yinger, *America's Ailing Cities,* pp. 129-130, 180. See also Michael Wolkoff, "Municipal Tax Abatement: A Two-Edged Sword," *New York Case Studies in Public Management,* no. 4 (Albany, NY: Rockefeller Institute of Government, 1984).

33 Daphne A. Kenyon and Adam H. Langley, "Payments in Lieu of Taxes: Balancing Municipal and Nonprofit Interests." Policy Focus Report, The Lincoln Institute of Land Policy, 2010. Accessed online: www.lincolninst.edu/pubs/dl/1853_1174_pilots%20pfr%20final.pdf

34 Michael A. Pagano, "How Nonprofits Can End Up Becoming a Drain on City Budgets," City Lab, *The Atlantic* (November 12, 2012). Accessed online: www.citylab.com/work/2012/11/how-nonprofits-can-end-becoming-drain-city-budgets/3798/

35 Gregory H. Wassall, *Tax-Exempt Property: A Case Study of Hartford, Connecticut* (Hartford, CT: John C. Lincoln Institute, 1974), p. 27.

36 Todd Swanstrom, *Capital Cities: Challenges and Opportunities* (Albany, NY: Rockefeller Institute of Government), p. 17.

37 Michael J. Barrett, "The Out-of-Towners," *Boston Globe Magazine* (August 7, 1983).

38 *Walz v. Tax Commission of the City of New York,* 397 U.S. 664 (1970). See also Boris I. Bittker, "Churches, Taxes and the Constitution," *Yale Law Review* 78 (July 1969): 1285-1310.

39 John L. Mikesell, "The Season of Tax Revolt," in *Fiscal Retrenchment and Urban Policy,* ed. John P. Blair and David Nachmias (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1979), p. 109.

40 Ibid.

41 Pagano, *City Fiscal Conditions in 2002,* p. 3.

42 Ibid.

43 Douglas F. Morgan, Kent S. Robinson, Dennis Strachota, and James A. Hough, *Budgeting for Local Governments and Communities* (New York: Routledge, 2015).

44 Christopher Swope, "The Retail Chase: Cities Will Do Almost Anything to Land the Store of Their Dreams," *Governing* (April 2007), p. 28.

45 Kenneth Thomas, *Competing for Capital: Europe and North America in a Global Era* (Washington, DC: Georgetown University Press, 2000), as cited in Rachel Weber, "What Makes a Good Economic Development Deal?" in *Retooling for Growth: Rebuilding a 21st Century Economy in America's Older Industrial Areas,* ed. Richard M. McGahey and Jennifer S. Vey (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2008), p. 284.

46 Donald Bartlett and James Steele, "Corporate Welfare," *Time* (November 9, 1998), as quoted in ibid., p. 284.

47 Christiana McFarland, "State of America's Cities Survey: Local Retail Slowdown," Research Brief on America's Cities, by National League of Cities, issue 2009-2, www.nlc.org

48 Ibid., p. 20.

49 Pagano, *City Fiscal Conditions in 1991*, p. 24.

50 David Segal, "Cities Turn to Fees to Fill Budget Gaps," *New York Times* (April 10, 2009), www.nytimes.com/2009/04/11/busines/11fees.html

51 Michael Powell and Christine Haughney, "Wary of Taxes, Officials Boost Fees; Tactic Hurts Poor and Working Class, Critics Say," *Washington Post* (April 7, 2003), p. A3.

52 Mark Stryker and John Gallagher, "Detroit Zoo Giraffe? Belle Isle? Detroit's Treasure Trove Could Be Vulnerable to Sale to Settle Debt," *Detroit Free Press* (June 2, 2013), www.freep.com/article/20130602/news01/306020080/Detroit-bankruptcy-assets-sale-dia

53 Ibid.

54 Bonds issued not only by cities but also by states and all local governments are referred to as municipal bonds, a cause of endless confusion.

55 Cities in most states can also borrow short term, using tax anticipation notes (TANs) repaid in 30–120 days, to cover temporary budget shortages or to time their entry into the long-term bond market. Unlike the federal government, cities cannot use bond funds to cover long-term operating deficits.

56 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2007 Census of Governments,* vol. 4, no. 5, *Local Government Finances by Type of Government and State* (2007), Table 2. www2.census.gov/govs/estimate/07slsstab2a.xls

57 *South Carolina v. Baker,* 108 S.Ct. 1935 (1988).

58 Alberta Sbragia, "Finance Capital and the City," in *Cities in Stress: A New Look at the Urban Crisis,* ed. Mark Gottdiener (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1986), p. 210.

59 See Robert Huefner, *Taxable Alternatives to Municipal Bonds, Research Report no. 53* (Boston: Federal Reserve Bank of Boston, 1972); and *Building a Broader Market: Report of the Twentieth Century Fund Task Force on the Municipal Bond Market,* with a background paper by Ronald W. Forbes and John E. Peterson (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1976).

60 For insightful discussions of the powerful role of local authorities, see Ann Marie Hauck Walsh, *The Public's Business: The Politics and Practices of Government Corporations* (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1978); and Alberta M. Sbragia, *Debt Wish: Entrepreneurial Cities, U.S. Federalism, and Economic Development* (Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press, 1996).

61 Elaine B. Sharp, "The Politics and Economics of the New City Debt," *American Political Science Review* 80, no. 4 (December 1986): 1271-1288.

62 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1992), p. 285.

63 Thomas A. Pascarella and Richard D. Raymond, "Buying Bonds for Business: An Evaluation of the Industrial Revenue Bond Program," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 18 (September 1982): 73-89.

64 Daphne A. Kenyon and Dennis Zimmerman, "Private-Activity Bonds and the Volume Cap in 1990," *Intergovernmental Perspective* 17, no. 3

(Summer 1991): 35-37.

65 For citations on municipal bond corruption, see Sbragia, *Debt Wish,* pp. 224-225.

66 Leslie Wayne, "Ban on Political Contributions Considered for Bond Lawyers," *New York Times* (August 5, 1996), p. D2.

67 Peter Truell, "Municipal Bond Dealers Face Scrutiny," *New York Times* (December 17, 1996), p. D1; Michael R. Lissack, "A Giant Shell Game Snares Taxpayers," *Albany Times Union* (August 1, 1996), p. A11.

68 "Shine the Light on Muni Deals," *BusinessWeek* (August 26, 1996).

69 Mary Williams, "Bond Advice Leaves Pain in Its Wake," *New York Times* (February 16, 2009), www.nytimes.com/2009/02/17/business/17muni.html

70 Don Van Natta Jr., "Firm Acted as Tutor in Selling Towns Risky Deals," *New York Times* (April 7, 2009), www.nytimes.com/2009/04/08/us/08bond.html

71 Mary Williams Walsh, "Nationwide Inquiry on Bids for Municipal Bonds," *New York Times* (January 8, 2009), www.nytimes.com/2009/01/09/business/09insure.html

72 Andrew Ackerman, "New Bond Rules Target Large Broker Fees." *Wall Street Journal* (February 18, 2016), www.wsj.com/articles/new-bond-rules-target-large-broker-fees-1455830010

73 Thomas Geis, "Municipal Credit and Bond Rating System," paper delivered at the Municipal Officers Association Meeting (Denver, CO, May 31, 1972), pp. 5-6.

74 Ibid.

75 U.S. Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations, *City Financial Emergencies* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1971), p. 10.

76 Ibid., p. 12.

77 Ibid., p. 16.

78 Ibid., p. 17.

79 Ibid., pp. 81-82.

80 Todd Swanstrom, *The Crisis of Growth Politics: Cleveland, Kucinich, and the Challenge of Urban Populism* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1985), Chapter 7.

81 Peter Eisenger, "The Politics of Bread and Circuses," *Urban Affairs Review* 35, no. 3 (January 2000): 316-333.

82 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *2007 Census of Governments, Local Government Finances by Type of Government* (2002), Table 2, www2.census.gov/govs/estimate/07slsstab2a.xls

83 Jon Teaford, *The Rough Road to Renaissance: Urban Revitalization in America, 1940–1985* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1990), p. 307.

84 These arrangements are described in Peter K. Eisenger, *The Rise of the Entrepreneurial State: State and Local Economic Development Policy in the United States* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1988).

85 James Leigland, "Public Infrastructure and Special Purposed Governments: Who Pays and How?" in *Building the Public City: The Politics, Governance, and Finance of Public Infrastructure,* ed. David C. Perry (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage, 1995), p. 139.

86 State of Illinois, *Compliance Audit Report* (1998 and 1999), www.state.il.us/auditor

87 William Fulton, "Paying the Bill," *Governing* 15, no. 11 (August 2002): 60.

88 Donald F. Norris, "If We Build It, They Will Come! Tourism-Based Economic Development in Baltimore," in *The Infrastructure of Play: Building the Tourist City,* ed. Dennis R. Judd (Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 2003), p. 162.

89 Ibid., p. 151.

90 Susan E. Clarke and Martin Saiz, "From Waterhole to World City: Place Luck and Public Agendas in Denver," in *The Infrastructure of Play,* ed. Dennis R. Judd (Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 2003), pp. 183-184.

91 Rachel Weber, "Equity and Entrepreneurialism: The Impact of Tax Increment Financing on School Finance," *Urban Affairs Review* 38, no. 5 (2003): 619-644.

92 Eric Klinenberg, *Heat Wave: A Social Autopsy of Disaster in Chicago* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2002), p. 9.

93 Paul Peterson, *City Limits* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1981), p. 22.

CHAPTER 13

The Renaissance of the Metropolitan Center

The Unexpected Recovery of the Central Cities

By the 1980s, it appeared to many observers that the historic city that anchored many metropolitan regions was pretty much slipping into its last death throes. The cities that had prospered in the industrial era struggled to regain their former glory, but for many of them there seemed to be little realistic chance of success. For decades, population, business, and jobs had been moving to the suburbs, and the rapid deindustrialization of the national economy that began in the early 1970s threatened to make the industrial cities utterly irrelevant to the nation's future. A report by the President's Commission on the National Agenda for the Eighties, issued at the end of President Jimmy Carter's term, reached the gloomy conclusion that the nation's older cities were all but doomed:

> The economy of the United States, like that of many of the older industrial societies, has for years now been undergoing a critical transition from being geographically-based to being deconcentrated, decentralized, and service-based. In the process, many cities of the old industrial heartland … are losing their status as thriving industrial capitals …[1]

The members of the commission agreed that "Ultimately, the federal government's concern for national economic vitality should take precedence over the competition for advantage among communities and regions."[2] It seemed obvious that unless they could find a way out of their predicament, the cities that had prospered in an earlier era were destined to wither on the vine.

Ironically, this bleak assessment was rendered right at the time when the first stirrings of a central-city revival were becoming apparent. By the 1990s it became clear that large numbers of central cities were on the rebound, and over the next decade the good news began to spread. Almost overnight, it seemed, downtown business districts and entertainment/tourist districts were becoming popular destinations for tourists and local residents alike. Nearby neighborhoods were also undergoing a revival. An informal *New York Times* survey of nine cities (Boston, Chicago, Houston, Los Angeles, Miami, New York, San Antonio, San Diego, and Washington, DC) conducted in 2000 found that businesses and new residents had begun pouring into residential areas previously considered off limits. The displacement of poorer residents was accompanied by dropping crime rates and a general improvement in the quality of life for the middle class.[3] Within a few years, it became apparent that the inner-city revitalization had reached a critical threshold, and that it was unlikely to be reversed. This optimistic prediction has held up for most cities. Even though the comeback has sometimes been slow and uncertain, even the economic downturn that began in 2008 seems not to have reversed the trend.[4]

Most American central cities have experienced at least some degree of downtown development and neighborhood gentrification. Affluent professionals and young people have been moving into areas previously occupied by the working class or poor. From 1990 to 2000, downtown populations increased in 18 of 24 cities studied by the Fannie Mae Foundation and the Brookings Institution.[5] Although the number of new residents was quite small in most cities, even modest growth represented a stunning turnaround. Some cities that had been losing population for a half century actually began to grow again in the 1990s, and even the few that continued to shrink did so at a reduced rate.[6] It is true that the recovery was uneven and some cities were still in fragile condition, but for most of them the signs were pointing in the right direction.

The revival of downtowns can be traced to two significant developments: globalization and economic transformation. Businesses connected to the new global economy, such as electronic trade and commerce, telecommunications, finance, marketing, and corporate services, are clustering in downtown areas. Cities that have attracted high-level services have done particularly well, especially in downtown areas, but many smaller places have also followed the trend.[7]

Tourism/entertainment, culture, and urban amenities are clustering in and near downtown areas as well. Affluent residents who live downtown want to commute less and also prefer to live in an environment with exciting street life, nightlife, culture, and entertainment. With their historic architecture, public monuments, redeveloped waterfronts, and older residential areas, cities are uniquely positioned to become settings for a robust urban culture. By the turn of the twenty-first century almost everyone could see that cities were entering a new urban era.

OUTTAKE

Baltimore's Revival Is Debated

Called the "Cinderella city of the 1980s," Baltimore is one of the nation's best-known examples of a downtown development strategy anchored by tourism and entertainment. Because of its size and proximity to New York City and Washington, DC, Baltimore was not likely to attract a concentration of global corporations, so it focused singularly on tourism and entertainment. In its heyday, Baltimore's Inner Harbor was a thriving center of commerce, but by the 1960s it was an eyesore, with its rotting, rat-infested piers, abandoned buildings, and desolate parking lots perched on a harbor that smelled, in the writer H. L. Mencken's words, "like a million polecats." The audacious idea was to transform this blighted mess into a national tourist attraction.

The linchpin of the plan to redevelop the Inner Harbor was Harborplace, anchored by two translucent pavilions enclosing a festival mall designed by the developer James Rouse. Rouse intended to create "a warm and human place, with diversity of choice, full of festival and delight." Completed in 1980, Harborplace succeeded beyond anyone's expectations, attracting 18 million visitors the first year, earning $42 million, and creating 2,300 jobs. In 1981, when the National Aquarium opened, it gave the Inner Harbor a dramatic tourist attraction. By 1992, more than 15 million visitors had toured the aquarium's exhibits, including a 64-foot glass pyramid housing a reproduction of a South American rain forest. Between 1980 and 1986, the number of visitors and the amount of money they spent in Baltimore tripled; to accommodate the increased demand, the number of hotel rooms also tripled. The success of the Inner Harbor development and other projects in the downtown unleashed a surge of private investment that spilled over into surrounding areas.

The energizing force behind Baltimore's redevelopment was William Donald Schaefer, who served four terms as the city's mayor from 1971 to 1987. The city's renaissance made him into a national political figure. In 1984, he was hailed as "The Best Mayor in America." In November 1986, Schaefer rode the wave of positive publicity about Baltimore's redevelopment into the Maryland governor's mansion. But the drumbeat of good news about the city's downtown revival overlooked the conditions in the city's deteriorating neighborhoods. Kurt Schmoke, who succeeded Schaefer as Baltimore's first black mayor in 1987, observed, "If you were revisiting Baltimore today after a 20-year absence, you would find us much prettier and much poorer."

In actuality there are two Baltimores, one inhabited by suburban workers and visitors, the other by poor people who live in the slums. Revitalization in the downtown and at the harbor did not stem the hemorrhaging of the city's population, which fell 2.1 percent between 2000 and 2009, having previously fallen by 135,000 people from 1980 to 2000, and by another 14,000 by 2007. Meanwhile, the suburbs continued to attract more people and better jobs. In 1950, the city's residents made slightly more than the residents of surrounding suburbs, but by 2000 they made half as much, a trend which continues—the median household income between 2006 and 2010 for Baltimore city was $39,386, less than half the average family income of $103,272 in Howard County.[8] Things would have been worse without the Harborplace development. The city's job development programs succeeded in placing 1,300 persons in jobs at Harborplace in just six years, and more than 40 percent of the Harborplace workforce was drawn from minorities. By 1990, the Inner Harbor and nearby projects had created an estimated 30,000 new jobs directly and indirectly; later, a study estimated that visitors to Baltimore spent $847 million in just one year, 1998, which supported a visitor-related payroll of $266 million and generated $81 million in state and local taxes. On the other side of the ledger, a lot of the jobs were near or at minimum wage, as indicated by the fact that in 2010, city residents made only half as much, on average, as the people living in surrounding suburbs.

This profile raises important questions about Baltimore's version of downtown revitalization: Have public dollars been wisely spent? Is development that focuses on tourism and entertainment misguided? There are

opposing answers to these questions. According to one critic, the glitter of Inner Harbor merely hides the problems in the rest of the city:

> [T]he Inner Harbor functions as a sophisticated mask. It invites us to participate in a spectacle, to enjoy a festive circus that celebrates the coming together of people and commodities. Like any mask, it can beguile and distract in engaging ways, but at some point we want to know what lies behind it. If the mask cracks or is violently torn off, the terrible face of Baltimore's impoverishment may appear.

But there is an opposing view. Tangible benefits have accrued because of Baltimore's strategy, including the creation of jobs, an improving tax base (but not enough to offset losses in other parts of the city), and the physical reconstruction of an important part of the city. Without the revitalization of the downtown, nothing else would have been happening in the rest of Baltimore anyway.

Will the real Baltimore please stand up?

Sources: Neal R. Peirce, Robert Guskind, and John Gardner, "Politics Is Not the Only Thing That Is Changing America's Big Cities," *National Journal* 22 (November 26, 1983): 2480; Tony Hiss, "Annals of Place: Reinventing Baltimore," *New Yorker* (April 29, 1991), p. 62; Christopher Corbett, "What's Doing in Baltimore," *New York Times* (February 23, 1992); Bernard L. Berkowitz, "Rejoinder to Downtown Redevelopment as an Urban Growth Strategy: A Critical Appraisal of the Baltimore Renaissance," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 9, no. 2 (1987): 129; Donald F. Norris, "If We Build It, They Will Come! Tourism-Based Economic Development in Baltimore," in *The Infrastructure of Play,* ed. Dennis R. Judd (Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 2003), pp. 150–151; Richard C. Hula, "The Two Baltimores," in *Leadership and Urban Regeneration: Cities in North America and Europe,* ed. Dennis Judd and Michael Parkinson (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage, 1990); David Harvey, *Spaces of Capital: Towards a Critical Geography* (New York: Routledge, 2001), pp. 143–144.

The Decline of Downtown

The distribution of economic activities in the United States has changed fundamentally over the past 100 years. Photographs of the period show that as late as the 1940s, downtown areas were a pandemonium of people, traffic, and frenetic energy. This urban form, with so much activity crowded into a few square blocks, was a defining feature of America's cities. In New York, the term *downtown* came into common usage in the nineteenth century to distinguish the commercial district at the southern tip of Manhattan from "uptown," the mostly residential areas a few blocks north. Through the years, "downtown" came to refer to the central commercial areas of cities everywhere. Downtown was where streetcars and passenger railways converged, where the buildings climbed to the sky, where retailing and professional businesses crowded together, and where throngs of people jostled one another on the streets. Downtown was busy and crowded; restaurants were packed at lunchtime. Writers in the popular press and in novels were fascinated by downtown because it seemed to be a microcosm representing the tremendous energy and anarchy of the American economic and social system.[9]

Almost all of the activities defining the downtown occurred in very small areas—one square mile in Chicago by the end of the 1920s, less than a square mile in St. Louis, Los Angeles, Boston, and Detroit, and an even smaller area in most other cities.[10] Almost all banks, public utilities, law firms, advertising agencies, accounting firms, and the head offices of large industrial corporations were clustered there, as were department stores and most other large retailing establishments.[11] Taller and taller buildings allowed the downtowns to grow up rather than out. The specialized nature of these buildings, devoted as they were strictly to commerce and professional activities, replaced the smaller buildings that had, at an earlier time, mixed together commercial, professional, and residential uses under one roof. The separation of business activities from everything else gave rise to a new term, the "central business district," although in practice the term tended to be used interchangeably with "downtown."[12]

By the twentieth century, downtown had become "an idealized public place and thus a powerful symbol" of American culture—a place where people of all backgrounds mingled, a "turf common to all."[13] But even in the 1920s, at a time when downtown areas were livelier than ever before, they began to lose their status as centers of goods production, wholesale trade, and retail sales. Chain retailers began opening stores closer to their customers in the outlying neighborhoods and in suburbs, a step signaling the gradual deconcentration of retailing. Small business districts began to sprout up that competed with downtown, a process aided by the automobile. Bigger troubles came with the Great Depression of the 1930s. Businesses closed their doors; older buildings fell into disrepair and decay.[14]

The Great Depression laid bare a truth that had mostly escaped notice in the prosperous decade of the 1920s. Within metropolitan areas, a spatial restructuring had been taking place for a long time. Manufacturing was beginning a slow exodus to the suburbs, a process speeded up by an emerging network of highways and truck

transportation, and especially by the construction of the interstate highway system after World War II. Modern mass production techniques require large amounts of inexpensive land for one-story assembly-line production methods. With the range of commuting made possible by the automobile, it was possible to locate factories at some distance from residential areas and still be accessible to workers.

Shopping districts had also begun to compete with downtown. As late as the 1950s, the big downtown department stores still offered the best selection and prices, and middle-class shoppers had long ago developed the habit of saving a special day for shopping on the busy streets. It took a while, but by the 1960s suburban shopping centers were beginning to replace the downtown experience. With sprawling parking lots a few steps away and freeway interchanges nearby, the shopping centers and their later incarnation, the malls, were convenient for shoppers, who had by now completely abandoned mass transit for the automobile.

The civil rights protests, racial violence, and riots of the 1960s stigmatized downtowns as threatening and dangerous places, and as a result the white women shoppers who drove retail sales escaped to the quiet atmosphere of shopping centers located far away from the much-publicized turmoil.[15] Suburban developers seized the opportunity to create an ambience that contrasted sharply with city streets. In 1956, the first enclosed, climate-controlled mall, Southdale, opened in the Minneapolis suburb of Edina. By making shopping comfortable all year round, it was an instant success.[16] Mall owners created a leisurely environment conducive to consumption, including common hours for stores, directories and uniform signs, and benches and landscaping. By comparison, downtown shopping seemed chaotic and inconvenient, and sometimes even menacing. By 1974, 15,000 shopping centers had captured more than 44 percent of the nation's retail sales,[17] and before long downtown department stores began to close for good. Hudson's, a historic landmark in Detroit, finally shuttered its doors in 1981.[18]

Inner-city economies crashed in the 1970s. The events of the next two decades introduced a new tongue-twister to the English language, *deindustrialization,* a word invented to refer to the rapid restructuring of economies in all of the advanced nations. Technological advances in production processes, such as the use of robots for assembly, made it possible to produce goods with fewer workers than in the past. Although the volume of production increased between 1970 and 1988, the nation's manufacturing employment remained stable at 19 million jobs. At the same time, a lot of manufacturing firms were leaving the United States entirely, to such places as the Caribbean, Latin America, and Asia, where wages were lower and environmental regulations more lax.[19] Metropolitan regions that had prospered in the industrial age slid into a steep, abrupt decline, with unemployment rates rising, in some cases, to 20 percent of the workforce. The situation for inner cities seemed especially precarious. Having absorbed one blow after another, and now facing this final calamity, it was not clear that downtowns had any future whatsoever.

Globalization and the Downtown Renaissance

Though it was difficult to see at first, the dark clouds of deindustrialization had a silver lining. The loss of manufacturing was accompanied by a rapid rise in the number of service jobs. From 1975 to 1990, 30 million new jobs were created in service industries, so by the end of the 1980s, 84 million people were employed in services, as compared to 25 million in goods production.[20] Almost 80 percent of employment growth in the 1980s came in the form of service jobs.[21] At the same time that factory workers found their jobs disappearing, new opportunities opened up for educated white-collar workers. As shown in Table 13.1, in seven Northeast and Midwest metropolitan areas, the percentage of jobs in the manufacturing sector fell from 32 to 12 percent in the 40 years from 1960 to 2000. Over the same period, services grew from 15 to 36 percent of local employment. Wholesale/retail and finance, insurance, and real estate remained about the same, so it was clear that the increase in service jobs was driving economic growth. The new services economy pointed the way toward a strategy for reviving the inner cities and their downtowns.

TABLE 13.1 Change in Job Categories in Seven Northeastern and Midwestern Metropolitan Areas, 1960–2000

Category	Percentage Employed in Each Category				
	1960	1970	1980	1990	2000
Manufacturing	32%	26%	21%	14%	12%
Transportation, communications, and public utilities	8	7	6	5	5
Wholesale and retail trade	21	21	21	22	20
Finance, insurance, and real estate	7	7	8	9	8
Services	15	19	24	31	36
Government	13	16	17	16	14

Source: U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of Labor Statistics, *Earnings and Employment* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1960, 1970, 1980, 1990, and 2000).

By the mid-1970s, civic leaders finally came to the conclusion that central cities were not likely to ever again compete head to head with suburbs for manufacturing, retailing, and wholesaling. Those sectors had already become highly decentralized within urban areas, and it was best to accept this reality. If central cities were going to find a way back, they would have to chart a new direction. Service-sector jobs in finance, corporate employment, and tourism pointed the way. A generation of "messiah mayors" who preached a gospel of self-help for their cities experimented with novel methods of promoting local economic development. They used public funds to encourage investment in office towers, malls, and tourist and entertainment facilities.[22] Cities offered property tax breaks, often over many years; and used eminent domain to take private property for glitzy projects. Tax increment finance districts (TIFs) and business improvement districts (BIDs) raised public funds to lure developers.

TIFs and BIDs were important because they were able to raise large amounts of capital by selling tax-free revenue bonds to investors. Investors get a tax break, and the TIF or BID public authority pays off the bonds (over 30 or 40 years) with the tax revenues generated by future development. Special authorities, such as convention and visitors' bureaus, mall authorities, sports authorities, museum districts, and many others, finance public improvements or new facilities by charging user fees (admission to events, for example), issuing bonds (to be paid by user fees), and gaining access to designated tax sources. Through such mechanisms, large amounts of money were raised for the remaking of downtown areas even though municipal governments were struggling just to pay their bills.

Public subsidies made the downtown renaissance possible. By the mid-1980s, most big cities were beginning to sport a "trophy collection" that typically included at least one luxury hotel (preferably one with a multistory atrium), a new sports stadium (usually domed), a downtown shopping mall, a redeveloped waterfront, and a new convention center.[23] These facilities and the activities they generated helped to support corporate white-collar employment, entertainment, culture, and a burgeoning tourism and convention trade.

The data in Table 13.2 show that downtown populations increased in cities in all regions of the nation. Some cities (such as Atlanta, Baltimore, Boston, Chicago, Los Angeles, and Philadelphia) built on a downtown population base that was already substantial in 1990 (ranging from 19,763 in Atlanta to 75,823 in Boston). Other cities (such as Cleveland, Denver, Detroit, Houston, Memphis, and Norfolk) attracted new residents to downtown populations that were small in 1990 (in all cases about 7,500 or less). The total number of people who moved into the downtown areas of these cities was not large, but the new residents nevertheless catalyzed a dramatic change. Condominium and apartment towers sprung up alongside historic buildings renovated into lofts and condos; restaurants, bars, and personal service businesses quickly followed. The decades-long flight from downtown and the neighborhoods around it seemed about to come to an end.

TABLE 13.2 Downtowns That Grew in the 1990s (18 Selected Cities

City	1990 Downtown	2000 Downtown	Population Change	Percentage Change
Atlanta	19,763	24,731	4,968	25%

Baltimore	28,597	30,067	1,470	5
Boston	75,823	79,251	3,428	4.5
Chicago	27,760	42,039	14,279	51
Cleveland	7,261	9,599	2,338	32
Colorado Springs	13,412	14,377	965	7
Des Moines	4,190	4,204	14	0.03
Denver	2,794	4,230	1,436	51
Detroit	5,970	6,141	171	3
Houston	7,029	11,882	4,853	69
Los Angeles	34,655	36,630	1,975	6
Memphis	7,606	8,994	1,388	18
Milwaukee	10,973	11,243	270	2.5
Norfolk, VA	2,390	2,881	491	20.5
Philadelphia	74,655	78,349	3,694	5
Portland, OR	9,528	12,902	3,374	35
San Diego	15,417	17,894	2,477	16
Seattle	9,824	16,443	6,619	67

Sources: Adapted from Rebecca R. Sohmer and Robert E. Lang, *Downtown Rebound* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, Fannie Mae Foundation, 2001), pp. 2–3; also see Rebecca R. Sohmer and Robert E. Lang, "Downtown Rebound," in *Redefining Urban and Suburban America: Evidence from Census 2000,* ed. Bruce Katz and Robert E. Lang (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2003), pp. 63–74.

The economic sectors that led the revitalization of downtown constituted the components of a new globalized economy revolving around high-level corporate and professional services, telecommunications, and technology. Globalization has been facilitated by technologies that make information exchange nearly instantaneous and by the ability of corporations to manage operations in many places at once. Since the 1980s, corporations have been growing larger through mergers and buyouts. Large firms are able to coordinate activities on a global scale—the movement of capital investment, the location of factories, and the distribution and marketing of products. The innovations required by modern corporations in product design, advertising, the adoption of new technologies, and corporate organization are made possible by frequent coordination among highly specialized professionals, most of whom do not work within a single organization. In the global age, corporations prefer to locate in close proximity to the highly skilled and eclectic mix of professionals on whom they rely.

The skyscrapers that sprout from the downtowns of American cities are the physical manifestation of this clustering of economic activities. Although large numbers of corporations are located in edge cities and in office parks in the suburbs, downtown areas have continued to attract the firms that benefit from being close to one another. Especially (but not exclusively) in larger cities, high-level professional offices and information industries have become clustered into "strategic nodes with a hyperconcentration of activities"[24] supporting layer upon layer of highly educated, technologically sophisticated professionals offering specialized services—corporate managers, management consultants, legal experts, accountants, computer specialists, financial analysts, media and public relations consultants, and the like.

Corporate headquarters cluster more densely than anywhere else in a few global cities, such as New York, Paris, London, Chicago, Los Angeles, Miami, Hong Kong, Sydney, and Tokyo.[25] Sitting atop a new urban hierarchy created by globalization, these cities house corporations that manage production and distribution networks around the world. The largest firms, especially including international banks, stock and commodity exchanges, and media empires, are located in global cities. Second-tier cities, such as Montreal and Hamburg, normally host a few international companies, and further down the hierarchy, medium-sized cities such as Atlanta, Cleveland, and St. Louis serve as the hubs of regional corporate networks. Down the pyramid further still are cities that depend on quite specialized activities tied to the global economy, such as an auto plant (Smyrna, Tennessee), a cluster of electronics software firms (San Jose, California), or a meatpacking plant (Beardstown, Illinois). The places that cannot find a way to tap into sectors of the global economy are destined to slip into irreversible decline.[26]

The professionals who locate near or in downtown areas demand an exceptional level of urban amenities, and the expectation that cities should provide a high quality of life has filtered down to include almost everyone. By the end of the 1990s, successful downtowns and gentrified neighborhoods offered a unique "urban culture" based

on a varying mix of amenities that are best provided in dense urban environments: restaurants, blues and jazz clubs, art galleries, theaters and performance halls, bars, dance clubs, after-hours clubs, and coffee shops.[38] These cultural activities have great economic consequence for cities; they are a major source of jobs, and they help keep young professionals from moving to more interesting places. In this way, economics and culture have become inseparable in the twenty-first-century American city.

OUTTAKE

City of Glass: the Condo Boom in Downtown Areas

A walk through the booming downtown construction sites in Vancouver, San Francisco, Miami, Toronto, or New York reveals a glassy building boom: sleek, slender condominium towers are on the rise. But often, once darkness sets over the city, many of these towers will not brighten the skyline with homely lights but remain dark instead. The "dark towers" have become a recent characteristic of the urban skyline in many downtowns. In 2015, the *New York Times* reported that many of New York City's luxury condo buildings were sitting more than half empty because many of the units served either as investment properties or pieds-à-terre.[27] Citing the New York City budget office, the *New York Times* found that 24 percent of the city's apartments did not serve as the primary residences of their owners.[28] This is quite remarkable, especially in a city whose rental apartment vacancy rate has consistently hovered below the 5 percent mark, leading the city to have declared a continuous housing emergency since the 1960s. Interestingly, the budget office's data also indicated that the majority of the pieds-à-terres are owned by middle-class residents, many of them living primarily in the suburbs, who like to keep a foothold in the city.[29]

The city's luxury real estate, on the other hand, tells a very different story. An investigative report by the *New York Times* in 2015, entitled "Towers of Secrecy" revealed that 44 percent of all real estate over $5 million in the United States was purchased by shell companies—entities set up to funnel money into the country by purchasing real estate without revealing the identity of the investor.[30] In New York City, the percentage of foreign shell companies purchasing luxury real estate (worth $5 million or more) was 54 percent in 2014.[31] The corresponding percentage was 51 percent in L.A., 48 percent in the Bay Area, and 37 percent in the Miami area, all of which are urban areas that have seen a vibrant condo boom since the 1990s.[32] In May 2015, in response to the *New York Times* reports, the de Blasio administration imposed new disclosure requirements on shell companies involved in real estate transactions in the city.[33] The main purpose of these new regulations was for New York City administrators to be better able to identify real estate owners involved in tax evasion schemes by failing to declare residence in the city.[34]

The dramatic physical transformation of some of North America's urban areas from struggling downtowns into condo boomtowns is quite visually fascinating. The glassy landscapes of Miami, Toronto, San Francisco, or Vancouver are particularly striking. The condo as such does not merely promise shelter, but it promises a lifestyle. Not unlike the suburban mall, which once attracted suburban housewives with its climate controlled, easily accessible "safe spaces" to shop, the modern condo tower offers a gated, controlled environment, which offers amenities such as gyms, pools, gardens, and often even a supermarket, for a preselected group of people. Urban scholar Ute Lehrer points out that "[b]ecause condo owners have almost everything inside, they do no longer need to engage with the city below. Their everyday life is contained within controlled spaces, and any encounter with the "other" is reduced to its bare minimum."[35]

A 33-story condo structure in New York City became a recent symbol of the contrast between the controlled, glassy paradise of the condo tower and the reality of the downtown streets. A New York City tax incentive, called 421a, offers tax abatements for housing developers who provide affordable housing units on their properties, which many New York City developers have taken advantage of. The newly developed, 274-unit structure in Manhattan, 40 Riverside Boulevard, planned to sell 219 of its units as condos and reserved the remaining 55 units to be rented to tenants at affordable rates, in order to take advantage of the 421a incentive. However, the developer wanted to have the tenants of the 55 affordable units enter through a separate door—which is commonly referred to as a "poor door" in New York City. The controversy around the "poor doors" grew so intense that it led New York legislators to add provisions to the 421a program in June 2015, stipulating that market-rate and affordable unit occupants must share the same entrance.

Meanwhile, the "poor door" controversy has long moved beyond the confines of the five boroughs: London's mayor Boris Johnson noted in 2013 that he would not rule out allowing "poor doors" as they provided an opportunity for developers to offset costs:

> The difficulty is, and this is what the developers will say, is that the high charges, the concierge charges, the charges for all the services in the building, cannot always be met in a uniform way by all the tenants, and that's why they make this case for dual access.[36]

Opponents see the tax break developers receive from providing affordable housing as cost-offset enough: "Poor doors are just the latest in a trend that helps us haves not to have to see the have-nots!" Stephen Colbert quipped in the wake of the controversy. He went on to say:

> There must be a simple way to get away from average people. I don't need a penthouse! I'd settle for something small and luxurious, maybe a tiny silk-lined apartment with a pillow to lay my head on—just room for one, a cart from a single piece of mahogany with beautiful brass handles for six of my servants to carry me up to my country place—it's not a big piece of land, but at least it's in a gated community![37]

Whether we like it or not, the downtown condo is here to stay for the time being. After all, cities have remaining vertical building space. The city of glass keeps growing upward, reaching for the sky.

The New Urban Culture

The recent population growth in America's downtowns has been driven by empty-nest retirees and by affluent young professionals known by a number of slang terms, such as *yuppies* (young urban professionals), *dinks* (dual-income, no kids), and *jingles* (singles with joint living arrangements). In only a few years' time, this movement fundamentally changed the spatial geography of cities because affluent professionals tended to crowd into downtowns and nearby neighborhoods, and they have often done so by displacing people who had previously lived there. Affluent people live in downtown areas with high property values; outside of the downtown, there is a patchwork of gentrifying neighborhoods, some of them located near or even within poverty-stricken areas. What makes this patchwork pattern possible is the nature of the new development. Members of the affluent middle class often live within condominium towers or gated communities, well protected from nearby blight.[39]

The professionals who have flocked into downtown and gentrifying neighborhoods have driven up the cost of housing, sometimes to fantastic levels. New condominium towers and townhouse developments have become signifiers of urban regeneration, as has the renovation of old factory and warehouse buildings (some of them long abandoned) for retail and housing. Deteriorated neighborhoods have attracted an eclectic assortment of affluent yuppies, artists, and people with unconventional lifestyles who thrive on tolerance and diversity. Two characteristics have made these neighborhoods attractive—the presence of historic and architecturally significant buildings such as old Victorian and row houses, and their location near the central business district and amenities such as waterfronts, museums, parks, performing arts venues, and restaurants, bars, and nightlife.

The term *gentrification* is a shorthand way of referring to the process of displacement. The gentrification storyline goes something like this: affluent newcomers drive up demand, bringing sharp increases in land values; as a result, less affluent, minority, and older residents are forced to move. Property taxes escalate when land values rise; dilapidated property becomes subject to new standards of maintenance; and neighborhood institutions such as churches and schools close because families with children tend to be replaced by singles and childless couples. Some gentrified neighborhoods are mainly residential, but more frequently they are composed of a mixture of housing, retail, and services establishments (especially hair salons, health clubs, cleaners, and coffeehouses). Within these neighborhoods are restaurants, exclusive shopping districts, parks, and cultural facilities.

Many scholarly observers are highly critical of gentrification, and point to one of the central harms associated with it: the displacement of low-income residents from inner-city neighborhoods through rising real estate prices. Others point to the fact that gentrification, the influx of new retailers and mid- to high-income residents, can revitalize downtown neighborhoods and turn them into safer and more comfortable places to live. Political scientist Peggy Kohn, who has written extensively on the issue of gentrification and neighborhood transformation, takes a very nuanced approach to gentrification, noting that it is merely a symptom of a larger problem:

> If the gentrification of downtown is harmful, should we view the establishment of dynamic new low-income, immigrant neighborhoods in the inner suburbs as a benefit? Not exactly. This question, however, helps us focus on the core harm of gentrification, which is not gentrification itself but rather inequality. Gentrification makes the increase in inequality and income polarization into something visible, vivid, and concrete. Moreover, it reminds us that the wealthy got to take what they want and leave everyone else with what they discard. Urban policy by itself cannot

solve this problem.[40]

A leading urban scholar, Richard Florida, has talked of the rise of what he calls "the creative class," which is composed of highly educated professionals with rarified intellectual, analytic, artistic, and creative skills who place a higher value on the quality of life than almost anything else.[41] The members of this class demand social interaction, culture, nightlife, diversity, and a sense of authenticity, which have become to be defined by such things as "historic buildings, established neighborhoods, a unique music scene or specific cultural attributes. It comes from the mix—from urban grit alongside renovated buildings, from the comingling of young and old, colorful characters and yuppies, fashion models and 'bag ladies.'"[42] Florida claims that the creative class tends to reject the "canned experiences" associated with tourist enclaves, and is the main driver of the new generation of urban amenities that every city must have.[43]

Tourism and Entertainment

Tourism, entertainment, and culture are crucial to downtown revival. The reasons are not difficult to uncover. Travel and tourism is the world's largest industry (measured by value added to investment).[44] Travelers and tourists spend huge amounts of money on lodging, food, entertainment and culture, transportation, souvenirs, and other services and products. Worldwide, about one-tenth of all jobs are generated by travel and tourism.[45] To remake themselves into places that tourists want to visit, cities have invested heavily in tourism facilities and the reconstruction of downtown environments. Indeed, the rebuilding of downtown areas to make them friendly for visitors has been so massive that the current period of city building may be compared to the building of the industrial city a century ago, when cities invested in mass transit systems, paved streets, sewer and water systems, and parks. The only other city-building era that changed the urban landscape as dramatically occurred in the 1950s and 1960s, when federally funded urban renewal clearance leveled blocks of downtown real estate and entire neighborhoods.[46] The transformation that began in the late 1970s is still taking place, but already American cities have been changed almost beyond recognition.

In Chicago, as in many cities, the leading industry is now tourism and entertainment. The number of tourists increased from 32 million in 1993 to 43 million in 1997, a product of indefatigable promotion and a huge investment in the infrastructure of tourism.[47] Chicago has built the world's largest convention center, an entertainment district on a renovated pier (Navy Pier), and has one of the world's most extensive and beautiful park systems, which runs for miles along the Lake Michigan lakefront. The city is host to several extraordinary museums and other attractions (such as the John G. Shedd Aquarium and the Adler Planetarium), maintains elaborate floral and garden displays along Michigan Avenue and on many other streets, and hosts dozens of events each year in the parks. Grant Park, which stretches between the downtown Loop and Lake Michigan, is the most frequently visited park in the United States, attracting more visitors than even the Grand Canyon.[48] Chicago has a complex globalized economy, but it would be in trouble without tourism. Indeed, 2010 saw a decrease in tourism for Chicago, from 39.5 million visitors in 2009, to 38.11 million, a change which was felt as the local tourism industry battled the results of the struggling economy, high fuel prices, and competition from other cities. Chicago quickly unleashed a $1 million media campaign, aimed at both in- and out-of-state residents, a campaign which has been said to have already boosted 2011 visitor statistics. Still, the *Chicago Tribune* predicted that regaining the peak numbers of 2007 would take several years.[49] Since then, Chicago's tourism industry has experienced a significant boom. In 2014, the city set a new record by reaching 48.7 million domestic visitors (and totaling over 50 million visitors overall and outpacing New York City by more than 4 million[50]), a 3.7 percent increase from the record of 46.96 million domestic visitors, which the city had set in 2013.[51]

In older industrial cities, tourist and entertainment venues have often been constructed on sites that were once devoted to manufacturing, warehousing, retailing, or harbor activities. These developments often try to project a contrived, nostalgic, and idealized version of city life, and they do so by utilizing architectural features that call to mind an imagined city from the past. One example is South Street Seaport in New York, which strives to create an ambience evoked by "authentic reproductions" of a working harbor[52]—in effect, an urban mini-version of Disneyland (in Anaheim, California), with its "Main Street U.S.A." and "Frontier Village." Similar developments in other places include the Wharf and Ghirardelli Square in San Francisco and the several renovated "Union Stations" scattered from coast to coast (while the actual train stations are out of sight and sound).

Making older cities attractive to tourists was not an easy task. In the wake of the riots of the 1960s, downtowns

became stigmatized as violent, dangerous places. Where crime, poverty, and urban decay made parts of a city inhospitable to visitors, specialized areas were built that were, in effect, tourist reservations. Such "tourist bubbles" made it possible for the tourist, who was unfamiliar with the local landscape, to move inside "secured, protected and normalized environments."[53] The aim was to create a secure and imaginary world within an otherwise alien or even hostile setting. Within a few years, falling crime rates allowed tourist venues to spill beyond the confines of these enclaves. Downtown office construction and neighborhood gentrification gained momentum, and street life and urban culture became the objects of fascination and consumption for locals and visitors alike. Where these processes have achieved critical mass, the central cities have once again become the true hubs of their metropolitan regions, the home of activities, culture, and a lifestyle not easily imitated in the suburbs.[54] In cities as different as Boston, San Francisco, Chicago, New York City, and Portland, Oregon, visitors wander and mingle freely with residents. Indeed, except in and around convention centers, it is often hard to distinguish visitors from residents. The "localization of leisure turned cities into entertainment destinations not only for out-of-town visitors but also for suburban commuters and the growing number of affluent downtown residents."[55] Increasingly, local residents have become "as if tourists," acting like tourists even when they stay home.[56] At the same time, tourists increasingly seek to integrate themselves and act like local residents. One of the latest trends that let tourists experience cities from outside the tourist bubble is Airbnb, a website where people can offer and rent local lodging space. The website invites tourists to rent rooms and apartments from the original owners or tenants for the duration of their trip, allowing them to experience hip or up-and-coming residential neighborhoods, such as Bedford-Stuyvesant in Brooklyn, NY, or Wicker Park in Chicago.

The infrastructure that makes central-city tourism possible includes convention centers, sports stadiums, festival malls and urban entertainment districts, cultural venues such as performing arts centers and museums, and, in a few cities, gaming casinos.[57] Especially in the case of convention centers and sports stadiums, public funding has sometimes become a contentious issue, with proponents playing up the benefits associated with city marketing and economic growth, and opponents countering with the argument that public support for such facilities is both a bad investment and a case of misplaced priorities. However, for mayors and other public officials, the economic benefits of city image-making, whether it involves expanding a convention center, building a new sports stadium, or improving a museum, are beyond dispute.

OUTTAKE

Money out of Thin Air: the Blessing or Curse of Airbnb

"I don't know the draw, but they're coming from all over the world: Spain, Italy, Scotland, Paris. They love it here. We absolutely were not expecting so much demand. We work hard at it. But it's still kind of surreal." noted one Airbnb host in the recently gentrifying Brooklyn neighborhood of Bedford-Stuyvesant in a 2015 *New York Magazine* report on the changes on his block over the past 135 years.[58]

Airbnb, a San Francisco-based startup, which provides an online platform for individuals to offer up and rent real estate for short-term intervals, has become an alternative to the conventional hotel for many urban travelers, especially those who are interested in experiencing the city outside the tourist bubble. Since its inception, Airbnb has expanded significantly with offices in several European cities, as well as in Russia, Australia, and Latin America.

The impact of Airbnb on cities and neighborhoods has received mixed reviews. Some observers have praised Airbnb as a financial aid that helps urban residents with underwater mortgages, facing foreclosure, or those struggling to afford the high rents of San Francisco, Washington, DC, or New York City, while others worry about the negative impact of Airbnb on rental vacancy rates, and the supply of affordable housing.[59] Yet others have expressed concerns about a loss of community, in this case in reference to the increase in short-term rentals in Ocean Beach, San Diego:

> [T]he even more drastic consequence of loss of community occurs when there are so many residential units within a neighborhood that have been turned into short-term units, that a goodly-sized chunk of the area has morphed into a resort candyland of beach, surf, and sand.[60]

The length of tenure, as well as the nature of it (referring to the difference between local residents following their daily routines with work and family versus tourists wanting to have a good time) mattered, according to many concerned community residents in Ocean Beach. They felt that their quiet residential routines would be

disrupted by the increasing presence of partying tourists in their community, and the fabric of the community would be destroyed by the growing proportion of short-term visitors replacing permanent residents.[61]

Back in New York City, Attorney General Eric Schneiderman initiated a large-scale investigation into Airbnb. The report found nearly three-quarters of Airbnb hosts in violation of tax, zoning, and other laws.[62] Furthermore, Schneiderman's investigation revealed that more than one third of Airbnb rental revenue was benefitting commercial operations, rather than struggling New Yorkers.[63] Finally, the financial benefits from Airbnb hosting were found to be concentrated in popular neighborhoods in Manhattan and Brooklyn, leaving the remaining three boroughs behind.[64] This indicates that financially besieged New Yorkers may not reap as many benefits from Airbnb.

Kenneth Rosen, chair at the Fisher Center for Real Estate and Urban Economics at UC Berkeley, in a recent report for the Urban Land Institute, noted that the effect of short-term rentals on the prices of long-term rental housing in San Francisco was much too small to measure.[65] He further noted that

> Allowing residents to supplement their income by offering a spare bedroom helps households to remain in the city as the cost of living increases. The amount of income from a rental alone is not generally sufficient to live on, but it can go a long way in providing supplemental income for a family. To be sure, there are isolated cases of individuals who live on the income generated from renting out spare rooms, but the cost and effort involved in operating a full-time rental outweigh the benefit for the vast majority of households.[66]

One thing is fairly certain: The sharing economy is booming, and it is here to stay for the time being. Because it is such a recent phenomenon, however, it still remains fairly unregulated, its long-term impacts on the more regulated branches of the tourism industry still uncertain. Clashes and legal struggles should be expected. Much like private car services, such as Uber, in which drivers use their own personal vehicles to transport customers without having to acquire an expensive commercial taxi license, Airbnb ventures into legal territory that is under-regulated at best. The future will show whether lawmakers can catch up.

Convention Centers

Until the 1960s, few cities had built the huge convention centers that are so prevalent in and near downtown areas today. Only a few decades ago, town halls doubled as assembly facilities, if any were needed. In the 1920s, some cities built the first generation of meeting and exhibition halls; St. Louis, for example, built the St. Louis Arena in 1929 to accommodate an agricultural exhibit. During the Great Depression, the federal government, through the Public Works Administration, financed large public assembly and exhibition facilities in a number of cities. This generation of halls often contained one or more auditoriums as well as exhibition space under one roof, and in many cases these structures were not replaced until the 1980s or 1990s. These facilities were expensive to operate and nearly always lost money, but they had the effect of attracting, and even helping to create, an array of travelling shows and exhibitions. The benefits to the local economy and to their own bottom line were soon comprehended by civic boosters, who then pushed for larger and better facilities.

In the 1950s, a few cities began constructing convention centers designed to attract professional meetings and trade shows. The proliferation of convention centers began in the 1960s and accelerated in the 1970s as air travel, growing affluence, and greater specialization in the job market gave rise to more meetings, exhibitions, and consumer shows (such as autos, boats, and electronics), and conventions. In the 1980s, cities began a virtual arms race for the convention trade, with even small towns joining the competition. More than 70 percent of the convention centers existing in 1998 had opened since 1970.[67] Actually, however, the race had just begun. In the ten years from 1993 to 2003, capital spending for convention centers doubled, to $2.3 billion annually, and in the 13 years from 1990 to 2003 convention-center space increased by 51 percent. In the latter year at least 40 cities were planning to build new facilities or expand the old ones. All of this activity meant that the size and cost of each facility escalated, but the available business had to be divided among an increasing number of contenders.[68]

All convention centers require annual subsidies for the payment of construction bonds and for operating costs, but rising construction, maintenance, and promotion costs have not deterred cities from investing in bigger and more elaborate facilities. Much is at stake. In 2002, there were nearly 23,000 associations and 6.5 million total private business establishments in the United States.[69] The 23,000-plus associations in the nation spent $32 billion on meetings in 1992, and corporations spent an additional $29 billion on off-premises meetings and conventions.[70] Tourism-related organizations alone had 1.4 million members in 1998, and the meetings industry produced $81 billion in economic output.[71] The average attendance at new exhibitions nearly quadrupled from

1990 to 1997.[72] Although only 4–5 percent of meetings are held in convention centers (the rest are held in hotels, resorts, and other venues),[73] the size of the meetings and convention business has been large enough to prompt hundreds of cities to build or expand their existing facilities. Forty-one convention centers were being built or renovated in 2000, and 66 were slated for expansion or renovation.[74]

Indeed, as of January 2005, public capital spending on convention centers since the beginning of the decade had doubled to $2.4 billion annually, increasing convention space by over 50 percent since 1990. Nationwide, 44 new or expanded convention centers were in planning in 2005 alone. The economic downturn that began in the fall of 2008 prompted a sharp decline in both tourism and convention attendance, but in less than three years, attendance and construction had moved back to its pre-2008 vigor. Michigan's major convention venues reported a growth in bookings for 2011—the DeVos Palace in Grand Rapids, for example, forecast about 20 more event days in 2011 than 2010, and projected a revenue increase of about $150,000 from the previous year. The nearby Kalamazoo County Expo Center and Fairground, deemed "self-sufficient" by its operator, was in the midst of a $3.75 million expansion and planned to add 35,000 square feet to the facility.[75]

As more and more cities increased the size of their convention venues, the competition among cities became extraordinarily intense. In 2000, the top 15 cities in North America accounted for almost half of all conventions with exhibitions, but even the city that attracted the largest number of exhibitions—Orlando, Florida—accounted for only about 5 percent share of the nation's total convention business. As the number of cities competing for conventions increased, it became difficult for any one place to improve its share of the business no matter how much it invested. Additionally, from year to year there is a great deal of volatility because meeting planners are skilled at playing cities off against one another for the best deal.

Construction of a convention facility is necessary for a city to enter the race, but obviously a lot of other factors determine a city's ability to compete. In Orlando's case, obviously, Disney World is the big draw, but most cities cannot offer such a singularly powerful attraction. Cities that can offer an interesting mix of entertainment, culture, nightlife, and urban amenities have a built-in advantage. Las Vegas is a uniquely attractive place for visitors and conventioneers because it offers an inimitable blend of gambling, sin, luxury, and entertainment. The publisher of *Tradeshow Week,* Adam Schaffer, commented that "Las Vegas is almost a nation unto itself. Everybody wants to go to Vegas—they want to go to a show, shop, etc., be entertained."[76] Of course visitors want to find a special experience in every city, so it is not sufficient to build a convention center and hotel and leave it at that. Cities must also provide the urban amenities and ambience that meetings planners and their clients will find attractive.

Virtually every major city in the United States had formed a convention and visitors bureau by the end of the 1980s, and over the years these have increased rapidly in personnel and budgets. The professional staff employed by convention bureaus construct lists of international, national, regional, and local associations that regularly sponsor or organize conventions and send out a blizzard of promotional literature. They man booths at the meetings of the organizations that might give them business, and often stage rather elaborate and costly promotional presentations and exhibits. And finally, cities make it a regular practice to invite representatives of the tourist industry and of important business and professional groups for a complimentary visit. In May 2003, for instance, the St. Louis Convention and Visitors Bureau hosted 4,000 professionals who were attending a meeting of the Travel Industry Association of America's Press Tour and Pow-Wow. The booths in the center were filled with representatives of rental and RV companies, hotels and hotel chains, airlines, and bus and cruise lines. States and cities set up booths as well.[77]

Despite such efforts, the St. Louis center failed to increase attendance significantly from 2000 to 2004. Meanwhile, the Renaissance Hotel, which had been built using funds from the city's empowerment zone, lost an estimated $2.4 million in only one year. Its low occupancy rate of 50 percent had already prompted Moody's Investment Service to put its bonds on a watch list.[78] St. Louis's experience was not unique; instead, it is replicated in many cities: in 2003 Seattle's center lost $5.3 million and the San Jose convention facility had a shortfall of $5 million. In a bid to get more business, convention center managers began offering special deals, but these bargains virtually guaranteed that operating losses would be locked in. The Hawaii, Seattle, Columbus, Indianapolis, and Nashville centers offered free rent for specified periods (through 2010 for Hawaii). Dallas offered a half-rent bargain, plus rebates for hotel use and discounts on airfare, shuttle service, and exhibit setup costs.[79]

Sports Stadiums

Civic boosters believe that professional sports franchises are pivotal to the economic revitalization of central cities and often have used sports facilities as an anchor for development.[80] Cities compete vigorously for sports teams by helping to finance the construction of stadiums and by allowing owners to keep parking and concession fees and other revenues. Because teams sometimes threaten to move and occasionally do, sports cartels and team owners have been very successful in persuading cities to meet their demands. In the decade of the 1990s alone approximately $10 billion in public funds were devoted to the building of sports facilities in urban areas for major league professional teams.[81] Although earlier studies seemed to make a convincing case that sports stadiums did not bring measurable benefits to local economies, recent research shows that in many contexts they do.[82] One study indicated that stadiums located in the downtown areas of six cities made a positive contribution to the regional economy; a study of the Gund Arena and Jacobs Field in Cleveland found that these facilities contributed to the economic redevelopment of downtown.[83]

It is important to add that economic impact is only one part of a complex picture. Sports teams have long been central to the civic and cultural life of American cities. Oddly, the assumption that a team expresses a city's essence, spirit, and sense of community has not been much eroded since teams and their players became highly mobile. Part of the reason for this is that local boosters regard professional sports teams as a signifier of "big league" status for a city. Sports teams carry a substantial emotional charge, so their worth is rarely, if ever, calculated in simple economic terms. Through the national and international publicity accompanying network broadcasts of games and playoffs, professional sports teams are a powerful vehicle for conveying a city's image and fostering a sense of identity and community. When a team wins a World Series or the Super Bowl, a jolt of ecstatic happiness sweeps through the local population. For a moment everyone is a fan.

Professional sports is a big business. Between 2010 and 2011, the value of Major League Baseball teams increased 7 percent and reached an all-time high of $523 million. The New York Yankees topped the list at $1.7 billion, while the Mets lost 13 percent of their worth for a total value of $747 million.[84] The National Basketball Association (NBA) and professional hockey franchises could be bought for smaller sums, making it possible, in some cases, for someone with $100 to $200 million laying around to bid for a team.[85] Despite the claims of owners and the leagues, sports teams are profitable. In 2002, baseball commissioner Bud Selig testified to Congress that major league baseball generated an operating loss of $200 million that year, but *Forbes* magazine produced figures showing a $75 million profit.[86] The escalation of team values all through the previous decade made it a dubious claim that baseball owners lost money. The lucrative media contracts for most baseball teams made it even more suspect.[87]

For decades professional sports teams were so closely identified with their cities of origin that moving would have been unthinkable. In baseball, this link was first broken in 1953, when the Boston Braves relocated to Milwaukee. The baseball franchise relocation game began in earnest in 1957, when owner Walter O'Malley moved the Brooklyn Dodgers to Los Angeles. O'Malley fought for years to find the land for a new stadium in Brooklyn to replace the decrepit Ebbets Field, which had opened in 1913. But he was repeatedly thwarted by Robert Moses, who, as head of New York's Bridge and Tunnel Authority, Park Commission, Construction Commission, and Slum Clearance Committee, controlled the land needed for a new park.[88] To lure the Dodgers out of New York, Los Angeles agreed to renovate its minor league stadium at Chavez Ravine and give the stadium to O'Malley. As the clincher, they offered him 300 acres of downtown Los Angeles real estate.[89] Considering the obstacles put in his way in Brooklyn, it would have been difficult for O'Malley to refuse the deal.

It did not take long for other owners to follow O'Malley's lead. Threats to move became potent weapons for prying more subsidies out of cities. Between 1953 and 1982, there were 78 franchise relocations in the four major professional sports: 11 in baseball, 40 in basketball, 14 in hockey, and 13 in football.[90] In only six years, from 1980 to 1986, more than half the cities with major league sports franchises were confronted with demands for increased subsidies, with relocation an implied if not always explicit threat hanging over negotiations.[91]

From 1980 to June 1992, an incredible amount of activity involved baseball and football teams. During this period, 20 cities sought baseball teams and 24 cities tried to attract football teams, an interesting statistic considering that there were, at that time, a total of 28 major league baseball and 28 professional football franchises (two new expansion football franchises were added in 1993, with several cities competing for them). Eleven cities had completed or were building stadiums, and 28 more considered building or had plans to build stadiums. New sports facilities were completed in the downtowns of 30 North American cities from 1990 to 2002. These were often the high-profile flagship projects of more comprehensive efforts at downtown development.[92] This

impressive list includes cities from coast to coast and three cities in Canada. Approximately 50 minor league and collegiate sports facilities also were completed in the 1990s.[93]

Except for baseball, where teams move less frequently, moves have become an ever-present possibility for many cities, in part because they pay off for the owners. In the 1990s, for example, the Quebec Nordiques (a hockey team) moved from a small market to Denver, Colorado, and renamed themselves the Avalanche. In 1995, in their first season, they won the Stanley Cup. Around the same time, the Winnipeg Jets moved from Winnipeg, Canada, a city of die-hard hockey fans, to the desert in Phoenix, AZ. The Jets had run into trouble in the early 1980s, when the World Hockey Association (WHA) merged with the NHL, and the team started to lose. After the merger, salary regulations were liberalized, and salaries had to be paid in US dollars. However, ticket sales, a central source of revenue source for NHL teams, were in Canadian dollars, and during the 1980s and 1990s, the exchange rate put Canadian teams at disadvantage. In this liberalized market, big, new arenas with luxury boxes could garner decidedly more revenue than the aging Winnipeg Arena, a small indoor arena built in 1955 without any luxury seats. Therefore, despite their loyal fan following, the Jets could not bring in a competitive amount of revenue.

The Winnipeg City government, in turn, was unwilling to pitch in any financial support for the team, or build a new, modern arena with updated amenities and a higher proportion of luxury boxes. The team eventually was bought by several Phoenix businessmen and moved to Phoenix as the Coyotes in 1996, where, after some initial problems with their arena, they received their own stadium during the 2003/04 season.

In the early 2000s, the local economy in Winnipeg improved considerably, and in 2001 the MTS Centre was built in the space of the iconic Eaton's building in downtown Winnipeg by a coalition of wealthy business leaders, led by True North Entertainment. Amid the construction of a new arena, rumors started flying regarding the return of an NHL hockey team to Winnipeg. In 2009, True North Entertainment made one of several unsuccessful bids to return the Coyotes to Winnipeg, but in 2011, True North was able to successfully move the Atlanta Thrashers to Winnipeg. Some small initial upgrades were made to the MTS Centre, but more profound upgrades have been implemented recently. In 2015, True North Entertainment invested $12 million for 278 premium lodge seats and a new scoreboard, and it plans to invest up to $30 million in the arena by 2020, via its TN 2020 Initiative.[94]

In 1996, when the NFL Cleveland Browns became the Baltimore Ravens, the owner and the city signed a stadium deal that increased revenues substantially enough to allow the team to pay big signing bonuses to key players. In 2001, the Ravens won the Super Bowl. Perhaps even more dramatically, the perennially losing Rams left Los Angeles (actually Anaheim) for St. Louis in 1995. An extraordinary stadium deal was the lure, and after four more losing seasons, the team won Super Bowl XXXIV in 2000.[95]

Because cities are desperate to get and keep a professional sports team, owners realize that public subsidies are theirs for the asking. From 1953 to 1986, 67 of the 94 stadiums used by professional sports teams were publicly owned.[96] Beginning in the early 1980s, the two most important new revenue sources for sports teams came from network broadcasting and local and state subsidies.[97] By the end of the 1980s, it had become a rare exception when an owner agreed to build a stadium with private dollars. Owners came to expect other subsidies as well, in the form of guaranteed attendance minimums, the construction of luxury boxes, and control of stadium merchandising.

As teams became more and more footloose, cities found themselves at a disadvantage. In an attempt to improve their poor bargaining positions, some cities built stadiums even when they did not have teams. In the 1980s, Indianapolis built a football stadium, and then set about persuading the owner of the Baltimore Colts, Robert Irsay, to move. After the Maryland legislature passed an eminent domain law to make it possible for Baltimore to seize the Colts for public use, Irsay packed up the team's equipment in moving vans and left in the middle of the night. But probably the most famous case is the $139 million domed stadium built by St. Petersburg, Florida, in 1988 in the hopes of attracting a major league baseball team. Called "heaven's waiting room," boosters justified the Florida Suncoast Dome as a way of changing the city's image of a conservative retirement community.[98] For years the stadium remained the site of tractor pulls and concerts. In the 1990s, St. Petersburg tried to lure several major league baseball teams, including the Seattle Mariners, the San Francisco Giants, and a National League expansion team. When Florida won a baseball team in 1991, it was awarded to Miami. In October 1993, an expansion team of the NFL was awarded to Jacksonville; St. Petersburg's stadium was built expressly for baseball and would not have been suitable for football. St. Louis, which also put in a bid for one of the NFL expansion

teams, lost out. St. Louis undertook the construction of a domed stadium anyway, many months before the negotiations that eventually brought the Los Angeles Rams to the city in 1995.

Stadiums require generous land, infrastructure, and direct public subsidies because almost all of them (but not usually the teams playing in them) lose money. Annual operating deficits are generally considerable; the New Orleans Superdome lost about $3 million a year during the 1980s, for example, compared to the annual $1 million loss for the Silverdome in Pontiac, Michigan. In its first year, the Florida Suncoast Dome lost $1.3 million, plus $7.7 million in debt payments.[99] Modern domed stadiums cost so much to build that they can rarely schedule enough events or charge enough for them to avoid operating deficits; the only one in the country without deficits in 2004 was the Metrodome in Minneapolis, which did not require a tax subsidy.[100] Toronto ended up paying $400 million for its domed stadium; St. Louis's domed stadium, completed in 1995, cost $301 million.[101] The costs have only escalated since. In September 2008, the Indianapolis Colts played their first football game in the Lucas Oil Stadium, built at the cost of $720 million. In the New York area, three teams were looking forward to playing in new stadiums. The New York Yankees opened their season in 2009 in a stadium built for $1.5 billion, while just a few miles away, the Jets and the Giants moved into one costing $1.6 billion.[102]

It is undoubtedly true, as civic boosters argue, that the most important benefits of a major sports franchise are intangible and therefore impossible to measure solely in economic terms. However, as teams became more mobile and owners asked for more, such arguments sometimes wear thin. In December 1996, the owners of the Seattle Mariners baseball team put the team up for sale, even though the city had earlier bought land and made plans to construct a new ballpark. Just a few months earlier, Seattle's football team, the Seahawks, had threatened to leave town, and it too demanded a new stadium. Together, the two stadiums were estimated to cost $760 million. A group called Citizens for More Important Things initiated a campaign opposing public subsidies behind this slogan: "Just say no to welfare for the wealthy."

From 2000 to 2006, public funds supplied 54 percent of the construction cost for new major league baseball stadiums and 55 percent of the costs for football stadiums.[103] These subsidies often provoked opposition, but there are other sources of dissatisfaction, too. Fans of the Mets, the Yankees, the Giants, and the Jets expressed outrage at the escalating price of tickets in the stadiums. At the three stadiums in New York, ticket prices in the new stadiums went up by two times or more. Season tickets for the best seats that had cost $1,000 each in the old Yankee stadium jumped to $2,500 when it opened in 2009.[104] In August 2008, the Giants announced that they would charge from $1,000 to $20,000 for personal seat licenses, which only entitled the holders to buy season tickets. "Here I am, buying a stadium for John Mara," a Giants ticket holder complained; "This is a greedy ploy with the only benefits going to them."[105]

St. Louis provides an example of the difficulties sometimes encountered by team owners who are seeking public funds. In 2000, the Cardinals baseball team launched an effort to persuade the state legislature and the city to build a new stadium to replace Busch Stadium, which had been constructed in 1965 with private funds (though public money was used to build an adjacent parking facility and to make public improvements). After going to the legislature three times and coming back empty handed, the Cardinals began an effort to piece together a package combining private funding and public subsidies from the city and other sources. Already the city's voters had passed a referendum requiring a vote on any public funding proposal of more than $1 million for stadiums. One day before the new law was to take effect, the Land Clearance and Redevelopment Authority, whose board members and chief administrator are appointed by the mayor of St. Louis, approved the elimination of a 5 percent tax that had always been assessed on the team's ticket sales. St. Louis County was also expected to commit $45 million and the state of Missouri $40 million in public infrastructure, such as highway and street improvements.[106]

In recent years, ticket prices have increased sharply to help pay for new stadiums, and as a consequence, professional sports attendance has become more stratified by income and class. For example, the new Cardinals stadium in St. Louis that opened in 2008 has twice the number of club seats as in the old Busch Stadium, and prices for them are twice as high. There are fewer luxury boxes, but they cost more. All other ticket prices went up as well. Virtually all new stadiums have incorporated a larger number of premium and luxury seats as a means of increasing revenues.[107]

Malls, Entertainment, and Lifestyle Complexes

Malls have become a weapon that cities use in the regional competition for recreational shopping and tourism. To ensure that they are in the game, cities typically have heavily subsidized the construction of downtown malls by

allocating Community Development Block Grant and Urban Development Action Grant funds, floated bonds to finance site acquisition and loans to developers, offered property tax abatements, created tax increment districts, built utilities tunnels, constructed sewer lines and water mains, rerouted and repaved streets; the list goes on. Civic leaders are eager to support mall development because it promises to bring a special form of "entertainment" retailing downtown. Boston's early success set the tone for such expectations.

On August 26, 1976, Boston's mayor, Kevin White, presided over opening-day ceremonies for Quincy Market in downtown Boston. The brainchild of developer James Rouse, who made a fortune developing suburban shopping malls, Quincy Market was housed in three 150-year-old market buildings that were renovated, at a cost of more than $40 million, into a collection of boutiques, gourmet food shops, and restaurants.[108] Few expected Quincy Market—located as it was in the center of a declining central city with inadequate parking and no big-ticket items to sell—to succeed. Indeed, six weeks before the opening day, the retail complex was less than 50 percent leased. To hide the empty stores, Rouse came up with the idea of leasing pushcarts to artists and craftspeople for $50 a day, plus a percentage of the sales.

By 11 o'clock in the morning on the opening day, only a modest crowd had gathered for the ceremonies. When the speeches were over Mayor White cut the ribbon, and developer Rouse and a company of kilted highland bagpipers led the crowd inside for a champagne reception. At lunchtime, the milling throng swelled as curious workers poured out of nearby office buildings, and by mid-afternoon, it was clear that opening day would be a huge success, with police estimating the crowd at 100,000.

People never stopped coming to Quincy Market. In its second year of operation, the market drew 12 million visitors—more than Disneyland that year. Newspapers reported the market's "instant acceptance" by the public, which delighted in the colorful sights, sounds, and smells of the food and imaginatively displayed merchandise and the festival air created by a liberal sprinkling of pushcarts, magicians, acrobats, and puppeteers. The banks that financed the project were originally skeptical; they calculated that Quincy Market would have to produce retail sales comparable to the most successful suburban shopping malls ($150 per square foot) to justify its unusually high development costs. Quincy Market shocked the experts by producing sales of $233 per square foot in its first year, with the pushcarts doing best of all. The opening of Quincy Market was hailed by the media as a sign of an urban renaissance in the making. It seemed to disprove the conventional wisdom that the downtowns of American cities were doomed to obsolescence and decline.

The first-generation downtown malls were important not only because they helped reverse the long-term decline of inner-city retailing but also because they provided a means of creating defended space in the midst of urban crime and decay. Malls built by the developers John Portman and James Rouse and their imitators became such common features of American downtowns that it was hard to recall how recently they had been constructed. The malls increasingly engulfed and centralized activities that were formerly spread through the urban community at large. Such complexes were easily criticized as "fortified cells of affluence,"[109] but there can be little doubt that as locations for tourism and entertainment, these spaces were extremely successful.

In the years after his Boston success, Rouse was invited to design festival malls for cities all across the country. What made Rouse's developments so distinctive and newsworthy was the artful combination of play and shopping. His formula was to create a carnival atmosphere, accomplished through a mixture of specialty shops, clothing stores, restaurants, and food stands, and with a changeable mix of musicians, jugglers, acrobats, and mimes to entertain shoppers. Rouse malls soon began to pop up all over the place: at the Gallery of Market Street East in Philadelphia, Grand Avenue in Milwaukee, Pike Street Market in Seattle, Horton Plaza in San Diego, Trolley Square in Salt Lake City, Union Station in St. Louis, Harborplace in Baltimore, South Street Seaport in New York, and on and on. Noticing the success of the formula, imitators began to appear, too. By the turn of the century, virtually every major city in the country had a Rouse mall or the equivalent.

Enclosed malls began opening in cities large and small, some modeled on Rouse's formula, some not. Many of them started modestly enough, but over time they accreted block by block, reaching over streets with a system of tubes and skyways. In Minneapolis, a sprawling mall complex grew almost invisibly by eating away the interiors of the downtown buildings, but leaving their historic facades intact. In Kansas City, the Crown Center inexorably spread from its beginnings as a luxury hotel; by the mid-1990s, it occupied several city blocks. In Montreal and Dallas, sprawling underground malls were connected through a network of tunnels. The mall's assault on Atlanta was much more direct; the huge Peachtree complex was built on the rubble of the historic downtown.

Because they are an aspect of leisure and tourism, the kinds of malls built in downtown areas do not necessarily

compete head-to-head with suburban malls. Rather, they rely on a style of shopping that combines entertainment with consumption. The malls' mix of gift and souvenir shops, specialty food stores, bars, and franchised fast-food restaurants sometimes calls to mind tourist villages such as Jackson Hole, Wyoming, and Estes Park, Colorado. In the West Edmonton Mall in Alberta, Canada, for example, leisure facilities take up about 10 percent of the total floor space, but their presence is essential to an ambience of leisure that permeates the entire mall.[110] The West Edmonton Mall copies Disney World in the theming of particular areas, such as an imitation Parisian street, Bourbon Street in New Orleans, Hollywood, and Polynesia. The combination of shopping and leisure in this way nurtures a "shop till you drop" consumer culture.

In these environments, consumers are prompted to act as if they are, in effect, moving in a dreamscape far removed from the outside world. The similarity between Disney theme parks and these mall environments is not accidental. Thirteen years before James Rouse opened Quincy Market in Boston, he asserted that Walt Disney was the most influential urban planner ever. And so he was. Malls and entertainment complexes establish the atmosphere and the context that potentially make every city, whatever its past function or present condition, a playground.

Sprawling indoor complexes connected by pedestrian bridges and tubes have proliferated in American cities.[111] For example, such complexes have been built in Atlanta and Detroit, where large numbers of downtown office workers commute to the sealed realms of the Peachtree Center in Atlanta and the Renaissance Center in Detroit. In both of these structures, workers drive into parking garages and then enter a city-within-a-city where they can work, shop, eat lunch, and find a variety of diversions after work. They never have to set foot in the rest of the city or deal with its problems.

Architect John Portman pioneered the first "bubble city" when he opened the Peachtree Plaza in downtown Atlanta in 1967. The Peachtree complex was built outward from the cylindrical aluminum towers that distinguished Portman's first atrium hotel, which opened in downtown Atlanta in 1967. It was an instant hit with architectural critics, the media, and the public. The hotel lobbies and vaulted atriums that made up the complex were dazzling, filled with flowing water and pools, ascending ranks of balconies vanishing toward a skylight, corridors rigged with lights and mirrors, and glass elevators rising on the outside of the towers. Nobody had seen anything quite like it.

By the late 1980s, Peachtree Plaza had swallowed up Atlanta's historic downtown. Sixteen buildings clustered around the aluminum cylinder which housed the Marriott Hotel. Shops, hotels and their lobbies, offices, food courts, and atriums were connected by a maze of escalators, skytubes, and arcades that isolated inhabitants from the streets below. The downtown streets of Atlanta were left almost deserted, especially at night. Pedestrians were able to gain access to the complex through a few grand porticos, usually the entrance to a hotel lobby. The effect was to create a separate city-within-a-city strictly segregated from the public streets on the outside.

Portman took his show on the road and built a series of stunning atriums, towers, and bubble environments. Although none of them approached the scale of Atlanta's, they were designed to provoke a sense of wonder and grandeur—the Renaissance Center in Detroit, the Hyatt at Embarcadero Center in San Francisco, the Bonaventure Hotel in Los Angeles, and the Marriott Marquis in Times Square, New York City. Unlike Atlanta, however, these indoor playgrounds do not swallow up an entire downtown, although they do enclose a large amount of space and house several related activities. Imitations of Portman's creations quickly spread. There were several advantages to building indoors: the developer is able to create a total experience of sights, sounds, and movement, and also guarantee almost complete security. In this way a space attractive to affluent people could rise even in the midst of a seemingly hostile environment, thus providing even the most dilapidated cities with a strategy for revitalizing the urban core.

New York City's Times Square and San Francisco's Yerba Buena Center both anchor urban entertainment centers, but such complexes have sprung up elsewhere as well, usually in historic areas and often in connection with revitalized waterfronts. Over time, a remarkably eclectic variety of activities have been brought together into a single venue. Contained within these districts are restaurants, coffeehouses, sports bars, jazz clubs, dinner theaters, and arcades, plus an array of corporate retail tenants offering an assortment of clothes, shoes, electronic goods, jewelry, and an endless selection of other items.[112]

The degree to which space is segmented in cities varies significantly. In general, the activities in spaces fortified by walls and bubbles have spilled out into public streets and neighborhoods, a process that has brought a sense of street life and excitement that had long been absent. In recent years, Boston, San Francisco, Seattle, Portland

(Oregon), and Chicago—in fact, most cities—have opened up and become more accessible to visitors and local residents. Cities have invested heavily in amenities such as street plantings, pedestrian malls, parks, and riverfronts. Residents and visitors fill busy streets that only a couple of decades ago were quiet and forbidding. Tourists visit enclaves such as South Street Seaport in New York and Ghirardelli Square in San Francisco, but they also stream into nearby streets and neighborhoods. This trend will continue as long as crime rates remain relatively low.

Casino Gaming

Until the 1980s, few casinos existed in any major city in the world, but in the last two decades of the century they spread like wildfire. Since the mid-1980s, gaming casinos have become established as a component of tourism promotion in a great number of places—notably, in Adelaide, Perth, Sydney, and Brisbane; in Montreal, Winnipeg, and Windsor; in Christchurch and Auckland; in Amsterdam and Rotterdam; and in several cities on the Mediterranean, such as Athens, Istanbul, and Cairo.[113] In the United States, casinos are often a major revenue source for Indian tribes, but few cities have joined in. There are many reasons why gaming has run into opposition, but religious opposition and ties to organized crime lead the list.

When Atlantic City, New Jersey, opened its first casinos in 1978, it became the first U.S. city to break Nevada's monopoly over gaming. In 1992, New Orleans did the same, but already it was clear that gaming was likely to pop up in other places, at least in some form. In 1990, Iowa became the first state to approve riverboat gaming. After the opening of the first boat in Iowa in April 1991, six riverboats generated $12 million in state income taxes within eight months, prompting neighboring states to begin steps to join the competition.[114] In 1992, riverboats began operating in Illinois, two near St. Louis (one in East St. Louis, Illinois, directly across from St. Louis and the Gateway Arch). Mississippi began operating boats in 1993. Missouri, Louisiana, and Indiana all approved riverboat gaming soon after, with operations beginning in 1994.[115] Within a year, Kansas City and St. Louis, Missouri, joined in.

Since then, however, the spread of casino gaming in U.S. cities has nearly come to a full stop. This may seem surprising because of the obvious fact that gaming can make a significant contribution to the local economy, and because at the state level and in non-urban areas it has established a strong presence. As a means of promoting economic development on Indian reservations, in 1988 Congress passed the Indian Gaming Regulatory Act. The legislation permitted tribes to negotiate with states to run gaming operations and required the states to negotiate with the tribes that wanted to open casinos. In the years since, casinos have been opened on Indian lands in 22 states. In addition, all through the 1970s and 1980s, states adopted lotteries either through legislative action or referenda; by 1994, some 38 states ran lotteries. Following the spread of state lotteries, gambling became legitimated as a source of tax revenues. By 1996, 26 states allowed or had approved casino gaming in some form, but most gaming occurred on Indian-owned land.[116]

There are three major reasons why casino gaming has continued to encounter resistance. A national movement organized by the religious right to oppose gaming has enjoyed success because it taps into a widespread concern about the social and moral effects of gambling. Although most Americans have come to accept gambling as a legitimate activity over the past 30 years,[117] a Harris Poll conducted in 1992 still found that 51 percent of the public opposed casino gaming in their own state, and 56 percent opposed it in their own communities.[118] The media finds gambling to be a convenient topic for "controversy" and "analysis." For example, in its April 1, 1996, issue, *Time* magazine carried a feature story that documented a national backlash against gaming. Proposals to allow gaming typically are accompanied by controversy. In 1992, Colorado voters soundly defeated a constitutional amendment that would have allowed gaming to spread past the three small mountain communities named in an earlier referendum. In Missouri, three contentious voter referendums were required before the industry, with strong support from public officials, was able to secure approval for full casino operations. Even in this case, voters were eventually persuaded, in part, because of the fiction that the casinos were different because they operated on riverboats, which called forth nostalgic images of a time long past.

The gaming industry claims that gaming will constitute a magic elixir for urban economies. Surprisingly, even this appeal has fallen short. In 1996, ten state legislatures refused to pass laws to legalize casinos or slot machines,[119] and Congress passed legislation to initiate a two-year study of gaming. When completed in 1999, the study urged states and localities to be cautious about pursuing gaming. Local officials appear to have taken this advice, but the idea that gaming may help solve budgetary problems is hard to resist. In 2002, the mayor of Chicago, Richard M. Daley, mentioned that Chicago might seek approval for a casino license. This trial balloon

was quickly shot down. However, in an attempt to solve the state and local fiscal problems created by the Great Recession, in May 2009 the Illinois legislature approved an expansion of video poker games throughout the state. Soon thereafter, and amidst much controversy, the Rivers Casino opened in July 2011, in Des Plains, which is strategically located next door to Chicago and in close proximity to the Rosemont convention center and O'Hare airport. Since its opening, Rivers Casino has proven to be beneficial to the Illinois economy, halting a statewide slide in profits. A report by the Commission on Government Forecasting and Accountability found that the Rivers Casino helped boost adjusted gross receipts by more than 20 percent in the first three quarters of the fiscal year, and has contributed to a more than 22 percent increase in casino goers throughout Illinois as a whole.

The Casino's success, however, has come with a price—while the number of casino goers statewide has increased, many of the riverboats near the Chicago metropolitan area have experienced a steep decline in profits. The Grand Victoria Casino in Elgin, for example, witnessed a total revenue drop of 21.4 percent in one fiscal year. Nevertheless, the relative success of Rivers has spurred an otherwise dormant industry.[120] In May 2012, the Illinois House passed a major expansion of gambling that was expected to put five new casinos in Chicago, Rockford, Danville, Lake County, and the south suburbs of Cook County, as well as placing slot machines at the state's racetracks, which have suffered as a result of riverboat expansion. As in Illinois, other states have also taken steps, though significantly smaller, to expand gaming, and it is only a matter of time before casinos break through the wall of resistance that has slowed their growth.

The Politics of Tourism

Critics often note that many of the facilities of tourism and entertainment do not pay for themselves. Public officials and civic boosters do not, on the whole, much care if they do or do not. This apparently cavalier attitude toward taxpayers' money can be explained by noting the general irrelevance—to city officials and civic boosters—of cost-benefit analyses of tourism infrastructure. The attitudes of public officials toward development projects have "little [to] do with the … profitability … of a project" and far more to do with the vision officials share about the overall direction a city is taking.[121] The intense interurban competition dictates that cities must compete; to do so they must be as generous as their competitors in providing subsidies, and they must try to adopt every new variation that comes along. The competition imposes a logic of its own that is hard to resist.

Public officials may be proceeding on the basis of blind faith, but they feel they have little choice. It is true that abject, even humiliating failure is possible, as the attempt by Flint, Michigan, to become a tourist city makes clear. In the 1970s, after the closure of its General Motors plant devastated the local economy, public officials in Flint launched an effort at regeneration behind the motto "Our New Spark Will Surprise You." The city committed $13 million in subsidies to the construction of a luxury hotel, the Hyatt Regency. Within a year it closed its doors. Approximately $100 million in public money was used to build AutoWorld, a museum that contained, among other items, the "world's largest car engine" and a scale model that portrayed downtown Flint in its more prosperous days. AutoWorld closed within six months. Still more public subsidies were committed to the construction of the doomed Water Street Pavilion, a theme park/festival market built by the renowned mall developer James Rouse. But few, if any, mayors would be deterred by Flint's fiasco, which was wryly portrayed in Michael Moore's popular movie *Roger & Me*.[122]

Virtually all cities of consequential size must take steps to promote tourism, recreation, and culture. Now that the basic infrastructure is in place in so many cities, public support for the arts and culture has become common. Every one of the nation's 50 largest cities allocates public dollars to support the arts, and a lot of small cities do so as well. From the big cities (New York, with the Kennedy and Lincoln Centers and, more recently, the Ford Center on 42nd Street) to villages (Riverhead, a hamlet outside New York City on Long Island, which is building an arts and historic district), from the downtowns in need of a boost (Newark, with its $180 million New Jersey Center, opened in October 1997) to the already prosperous (San Francisco, with a newly renovated opera house and several other performance halls), the development of local culture has become a leading formula for urban revival.[123] The text for a major exhibit in 1998 sponsored by the National Building Museum in Washington, DC, noted that culture has replaced both the urban renewal bulldozer and the preservation movements that followed in its destructive wake as the main focus for downtown revitalization.

Collectively, cities of all sizes support an almost unimaginable variety of events that carry the signature of local culture and community. Jazz and blues festivals, strawberry and garlic festivals, jumping frogs and gold rush days, rodeos and fireworks—such activities help define and sometimes knit together local communities.[124] These

activities usually take place in or near the new tourism/entertainment infrastructure (in smaller towns, this may mean at local parks, bandstands, waterfronts, or baseball diamonds). Every city must go through debates about how much of the public purse should be devoted to these activities, but few can afford to forgo public support altogether.

Old and New Downtowns

A host of writers have mourned the disappearance of the historic landscapes that once gave cities their identities and distinctive character. In 1961, when Jane Jacobs published her classic work *The Death and Life of Great American Cities,* she instantly became the best-known and most influential voice for preserving the everyday life of city streets. Writing in defense of her beloved Greenwich Village in the Lower East Side of New York City, Jacobs attacked the master planning and large-scale development characteristic of the urban renewal era. Jacobs contrasted the virtues of small blocks, crowded streets, mixed uses, and what she called the "heart-of-the-day ballet" of street life with the "monotony and repetition of sameness" of planned environments.[125]

To Jacobs, a "marvelous order" was hidden beneath the surface of disorder on busy city streets, and both were necessary "for maintaining the safety of the streets and the freedom of the city."[126] Through their constant presence, people running the businesses fronting the sidewalk—storekeepers, barkeepers, shoe repairers, the owners of cleaners and barbershops, and their regular customers as well—kept their eyes on the comings and goings just outside the window. In this way the sidewalk ballet made room for everyone, but at the same time public safety and order was attended to, without anyone planning it or even thinking about it. Here is a description of the scene in front of her home on Hudson Street:

> When I get home from work, the ballet is reaching its crescendo. This is the time of roller skates and stilts and tricycles, and games in the lee of the stoop with bottle tops and plastic cowboys; this is the time of bundles and packages, zigzagging from the drug store to the fruit stand back over to the butchers.[127]

More recently, Douglas Rae has decried the "end of urbanism," which he defines as the "patterns of private conduct and decision-making that by and large make the successful governance of cities possible."[128] Based on his study of New Haven, Connecticut, Rae concluded that in the past the life of the city was focused on downtown streets and the densely settled residential areas surrounding them. Echoing Jacobs, Rae writes of the "dense fabric of tiny stores" that were "only partly in the business of selling groceries: they were also governing sidewalks and the people who walked them."[129] This "sidewalk republic" made it unnecessary for formal government to intervene in people's lives because informal social networks were adequate for preserving public order and supplying people's basic needs.

What brought about the demise of urbanism? In Rae's account, the main suspects include the automobile, suburbanization and the policies that encouraged it, the decline of industrial employment, racial strife, and globalization, which replaced locally oriented businesses with national corporations.[130] Taken together, these factors (and others) led to the decentering of residential and economic activities. Federally sponsored urban renewal and highway projects, though intended to save the core, only made things worse through the wholesale clearance of historic buildings, business streets, and residential areas.

The recent revival of downtowns and the gentrification of nearby neighborhoods should not be taken as evidence that the world that Jacobs, Rae, and others[131] write about is being resurrected. It is just as well to accept that the old downtowns have died for good, and that they have been replaced by something else. Metropolitan regions continue to flow inexorably outward. Other nodes of activity—suburban business districts, malls, corporate campuses, edge cities—continue to grow. The downtowns of central cities will never be the singular focus of activity for their metropolitan regions that they were in the past.

In important respects, the new downtowns are also less diverse than those of the past. In central business districts, the dense collection of small shops has long been replaced by big buildings and, in the larger cities, by skyscrapers. Chain stores and outlets, such as Starbucks, the Gap, and Victoria's Secret, are outlets for national and international corporations. Cineplexes have replaced small theaters; chain supermarkets have replaced many of the specialized shops that separately sold meat, vegetables, candy, and ice cream.[132] Many business establishments, such as large appliance stores and automobile dealerships, have moved out of the downtowns entirely. Shopkeepers no longer keep their eyes on the street, if they can see it at all, and corporate minimum-wage employees do not have an interest in doing so.

Residential use is what drives the revival of downtowns today. In Manhattan, old commercial space has been in demand because the buildings are being turned into condominiums. In Philadelphia, office space has stayed about the same since 1990, but new residential towers poked into the skyline all over the downtown.[133] In St. Louis, many old warehouse and office buildings might have been torn down if not for condominium conversions; indeed, a downtown retail mall built as recently as the 1980s has been converted into a luxury condominium complex. By building inside the shells of historic structures, developers are able to give the new downtowns an ambiance of authenticity. According to the urban scholar Richard Florida, it mimics the kind of environment that young professionals prefer—places with "real buildings, real people, real history."[134] In fact, many gentrifiers seem to dream up versions of Jane Jacobs' West Village as the ideal place to live. Ironically, their arrival, over time, can contribute to the creeping homogenization of such neighborhoods.

However, it is important to recognize that the gentrification of downtown is quite different from the areas that have always been residential. Most of the residents who live downtown are exceptionally affluent, especially in global cities. In other parts of the city, the gentrified neighborhoods occupy different steps on the gentrification ladder, from those made up of new condominium towers or old, architecturally significant factory buildings and townhouses that have been gutted and rehabbed, filled with affluent people to those still on the edge, populated by a mélange of artists, musicians, and students, as well as affluent professionals.[135] This mix describes Wicker Park in Chicago, but does not apply to the Magnificent Mile on Michigan Avenue, with its rows of high-end chain stores and nearby condominium towers. Any generalizations about the character of gentrified areas must, to some degree, gloss over the fantastic differences in the urban environment from one neighborhood to the next, or even from block to block.

Are the new downtowns and the gentrified neighborhoods merely impoverished versions of what cities once had? It is hard to say. A century ago, the residential areas of New Haven that Rae studied contained people of all social classes, incomes, and ethnic backgrounds.[136] Similarly, diverse assortments of people live in some of the trendiest of today's inner-city neighborhoods. Superficially, these may bear a striking resemblance to another time, except that their historic buildings are occupied by restaurants, bars and taverns, music venues, art galleries, and shops, plus some sprinkling of chain stores. But the people walking the streets and the businesses they patronize are, in fact, completely unique to the twenty-first century. Those who live in such environments can put aside any anxiety about whether the city streets they walk on are authentic. They surely are, but that is because whatever exists in the present is fully as authentic as the lost world that many people pine for.

Endnotes

1 President's Commission for a National Agenda for the Eighties, *A National Agenda for the Eighties* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1980), pp. 66-67.
2 Ibid., p. 4.
3 *New York Times* News Service, "City Neighborhoods Are Undergoing a Renaissance as Crime Rates Drop," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (May 29, 2000), pp. A-12.
4 Richard Florida, "How the Crash Will Reshape America," *The Atlantic* (March 2009), p. 52.
5 Rebecca R. Sohmer and Robert E. Lang, *Downtown Rebound* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press and Fannie Mae Foundation, 2001), pp. 1-4.
6 Patrick A. Simmons and Robert E. Lang, "The Urban Turnaround," in *Redefining Urban and Suburban America: Evidence from Census 2000,* ed. Bruce Katz and Robert E. Lang (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 2004), pp. 56-58.
7 Mark Abrahamson, *Global Cities* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2004).
8 "U.S. Census Bureau QuickFacts: Maryland," *U.S. Census Bureau.*
9 Robert M. Fogelson, *Downtown: Its Rise and Fall, 1880–1950* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001). My discussion of the history of downtown borrows heavily from Fogelson's excellent book, which should become a standard reference work on every urban scholar's bookshelf.
10 Ibid., pp. 186-187.
11 Ibid., pp. 197-198.
12 Ibid., pp. 183-185.
13 Alison Isenberg, *Downtown America: A History of the Place and the People Who Made It* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2004), pp. 5-6.
14 Ibid., pp. 218-219.
15 Isenberg, *Downtown America,* p. 219.
16 Ibid., p. 65.
17 Ibid., p. 69.
18 Kenneth T. Jackson, *Crabgrass Frontier: The Suburbanization of the United States* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1985), p. 261.
19 Barry Bluestone and Bennett Harrison, *The Deindustrialization of America* (New York: Basic Books, 1982).
20 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1992,* 112th ed. (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1992), p. 397.

21 Robert B. Reich, *The Work of Nations* (New York: Random House, Vintage Books, 1991), p. 86.
22 Jon C. Teaford, *The Rough Road to Renaissance: Urban Revitalization in America, 1940–1985* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1990), p. 307.
23 Bernard J. Frieden and Lynn B. Sagalyn, *Downtown, Inc.: How America Builds Cities* (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1989), p. 43.
24 Saskia Sassen, *Cities in a World Economy* (Thousand Oaks, CA: Pine Forge Press, 2001).
25 The concept of the global city is somewhat imprecise. Some scholars would question whether Chicago, Miami, and Los Angeles are global cities in the same sense as New York, London, and Tokyo, which clearly contain a much denser concentration of financial and media firms and corporations with true international reach. The two books to consult regarding this debate are Saskia Sassen, *The Global City: New York, London, Tokyo,* 2nd ed. (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2001), and Janet L. Abu-Lughod, *New York, Los Angeles, Chicago: America's Global Cities* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1999).
26 Norman J. Glickman, "Cities and the International Division of Labor," in *The Capitalist City,* ed. Michael Peter Smith and Joe R. Feagin (Cambridge, MA: Basil Blackwell, 1987), pp. 66-86.
27 Julie Satow: "Why the Doorman Is Lonely: New York City's Emptiest Co-ops and Condos," *New York Times* (January 9, 2015).
28 Ibid.
29 Ibid.
30 Louise Story and Stephanie Saul, "Towers of Secrecy: Stream of Foreign Wealth Flows to Elite New York Real Estate," *New York Times* (February 7, 2015).
31 Ibid.
32 Ibid.
33 Stephanie Saul, "New Disclosure Rules for Shell Companies in New York Luxury Real Estate Sales," *New York Times* (July 20, 2015).
34 Ibid.
35 Ute Lehrer, "'If you lived here …': Lifestyle, Marketing, and the Development of Condominiums in Toronto," *Scapegoat: Architecture/Landscape/Political Economy,* no. 3 (2009): 23.
36 Quoted in Justin Wm. Moyer, "NYC bans 'poor doors'—separate entrances for low-income tenants," *Washington Post* (June 30, 2015).
37 Stephen Colbert, "The Word." *The Colbert Report,* aired July 28, 2014.
38 Richard Florida, *The Rise of the Creative Class and How It's Transforming Work, Leisure, Community and Everyday Life* (New York: Basic Books, 2002), p. 225.
39 Abrahamson, *Global Cities,* p. 33.
40 Margaret Kohn, "What Is Wrong with Gentrification?" *Urban Research and Practice* 6, no. 3 (2013): 309.
41 Florida, *The Rise of the Creative Class,* p. 224.
42 Ibid., p. 228.
43 Terry Nichols Clark, Richard Lloyd, Kenneth K. Wong, and Pushpam Jain, "Amenities Drive Urban Growth," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 24, no. 5 (1993): 493-516.
44 World Travel and Tourism Council (WTTC) website, www.wttc.org
45 Ibid.
46 Norman Fainstein, Susan S. Fainstein, Richard Child Hill, Dennis Judd, and Michael Peter Smith, *Restructuring the City: The Political Economy of Urban Redevelopment* (New York: Longman, 1983).
47 Clark, Lloyd, Wong, and Jain, "Amenities Drive Urban Growth," p. 504.
48 Ibid, p. 505.
49 Wangui Maina, "Chicago Visitor Numbers Down for 2010," *Chicago Tribune* (June 20, 2011).
50 Bill Kissinger and Julian Crews, "Chicago Tourism Hits Record with More than 50M Visitors in 2014." WGN website (February 5, 2015). wgntv.com/2015/02/05/chicago-launches-new-tourism-campaign-amid-record-visitor-numbers/
51 Choose Chicago Research and Analysis website. "2014 Chicago Visitation." www.choosechicago.com/includes/content/docs/media/Chicago-Visitation-Annual-2014-6.20.15-.pdf
52 Christine Boyer, "Cities for Sale: Merchandising History at South Street Seaport," in *Variations on a Theme Park: The New American City and the End of Public Space,* ed. Michael Sorkin (New York: Hill and Wang, 1992), pp. 189-190.
53 G. J. Ashworth and J. E. Tunbridge, *The Tourist-Historic City* (London and New York: Belhaven Press, 1990), p. 153.
54 For an expanded discussion, see Dennis R. Judd, "Visitors and the Spatial Ecology of the City," in *Cities and Visitors,* ed. Lily M. Hoffman, Susan S. Fainstein, and Dennis R. Judd (New York: Blackwell, 2003), pp. 22-38.
55 John Hannigan, *Fantasy City: Pleasure and Profit in the Postmodern Metropolis* (New York: Routledge, 1998).
56 Richard Lloyd, *Neo-Bohemia: Art and Commerce in the Postindustrial City* (New York: Routledge, 2006), p. 126; also "Neo-Bohemia: Art and Neighborhood Redevelopment in Chicago," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 24, no. 5 (2002): 517-532.
57 See also Dennis R. Judd, "Constructing the Tourist Bubble," in *The Tourist City,* ed. Dennis R. Judd and Susan S. Fainstein (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1999).
58 Ronn Koontz, interviewed in "1 Block, 135 Years," *New York Magazine* (November 16–22, 2015), p. 51.
59 Richy Rosario, "Airbnb vs Affordable Housing: Is Airbnb Friend or Foe to Cash-Strapped New Yorkers?" *The Observer* (March 28, 2014).
60 Frank Gormlie, "Loss of Community Is Greatest Threat From Airbnb and Other Short-Term Vacation Rentals," *San Diego Free Press* (September 3, 2015), accessed online.
61 Ibid.
62 Streitfeld, David, "Airbnb Listings Mostly Illegal, New York State Contends," *New York Times* (October 15, 2014).
63 Ibid.
64 Ibid.
65 Kenneth Rosen, "Short-Term Rentals and the Housing Market," *Urbanland: The Magazine of the Urban Land Institute* (November 22, 2013). Accessed online.
66 Ibid.
67 David H. Laslo, "Proliferating Convention Centers: The Political Economy of Regenerating Cities and the St. Louis Convention Center Expansion" (Ph.D. dissertation, University of Missouri–St. Louis, May 1999).
68 All data from Heywood Sanders, *Space Available: The Realities of Convention Centers as Economic Development Strategy* (Washington, DC:

Brookings Institution Press, January 2005), p. 1.

69 *Encyclopedia of Associations,* 38th ed., *National Organizations of the United States,* vols 1–3 (New York: Author, 2002).

70 George G. Fenich, "The Dollars and Sense of Convention Centers" (Ph.D. dissertation, Rutgers University, 1992), p. 34.

71 Laslo, "Proliferating Convention Centers," p. 67.

72 *Tradeshow Week Data Book, 1998* (New York: Bill Communications, 1998), p. 6.

73 "State of the Industry 1993," *Successful Meetings* (July 1993): 32-33.

74 *Convene Magazine* website, www.pcma.org/convene

75 Melissa Preddy, "Convention Centers Expect Traffic Gains," *The Center for Michigan* (June 29, 2011).

76 Associated Press, "Las Vegas Still the King of Convention Cities" (April 26, 2006), www.msnbc.msn.com/id/12498996

77 Joe Pollack, "Visitors Fly under Media Radar," *St. Louis Journalism Review* (June 2003): 5.

78 Sanders, *Space Available,* p. 25.

79 Ibid., p. 22.

80 Robyne S. Turner and Mark S. Rosentraub, "Tourism, Sports and the Centrality of Cities," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 24, no. 5 (2003): 489.

81 Charles Santo, "The Economic Impact of Sports Stadiums: Recasting the Analysis in Context," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 27, no. 2 (2005): 177.

82 Ibid., pp. 177-191. Some leading studies are Robert A. Baade, "Professional Sports as Catalysts for Metropolitan Economic Development," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 18 (1996): 1-17; Mark Rosentraub, David Swindell, M. Przybylski, and D. R. Mullins, "Sports and Downtown Development Strategy: If You Build It, Will Jobs Come?" *Journal of Urban Affairs* 16 (1994): 211-239; John Zipp, "The Economic Impact of the Baseball Strike of 1994," *Urban Affairs Review* 32, no. 2 (November 1996): 157-185; Dan Coates and B. Humphries, "The Growth Effects of Sports Franchises, Stadia, and Arenas," *Journal of Policy Analysis and Management* 18, no. 4 (1999): 601-624; Robert Noll and A. Zimbalist, eds., *Sports, Jobs, and Taxes: The Economic Impact of Sports Teams and Stadiums* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1997); and Phillip A. Miller, "The Economic Impact of Sports Stadium Construction: The Case of the Construction Industry in St. Louis, MO," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 24, no. 2 (2002): 159-173. Some smaller teams have been able to turn minor league teams into profitable investments for the public by resorting to public ownership—see Joseph W. Meder and J. Wesley Leckrone, "Hardball: Local Government's Foray into Sports Franchise Ownership," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 24, no. 3 (2002): 353-368. This option is not open with the major sports because the sports cartels are able to exclude all teams that do not meet their regulations, which include private ownership.

83 Z. Austrian and Mark S. Rosentraub, "Cleveland's Gateway to the Future," in Noll and Zimbalist, *Sports, Jobs, and Taxes,* pp. 355-384.

84 "Forbes: Mets' Value Drops 13 Percent; Yankees Top List," *CBS New York* (March 24, 2011).

85 Kurt Badenhausen, Cecily Fluke, Lesley Kump, and Michael K. Ozanian, "Double Play," *Forbes* (April 15, 2002), www.forbes.com

86 Michael Ozanian, "Is Baseball Really Broke?" *Forbes* (April 3, 2002), www.forbes.com

87 Infoplease.com; keywords Sports—Business/Ballparks/Arenas. Comparisons among the professional sports are difficult to make. The National Football League has a fully nationalized media arrangement, with teams sharing in revenues (which has promoted equity among the teams). By contrast, major league baseball teams sign their own contracts with mostly local or regional media outlets, with limited revenue sharing among the teams. Thus, in 2002, major league baseball's four-year media contract was estimated at almost $1.8 million, but this figure is a tiny proportion of all media revenues collected by the individual teams.

88 For a closely textured and entertaining account of the battle between O'Malley and Moses, see Michael Shapiro, *The Last Good Season: Brooklyn, The Dodgers, and Their Final Pennant Race Together* (New York: Doubleday, 2003).

89 Neil J. Sullivan, *The Dodgers Move West* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1987).

90 Arthur T. Johnson, "The Sports Franchise Relocation Issue and Public Policy Responses," in *Government and Sport: The Public Policy Issues,* ed. Arthur T. Johnson and James H. Frey (Totowa, NJ: Rowman and Allanheld, 1985), p. 232.

91 Arthur T. Johnson, "Economic and Policy Implications of Hosting Sports Franchises: Some Lessons from Baltimore," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 21, no. 3 (March 1986): 411.

92 Tim Chapin, "Beyond the Entrepreneurial City: Municipal Capitalism in San Diego," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 24, no. 5 (1993): 567-568.

93 F. Jossi, "Take Me Out to the Ballgame," *Planning* 64, no. 5 (1998): 4-9.

94 "MTS Centre Makeover: Spiffy New Scoreboard; New 'Loge' Seating Unveiled," *Winnipeg Sun* (September 16, 2015).

95 Jacob Luft, "Relocation Celebrations: NFL, NHL Franchises Find Success in New Cities," CNNSI.com-Statitudes (January 26, 2001); *CNNSI.com-Statitudes*: "NFL, NHL Teams Benefit from Moving On."

96 Robert A. Baade and Robert E. Dye, "Sports Stadiums and Area Development: A Critical Review," *Economic Development Quarterly* 2 (1988): 265-275; Robert A. Baade, "Professional Sports and Economic Development," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 18, no. 1 (1996): 1-18.

97 Charles C. Eichner, *Playing the Field: Why Sports Teams Move and Cities Fight to Keep Them* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1993), pp. 12-13.

98 Ronald Smothers, "No Hits, No Runs, One Error: The Dome," *New York Times* (June 15, 1991).

99 Eichner, *Playing the Field,* p. 67.

100 See the websites www.gophersports.com and www.msfc.com

101 Donald Phares and Mark S. Rosentraub, "Reviving the Glory of Days Past: St. Louis's Blitz to Save Its Image, Identity, and Teams," in *Major League Losers: The Real Cost of Sports and Who's Paying for It,* ed. Mark S. Rosentraub (New York: Basic Books, 1997).

102 Richard Sandomir, "New Stadiums: Prices, and Outrage, Escalate," *New York Times* (August 28, 2008), www.nytimes.com/2008/08/26/sports/26tickets.html

103 Josh Goodman, "Skybox Skeptics," *Governing* 19, no. 6 (March 2006): 41-42.

104 Sandomir, "New Stadiums."

105 Ibid.

106 Heather Cole, "Cardinals, City Sing Stadium Deal," *St. Louis Business Journal* (November 8, 2002), p. 1.

107 Ibid., p. C7.

108 This account of Quincy Market is based on Frieden and Sagalyn, *Downtown, Inc.,* pp. 1-7, 175.

109 Mike Davis, "Fortress Los Angeles: The Militarization of Urban Space," in *Variations on a Theme Park,* ed. Michael Sorkin (New York: Noonday Press, 1992), p. 155.

110 Myriam Jansen-Verbeke, "Leisure + Shopping = Tourism Product Mix," in *Marketing Tourism Places,* ed. Gregory Ashworth and Brian Goodall (London and New York: Routledge, 1990), p. 132.

111 Sharon Zukin, *Landscapes of Power: From Detroit to Disney World* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1991).

112 The Urban Land Institute, *Developing Urban Entertainment Centers* (Washington, DC: Urban Land Institute, 1998).
113 William R. Eadington, "The Emergence of Casino Gaming as a Major Factor in Tourism Markets: Policy Issues and Considerations," in *Change in Tourism: People, Places, Processes,* ed. Richard Butler and Douglas Pearce (London and New York: Routledge, 1995), pp. 159-186.
114 Fred Faust, "It Wasn't in the Cards," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (April 10, 1994), pp. 1-5E.
115 *Company Analysis* (New York: Donaldson, Lufkin and Jenrette Securities Corporation, June 23, 1993), p. 12.
116 Eadington, "The Emergence of Casino Gaming," p. 4.
117 *Company Analysis,* p. 6.
118 Robert Goodman, *Legalized Gambling as a Strategy for Economic Development* (Northampton, MA: United States Gambling Study), p. 34.
119 Ellen Perlman, "The Gambling Glut," *Governing: The Magazine of States and Localities* 9, no. 8 (May 1996): 49-56.
120 "New Des Plaines Casino Helps Halt Dip in State Gambling Profits," *Associated Press* (May 5, 2012).
121 Michael A. Pagano and Ann Bowman, *Cityscapes and Capital: The Politics of Urban Development* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1995), p. 74.
122 Michael Moore, *Roger and Me,* A Dog Eat Dog Films Production (Warner Bros. Pictures, 1989).
123 Bruce Weber, "Cities Are Fostering the Arts as a Way to Save Downtown," *New York Times* (November 18, 1997), p. A1.
124 Dennis R. Judd, William Winter, William Barnes, and Emily Stern, *Tourism and Entertainment as a Local Economic Development Strategy: The Report of a NLC Survey* (Washington, DC: National League of Cities: A Research Report, 2000), p. 8.
125 Jane Jacobs, *The Death and Life of Great American Cities* (New York: Vintage, 1961), pp. 51, 223.
126 Ibid., p. 50.
127 Ibid., p. 52.
128 Douglas Rae, *City: Urbanism and Its End* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2003), p. xiii.
129 Ibid.
130 Ibid., p. xiv.
131 Two other excellent books dealing with these themes are Ray Suarez, *The Old Neighborhood: What We Lost in the Great Suburban Migration: 1966–1999* (New York: Free Press, 1999); and Shapiro, *The Last Good Season.*
132 For details on New Haven's experience, see Rae, *City: Urbanism and Its End,* pp. 234-243.
133 Alan Ehrenhalt, "Extreme Makeover," *Governing* 20, no. 7 (July 2006): 29.
134 Florida, *The Rise of the Creative Class,* pp. 227-229.
135 Lloyd, *Neo-Bohemia.*
136 Rae, *City: Urbanism and Its End.*

CHAPTER 14

Governing the Divided City

A Delicate Balancing Act

City governments are, in effect, mechanisms for managing the social and political differences among the contending groups that make up the city. The legitimacy of democratic governance rests on popular perceptions that the governmental institutions that represent them are responsive to their preferences and needs. When enough people feel aggrieved, they often demonstrate their disaffection by withholding their vote, refusing to participate in organizational or political life, and resorting to protest. Sometimes, if they are angry enough, they turn to violence. When conflict reaches this level, it becomes obvious that the governmental system has failed to mediate the social and political differences that divide people. Judged by this standard, urban governments in the United States have an uneven record.

The history of American cities is peppered with episodes of violent unrest and conflict. On many occasions in the nineteenth century, mobs attacked immigrants, sometimes in bloody riots that lasted for days, and in the twentieth century blacks became the frequent target of racial violence. White mobs attacked blacks in New York City in 1863, East St. Louis in 1917, Chicago in 1919, and Tulsa in 1920. The harassment of blacks became commonplace in the era of suburban white flight in the 1950s.

In the face of police harassment and racial discrimination, blacks sometimes vented their frustrations through violence. Blacks rioted in Detroit in 1944 and dozens of times over several hot summers in the 1960s. Incidents involving the police precipitated virtually all of the riots in that turbulent decade.[1] Riots erupted in African American areas in Cuban-dominated Miami four times in the 1980s, beginning with the Liberty City disorders in May 1980. Each of the riots was associated with the killing of a black man by Hispanic white police officers.[2] Police conduct still stokes frequent controversy, and from time to time these have erupted into civil disorders. A quite typical incident occurred in early August 2006, in the Cabrini-Green public housing projects in Chicago, when police shot a 14-year-old boy who was brandishing a BB gun. In the wake of the shooting, demonstrators turned out to march around city hall.

More recently, ethnic and racial groups across the social spectrum have been caught up in urban violence. In 1991, rioting broke out in Washington, DC, when an African American female police officer attempted to arrest some Hispanic men, and a few days later it broke out again when police shot a Salvadoran immigrant. Ethnic tensions reached a boiling point in the Crown Heights area of Brooklyn in 1991 and 1992, culminating in a boycott by the African American community of a Korean greengrocer and violent street confrontations between African Americans and Hasidic Jews. The most serious riot of the twentieth century occurred in Los Angeles in 1992, with 53 people dead, 2,383 injuries, 16,291 arrests, more than 5,500 fires, and over $700 million in property damage. Unlike previous riots, it was multiethnic, involving blacks, Hispanics, and Asians.[3] In the course of the riots 30 percent of the approximately 4,000 businesses destroyed were owned by Hispanics,[4] but looters and arsonists especially singled out Korean-owned businesses.[5] For a time it seemed that racial and ethnic tensions had subsided, but in April 2000 fears of rioting ran rampant in Miami the day after federal agents seized Elian Gonzalez from relatives in Miami and returned him to his father in Cuba. Cuban American leaders called for calm, fearful that rioting might break out.

Continuing episodes of violence show that racial and ethnic tensions continue to lie just below the surface. In 2006, 500 students rioted at Fontana High School in Illinois after a Latino and a black student got into a verbal dispute, and fighting escalated when some Samoan students joined the fight. Though police were hesitant to describe them as such, the riots were attributed by many people to a long-rivalry between blacks and Latinos.[6] In

2003, a group of residents of Benton Harbor, Michigan, rioted for two days when Terrance Shurn, a black motorcyclist being chased by a mixed-race police officer, crashed into a building and died. Five homes were set on fire, dozens of cars were vandalized, and several people were injured. More than 300 law enforcement officers from surrounding communities converged on Benton Harbor to stabilize the situation. In 2005, a four-hour riot began in Toledo, Ohio when a Neo-Nazi organization planned a march to protest African American gang activity in the north end of the city. Twelve police officers were injured, and police, media, and emergency vehicles as well as some businesses were vandalized. The brief riot came as the culmination of long-simmering resentments. The Toledo neighborhood had long been a Polish enclave, though African Americans had been moving into the area over the past few years without any apparent problems. This changed after organizers of the annual Polish Fest began to require that minors be accompanied by parents—though community members were quick to notice that the new rule was enforced strictly with black children and less so with their white counterparts.[7]

After the 2008 election of Barack Obama as President of the United States, the term "post-racial politics" surfaced in academia and beyond. The idea behind it was that the election of an African American president meant that racial inequality in the United States had finally been overcome. This, of course, was and is not the case. Not only does social inequality still correlate with race and ethnicity in the United States, but the Obama presidency also saw a resurgence of race-based violence in American cities and suburbs. Tellingly, Ferguson, MO, a suburb of St. Louis, turned from a predominantly white suburb into a mostly African American town over the past 30 years.[8] A 2014 Brookings report called Ferguson "emblematic of growing suburban poverty."[9] In August of 2014, an African American teenager named Michael Brown, who was suspected of having stolen a pack of cigarillos, was fatally shot by police officer Darren Wilson.[10] Wilson stopped the suspect and his friend in the street and a struggle ensued, during which Wilson shot Brown twice[11], as, according to Wilson, Brown reached for his gun. Michael Brown was unarmed.[12] After Brown fled from Wilson's car, Wilson shot Brown several more times.[13] After a grand jury in St. Louis decided not to indict Wilson, protests, which had been ongoing since the shooting, escalated in St. Louis, triggering a new wave of outrage at the killing of unarmed African Americans by police across the United States.

The Ferguson protests were followed by riots in Baltimore after the death of Freddie Gray from spinal cord injuries in mid-April 2015 after being transported in a police van.[14] It was unclear why Gray had been arrested by police, because he was not wanted at the time of his arrest.[15] A knife was found on Gray after his arrest.[16] Following Gray's death, Baltimore's state attorney brought charges against six police officers. Three of them were acquitted, and the charges against the remaining three were dropped.[17] In addition, five of the six officers faced administrative charges for violating police department rules and neglect.[18] Two accepted the charges and minor disciplinary procedures, while two officers fought the charges in court and were acquitted.[19] The charges against the remaining officer were dropped.[20]

Incidents such as those in Baltimore or Ferguson continue to occur even though urban governments have become increasingly sensitive to racial and ethnic diversity in their communities. Local political systems began to open up in response to the civil rights movement of the 1960s, which produced a generation of activist African American leaders and a newly energized black electorate. As late as the mid-1960s, it seemed unthinkable that an African American might become the mayor of a major American city, but within a few years it had become commonplace. Before long, Latinos also entered the local political arena in increasing numbers. The presence of minorities in public office made it possible for African American and Latino communities to turn from strategies of protest to incorporation into the politics of the city.

OUTTAKE

Black Lives Matter: Moving Beyond a Moment and Creating a Movement

By Christina M. Greer

BlackLivesMatter was founded in 2012 after neighborhood vigilante George Zimmerman, the killer of 17-year-old Trayvon Martin, was acquitted of the crime in the state of Florida. The three founders of Black Lives Matter—Alicia Garza, Opal Tometi, and Patrisse Cullors—witnessed what many Americans also saw, Trayvon Martin essentially being tried posthumously for his own murder. #BlackLivesMatter was founded as a response to anti-black racism in America, more specifically, a seemingly historical and institutional disregard for black lives and

black bodies. In addition, this chapter-based national organization serves as a call to action for those who support the resistance of the dehumanization of the black experience in America. Garza, Tometi, and Cullors also contend that #BlackLivesMatter extends beyond the extrajudicial killings of black people by the police and vigilantes. It is their mission to bring further awareness—locally, domestically, and internationally—to issues pertaining to gender, sexuality, disability, and economics, as well as violence.

Black Lives Matter is a movement, not just a hashtag. The use of social media has moved beyond #BlackLivesMatter to activism in city streets across the country. It was Black Lives Matter activists who organized in Ferguson, MO so that people from all over the world would learn about the killing of 18-year-old Michael Brown by Officer Darren Wilson. Their goal was to also make aware the economic subjugation and racial segregation of blacks in the twenty-first century. There are currently twenty-eight chapters across the U.S. and Canada predicated on creating a network based on black self-determination. Since its inception, the United States has systematically, substantively, and specifically targeted black people through poverty, and incarceration, various assaults on black women and children. Black Lives Matter as an organization steadfastly affirms the resilience and humanity of black lives, even in the midst of oppression and uses of deadly force by the police state and vigilantes.

Black Lives Matter has also challenged the historical notions of black leadership and activism. By moving beyond the heteronormative promotion of straight cisgendered black male leadership (often religious in nature), BLM as a movement affirms black queer and trans individuals, the disabled, black undocumenteds, and those who have been in the criminal justice system. In addition, by affirming women, all black lives along the gender spectrum, and those who have been marginalized or left out of black liberation movements, BLM seeks to (re)build the black liberation movement.

Indeed, not all black Americans fully support the mission or activist strategies of the organization. However, diversity and dissent within the black American freedom movements have existed as long as the desire to be treated equally under the law. In the 1960s, Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr., Malcolm X, the Black Panther Party, and the NAACP—to name just a few of the black individuals and groups leading the movement for civil rights and civil liberties—all represented differing ideas as to how black liberation should be attained. BLM is an extension of the complex debates surrounding race and racism in American politics, culture, and society.

The success of BLM has been the incorporation of protest politics into American democracy. In order to best understand racial politics, and black politics in particular, it is imperative to understand the necessity and the intersection of electoral *and* protest politics. There are myriad black political opinions and ideologies, and BLM represents just one of the many facets of twenty-first-century black politics. By recognizing and uplifting female, queer, and disabled leadership, BLM has moved the struggle for black equity one step closer to the goal of a just society.

Incorporation into democratic processes provided an opportunity for minorities to work for change from within. Despite the gains, however, urban governance continues to be a delicate balancing act because incorporation has not always brought the hoped-for rewards. Affirmative action programs changed the complexion of police forces, fire departments, school programs, and municipal offices. Nevertheless, racial and ethnic inequalities continue to fuel conflict and resentment because African Americans and Hispanics continue to lag in income, educational attainment, and participation in the workforce, and they have been disproportionately affected by increasing inequality and rising poverty levels. Since the turn of the twenty-first century, the number of people living in poverty has been steadily rising in the United States, from a low of 11.4 percent in 2000 to 12.5 percent in 2003. In November 2012, the U.S. Census Bureau reported that more than 16 percent of the U.S. population was living in poverty, including 20 percent of children.[21] Such widespread poverty has not been seen since the 1960s, when the War on Poverty was launched.[22] At the same time, federal tax cuts enacted in 2001 and 2002 increased tax burdens for middle-income taxpayers while reducing them for upper-income households.[23] Such inequalities can be observed on the urban landscape, in the juxtaposition of troubled neighborhoods and the privatized enclaves that fragment the contemporary metropolis. As long as such inequalities persist, racial and ethnic tensions will continue to be a fact of life in America's metropolitan regions.

OUTTAKE

Multiethnic Coalitions Are Hard to Keep Together

Since the civil rights struggles of the 1960s, a profound transformation has thoroughly altered the urban political landscape. Civil rights and community organizing activities helped mobilize the African American electorate, and within a few years African American mayors and other public officials were taking the reins of city governments. Over time, the drive for representation in the political system embraced other groups as well. In addition to the symbolic benefits of incorporation, the material benefits were substantial; the gains in public employment contributed to economic gains for the middle-class, the integration of municipal workforces, the hiring of minority personnel in administrative posts in municipal governments and school systems, changes in police behavior, and improvements in the tone of racial and ethnic relations.

But the complex ethnic makeup of urban politics has revealed just how hard it is to build and maintain multiethnic coalitions. The expectation that blacks and Latinos would find a common cause because both groups are disadvantaged has rarely been realized because there are significant differences between and within each of these groups. Within the Latino community, for example, "there is little consensus on a Latino political agenda … much less one that would reflect the shared concerns of blacks and Latinos over poverty, affordable housing, safety, health care, and neighborhood well-being."[24] Minority is a problematic term that papers over significant differences; the challenge is to forge alliances over issues that attract support across ethnic groups.[25]

The problem of defining a singular "minority agenda" explains why it is hard to assemble interethnic coalitions, and also why it is difficult to assess the actual gains from political incorporation. A frequently expressed view is that the minority middle-class reaped most of the benefits from political representation, and that the disadvantaged and poor were left out. Perhaps an expectation that it could be any other way was always unrealistic, for two reasons. First, it overestimated the ability of city governments to change the basic structures of the economy and society; "The painful truth is that many of the forces shaping the conditions under which the mass of low-income minority people live are not under the control of city governments." Second, such an expectation amounted to a naïve assumption that there were few political differences among the groups lumped together under the "minority" label.

Sources: Albert K. Karnig and Susan Welch, *Black Representatives and Urban Policy* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1980); Rufus P. Browning, Dale Rogers Marshall, and David H. Tabb, *Racial Politics in American Cities,* 3rd ed. (New York: Longman, 2002), pp. 374–377.

The Recent Revolution in Urban Governance

The civil rights struggles of the 1960s and community organizing activities of the same era precipitated a revolution in governance at all levels of the American political system. Until 1967, not a single African American had ever been elected mayor of a major American city. In that year, Richard Hatcher was elected mayor of Gary, Indiana, and Carl Stokes became the mayor of Cleveland. In the years since these watershed elections, blacks and Latinos have been elected to office in cities of all sizes from coast to coast; by 1988, 28 African American mayors had been elected in cities of more than 50,000 in population, and the number reached 38 only five years later.[26] As shown in Figure 14.1, from 1970 to 2001 the number of African American elected officials in the United States increased from 1,469 to 9,101; of these, 454 were mayors.[27] By 2014, the total number of African American elected officials in the United States had crossed the 10,000 threshold.[28] Many of these officials were elected to positions in local governments, with large numbers in education, the judicial system, and law enforcement.

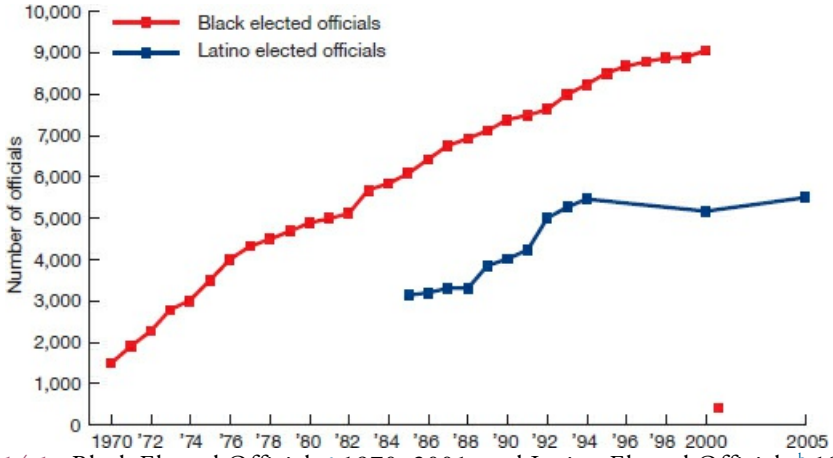


FIGURE 14.1 Black Elected Officials,[a] 1970–2001, and Latino Elected Officials,[b] 1985–2005

Notes: [a] Includes Congress. [b] Does not include Congress.

Sources: National Association of Latino Elected and Appointed Officials (Washington, DC: Author, *National Roster of Hispanic Elected Officials,* annual); National Association of Latino Elected and Appointed Officials, "NALEO At-A-Glance," www.naelo.org/ataglance.html; Joint Center for Political and Economic Studies, *Black Elected Officials: A Statistical Summary* (Washington, DC), p. 250, Table 399; Joint Center for Political and Economic Studies, *Black Elected Officials: A Statistical Summary, 2001* (Washington, DC: Author), p. 13.

With the election of Kurt Schmoke as the first African American mayor of Baltimore in 1987, every city of more than 100,000 people that had a majority black population had elected an African American mayor. At different points in the 1980s, African American candidates won the mayor's office in four of the five largest cities in the country, even though African American voters were in the minority in all of those cities (David Dinkins in New York, Tom Bradley in Los Angeles, Harold Washington in Chicago, and Wilson Goode in Philadelphia). Again in the 1990s, African Americans won in several cities where they constituted a minority of voters, including St. Louis, Denver, Kansas City, and Seattle.

City politics experienced another profound change in the 1980s, when Latinos began entering political office in large numbers. The data in Figure 14.1 reveal that the number of Latino elected officials at all government levels in the United States grew from 3,147 in 1985 to 5,459 in 1994 before dropping off slightly to 5,041 in 2005.[29] By 2014, the number of Latino elected officials at all levels of government had increased to 6,084.[30] Latino mayors won office in Denver, Miami, San Antonio, and numerous smaller cities. Federico Peña's election in Denver in 1983 was considered a break-through because he was the first Latino to be elected mayor of a large American city without a Latino majority. At the time, Latinos constituted just 18 percent of the city's population, with blacks making up another 12 percent.[31] The gains realized in cities reverberated throughout the American political system. For instance, Peña and the former mayor of San Antonio, Henry Cisneros, were appointed to President Bill Clinton's cabinet in 1993.

African American and Latino mayors have faced a daunting challenge because in most cities where they have won, white voters have commanded a clear majority. Because of this political reality, minority candidates have been forced to walk a fine line: if they campaign on issues of great importance to their racial and ethnic constituents they risk alienating their white voters. Once in office, they have found that whatever the composition of their electoral coalition, they are unable to get much done unless they forge a good working relationship with the one group that can bring investment to the city—the business community. A politics of trade-offs and negotiation that fully satisfies no one at all is virtually guaranteed by this circumstance.

Political struggles in the nation's two largest cities, New York and Los Angeles, shed light on the difficulties of governance when complex interracial and interethnic coalitions must be assembled. By 1990, non-Latino whites made up less than half—43 percent—of the population of New York City. Blacks accounted for 25 percent, Latinos 24 percent, and Asians 8 percent.[32] With a large Jewish population that was historically sensitive to discrimination and supportive of the Civil Rights Movement, New York City seemed to be an ideal setting for within which a diverse racial and ethnic coalition might emerge. In fact, however, this context produced a fractious politics that resulted in the election of Ed Koch, a self-styled conservative white mayor. After serving three terms from 1977 to 1985 he was defeated in 1989 by an African American, David Dinkins, who was defeated after one term by a Republican conservative, Rudolph Giuliani, who served from 1993 to 1997.

By contrast, Los Angeles, which is also racially and ethnically diverse, elected an African American mayor, Tom

Bradley, in 1973, and the voters kept him in office for five consecutive terms. Throughout this period, blacks accounted for no more than 14 percent of the population of Los Angeles. Much can be learned about the delicate nature of coalition politics by an examination of the Bradley years.

Tom Bradley, the son of Texas sharecroppers, moved to Los Angeles with his family at the age of seven. An exceptional student and athlete, he attended the University of California–Los Angeles, and then took a job with the Los Angeles Police Department. After putting down roots in a mostly white neighborhood on the West Side, he organized a community relations group, and through this activity he forged close personal contacts with Jewish merchants and civic leaders. By taking night courses he earned a law degree, quit the police force, and opened his own legal practice. His entry into the politics of the local Democratic Party came at a perfect time, just when an alliance of upwardly mobile African Americans, Jews, and liberals began to challenge the regular Democratic Party, which had previously excluded them.

In 1969, the reform coalition pushed Bradley forward as a challenger to the Democratic incumbent, Sam Yorty. Bradley's chances were hurt by the racial tensions that continued to linger in the wake of the devastating Watts riot that had shocked the city four years before. Yorty won the election by securing support from an overwhelming majority of white votes and received particularly strong support from upper-middle-class homeowners in the San Fernando Valley. When he ran against Yorty four years later, however, Bradley defused the issue of race by avoiding overt racial issues and emphasizing the importance of revitalizing the downtown and keeping taxes low. He defeated Yorty by assembling a diverse coalition composed of African Americans of all income levels, Latinos, and higher-income and especially Jewish white liberals. Bradley succeeded largely because he was able to symbolize different things to different people: "Whites saw Bradley as a symbol of racial harmony, while blacks saw him as a symbol of racial assertion."[33]

Bradley's success was predicated on a long history of collaboration between white liberals and the upwardly mobile black middle class. Both groups had been systematically excluded from local politics prior to Bradley's victory, and therefore they viewed each other as allies in the cause of ousting the Yorty regime. As soon as he entered City Hall, Bradley assembled a formidable coalition that would allow him not only to win elections but also to govern. To accumulate the resources necessary for realizing his aspiration to remake the downtown, he forged an alliance with downtown banks and business corporations. In this way he was always able to raise the massive amounts of money necessary for winning election in a city as diverse and sprawling as Los Angeles.

The conditions that allowed an African American to become the mayor of Los Angeles were absent in New York, despite the fact that blacks were already well entrenched in New York City's government by the mid-1960s.[34] By the time blacks entered New York City's political system, liberals and Jews had already established themselves by successfully electing a liberal Republican, John Lindsay, as mayor for two terms (1966–1973). Although New York's blacks, Jews, and white liberals could clearly cooperate, their leaders viewed one another with suspicion. These tensions came to a head in 1968, when the African American community launched an experiment in community control in the Ocean Hill–Brownsville schools in Brooklyn. The school board's plan to transfer 19 teachers, some of them Jewish, out of the district resulted in a bitter citywide strike by the teachers' union, which drove a wedge between blacks and Jews that endures in New York even to the present day. The same sorts of conflicts and suspicions have characterized the political relationships between African Americans and Latinos, who are themselves divided into many factions based on nationality and language.[35] Ed Koch was able to exploit these divisions, and he succeeded in assembling a coalition of Jews, Catholics, and ethnic whites. This alliance proved to be enduring enough to keep him in office through three elections.[36]

An African American, David Dinkins, was able to beat him in 1989 because he had close ties to the regular Democratic Party and he possessed a dignified, non-confrontational style that did not seem threatening to white voters. In the early stages of the 1989 mayoral contest, Koch miscalculated by criticizing Jesse Jackson, who had made a run for the presidency the year before, for expressing support for the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO). Koch commented that Jews "would have to be crazy" to vote for Jackson. An African American newspaper, *Amsterdam News,* replied bitterly by reminding Koch that "he is mayor of the city; not just of New York Jewry."[37] Dinkins secured enough support from voters who had tired of Koch's racial rhetoric to carry the election.

As it turned out, Dinkins' election did not bring an end to racially charged politics in New York City. After serving one term he was defeated by a self-styled political conservative, Rudolph Giuliani. Giuliani, a former prosecutor, broke the mold by winning as a Republican in a Democratic city. He quickly set out to terminate

affirmative action programs, slash spending for welfare and housing, cut health services, and beef up the police forces.[38] Crime control became the central cause of his administration, and he became nationally known for championing the "broken windows" theory of crime control, which was based on the premise that a systematic punishment for small crimes would deter more serious ones (taken literally, this meant that if someone metaphorically "broke a window" by jaywalking or littering, he could be arrested). While in office, Giuliani went out of his way to snub African American leaders. In 2001, when he was forced to leave office because of term limits, he was succeeded by Republican Michael Bloomberg, who with his own money spent $99 per vote to narrowly defeat the Democratic candidate.[39]

New York's politics continued to be divisive only in part because of worries about crime and disorder. Conflict was built into the city's demographic makeup. The many groups that jostled for power resented it when benefits were conferred on any other group.[40] Ethnic whites and Latinos were convinced that blacks received a disproportionate share of municipal offices and perks. Latinos were divided among West Indians, Dominicans, Puerto Ricans, and Jamaicans. Asian voters also fought for a place at the table. Despite New York's example, coalitions that cut across racial and ethnic lines have been become more or less the norm in American cities. In Denver, for instance, Federico Peña became the city's first Mexican American mayor in 1983 when he was able to cobble together an electoral coalition of Latino and African American voters and educated white professionals connected to Denver's high-tech economy. Peña emphasized downtown and neighborhood development but also initiated affirmative action hiring in public agencies and appointed a large number of blacks and Latinos to boards and commissions. His African American successor in 1991, Wellington Webb, built upon Peña's programs by emphasizing infrastructure improvements throughout the city and by establishing a revolving fund for affordable housing.[41]

American cities contain a multitude of groups and interests, and urban officials have become skilled in the practical task of managing conflict within a complex political environment. They have learned how to do so because the politics of cities has become generally more accessible than in the past, making it hard to shut out anyone completely. A complex institutional structure provides numerous points of access to the political process. The result is a lively and often contentious struggle over the policy priorities of the city.

The Benefits of Incorporation

The incorporation of African Americans and Hispanics into local political structures has brought substantial benefits to both groups. The first generation of African American mayors successfully pushed for more spending for health, education, housing, and job training programs, and for increases in federal grants. Studies showed that cities with black mayors and council members had a higher proportion of social welfare expenditures than other cities. These findings seemed to apply to Latino officeholders as well. A study that measured the degree of incorporation of blacks and Latinos into the politics of 10 California cities in the early 1980s found that "political incorporation was responsible for dramatic changes in bureaucratic decision rules in many policy areas," such as local-government hiring and contracting procedures. The study also found that incorporation increased voter turnout and the mobilization of new leaders. Significant gains were achieved in integrating municipal labor forces, school administrators, and teachers, and neighborhood programs were initiated in many cities. Old racial barriers fell. Many observers interpreted these findings as a sign that more progress was yet to come.

Public employment provided an important avenue for minority employment. Research has consistently shown that when blacks became politically incorporated—that is, when they win the mayor's office and infiltrate the institutions of local government—minority employment in city government increased.[42] From 1973 to 1991, Mayor Bradley managed to increase the jobs held by blacks, Latinos, and Asians in municipal government from 36 to 50 percent. Minorities are often concentrated in lower-level jobs, but in Los Angeles during this period, minority representation in top-level city jobs increased as well.[43]

Minority mayors also initiated preferential procurement programs requiring that a minimum percentage of city contracts be given to minority business enterprises (MBEs). In 1973, blacks accounted for a majority of Atlanta's population, but firms owned by African Americans received only one-tenth of 1 percent of the city's contracts. By 1988, the preferential procurement program had raised the proportion to 35 percent. There were, though, two drawbacks. First, some MBEs acted as mere fronts for non-minority firms doing most of the work.[44] Second, preferential procurement generally benefited higher-income and better educated people within the minority community. Atlanta's first black mayor, Maynard Jackson, boasted that the minority set-asides for Atlanta's

airport expansion created 21 African American millionaires; however, benefits to the low-income community were more difficult to identify.[45]

Beginning in 1989, the U.S. Supreme Court made it harder for cities and states to use preferential procurement programs to increase minority employment. In *City of Richmond v. J. A. Croson Co.* (1989), the Court ruled that Richmond's program requiring that 30 percent of contracts be set aside for MBEs violated the equal protection clause of the Fourteenth Amendment.[46] To withstand the "strict scrutiny" standard of constitutionality, cities must document past discrimination by city government and demonstrate that race-neutral alternatives will not solve the problem. This ruling makes preferential procurement difficult but not impossible to implement.[47]

Police reform was one of the most important policy benefits that flowed from political incorporation. Police brutality and inadequate police protection have long been two of the most frequently expressed grievances in minority communities around the country. For many years, the police department of Los Angeles was loathed in minority communities. Under the city's governmental structure, the LAPD operated well beyond the influence of elected officials. Appointed by an independent police commission, the chief of police had a free hand in running the department. The LAPD had always prided itself on its tough, law-and-order approach to law enforcement, and the chief liked to brag about the department's state-of-the-art, high-tech weaponry. In Los Angeles, policing relied on helicopters equipped with infrared cameras for night vision and 30-million-candlepower spotlights, called Nightsuns, that could turn night into day. Street numbers painted on rooftops gave police helicopters a navigable street grid from the air (now replaced by satellite navigation). Synchronization with patrol cars was facilitated by a communications system conceptualized by Hughes Aircraft and refined by NASA's Jet Propulsion Laboratory.[48] In low-income areas, this strategy meant the LAPD acted more like an occupying army than as an instrument for preserving public safety.

From 1978 to 1992, Chief Daryl Gates ran the LAPD as his personal fiefdom. Under operation HAMMER, patrol officers and elite tactical squads descended on South Central Los Angeles, arresting thousands of minority youths in each sweep. Young men were brought in for a wide range of infractions, from selling drugs to suspected gang activity to charges of loitering and jaywalking. In the absence of other charges, resisting arrest became a favorite police option. By 1990 as many as 50,000 suspects had been arrested in these sweeps, which is astounding considering only about 100,000 African American youths lived in all of Los Angeles.[49] The LAPD had a practice of using a dangerous chokehold to control people in custody. In 1982, after frequent use of the chokehold resulted in a rash of deaths among young black men, Chief Gates made the inflammatory statement that the problem could be traced to the anatomy of blacks rather than to police practices: "We may be finding that in some blacks when [the carotid chokehold] is applied the veins or arteries do not open up as fast as they do on normal people."[50] The beating of Rodney King, which set off the 1992 riots, came as no surprise to blacks in Los Angeles.

Mayor Bradley, who had the advantage of being a former cop, succeeded in bringing the LAPD under some degree of civilian control, but only after 20 years of fierce political battles. The LAPD's share of the city's budget fell from 23 percent in 1972–1973 to 18 percent in 1987–1988. Between 1980 and 1988, minority representation in the LAPD increased from 20 to 32 percent, but the numbers of minorities in leadership positions still lagged. Most important, in June 1992, shortly after the riots, the voters approved Proposition F. Strongly supported by Bradley, Proposition F limited the terms of police chiefs and removed their civil service protection. Having campaigned vigorously against Proposition F, Chief Gates resigned and was succeeded by an African American, Willie Williams, who pledged to implement community-based policing.[51]

What the Los Angeles case shows is that even under adverse conditions, when minorities are incorporated into the political system they are able to bring about important changes. In Los Angeles, the black community considered it essential that more African American police officers be hired and the police department be brought under greater civilian control.[52] Racism and police brutality still occur within integrated police forces, but changing the composition of the force was a big step toward reform.

An assortment of racial and ethnic groups has recently sought incorporation into city politics. When these groups must cooperate to gain access to the political system, they are often able to put aside their differences and support a candidate. But these alliances are hard to keep together. A study of 41 cities that were at least 10 percent African American and 10 percent Latino found that, generally, black and Latino municipal employment was associated with the incorporation of both groups into local political systems. The same research demonstrated, however, that as the African American population increased, the Latino share of municipal employment fell.[53] Tensions arise because it is difficult to satisfy both groups with the limited jobs and other resources available. In

New York City, the failure of blacks and Latinos to forge a stable electoral coalition facilitated the election of conservative mayors Ed Koch and Rudolph Giuliani. Similarly, after Bradley retired in Los Angeles, his black and Latino coalition fell apart, which paved the road to the mayor's office for Republican conservative Richard Riordan.

It may be difficult to forge political coalitions across racial and ethnic groups, but the biggest problem facing these alliances has not been their fragility but their lack of success in persuading state legislatures and the federal government to increase funding for social programs. In the 1960s and 1970s, when federal grants were flowing into cities, the first generation of minority mayors successfully lobbied for programs that benefited the poor. Since the withdrawal of federal funds, mayors have found it difficult to generate the revenues necessary to fund housing, health, jobs, recreation, and other initiatives. Minority mayors emphasize economic development as much as they do, not because they have given up on the goal of providing benefits to their constituents, but because they see no other way to raise the resources necessary to deliver on their promises. In short, they pursue trickle-down policies based on the logic that "private economic development in the city produces jobs in the private sector and tax money that may be used for jobs and purchases in the public sector. Through the various affirmative action devices … a certain proportion of these jobs and purchases may be channeled to the black community."[54]

The problem is that public-sector jobs have been marginal to the goal of advancing the economic well-being of blacks and Latinos.[55] At most, the public sector can supply employment to no more than 6–8 percent of the African American population of central cities—even assuming no jobs would go to other groups.[56] In any case, large proportions of public jobs, minority business contracts, and other benefits have gone to middle- and upper-income people and even to suburban residents.[57]

It is unrealistic to expect political participation to deliver a fundamental redistribution of economic resources. The political incorporation of a group cannot overturn the economic arrangements that preserve inequality. As noted by one scholar, "There is no precedent for expecting political participation to produce revolutionary outcomes for any group in American urban politics specifically or American politics in general."[58] Still, considerable progress has been made. Minority regimes have been quite successful in altering hiring policies and curbing abuses by the police. These are important accomplishments.

Studies provide little evidence that the incorporation of blacks and Latinos into local political systems has led to significantly different taxing, spending, and service delivery policies. For the most part, African American mayors have been enthusiastic advocates for policies that favor business investment and the downtown development. Even so, the incorporation of African Americans and Latinos has had the effect of making people feel better about local politics. Survey research shows that blacks living in cities with an African American mayor expressed more trust in and paid more attention to political affairs, and more of them participated in politics.[59] Participation by Latinos has increased when they have been brought into local power structures.[60] Regardless of its limitations, minority incorporation has enhanced the legitimacy of city governments among a substantial portion of the urban population.

The Sanctuary Movement

Besides their minority status, Hispanics face additional hurdles of incorporation. With a growing undocumented population, which hovers around 11.3 million in 2017, half of them Mexican, and a majority Hispanic,[61] a considerable part of the Hispanic minority also lacks legal immigrant status. This makes political incorporation problematic, to say the least. Nevertheless, cities have been at the forefront of catering to the undocumented population in the United States, and sometimes even protecting them from federal immigration enforcement.

The Sanctuary City movement has borrowed its name from the Sanctuary Movement of the 1980s, when thousands of people from Central America were escaping civil war and political and civil unrest in their countries and coming to the United States.[62] The Reagan administration, on the other hand, openly supported many of the military regimes in Latin America, as part of its anti-communist offensive, and therefore framed these immigrants as economic immigrants, rather than refugees with a well-founded fear of persecution in their home countries, and granted asylum only to a tiny fraction.[63] Churches, synagogues, universities, and cities in over 30 states across the United States started providing sanctuary to around 2,000 refugees, risking felony charges.[64]

Based on this very movement, cities across the United States have declared themselves sanctuary cities. The exact significance of a Sanctuary City, however, can vary widely. Unlike the federal government, states and municipalities have no legal authority to implement or change immigration law. Therefore, sanctuary cities cannot

implement a separate immigration policy. They can, however, refuse to collaborate with federal law enforcement in terms of information-sharing, as well as offer certain services independent of one's immigration status. In 2015, there were more than 360 municipal jurisdictions across the United States that had officially limited the information they share with the Department of Homeland Security (DHS), which includes Immigration and Customs Enforcement (ICE).[65] New York City, for instance, has implemented the IDNYC program, which allows all New York City residents to obtain a NYC ID card, regardless of immigration status. New York City residence can be proven via a simple phone bill. This is particularly important for undocumented immigrants, since proof of (legal) immigration status is required to obtain a New York State ID. The Migration Policy Institute (MPI) estimates that, together, American sanctuary cities host around 5.9 million undocumented immigrants, more than 50 percent of the total undocumented population in the United States.[66]

Federal authorities across party lines had long relied on the cooperation of state and local authorities in immigration enforcement. The Bush administration had aggressively extended the 287(g) program.[67] This program delegates special immigration control and enforcement functions to specially trained state and local officials.[68] In 2008, the Bush administration launched Secure Communities, which implemented an automatism that checked fingerprints sent to the FBI by local law enforcement against the DHS database, in order to also check for immigration status.[69] The Obama administration continued this highly controversial program until 2014; the program identified over 500,000 non-citizens in jails across the country and accounted for 75 percent of all non-border deportations, which more than tripled from around 75,000 in 2006 to 188,000 in 2011.[70] The Secure Communities program soon grew unpopular with many urban communities and municipalities, because it increasingly eroded trust between local law enforcement and immigrant communities. As DHS refused to make changes to the program, states and municipalities either passed ordinances limiting their cooperation, or dropped out of the program altogether.[71] On July 1, 2015, the Obama administration replaced Secure Communities with a new program, the Priority Enforcement Program (PEP), which still mandates the sharing of fingerprint data with immigration authorities, but limits enforcement to those individuals who have committed a serious crime and pose a threat to public safety.[72]

In 2017, there seemed no real perspective for mending the relationship between federal immigration authorities on the one hand, and many state and local governments on the other. During a polarizing 2016 presidential election campaign, immigration ranked as one of the most salient political issues. Throughout his presidential campaign, then-candidate Trump called Mexicans "rapists" and a threat to national security. Since taking office in January 2017, the newly elected President Trump has repeatedly threatened sanctuary cities with serious cuts in federal funding should they continue on their course. On January 25, 2017, just days after his inauguration, the new president signed an executive order blocking federal funding from sanctuary cities, claiming that by their refusal to fully cooperate with federal immigration enforcement, such municipalities "willfully violate federal law."[73] In April 2017, a federal court in California blocked the order, "calling it coercive and ruling that Trump's attempt to withhold all federal money for such cities violates constitutional principles."[74] Nevertheless, the Trump administration's relationship with sanctuary cities remains strained. In September, the administration launched "Operation Safe City," a federal immigration crackdown in those cities which had voiced the most vocal opposition to Trump's immigration policy, such as New York City, Los Angeles, Baltimore, and Washington, DC.[75] The 4-day operation resulted in the round-up of nearly 500 undocumented immigrants, and was largely seen as a provocative move by the administration against sanctuary cities.[76] Sanctuary cities, on the other hand, in the wake of the operation, confirmed their commitment to the sanctuary movement.[77]

Striking a Balance

Over the years, community organizations have been key players in the process of opening up local political systems, and the gains have been realized regardless of whether a minority mayor happened to be in City Hall. In 1967 a white candidate, Kevin White, was elected mayor of Boston with the support from neighborhood groups that opposed urban renewal. Once in office, he supported rent control and set up "Little City Halls" in neighborhoods around the city to satisfy demands for more community control. Later, White lost his base of support in the neighborhoods when he reversed himself and came out against rent control and in favor of aggressive policies to promote downtown growth.

In 1972, a white candidate, Neil Goldschmidt, won the mayor's office in Portland, Oregon, with backing from neighborhood activists. A veteran of the civil rights movement before being elected to the Portland City Council,

Goldschmidt had worked for Legal Services, which provided legal assistance to anti-poverty and community groups. In 1971 and 1972, Goldschmidt cast the only dissenting votes on the city council on major urban renewal projects. As mayor, he granted neighborhood groups some authority over land use decisions, and the city even provided professional staff to neighborhood associations so they could review planning proposals. Between 1974 and 1979, the number of neighborhood groups in Portland doubled to 60.[78]

Another early success for the neighborhood movement came in Cincinnati. This was notable because the city's reform-style governmental structure—with a city manager and at-large nonpartisan elections—seemed to discourage the decentralization of decision making. But in 1971, several neighborhood groups came together to propose a slate of council candidates in the city council election. Enough members of the slate were elected to reorient the policies of the new council away from downtown development to neighborhood revitalization. Soon Cincinnati instituted neighborhood planning and began providing direct assistance to neighborhood associations.[79] Likewise, from 1969 to 1979, Hartford, Connecticut, operated under a city council whose members had strong roots in the neighborhoods. During these years the city negotiated an equity partnership for neighborhood groups in major downtown developments, thus providing these organizations with a steady source of income and a stake in the downtown's success.[80] In 1981, Santa Monicans for Renters' Rights (SMRR) swept the city council elections in Santa Monica, California, and the council then implemented a rent control ordinance that reportedly saved renters $1.1 billion between 1987 and 1997.[81]

The degree to which neighborhood organizations become influential varies greatly from one city to the next, but they play some role virtually everywhere. A political dynamic exists in which leaders close to neighborhoods tend to articulate issues of equity and social justice. Neighborhood organizations also receive a combination of public, foundation, and private funds to provide social services not always provided through municipal government. This activity tends to take place in the day-to-day operations of numerous organizations, large and small. Although they generally go about their business without much publicity, this rich mixture of institutions is a crucial component of the political life of cities.

These institutions have become, for instance, an important means of delivering urban services, and they often do so for city governments. A 1990 survey of 161 cities with populations of over 100,000 people found that 60 percent of them had active systems of neighborhood councils, and 70 percent of these were officially recognized by city government.[82] By the early 1990s, New York City had instituted a system of partial decentralization whereby 59 community planning boards exercised advisory powers over land use and city services.[83] St. Paul has one of the most extensive systems of neighborhood control in the nation. In the early 1990s, 17 district councils, each elected by district residents, possessed substantial powers over zoning, the distribution of goods and services, and capital expenditures.[84] A 1991 survey of 133 cities with populations over 100,000 found that 64 percent had formed housing advocacy coalitions,[85] which worked with governments, nonprofit organizations, and developers to build housing for low- and moderate-income families. In most cities, a substantial proportion of the federal government's block grant funds flows through neighborhood and nonprofit organizations.

The institutional fabric that guarantees that neighborhoods and their residents will be able to exert some degree of influence in City Hall does not mean that they have become the most important powerbrokers in local political systems. This is not even the case in cities where they are relatively powerful. A mayor cannot afford to be captured in this way. Once a mayor takes office it becomes obvious that there are always more claimants than resources, and that it is impossible to satisfy everyone. In American cities, authority is fragmented and dispersed.[86] The mayor has political authority, but many other centers of power also exist. Mayors need cooperation from institutions well beyond the neighborhoods. Typically this may include the city council, labor unions, the media, independent authorities (such as school boards), the courts, state and federal officials, and, perhaps most of all, the business community.

In most cities there is a constant struggle that seems to pit downtown and economic development advocates against neighborhoods and their residents. Neighborhood groups are often viewed as anti-business, indifferent to the need to promote economic development. Big downtown projects pushed by mayors and business elites—convention centers, sports stadiums, subsidized mall and entertainment districts—are questioned, if at all, mostly by neighborhood organizations and community activists. But no mayor can ignore the fact that little can be accomplished without the support of business. A few mayors manage to strike a balance, but the logic of economic development is so overwhelmingly strong that more often they end up pursuing a pro-growth agenda. This seems to happen regardless of the racial or ethnic background of the incumbent. African American mayors, for example,

have invariably ended up advocating pro-growth downtown development policies even if their electoral base might suggest they would not.[87]

Atlanta's experience shows why. In 1973, Maynard Jackson was elected the first African American mayor of Atlanta. Jackson came into office with promises to reject what he termed "slavish, unquestioning adherence to downtown dicta."[88] What set Jackson apart from previous mayors was that he insisted that business elites "come to city hall to meet in his office and to ask for his support, rather than simply to inform him of their needs and assume his compliance."[89]

Jackson soon learned that to undertake expensive projects that he could take credit for when seeking reelection, he needed the support of the business community, and, over time, he was pulled toward accommodation with the downtown business elite. He supported all of the major redevelopment projects favored by downtown business, including construction of the Metro Atlanta Rapid Transit Authority (MARTA) system, which mainly connected downtown to Atlanta's airport. Jackson's successor, civil rights activist Andrew Young, continued Jackson's unqualified support of downtown development. Commenting on his partnership with business, Young said, "Politics doesn't control the world. Money does."[90]

The downtown and regional projects made it possible for Jackson and Young to increase African American public employment, government contracts for minority-owned firms, and African American representation on the police force. Their middle-class supporters gained from these programs, but the booming downtown and suburbs did even more for the white middleclass, and provided little to help blacks trapped in inner-city, low-income neighborhoods: they were left behind.[91] From 1980 to 1985, predominantly white areas in the Atlanta region experienced job growth 14 times greater than predominantly black areas. Between 1970 and 1982, the percentage of central-city households living in poverty doubled. Atlanta's housing and job markets remained highly segregated. After 1980, applications to higher education, especially among Atlanta's black males, fell rapidly. A 1989 study by the *Atlanta Constitution* found that one black man in six had been imprisoned.[92]

The administration of Tom Bradley, who was elected mayor of Los Angeles in 1973, also illustrates the importance that mayors attach to economic growth. Early on, Bradley stressed the need to make Los Angeles a "world class" city. He courted Japanese investors, who poured more than $3 billion into Los Angeles real estate in 1988 alone. Before Bradley, there was almost no downtown in Los Angeles; in 1975 only five buildings were above 13 stories. By 1990, there were over 50 such buildings—many of them visible in the dramatic footage that opened the television series *L.A. Law.*[93]

To subsidize downtown development, Los Angeles created a huge 255-block tax increment finance (TIF) district. The TIF district allowed the city to float bonds to provide public improvements and services to stimulate private investment. But because the city was required to use all of the additional taxes from the downtown redevelopment to retire the bonds or to support further development, the new taxes could not be used for projects or services elsewhere in the city.[94] The downtown office complex experienced a boom, but the high-level professional jobs generated by corporate investment were taken either by suburban residents or by professionals who moved into gentrified neighborhoods close to the downtown. The overall effect was to displace lower-income residents, drive up the cost of housing, and segment urban space into enclaves. Finally recognizing the depth of the housing crisis, in 1991 Mayor Bradley began to push for "linkage" fees that would require developers to allocate funds for low-income housing in exchange for approval of downtown building projects. But it was too little, too late.

The 1992 riots showed how difficult it was for Bradley to satisfy all of the city's contending political interests. His policies had mainly aided real estate developers and expanded opportunities for white-collar professionals, including some who were black and Latino. Redevelopment did not benefit the poor. According to the 1990 census, the poverty rate in South Central Los Angeles, where the riots started, was 33 percent. The area was seething with tensions between newly arrived Central American immigrants and longtime African American residents. The riots exposed the depth of the racial and ethnic tensions in the city.

Bradley did not even succeed in satisfying affluent white voters. When development spread from downtown to the affluent West Side, Bradley began to encounter stiff opposition from environmentalists who objected to increased air pollution and traffic congestion. Unable to keep up with new development, the sewage system broke down in 1987, dumping millions of gallons of raw sewage into Santa Monica Bay. Bradley proposed a cap on new sewer construction to slow the pace of new development. The next year, however, he infuriated environmentalists by reversing his long-standing opposition to oil drilling in the Pacific Palisades, an area on the ocean floor

extending several miles out from Los Angeles. Under siege from residents in low- as well as high-income neighborhoods, Bradley chose not to run for a sixth term in 1993.

Despite the risks that such a strategy sometimes poses, the fact remains that the policy priorities of most cities continues to be focused on downtown development. In a large number of cities, especially in Sunbelt cities such as Phoenix, Las Vegas, and Houston, neighborhood groups have had little influence at all. Commenting on politics in Houston, one study called its neighborhood groups "largely invisible." During the 1970s and 1980s, Houston had only one organization representing poor neighborhoods, The Metropolitan Organization (TMO).[95] Although TMO won infrastructure improvements for high-poverty areas, it failed to stop the Hardy Toll Road that, for the convenience of white suburban commuters, destroyed many units of moderate-income housing.[96] Denounced as radical, TMO has been excluded from the governing regime. Compared with cities like Boston and San Francisco, which have hundreds of community-based nonprofit housing developers, Houston had only five in the early 1990s. In 1988, Houston spent only 10 percent of its Community Development Block Grant (CDBG) on housing, compared to 75 percent in Boston and Santa Monica.

In cities with strong neighborhood organizations, mayors must somehow strike a balance between a downtown growth agenda and a program for neighborhood development. Ray Flynn of Boston was one of the nation's most successful mayors in bridging this gap. First elected in 1983, Flynn left office nine years later to become U.S. ambassador to the Vatican. Growing up in South Boston, Flynn's father was an immigrant longshore worker, and his mother cleaned downtown office buildings. After serving 15 years on the city council, Flynn mounted a surprisingly vigorous campaign in the 1983 mayoral race by building on his support from tenants' groups and neighborhood organizations. He stirred up his poor, largely Roman Catholic followers by pitting them against the Yankee blue-bloods and downtown Republicans and promised to implement linkage policies to force developers to help the neighborhoods.

Once in office, Flynn recognized the importance of forging a governing coalition. Abandoning the confrontational rhetoric that had gotten him elected, he forged an alliance with business based on a program that would pursue downtown development and residential revitalization at the same time. Boston's booming downtown office market allowed developers to make profits even while paying linkage fees, which required them to help pay for public improvements in exchange for development permits. He strengthened the city's rent control laws and enacted regulations to limit the conversion of rental units into condominiums. Flynn persuaded the city council to enact a housing policy that required developers of projects with 10 or more units to set aside 10 percent of the units for low- and moderate-income families, and a "linked deposit" policy in which the city would deposit its funds only with banks that demonstrated a commitment to their surrounding areas. The city contributed funds to Boston's nonprofit housing developers and also gave crucial support to one of the most successful comprehensive neighborhood revitalization projects in the country, the so-called Dudley Street Neighborhood Initiative (DSNI). With one-third of the land vacant, DSNI was blocked from assembling desirable parcels by an impossibly complex jigsaw puzzle of private ownership. In an unprecedented move, the city gave DSNI, a community-based organization, the power of eminent domain so that it could force owners to sell their properties.[97]

How successful was Flynn in improving the lives of neighborhood residents? By 1993, linkage fees had raised about $70 million and helped build 10,000 affordable housing units, and by the end of Flynn's second term, community-based housing corporations had built or rehabilitated another 5,000 units. The banks agreed to commit $400 million to a community reinvestment plan for low- and moderate-income areas. The Flynn administration even gave a few neighborhood councils authority over land use decisions. But only so much could be accomplished purely through local efforts.[98] Innovative local housing policies could not compensate for cuts in federal housing assistance imposed by the Reagan administration. And there was relatively little the Flynn administration could do about the income inequality arising in Boston from the combination of a booming corporate services sector and a rapidly declining industrial base.

The Decisive Turning Point

For as long as most people can remember, the central cities had been the special preserve of Democratic, liberal politicians. But beginning in the 1980s, white working-class and middle-class voters began supporting a new generation of mayors who promised to cut taxes by holding down spending, and in the 1990s the national conservative movement began to put down roots in local politics, energized in considerable measure by racial,

ethnic, and class divisions within the cities. To bring order to the streets, the new breed of urban leaders promised to get tough with criminals, panhandlers, and homeless people. Within a few years, self-styled conservative white mayors replaced prominent African American mayors in several cities. In 1993 Rudolph Giuliani, a former district attorney, defeated New York's first black mayor, David Dinkins; that same year in Los Angeles, millionaire financier Richard Riordan defeated Mike Woo, an Asian American who tried unsuccessfully to reconstruct Tom Bradley's coalition. A year earlier, Bret Schundler had become the first Republican in 75 years to be elected mayor of Jersey City, New Jersey, and Republican Stephen Goldsmith became mayor of Indianapolis. Elsewhere, African American mayors were defeated by Democrats who advocated distinctly downtown-oriented agendas. Richard M. Daley, the son of Democratic machine boss Richard J. Daley, twice defeated African American opponents, and Edward Rendell replaced Philadelphia's first black mayor, Wilson Goode. Although it would not be accurate to call all of these mayors conservative if we are using the ideological yardstick employed in national political discourse, their rise to power signaled a distinct turn towards new policy priorities.

The change in direction was provoked by resentments about minority political demands, especially in the areas of affirmative action and busing; opposition by downtown business elites to higher taxes and programs with a social welfare dimension; and widespread anxiety about crime and disorder. The first generation of conservative mayors came into office during a period of high tension. In the wake of the Los Angeles riots of 1992, issues connected to social disorder, drugs, and crime reverberated all through the American political system. By playing on such themes, Republican Rudolph Giuliani was able to overcome a six-to-one Democratic advantage in party registration in the 1993 mayoral race in New York City. Giuliani received 78 percent of the white vote; by contrast, the African American incumbent, David Dinkins, carried 95 percent of the African American vote. Giuliani's campaign slogan, "Taking Back the City," played on a law-and-order theme and racial antagonisms. Latinos played a crucial role in the election. Giuliani had lost by a narrow margin in 1989, when he received 34 percent of the Latino vote. In the 1993 election, Giuliani put a prominent Latino politician, Herman Badillo, on his ticket for the office of city comptroller. This time, Giuliani got 39 percent of the Latino vote. He also benefited from an unusually high voter turnout in the borough of Staten Island, a turnout stimulated by a ballot initiative calling for secession from New York City. Racial tensions provided the main motivation for the controversial proposal to secede.[99]

Latino voters also supplied the swing vote in the 1993 Los Angeles mayoral race. A Republican, Richard Riordan, carried only 14 percent of the African American vote that year, but he defeated a Democratic candidate, Mike Woo. Riordan won the election by persuading 67 percent of white voters and 43 percent of Latino voters to support him. To achieve name recognition, Riordan poured $6 million of his own money into the campaign. Riordan had acquired his fortune by financing leveraged buyouts through junk bonds and by speculating in downtown Los Angeles real estate. He had been a frequent contributor to Tom Bradley's campaigns, and by portraying himself as a pragmatic manager "tough enough to turn L.A. around," he was able to win 31 percent of the votes cast by previous Bradley supporters.[100] In April 1997, Riordan won reelection with 61 percent of the vote; he improved his support among Latino voters but lost the African American vote by a three-to-one ratio.

The conservative mayors fought hard to reverse policies perceived as unfairly benefiting blacks. At the time Giuliani was elected, 38 percent of New York City's municipal jobs went to African Americans, even though they constituted only 29 percent of the city's population.[101] On taking office, Giuliani repealed the city's affirmative action policies in hiring and contracting, and he began to reduce city payrolls. Within two years, the city's workforce had been trimmed by 17,000 workers.

Concerns about law and order also contributed to the new turn in city politics. Crime became a highly charged symbolic issue, "a shorthand signal, to crucial numbers of white voters, of broader issues of social disorder, tapping powerful ideas about authority, status, morality, self-control, and race."[102] Some voters perceived black mayors as being soft on crime because they tended to advocate more spending on social services and supported civilian review boards to monitor police conduct.[103] Conservatives vowed to "get tough" with criminals. As a former federal prosecutor, Giuliani was ideally situated to portray himself as a law-and-order candidate.

Giuliani delivered on his promises by cutting budgets for almost every city agency except the police and fire departments. He hired William Bratton as his police commissioner. Bratton instituted three controversial policing strategies. First, officers were allocated to hotspots identified from daily computer mappings of shootings and drug sales. Second, police began to crack down on minor offenses such as drinking in public, urinating on the street, and hassling motorists by demanding money for cleaning their windshields. This strategy was derived from the so-

called broken windows theory of urban decline. Stated broadly, the theory suggested that small signs of decay, such as broken windows and trash on empty lots, serve as signs that an area is dangerous and in decline. As applied to crime control, it meant that even small offenses would be punished. Third, officers were encouraged to frisk people who were stopped for minor violations, such as playing loud music or drinking in public, in order to get guns off the street.

The new policing strategies appeared to work when New York's crime rate dropped dramatically. The number of murders fell nearly 60 percent, from a high of 2,262 in 1990 to 983 by 1996. Formerly regarded as one of the most dangerous cities in the nation, for the first six months of 1996 New York City ranked 144th out of the largest 189 cities in per capita total crime.[104] Although the media attributed the decline to the new policing strategies, in fact the crime rate had begun to drop in the last year of the Dinkins administration, and the fall in the city's crime rate followed a national trend that has continued to unfold. Nevertheless, Giuliani made the improved crime statistics a major plank in his successful 1997 reelection campaign. In Giuliani's second term, crime continued to fall (again, in parallel with a national trend). There were 672 murders committed in the city in 2000.[105]

In addition to exploiting racially charged issues, the new generation of mayors also claimed to possess the magic formula for bringing prosperity to the local economy. The formula was made up of a combination of cuts in spending and aggressive policies to stimulate investment. Conservatives had initially developed their analysis of the urban condition in response to New York City's fiscal crisis of 1975. When the banks refused to underwrite any more of its loans in April of that year, the city suddenly found it impossible to borrow the money it needed to meet payroll obligations and redeem outstanding notes. Conservatives blamed the crisis on a habit of profligate spending. The writer Ken Auletta said the prominent conservative William F. Buckley had been right when he ran for mayor in 1965. As Auletta put it: "We [in New York City] have conducted a noble experiment in local socialism and income redistribution, one clear result of which has been to redistribute much of our tax base and many jobs right out of the city."[106]

Ed Koch won the mayoral race in 1977 by emphasizing just such an analysis of the causes of New York's fiscal crisis. Soon after entering city hall, Koch asserted that "the main job of municipal government is to create a climate in which private business can expand in the city to provide jobs and profit. It's not the function of government to create jobs on the public payroll."[107] As mayor Koch provided billions of dollars of incentives for businesses at the same time that he laid off 60,000 city workers. His policies appealed to homeowners in Brooklyn and Queens, who were sick of high taxes, and to real estate developers and to Wall Street firms, who expressed their gratitude in the form of generous campaign contributions.

In the 1990s conservatives continued to attack their opponents as representatives of special interests whose free-spending policies would bankrupt cities. At the same time, they argued that all the problems their cities faced could be solved if the private sector were unleashed. The rhetoric of fiscal crisis became a useful way of withdrawing the city from a variety of programs and services with a social content.[108] Mayor Giuliani cut city payrolls and services, reduced income taxes and property taxes on condominiums and co-ops, and slashed the commercial rent tax and the hotel tax on the grounds that reduced taxes would stimulate private investment. His counterpart across the country, Los Angeles mayor Richard Riordan, took a similar approach. "Economic development is the whole future of the city," Riordan said during his first year in office.[109] Working to reduce the regulatory burden on developers, Riordan pushed generous business subsidies. In one case, he put together a $70 million subsidy package to convince Dreamworks SKG to build its new studio in Los Angeles.[110]

Privatization, which was often identified as part of the conservative agenda of the 1980s, quickly became popular with mayors across the political spectrum. The term meant that to reduce costs, city governments should contract out such services as garbage collection and even education (in the form of charter schools). As a way of cutting costs and improving quality, privatization is long standing and non-controversial. In the city-building era at the beginning of the twentieth century, cities contracted for streetcar, telephone, and utilities services, and many also contracted with private firms for water supply. The city of San Francisco contracted out garbage collection to private companies as early as 1932.[111] Partial privatization, which involves contracting out publicly funded services, often saves city governments money. One of the earliest scholarly evaluations concluded that Scottsdale, Arizona, by contracting for fire protection from a private firm, paid about half of what it would have had to pay if it had provided the service itself.[112] A 1982 survey of 1,780 cities found that the average city contracts approximately 26 percent of its services, in whole or part, to private firms.[113]

In the 1980s, however, privatization had become a strategy not only to make government more efficient but also to reduce its size and scope. E. S. Savas, called the "godfather of privatization," served as assistant secretary of Housing and Urban Development (HUD) during the Reagan administration. In his several books, Savas stressed that privatization was a tool not only to make a better government but to make a more limited government—"limited in its size, scope, and power relative to society's other institutions."[114] Savas later became an adviser to the Giuliani administration, which used privatization mainly as a threat to squeeze concessions out of municipal unions.

Among mayors, Indianapolis mayor Stephen Goldsmith, who did not fit any ideological label, became one of the most ardent proponents of privatization. Elected in 1992, during his first 18 months in office Goldsmith privatized 14 services, sold off the municipal golf course, and slashed the city payroll from 5,700 to 4,200, giving Indianapolis the lowest number of employees per capita of any of the nation's 50 largest cities.[115] When Goldsmith attempted to contract with neighborhood groups and churches to maintain local parks, however, he found little interest, and his proposal to privatize two troubled public housing projects was vehemently opposed by the residents.[116] Called a "populist Republican," Goldsmith won support by allocating city resources to neighborhood organizations in distressed inner-city areas, but critics argued that this only crippled the ability of the city to regulate some of its key services.[117]

It is difficult to assess the political significance of the conservative mayors and their peers, in part because policies at the urban level rarely can be neatly put into an ideological box. Mayors respond to the constituencies that elect them, and to the overall demographic profiles of their cities. All mayors realize that they must appeal to a diverse array of racial and ethnic groups. For this reason, conservative mayors have not tended to toe the line in observing the national Republican platform. For example, in the 1990s and beyond both Giuliani and Riordan bucked the national Republican agenda and opposed legislation that would deny government benefits to immigrants who had not yet become citizens. Giuliani's stance cost him dearly in his bid for the presidency in 2008.

In the 2010s, it appears that cities have "bounced back" a bit from the "neoliberal turn" in urban politics.[118] Michael Bloomberg, who succeeded Rudi Giuliani, spurred urban investment and development. His legacy, however, is mixed, as he cut down on public housing programs, and the homeless population in the city increased considerably during his time in office.[119] Bloomberg's 12 years of tenure as mayor of New York City ended in early 2014. His successor, Bill de Blasio, was the first Democratic mayor of the city since Ed Koch to be re-elected to a second term in 2017.[120] This progressive mayor, who has been building his agenda around (re-)introducing broader social programs (among them his signature program, universal [free] pre-kindergarten for all New York City residents), may encounter serious difficulties in further implementing this agenda under the Trump administration.[121] Yet, residents of the five boroughs seem to show a strong interest in the mayor's agenda, and he enjoys, for the time being, broad support. While it may be too early to tell, De Blasio may be symbolic of a local backlash against drastic social cuts at the federal level, which combined with the implementation of Trump's tax reforms in 2019, will have very serious effects on America's largest cities.

The Racial and Ethnic Future

The nature of a city's economy and its political culture powerfully shapes a mayor's municipal agenda. Urban leaders, even when they identify as conservatives, reflect the complex makeup of their constituencies. They generally take moderate positions on such explosive social issues as affirmative action hiring and multicultural curricula in the schools. Likewise, self-styled progressive mayors who emphasize issues of social justice tend to move to the political center and join their more conservative counterparts in pursuing policies that promote economic growth and downtown development. At the local level, partisan and ideological differences break down, and often do not matter at all.

Nevertheless, it is important to emphasize that racial and ethnic conflict remains a powerful force shaping city politics. Examples are not hard to find. In 2012, for instance, the District of Columbia's District Ward 5 faced an election after its former councilman was forced from office by a criminal conviction. A crowded ballot, with ten Democrats, an Independent and a Republican, assured that the campaign would be hotly contested, and the makeup of the district virtually guaranteed that it would have a racial dimension. An Advisory Neighborhood Commissioner stated that the election's outcome could well be determined along racial lines: "I am very concerned that rigor mortis will set in and white folks will get mad and vote, and black folks will get mad and stay home."[122]

The African American population is falling, from 90 percent in 2000 to 77 percent in 2010.[123] Despite the commissioner's worries, Harry Thomas, Jr., an African American Democrat, won the election.

In April 2013, *Washington Post* columnist Colbert I. King, in a piece about the April 23rd council elections, wrote that "race doesn't belong in D.C. Council election." It was a forlorn hope.[124] When one of the candidates pulled out of the race, Anita Bonds, a Democrat, remained the only African American candidate in the race, and she quickly sought to garner the support of black voters on the basis of a shared racial identity. Candidate Patrick Mara, the only Republican candidate, responded in kind by appealing to the white residents of Chevy Chase, urging them to vote as a "bloc" and keep the only possible black candidate out of office.

In February 2013, civil rights activists in Antelope Valley, California, filed a complaint in Los Angeles County Superior Court alleging racial bias in the city's elections, arguing that Palmdale, California's system of at-large council seats unconstitutionally diminished the influence of minority voters. This conflict was merely the most recent in a series of high-profile conflicts over housing programs and police practices. For some time, blacks and Latinos had been moving into predominantly white neighborhoods, which kept the pot boiling.

Racial and ethnic issues are certain to remain as a pivotal feature of politics at all levels of governance into the foreseeable future. It has been estimated that around the year 2050, the United States will become a "majority minority," but such a statistic does not mean that "minorities," as a group, will be able to wield decisive power. The relationship between African Americans and Latinos is complex, and it is constantly evolving. A 2008 survey by Pew Research found that "overwhelming majorities of both blacks and Hispanics have favorable views of each other,"[125] and a majority from both "sides" agrees that the two groups get along well or fairly well. Hispanics and blacks living in counties with high concentrations of African Americans are more likely to say that the two groups get along well than Hispanics and blacks living in low-density black counties, indicating perhaps that proximity is associated with an increased tolerance or acceptance.

But the harmony that is sometimes achieved between different minority groups is a fragile thing. Recently, disagreements on issues of immigration threaten to increase, rather than bridge, the divide between the two groups. The growing Hispanic population, which is projected to surpass the African American population by 2050, is causing concern among some blacks, with many hoping that "Latinos understand they're not White and that they will stay connected to African Americans … Black folks hear Latinos say 'We get it, and we're also discriminated against' … and have a hard time accepting that Latinos face any kind of discrimination that is similar or as extreme as what they experience."[126] The possibility for both cooperation and conflict is an ever-present reality in American urban politics, and it will not soon go away.

Endnotes

1 *Report of the National Advisory Commission on Civil Disorders* (New York: Bantam Books, 1968).
2 Christopher L. Warren, John G. Corbett, and John F. Stack Jr., "Hispanic Ascendancy and Tripartite Politics in Miami," in *Racial Politics in American Cities,* ed. Rufus P. Browning, Dale Rogers Marshall, and David H. Tabb (New York: Longman, 1990), p. 166.
3 James H. Johnson Jr., Cloyzelle K. Jones, Walter C. Farrell Jr., and Melvin L. Oliver, "The Los Angeles Rebellion: A Retrospective View," *Economic Development Quarterly* 6, no. 4 (November 1992): 356–372.
4 Jack Miles, "Blacks vs. Brown," *The Atlantic* (October 1992): 41–68; see also Mike Davis, "In L.A., Burning All Illusions," *The Nation* (June 1, 1992), pp. 743–746.
5 Tim Rutten, "A New Kind of Riot," *New York Review of Books* (June 11, 1992), pp. 52–54.
6 Wes Woods II, "Fontana Students Blame Riot on Simmering Racial Tension," *Inland Valley Daily Bulletin* (October 20, 2006).
7 Chris Maag, "What Triggered the Toledo Riots?" *Time Magazine* (October 16, 2005).
8 Elizabeth Kneebone, "Ferguson, Mo. Emblematic of Growing Suburban Poverty," *The Brookings Institution* (August 15, 2014). Accessed online: www.brookings.edu/blog/the-avenue/2014/08/15/ferguson-mo-emblematic-of-growing-suburban-poverty/
9 Ibid.
10 Q&A: What Happened in Ferguson?" *New York Times* (last updated August 10, 2015). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/interactive/2014/08/13/us/ferguson-missouri-town-under-siege-after-police-shooting.html
11 Michael S. Schmidt, Matt Apuzzo, and Julie Bosman, "Police Officer in Ferguson Is Said to Recount a Struggle," *New York Times* (October 17, 2014). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2014/10/18/us/ferguson-case-officer-is-said-to-cite-struggle.html?smid=pl-share
12 Monica Davey and Julie Bosman, "Protests Flare After Ferguson Police Officer Is Not Indicted," *New York Times* (November 24, 2014). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2014/11/25/us/ferguson-darren-wilson-shooting-michael-brown-grand-jury.html
13 Michael S. Schmidt, Matt Apuzzo and Julie Bosman, "Police Officer in Ferguson Is Said to Recount a Struggle," *New York Times* (October 17, 2014). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2014/10/18/us/ferguson-case-officer-is-said-to-cite-struggle.html?smid=pl-share
14 Tim Prudente, "With Prosecutions Over, Six Baltimore Officers Back at Work After Death of Freddie Gray," *Baltimore Sun* (November 30, 2017). Accessed online: www.baltimoresun.com/news/maryland/crime/bs-md-ci-officers-back-to-work-20171128-story.html
15 David A. Graham, "The Mysterious Death of Freddie Gray," *The Atlantic* (April 22, 2015). Accessed online: www.theatlantic.com/politics/archive/2015/04/the-mysterious-death-of-freddie-gray/391119/
16 Ibid.

17 Tim Prudente, "With Prosecutions Over, Six Baltimore Officers Back at Work After Death of Freddie Gray," *Baltimore Sun* (November 30, 2017). Accessed online: www.baltimoresun.com/news/maryland/crime/bs-md-ci-officers-back-to-work-20171128-story.html
18 Ibid.
19 Ibid.
20 Ibid.
21 U.S. Census, *The 2012 Statistical Abstract,* www.census.gov
22 Ibid.
23 Ibid.
24 Rodney E. Hero and Susan E. Clarke, "Latinos, Blacks, and Multiethnic Politics in Denver: Realigning Power and Influence in the Struggle for Democracy," in *Racial Politics in American Cities,* 3rd ed., ed. Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, p. 327.
25 Raphael Sonenshein, "The Prospects for Multiracial Coalitions: Lessons from America's Three Largest Cities," in *Racial Politics in American Cities,* 3rd ed., ed. Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, pp. 333–356.
26 U.S. Bureau of the Census, *Statistical Abstract of the United States: 1995* (Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1995), p. 287.
27 Joint Center for Political and Economic Studies, *Black Elected Officials: A Statistical Summary, 2001* (Washington, DC: Author, 2001), p. 8.
28 The Joint Center for Political and Economic Studies, "History of the Joint Center for Political and Economic Studies" (March 3, 2014) Accessed online: http://jointcenter.org/about/history-joint-center-political-and-economic-studies
29 National Association of Latino Elected and Appointed Officials (Washington, DC: Author, *National Roster of Hispanic Elected Officials,* annual).
30 NALEO Educational Fund, 2014National Directory of Latino Elected Officials, p. 334.
31 Hero and Clarke, "Latinos, Blacks, and Multiethnic Politics in Denver," p. 316.
32 John Mollenkopf, *A Phoenix in the Ashes: The Rise and the Fall of the Koch Coalition in New York City Politics* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1992), p. 12.
33 Raphael J. Sonenshein, *Politics in Black and White: Race and Power in Los Angeles* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1993), p. 63.
34 Patrick D. Joyce, "A Reversal of Fortunes: Black Empowerment, Political Machines, and City Jobs in New York City and Chicago," *Urban Affairs Review* 32, no. 3 (1997): 291–318.
35 Charles P. Henry, "Urban Politics and Incorporation: The Case of Blacks, Latinos, and Asians in Three Cities," in *Blacks, Latinos, and Asians in Urban America: Status and Prospects for Politics and Activism,* ed. James Jennings (Westport, CT: Praeger, 1994), p. 18.
36 Our account of Koch is based on Mollenkopf, *A Phoenix in the Ashes.*
37 Quotes in ibid., pp. 171–172.
38 John Mollenkopf, "New York: Still the Great Anomaly," in *Racial Politics in American Cities,* ed. Browning, Marshall,and Tabb, p. 120.
39 Ibid.
40 Ibid.
41 Hero and Clarke, "Latinos, Blacks and Multiethnic Politics in Denver," p. 317.
42 Rufus P. Browning, Dale Rogers Marshall, and David H. Tabb, *Protest Is Not Enough: The Struggle of Blacks and Hispanics for Equality in Urban Politics* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1984), pp. 171–174; Peter K. Eisinger, "Black Mayors and the Politics of Racial Economic Advancement," in *Urban Politics: Past, Present, and Future,* 2nd ed., ed. Harlan Hahn and Charles H. Levine (New York: Longman, 1984), pp. 249–260; Kenneth R. Mladenka, "Blacks and Hispanics in Urban Politics," *American Political Science Review* 83, no. 1 (March 1989): 165–191. Mladenka concludes that minority mayors have little impact on policy outcomes, but minority council majorities do.
43 Sonenshein, *Politics in Black and White,* p. 152.
44 Timothy Bates and Darrell Williams, "Preferential Procurement Programs and Minority-Owned Businesses," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 17, no. 1 (1995): 1.
45 Clarence N. Stone, *Regime Politics: Governing Atlanta 1946–1988* (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1989), p. 145, Chapter 1.
46 *City of Richmond v. J. A. Croson Co.,* 109 S.Ct. 706 (1989).
47 Mitchell F. Rice, "State and Local Government Set-Aside Programs, Disparity Studies, and Minority Business Development in the Post-*Croson* Era," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 15, no. 6 (1993): 529–553.
48 Mike Davis, *City of Quartz: Excavating the Future in Los Angeles* (London: Verso, 1990), pp. 251–253.
49 Ibid., p. 277.
50 Ibid., p. 272.
51 Sonenshein, *Politics in Black and White,* pp. 155–161.
52 Albert Karnig and Susan Welch, *Black Representation and Urban Policy* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1980); Eisinger, "Black Mayors"; Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, *Protest Is Not Enough;* Mladenka, "Blacks and Hispanics in Urban Politics"; Grace Hall Saltzstein, "Black Mayors and Police Policies," *Journal of Politics* 51, no. 3 (August 1989): 525–544.
53 Paula D. McClain and Albert Karnig, "Black and Hispanic Socioeconomic and Political Competition," *American Political Science Review* 84, no. 2 (June 1990): 535–545; Paula D. McClain, "The Changing Dynamics of Urban Politics: Black and Hispanic Municipal Employment—Is There Competition?" *Journal of Politics* 55, no. 2 (May 1993): 399–414.
54 Eisinger, "Black Mayors," p. 257.
55 See the detailed case studies of 12 cities in Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, *Racial Politics in American Cities,* 3rd ed.
56 Eisinger, "Black Mayors," p. 258.
57 William Julius Wilson, *The Truly Disadvantaged: The Inner City, the Underclass, and Public Policy* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1987), p. 115.
58 Perry, in Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, *Racial Politics in America,* 3rd ed., p. 251.
59 Lawrence Bobo and Franklin D. Gilliam Jr., "Race, Sociopolitical Participation, and Black Empowerment," *American Political Science Review* 84, no. 2 (June 1990): 377–393.
60 See Browning, Marshall, and Tabb, *Racial Politics in American Cities,* 3rd ed.
61 "Profile of the Unauthorized Population: United States," The Migration Policy Institute (2014). Accessed online. www.migrationpolicy.org/data/unauthorized-immigrant-population/state/US
62 Clyde Haberman, "Trump and the Battle Over Sanctuary in America." *New York Times* (March 5, 2017).
63 Ibid.

64 Ibid.
65 Marc R. Rosenblum, "Federal-Local Cooperation on Immigration Enforcement Frayed; Chance for Improvement Exists," The Migration Policy Institute (July 2015). Accessed online: www.migrationpolicy.org/news/federal-local-cooperation-immigration-enforcement-frayed-chance-improvement-exists
66 Ibid.
67 Ibid.
68 Ibid.
69 Ibid.
70 Ibid.
71 Ibid.
72 Ibid.
73 Jon Campbell, "Attorneys General Fight Trump's 'Sanctuary City' Threats," *USA Today*(May 17, 2017). Accessed online: www.usatoday.com/story/news/politics/2017/05/17/donald-trumps-sanctuary-city-executive-order-under-fire-attorneys-general/327670001/
74 Ibid.
75 Maria Sacchetti, "Trump Administration Targets 'Sanctuary' Cities in Latest Wave of Immigration Arrests," *Washington Post,* September 28, 2017. Accessed online: www.washingtonpost.com/local/immigration/trump-administration-targets-sanctuary-cities-in-latest-wave-of-immigration-arrests/2017/09/28/9b5e7de2-a477-11e7-ade1-76d061d56efa_story.html?utm_term=.e2cf8479adb6
76 Ibid.
77 Ibid.
78 Carl Abbott, *Portland: Planning, Politics, and Growth in a Twentieth-Century City* (Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1983), Chapters 8 and 9.
79 John Clayton Thomas, *Between Citizen and City: Neighborhood Organizations and Urban Politics in Cincinnati* (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1986), Chapter 6.
80 Pierre Clavel, *The Progressive City: Planning and Participation, 1969–1984* (New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1986), Chapter 2.
81 Stella M. Capek and John I. Gilderbloom, *Community versus Commodity: Tenants and the American City* (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1992), p. 182.
82 Carmine Scavo, "The Use of Regulative Mechanisms by Large U.S. Cities," *Journal of Urban Affairs* 15, no. 1 (1993): 100.
83 Robert F. Pecorella, *Community Power in a Postreform City* (Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 1994).
84 Jeffrey M. Berry, Kent E. Portney, and Ken Thomson, *The Rebirth of Urban Democracy* (Washington, DC: Brookings Institution Press, 1993), p. 13.
85 Edward G. Goetz, *Shelter Burden: Local Politics and Progressive Housing Policy* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1993), p. 52.
86 Barbara Ferman, *Governing the Ungovernable City: Political Skill, Leadership, and the Modern Mayor* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1985), Chapter 1; Stone, *Regime Politics,* Chapter 1. Urban regime theory stresses that cities are not governed by elected officials but by "informal arrangements by which public bodies and private interests function together in order to be able to make and carry out governing decisions." Ibid., p. 6.
87 See Adolph Reed, "The Black Urban Regime: Structural Origins and Constraints," *Comparative Urban and Community Research* 1, no. 1 (1987): 138–189; and "Demobilization in the New Black Political Regime: Ideological Capitulation and Radical Failure in the Postsegregation Era," in *The Bubbling Cauldron: Race, Ethnicity, and the Urban Crisis,* ed. Michael Peter Smith and Joe R. Feagin (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1995), pp. 182–208.
88 Maynard Jackson, quoted in Stone, *Regime Politics,* p. 87.
89 Adolph Reed Jr., "A Critique of Neo-Progressivism in Theorizing about Local Development Policy: A Case from Atlanta," in *The Politics of Urban Development,* ed. Clarence N. Stone and Heywood T. Sanders (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1987), p. 206.
90 Quoted in Stone, *Regime Politics,* p. 136.
91 The evaluation of black progress in Atlanta that follows is based on Gary Orfield and Carole Ashkinaze, *The Closing Door: Conservative Policy and Black Opportunity* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1991).
92 Cited in ibid., p. 151.
93 Wilson, *The Truly Disadvantaged,* p. 135.
94 Sonenshein, *Politics in Black and White,* p. 168.
95 Ibid., p. 212.
96 Joe R. Feagin, *Free Enterprise City: Houston in Political and Economic Perspective* (New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1988), pp. 279–280.
97 Peter Medoff and Holly Sklar, *Streets of Hope: The Fall and Rise of an Urban Neighborhood* (Boston: South End Press, 1994).
98 Peter Dreier and W. Dennis Keating, "The Limits of Localism: Progressive Housing Policies in Boston, 1984–1989," *Urban Affairs Quarterly* 26, no. 2 (December 1990): 191–216.
99 Karen M. Kaufmann, "A Tale of Two Cities: The Impact of Intergroup Conflict on Mayoral Voting Behavior in Los Angeles and New York," paper delivered at the American Political Science Association Meeting (San Francisco, August 29–September 1, 1996), p. 18. Giuliani was reelected by a wide margin in 1997.
100 Ibid., p. 22.
101 Institute for Puerto Rican Policy, *The Giuliani Budget Cuts and People of Color: Disproportionate Employment Impact* (New York: Institute for Puerto Rican Policy, 1994), p. 1; as reported in Michael Leo Owens, "Race, Place, and Government Employment," paper delivered at the New York State Political Science Association Meeting (Ithaca, NY, March 29–30, 1996), p. 12.
102 Thomas Byrne Edsall and Mary D. Edsall, *Chain Reaction: The Impact of Race, Rights, and Taxes on American Politics* (New York: Norton, 1991), p. 224. Emphasis on the word *signal* removed from the original.
103 Saltzstein, "Black Mayors and Police Policies," pp. 525–544.
104 Randy Kennedy, "FBI Reports New York Safer than Most Cities," *New York Times* (January 6, 1997), p. B5.
105 University of Virginia Library, Geospatial and Statistical Data Center, http://cba.unomaha.edu/faculty/cdecker/WEB/Geospatial%20and%20Statistical%20Data%20Center.htm
106 Quoted in William E. Simon, *A Time for Truth* (New York: Berkeley Books, 1978), p. 155.

107 Quoted in Martin Shefter, *Political Crisis/Fiscal Crisis: The Collapse and Revival of New York City* (New York: Basic Books, 1985), p. 175.
108 Ester R. Fuchs, *Mayors and Money: Fiscal Policy in New York and Chicago* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1992).
109 Quoted in Laura Mecoy, "Ain't Too Proud to Beg: Is L.A.'s Businessman Mayor Good for L.A. Business?" *Los Angeles* (July 1996).
110 Ibid.
111 David F. Linowes, *Privatization: Toward More Effective Government. Report of the President's Commission on Privatization* (Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1988), p. 2.
112 Roger S. Ahlbrandt Jr., *Municipal Fire Protection Services: Comparison of Alternative Organizational Forms* (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1973).
113 Derived from *Rethinking Local Services: Examining Alternative Service Delivery Approaches* (Washington, DC: International City Management Association, 1984), Table B; as reported in E. S. Savas, *Privatization: The Key to Better Government* (Chatham, NJ: Chatham House, 1987), p. 72.
114 Ibid., p. 288.
115 Nancy Hass, "Philadelphia Freedom: How Privatization Has Worked Wonders in the City of Brotherly Love and Beyond," *Financial World* 162, no. 16 (1993): 37.
116 William D. Eggers, "Righting City Hall," *National Review* 46, no. 16 (1994): 40.
117 Rob Gurwitt, "Indianapolis and the Republican Future," *Governing* 7, no. 5 (February 1994): 24–28.
118 Jamie Peck, Nik Theodore, and Neil Brenner, "Neoliberal Urbanism: Models, Moments, Mutations," *SAIS Review* 29, no. 1 (Winter/Spring 2009).
119 The Editorial Board, "12 Years of Mayor Bloomberg," *New York Times* (December 28, 2013). Accessed online: www.nytimes.com/2013/12/29/opinion/sunday/12-years-of-mayor-bloomberg.html
120 William Neuman and J. David Goodman, "De Blasio Coasts to Re-election, as Second-Term Challenges Await," *New York Times* (November 7, 2017).
121 Ibid.
122 Liz Farmer, "Anti-Thomas Sentiment Expected to be Factor in Ward 5 Election," *The Examiner* (May 7, 2012).
123 Ibid.
124 John V. LaBaume, "Op-Ed: No Room for 'Race' in D.C. Council Election but There Is Lots for 'Reform,'" *The Examiner: Opinion* (April 16, 2013).
125 "Do Blacks and Hispanics Get Along?" *Pew Research: Social and Demographic* (January 31, 2008).
126 Wendy Conklin, "Latinos and Blacks: What Unites and Divides Us?" *The Diversity Factor* 16, no.1 (Winter 2008).

CHAPTER 15

City and Metropolis in the Global Era

Urban Politics in a Time of Change

Cities and urban regions have been utterly transformed by the globalization processes that have defined the twenty-first century. The rapid movement of capital around the globe has forced to cities into an intense inter-urban competition for investment. For many cities, the outcome was very much in doubt. Those that had prospered during the industrial era went through a painful period of economic restructuring when manufacturing jobs moved elsewhere and service employment became the new engine of growth. Those that have made the transition have experienced a stunning revival. Downtown skylines and old neighborhoods have been transformed, and as a visitor to one of these cities can observe, an exciting streetlife and urban culture has emerged. Bicycle and walking paths snake by sparkling waterfront developments and urban parks. All of these amenities are part of a new economy that makes the modern city into "a dreamscape of visual consumption."[1]

Most people would regard these changes as positive developments, but there is also another side to the story. Even while cities were becoming more prosperous, they were also becoming more divided. Two streams of movement have transformed large and small cities alike in the space of a remarkably few years. One stream has been made up of highly educated white-collar professionals: corporate managers, management consultants, legal experts, accountants, computer specialists, financial analysts, media and public relations specialists, and more. Another stream has been composed of service workers who fill jobs at the other end of pyramid. The maintenance, clerical, and personal services jobs required in high-rise office buildings and the low-wage, often seasonal work available in restaurants, entertainment venues, tourism, and associated businesses have drawn large numbers of immigrants and ethnic minorities. These twin migrations have created an easily recognized patchwork geography. While affluent professionals have moved into downtown condominium towers, gentrified neighborhoods, and suburban gated communities, newer immigrants, ethnic minorities, and the poor live in poorer neighborhoods sprinkled throughout the metropolitan region. And, contrary to the trends of the late 1990s and early 2000s, in the 2010s, the divisions between the poor and the wealthy have become more pronounced. According to recent census data, in the year 2000 around 50 million Americans lived in poverty areas, which means neighborhoods and/or census tracts where poverty is concentrated. Of those 50 million, 29 million lived in urban areas, 9.9 in suburban parts of larger metros, and 10.7 million in rural settings.[2] By 2010, the picture had become more dire, as well as more complex: the total number of Americans living in poverty areas was 77.4 million in 2010, a more than 50 percent increase from the year 2000.[3] Of those people, 39.5 million were located in central cities, 22.1 in metro area suburbs, and 15.8 million in rural areas.[4] In other words, suburban poverty had almost doubled over the course of 10 years, and the amount of people living in poverty in cities had also grown, in spite of the positive demographic changes that cities have seen at the same time.

Therefore, the latest version of the revitalized city and of the fragmented metropolis is different from what came before. Urban regions are no longer divided between troubled inner cities and affluent, white suburbs. The demographic movements associated with the global economy have made the city and its suburbs racially and ethnically diverse. But it is not easy to interpret what this means. Some observers find evidence of progress and improvement wherever they look; others believe it is the same old politics in a new guise. Convincing arguments can be offered for both points of view.

The New (but Actually Old) Growth Politics

In recent decades, cities (as well as nations) have joined a fierce competition for a share of the global economy.

Local efforts have had some effect, as evidenced by the groves of skyscrapers and clusters of entertainment facilities that have sprouted in recent years in the larger cities to house the new economic activities driving downtown development: finance, telecommunications, corporate and professional offices, tourism and leisure. Cities of all sizes and circumstances try to get their share. Just two months before Hurricane Katrina hit the city, the state of Louisiana agreed to give the New Orleans Saints $12.4 million to keep the team from leaving,[5] and in 2010 the Saints won the Super Bowl. Meanwhile, devastated neighborhoods still lay in ruins and levees were still in bad repair. For some people, this policy trade-off might be interpreted as a metaphor for the policy priorities that exist almost everywhere.

Who reaps the benefits of the global economy? The advantages for a cosmopolitan class that holds the best jobs can be observed in the images conveyed in the urban lifestyle magazines. These colorful, advertisement-filled publications are similar from city to city because the target audience is unvarying: an affluent middle class made up disproportionately of empty nesters and younger singles or childless couples. Each month, columns written by lifestyle writers and critics promote restaurants and entertainment spots, wine and cigar bars, shopping opportunities, and the other amenities and entertainments of an urbane lifestyle. One could get the impression that every downtown in America is unique and exciting, although they also seem to be little more than copies of one another.

It may be useful to consider whether affluent urban residents live, work, and play in "Potemkin cities,"[6] where a thriving downtown and a tourist bubble mask serious urban problems, or in "boutique cities" such as Seattle and Denver, where highly paid professionals are able to sustain a critical mass of expensive restaurants, international boutique and clothing stores, and neighborhoods with stratospheric housing prices.[7] In the 1950s and 1960s, African Americans in poor neighborhoods were often threatened by the urban renewal bulldozer. In the new century, ethnic minorities and new immigrants sometimes face a bulldozer with a friendlier face; after all, homeowners living in gentrifying neighborhoods can reap benefits from rising property values. But there is no use glossing over the fact that there are many losers: working-class residents and the poor are regularly shoved out by the gentrifying professional class. The politics of economic inequality plays out a little differently in the suburbs, but with equal force. The residents of older inner-ring suburbs often are displaced by gentrification, like their city cousins, and end up living in suburbs where the tax base is too low to support adequate services.

What remedies are there for these problems? Judging by the policies they favor, local political leaders seem to believe that the most effective thing they can do is more of the same. Other issues may seem pressing, but none receive more care and feeding than businesses, investors, affluent homeowners, and others (such as tourists) who might help bring prosperity to the local economy. At the same time, urban leaders go to great pains to persuade the citizenry that everyone benefits from these policies. Such public relations work often enough, but sometimes wear thin when ugly social problems become hard to ignore.

The Delicate Art of Urban Governance

Despite its manifest importance, the economic imperative sometimes must give way, or is balanced by, another imperative: the need to attend to the competing claims made by the complex mixture of groups making up the local polity. The flood tide of immigration set off by globalization guarantees that urban governance will remain a delicate art. Though issues of race and ethnicity are constantly present and sometimes contentious, it must be emphasized that the various "minority" groups are rarely brought together around a single cause. "Rainbow" coalitions that bring together African Americans with new immigrant groups have been rare, but tensions among the groups have been common.[8] If broad alliances within the central cities are uncommon, they are even rarer in the suburbs, where urban governance is complicated become it is divided up into a multitude of separate jurisdictions. A racial or ethnic group may exert influence in one community, but in the next suburb over the same group may be absent from the political scene altogether.

The gentrification of neighborhoods is a chronic source of change and dislocation. For more than 40 years, the Humboldt Park neighborhood in Chicago has been home to the largest Puerto Rican population in the city, and one of the largest in the United States. Two steel sculptures of the Puerto Rican flag serve as a reminder that the neighborhood has a distinctive culture. In the years before the housing boom went bust, white professionals and artists flooded into the neighborhood and housing prices rose, which drove out a longtime residents. In 2006, one store window displayed a "No Yuppies" sign, and verbal confrontations sometimes occurred. As if to pour gasoline onto the flames, one of the newcomers naively said, "I try to tell them before Puerto Ricans were there, there were

European Jews. And before the Jews, the Polish community was here. Neighborhoods change."[9] Perhaps so, but not without resentment, resistance, and the myriad problems that displacement brings in its path.

Economic inequality is an issue shared in common by African Americans, Latinos, and new immigrants. Since the turn of the twenty-first century, the number of people living in poverty has been steadily rising in the United States, from a low of 11.4 percent in 2000 to 12.5 percent in 2003. The poverty figures were much higher for children; by 2003, 17.6 percent of the population under the age of 18 was living in poverty households. The numbers of the medically uninsured also rose during this period to 15.6 percent of the population.[10] Tax cuts enacted in 2001 and 2002 increased tax burdens for middle-income taxpayers while reducing them for upper-income households.[11] These tax policies were just the latest round in a series of policies that since the 1980s have been sharply redistributing incomes and wealth upward in the United States. This trend was reinforced by the effects of the Great Recession of 2008–2009, and will be further pronounced, especially in America's big cities, and among the country's expensive coasts, with the implementation of the Trump tax cuts in 2019.

Poverty and inequality have always been closely associated with social disorder, expressed in the form of crime, riots, family disorganization, and community breakdown. High levels of family and community pathology still exist in poverty communities, but this does not matter much to the members of the middle class as long as it does not touch them directly. The expressions of social disorder that matter to them or that carry great symbolic weight — crime and urban rioting—have abated in the last decade. But this social peace may be fragile. In a survey conducted on the tenth anniversary of the Los Angeles riots of 1992, 50 percent of Los Angeles residents expressed the belief that riots were likely to break out in the next five years. This appraisal turned out to be overly pessimistic, but the relative quiet does not mean it will last forever.[12]

The disorganized response to the devastation visited upon New Orleans by Hurricane Katrina in September 2005 cast a national spotlight on the racial inequalities still present in America's cities. Because they lived in the least desirable areas of the city—the lowest elevation—blacks were disproportionately affected by the flooding. The political vulnerability of African American residents was also revealed. When disaster struck, the Bush administration's response was built on the assumption that everyone in New Orleans had ample personal resources. It "assumed that people would evacuate New Orleans on their own, without giving much thought to who these people were, what resources they had, or where they would go. They acted as if everyone had an SUV full of gas and family or friends (or a second home) waiting to take them in somewhere else."[13] For some people, this gaffe might be interpreted as a metaphor for the great divide that continues to haunt American society, and for the failure of government to effectively respond to it.

The Politics of the Patchwork Metropolis

The falling crime rates of the 1990s were directly related to the revival of street life and nightlife in central cities. In most American cities, people representing all income, ethnic, and racial groups mingle freely on streets and in tourist and entertainment venues. But at the same time, the new downtowns and gentrified neighborhoods are as segregated as the suburbs, though on a smaller scale. Many affluent urban residents commute from subdivisions, gated communities, townhouse developments, or condominium complexes (or at the other end of the social scale, from ghettos and rundown neighborhoods) to high-rise downtown office buildings or suburban office parks, and they drive to enclosed malls or mall complexes for shopping and commute to tourist bubbles to enjoy themselves.[14] This lifestyle creates a situation in which some urban residents experience the urban environment as little more than a series of enclosures, each connected by a transportation corridor that is itself cut off from the rest of the city.

Evidence indicates that the construction of enclaves and some degree of residential integration are happening at the same time. In the 1990s, Asians and Latinos settled in the suburbs in large numbers, but large proportions of both groups now live in ethnic enclaves that are more separated from whites than before.[15] Residential segregation levels for Latinos and Asians increased slightly in the 1990s,[16] but these groups were less segregated in the suburbs than in the central cities.[17] Some suburbs are highly segregated, whereas others provide housing opportunities for minorities and immigrants, especially if they earn middle-class incomes. Clearly, contradictory messages can be read in these trends. In a recent study, some scholars found that not only does socio-economic disadvantage correlate with race, but also that residential segregation is still initiated by whites.[18] Those in the highest income brackets with the highest amount of economic (and thus physical) mobility, are also in the position to make very active and conscious choices about the neighborhoods (and school districts) they want to reside in.[19] Individuals in

lower income brackets do not have this amount of choice, and have to limit their choices to what is affordable to them. Clearly, income segregation is not new, but this study links it specifically to race and shows that racial segregation is actively perpetuated by the lifestyle choices of the (predominantly white) high earners in any given metro area.

It is difficult to predict the spatial future of the suburbs from present patterns. There can be no doubt that suburbs have opened to minorities and to the poor. The immigration of Asians, Latinos, and other groups has made most metropolitan areas, including their suburbs, multiethnic rather than biracial. During the 1990s, for example, two parallel streams moved to Orange County, California, just outside Los Angeles: highly educated professionals and foreign-born immigrants. The two streams could hardly have been more different; high-income families making more than $150,000 per year jumped by 184 percent in the county, but at the same time the number of foreign-born immigrants increased by 48 percent.[20] Commenting on these trends, a noted demographer said the county could go into two directions, either a "mostly gated-community-type mentality" or "immigrants start integrating into middle-class areas, so you have a blended suburbia."[21]

To some degree, residential patterns may be a consequence of how recently minorities and immigrants have moved into the suburbs. Over time, they may become incorporated into the politics of suburbs in the same way they long ago became part of the political process in central cities. Suburbs are highly variable. The adjoining suburbs of Oak Park and Cicero, both on the border of Chicago, have changed quickly in the last few years. Oak Park is a middle-class to upper-income suburb that also has a stock of affordable housing. Cicero is very different: long a white working-class bastion known for rough-and-tumble, often corrupt politics, in only a decade it has become a majority-Latino city. Suburbs of all types are similarly changing in metropolitan areas across the United States. As these examples illustrate, cities and urban regions are more open than they were in the troubled period of urban riots, intense racial animosity, and rising crime; at the same time, the privatization and enclosure of urban space pulls in the opposite direction. These opposing tendencies will define the contours of American urban politics for many years to come.

Endnotes

1 Sharon Zukin, *Landscapes of Power: From Detroit to Disney World* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1991), p. 221.
2 Alemayehu Bishaw, "Changes in Areas with Concentrated Poverty: 2000 to 2010,"American *Community Survey Reports* (June 2014): 1–27.
3 Ibid.
4 Ibid.
5 "Louisiana Forks over $12.4M to Saints," *USA Today* (July 6, 2005), p. 15C.
6 According to historical accounts, General Potemkin constructed fake villages in preparation for a tour by Catherine II of the Crimea in 1787. The purpose was to fool her into thinking his conquests were of great value to the Russian empire.
7 Neal R. Peirce, "Business Basic: Rx for All Cities," *Washington Post* (March 5, 1999).
8 Reuel R. Rogers, "Minority Groups and Coalitional Politics," *Urban Affairs Review* 39, no. 3 (January 2004): 283–317.
9 Antonio Olivo, "Edge about 'Yuppies,'" *Chicago Tribune* (June 12, 2006), pp. 1, 20.
10 CNN.com, "Census: More Americans Living in Poverty" (August 31, 2004), www.cnn.com
11 Ibid.
12 Mara A. Marks, Matt A. Barreto, and Nathan D. Woods, "Race and Racial Attitudes a Decade after the 1992 Los Angeles Riots," *Urban Affairs Review* 40, no. 1 (2004): 3–18.
13 Peter Dreier, "Katrina and Power in America," *Urban Affairs Review* 41, no. 4 (March 2006), p. 535.
14 Dennis R. Judd, "Enclosure, Community, and Public Life," in *Research in Community Sociology: New Communities in a Changing World,* ed. Dan A. Chekki (Greenwich, CT and London: JAI Press, 1996), pp. 217–238.
15 John R. Logan, "The New Ethnic Enclaves in America's Suburbs," a report by the Lewis Mumford Center for Comparative Urban and Regional Research (Albany, NY: 2002), pp. 1–2.
16 Ibid., p. 253.
17 William A. V. Clark and Sarah A. Blue, "Race, Class, and Segregation Patterns in U.S. Immigrant Gateway Cities," *Urban Affairs Review* 39, no. 6 (2004): 667–688.
18 Richard Florida and Charlotta Mellander, *Segregated City. The Geography of Economic Segregation in America's Metros* (Toronto, Canada: The Martin Prosperity Institute, Rotman School of Management, University of Toronto, 2015).
19 Ibid.
20 Jim Hinch and Ronald Campbell, "Gated Enclaves One Future for Orange County," *Orange County Register* (May 15, 2002), www.ocregister.com
21 Ibid., quoting William Frey, a demographer in the Milken Institute of Los Angeles.

INDEX

African Americans
  Democratic Party, 127, 139, 233–234, 241
  Displacement through slum clearance, 203–204
  Economic inequality of, 168–171, 305, 479
  Efforts to prevent voting by, 278
  Election of, as mayors, 280–281, 446–448
  Exclusion of, from housing, 165, 168,
  Exclusion of, from machine politics, 67–69
  Federal home loans programs for, 202
  Hostility towards, in northern cities, 164
  Incorporation of, into city politics, 443–451
  Joblessness among, 169
  In machine politics, 67–69
  Median family income of, 305
  Migration of, 161–165, 168
  Mortgage insurance, 217
  Party affiliation of, 127, 233
  Population, 447
  Republican Party and, 127, 233–234
  Restrictive covenants, 165
  Suburban housing market and, 219, 226
  Suburbanization of, 219
  Violence against, 301–302, 443–445
  Winning of public office by, 280–281
Agricultural Adjustment Act, 137
Aid to Families with Dependent Children, 248
Akron, Ohio, 177, 206, 279, 280
Alabama
  Civil Rights marches in, 116, 235
  Court-ordered single-member districts for county commissioners, 113
  Ku-Klux Klan in, 130
  Lynchings in, 162
  New immigrant destination, 186–187, 283
  Preclearance requirement in, 115
Alaska
  Non-partisan elections in, 96
  Preclearance requirement in, 115
Albany, New York
  Minorities in, 279
  Political machines in, 67, 128
  Population decline in, 279
Albuquerque, New Mexico, 277–280, 338

Alsop, Joseph, 59
American Apartheid, 190
American Recovery and Reinvestment Act, 226, 256, 334, 363
American Society of Planning Officials, 303
An American Tragedy (Dreiser), 88
Anaheim, California
  Disneyland in, 413
  Sports teams in, 421
Annual Congressional City Conference, 256
Antisprawl campaigns, 332–333, 354
Antiurban attitudes, 17, 129, 172, 294
Apartments, prejudice against, 311–313
Appalachian whites, rural to urban migration of, 20, 155, 159
Arcadia, California, 306
Arizona
  Depression-era budget cuts in, 142
  Preclearance requirement in, 115
  Senate Bill 1070 (2010), 9
Arlington Heights, Illinois, zoning in, 313
Asians
  Immigration of, 183
  Suburbanization of, 185, 189, 329
Atlanta
  Central Atlanta Improvement Association in, 208–209
  Corporate headquarters in, 407
  Efforts to discourage African American migration, 163
  Under Jackson, Maynard, 280, 452, 460
  Metro Atlanta Rapid Transit Authority (MARTA) system in, 460
  Metropolitan Planning Commission of, 208
  Minority office holders in, 452
  Peachtree Center in, 209, 425–426
  Population of, 272, 279
  Urban renewal in, 208–209
  Ward-based representation in, 279
  Under Young, Andrew, 460
Atlanta Constitution, 460
Atlantic City, New Jersey, casino gambling in, 428
At-large elections, 86–89, 95, 99, 106–114, 278, 458, 469
Auletta, Ken, 465
Austin, Texas, population in, 271
Automobile
  Advent of, 140
  Dependence on, 221–224
  Gasoline consumption compared, 324–326
  Impact on suburban development, 171–177

Badillo, Herman, 464
Baker v. Carr, 42
Balanced budget policies, 365
Baldwin, E. J. "Lucky," 306
Baldwin, James, 212
Ballots
  Australian, 93

Efforts to remove party label from, 93
Nonpartisan, 93–98
Short, reform, 89, 108
Baltimore
African American population of, 166, 443, 448
Budget of, 364, 370
City charter in, 100
Harborplace in, 244, 400–401, 425
Immigrant population in, 20, 37
Manufacturing employment in, 176
Police department in, 100, 443
Population of, 17, 177, 179, 400
School administration of, 368
Spending by, 364, 370
Sports in, 389, 421
Stadiums in, 389, 405
Suburbs of, 176, 401, 443
Beardstown, Illinois, meatpacking in, 407
Bedroom suburbs, 177–180
Belle Terra, Virginia, 346
Beverly Hills, California, zoning and, 311
Birmingham, Alabama
Civil rights movement in, 235
Minority officeholders in, 281
Black ghetto, stereotype, 156, 169
Black Jack, Missouri, 313
Black Lives Matter, 444
"Black removal" program, 211
Blockbusting, 165–166
Block grants, 242–244, 253, 424, 459, 462. *See also* Community Development Block Grants (CDBGs)
Bloomberg, Michael, 78, 381, 451, 467
Bonaventure Hotel in Los Angeles, 427
Boomburbs, 328–329,
Boosters, 5, 18–19, 25
Boston
African Americans in, 165, 167
Clinton victories in, 255
Under Curley, James Michael, 111, 206
Election reform in, 110
End of machine politics in, 110, 111
Fitzgerald Expressway in, 222
Under Flynn, Ray, 462
Government fragmentation of, 335
Immigrant population in, 37, 58
Mass transit system in, 224
Neighborhood pressures in, 399
Police departments in, 43, 100
Population of, 17, 22, 167, 175, 177, 178, 270, 405–406
Quincy Market and festival malls in, 424–425
Sports in, 419
Suburban growth in, 177–178
Tax base of, 378

Tourism in, 399, 424–425, 427
Urban renewal in, 206, 208, 457
Urban revival in, 399
Under White, Kevin, 424, 457
Boulder, Colorado
Efforts to slow growth, 332
Establishment of greenbelt, 346
Boutique cities, 478
Bradley, Tom, 333, 448–449, 453, 460, 463–464
Bratton, William, 465
Brewer, Jan, 283
Brooklyn, New York, 172, 419–420
Brooklyn Bridge, 45
Brown, Michael, 443, 444
Brown, Jerry, 189, 283
Bueré, Henry, 102
Bryan, William Jennings, 132
Buffalo, New York
Depression-era bond sales frozen, 140
Minorities in, 191, 279, 280
Population loss in, 192
Public health conditions in, 45
Building codes, 89, 312
Bunyan, John, 88
Bush, George H. W., 247–250
Administration of, 249
In election of 1988, 247
In election of 1992, 249
Housing and Urban Development under, 248
Bush, George W., 255, 334
Administration of, 373, 456
In election of 2000, 234, 255
Promise of security funding to cities after September 11th, 373
Response to Hurricane Katrina in 2005, 480
Business improvement districts (BIDs), 405
Business model, 103–106

Cabrini-Green public housing project (Chicago), 212, 442
California. *See also specific cities* and 1930s Dust Bowl, 143
2008–09 recession and housing crash in, 377, 384
Common interest
developments in, 303
Constitutional restriction on low-rent housing, 314
Enclave-style suburban development, 317
Gambling in, 306
Growth control politics in, 332–333
Migration by minorities and immigrants, 158–160, 184, 189, 481
Nonpartisan elections in, 96
Proposition 13, 245, 378
“Sanctuary bill” (Senate Bill 54), 283
Sprawl in, 325, 331
Use fees to fund state services in, 377
Use of highway funds for mass transit in, 224

Canal building, 24–28
Candidates, working class, 96, 99
Caretaker governments, 277
Carlson, Arne, 342
Carnegie, Andrew, 86
Caro, Robert A., 127–128
Carrion, Adolfo, 255
Carter, James Earl, Jr. "Jimmy," 243–245, 398
Cashin, Sheryll, 293–294
Casino gambling 11, 414, 427–430
Catholics
  In Boston Mayor Ray Flynn's reform coalition, 462
  In election of 1928, 131, 133
  As immigrants, 35, 38, 128
  In New York Mayor Ed
  Koch's conservative coalition, 450
  As targets of municipal reform, 86
Caudill, Harry, 160
Celebration, Florida, 354
Central Atlanta Improvement Association, 208
Central business districts (CBDs)
  Arts and culture in, 410
  Early definition of, 402
  Gentrification of, 410
  Health of, 207
  Implications of proximity
  To poor, minority neighborhoods 208
  In new downtowns, 410
  Title I housing and, 205
  Urban renewal example of San Antonio, 278
Central cities
  2008 election and, 253
  Changes in racial makeup of, 282, 481
  Complicated differences with suburbs, 292
  Democratic Party gains in, 282
  Distinctive culture of, in Sunbelt, 268
  Electoral influence of, 253–255
  Housing policy in, 213
  Impact of freeways on, 222
  Infant mortality in inner-city, 170
  Isolation of poor in, 232
  Pitting, against suburbs, 292
  Reagan administration and, 248, 276
  Regional differences becoming muted, 282
  Tourism and entertainment in, 399
  Voter impact, recent, 253–255
Cermak, Anton, 131
Charleston, South Carolina, 275
Chester County, Pennsylvania, 384
Cheyenne, Wyoming, 27
Chicago, Illinois
  African Americans in, 164–165, 167

Arizona boycott, 9
Budget of, 367
Cabrini-Green public housing project in, 212, 412
Casino license proposal for, 429
Clinton victories in, 255
Corporate headquarters in, 407
Under Daley, Richard J., 55, 61–62, 66, 68, 77–78, 111, 206,
Under Daley, Richard M., 369, 429
Dawson, William, 68
Under Emanuel, Rahm, 369
Emergency readiness of, 391
Gambling, 429
Growth of downtown, 399, 405
Growth of suburbs, 172, 174, 177
Homelessness in, 369
Housing industry crash during Depression in, 214
Humboldt Park neighborhood in, 479
Immigrant population in, 35, 37, 185, 187
Manufacturing in, 271
Mass transit systems in, 225
McCormick Place convention center in, 389
Migration flow to, 158, 161, 479, 481
Minorities, share of population, 185
Organized crime and machine politics in, 92
Population of, 20, 22, 23, 175, 179, 270–271, 405, 406
Public health conditions in, 45
Racial conflict in, 164, 165, 441
Railroads and, 26, 27, 28, 172
Reformers in, 84, 111
Riots in, 164, 413, 441
Slowdown of suburban growth during Depression, 177
Spending by, 367, 370
Tourism and entertainment, 412–414, 427
As trading center, 27, 40
Traffic congestion in, 330
Urban conditions in, 40
Votes for Clinton, 255
Ward bosses in, 92
Under Washington, Harold, 68, 448
Childs, Richard S., 108, 120n
Cholera epidemics, 41
Cicero, Illinois, residential patterns in, 481–482
Cincinnati, Ohio
Under Cox, George, 66
Neighborhood movement in, 458
Population decline in, 179, 191
Reform-oriented mayor in, 72
Social issues in, 458
Steamboats, 25
As trading center, 22, 25
Circuit-breaker laws, 377
Cisneros, Henry, 252, 448

Cities. *See also* Central Cities; Downtown; *specific cities*
Condition, 39–40, 43
Declining political influence of, 255–256
Democrats and, 133–134, 139, 149, 233–234, 235–236, 238, 251–255, 282, 463
Expenditures of, 367–373
In the federal system, 363–364, 365–366, 457
Fiscal politics of competition, 25, 28, 326, 341
Foreign immigrants in, *See also* Immigration to, 17, 34–39, 85–86, 129–131, 156–161, 181, 184, 186–187, 189, 277, 280, 316–317, 455–457
Global, 7, 192, 407, 433
Great Depression, 134–139
Highway programs and decline of, 202–203
Immigration to, 3, 8, 9, 12, 17–18, 34–39, 69, 130, 156–161, 186–187, 455–457
Inner-city programs, 232–235
Limited powers of, 46–49
Municipal bond market and, 382–387
National development and, 17–19
Nineteenth century competition for primacy, 18–19, 27
Politics of the sunbelt, 265–268
Population growth, 20–23
Public works programs in, 137–138, 141–142, 144, 245, 248
Racial conflict in the postwar era, 165–168
Recent near-invisibility of, 253
Revenue sources for, 377, 382, 421
As Sanctuaries, 455–457
Spatial segregation in, 85
Special authorities, 387–390, 405
Specialized economy of second-tier, 407
Citizenship and Immigration Services (USCIS), 188
City Beautiful Movement, 45
City budgets, 140–142
City building and public efforts, 18–19
City manager plan, 108, 109, 111
City Managers Association, 87
City politics
Incorporation of Blacks and Latinos into, 446, 451–452, 454–455
Race and ethnicity in, 67, 76–78, 302, 443, 445–446, 479
Representation at the federal level, 48, 112, 253
Civic boosterism, 19, 25, 278, 416, 418–419, 422, 430
Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC), 137, 139
Civil Rights Act (1964), 237, 239
Civil Rights Act (1968), Title VIII of, 219
Civil Rights Movement
In Birmingham, 235
Under Johnson, 236–237
Under Kennedy, 235–236
Martin Luther Kind, Jr., in, 235
Neighborhood politics in Portland, Oregon, 458
Race relations in the South, 235–236
Under Reagan, 245
In Sunbelt Cities, 98, 234, 282
Urban programs and, 233–235

Civil service
Hiring systems under, 95, 110
Municipal reform and, 89, 103, 109
Protection for police, 454
Reforms in, 103, 107, 109–110
Civil Works Administration (CWA), 138, 144
Clean Air Act (1990), 373
Cleveland, Ohio
African Americans in, 161, 165–168
Bond default of (1978), 387
Bond issues during Depression, 140
Budget of, 370
Corporate headquarters in, 407
Growth of, 175, 177
Growth of suburbs, 177
Gund Arena and Jacobs Field, 419
Immigrant population in, 37
Under Johnson, Tom L., 72
Machine politics in, 72, 84, 110–111
Population of, 175, 177, 178, 179, 271, 370, 405–406
Public health conditions in, 45
Reformers in, 84, 100, 110–111
Spending by, 370
Under Stokes, Carl, 447
Suburbs and zoning, 311
Cleveland Heights, Ohio, zoning and, 311
Clinton, William Jefferson "Bill" administration of, and urban policy, 249–250, 251, 253, 255, 333
Appeals to suburban middle class, 250
Central city vote, 253, 255
In election of 1992, 249, 250
Suburban electoral strategy, 253
Urban-related cabinet appointees, 448
Welfare reform under, 253
Cloward, Richard A., 240
Colorado Springs, Colorado
Conflict over urban sprawl, 332
Downtown population, 406
Columbus, Ohio
Convention centers, 418
Minorities in, 279
Commission form of government, 106, 108
Commission on Population Growth and the American Future, 232
Common interest developments (CIDs), 293–294, 303–305
Community Action Agencies (CAAs), 240, 241
Community Development Block Grants (CDBGs), 242–244, 247, 250, 462
Distribution of funds, 243
Community Reinvestment Act (1977) (CRA), 220
Comprehensive Employment and Training Act (CETA) program, 243
Condominium developments, 12, 304, 410, 480
Conference of City Managers, 89
Congress for the New Urbanism, 352
Contract with America, 252

Convention Centers, 244, 282, 413–414, 416–418, 459
  Administration of, 388, 390
  Financing of, 11, 383, 388, 390, 416
  Questioning of, 390, 459
Cook County, *See also* Chicago Central Committee in, 61–62
  Governments in, 306, 390
  Tax increment financing districts in, 390
Corporations
  Limited-risk, 31
  Rapid growth of big, 31
Coughlin, Bathhouse John, 92
Counterurbanization, 328
Country Club District (Kansas City), development of, 296–297
Covenants, contracts, and restrictions (CC&Rs), 302, 303, 304
Cox, George, 66
Coyotes, 188
Crime rates
  Falling, 193, 413, 480
  Obsession with, 170
  Rising, 42
Cross-commuting, 328
Crump, Ed, 92
Cullors, Patrisse, 444
Curley, James Michael, 111, 206

Daley, Richard J., machine politics under, 55, 61–62, 66, 68, 77–78, 111, 206
Daley, Richard M., machine politics under, 68, 77–78, 463
Dallas, Texas
  City manager government in, 109, 277
  Commission government in, 107
  Conventions in, 418
  Mass transit systems in, 225
  Minority populations in, 185, 279
  Political reforms in, 107, 109, 277–279
  Poverty rates in, 190
  Underground tunnels in downtown, 425
Danville, Illinois, election reform in, 113,
Dartmouth College case, 46
Dawson, William, 68
Dayton, Ohio
  At-large elections in, 96
  Bureau of Municipal Research in, 108
  City manager government in, 108–109
  Reformers in, 110
Dayton Plan, 109
The Death and Life of Great American Cities (Jacobs), 431
Defended space 425
Defense spending in the Sunbelt, 274–275
Deferred Action for Childhood Arrivals (DACA) (2012), 157
Deficit Reduction Act (1984), 384
Deindustrialization, 5, 169, 271, 398, 403, 404
Democracy in America (Tocqueville), 46
Democratic Party

African American voters and, 116, 117, 139, 233–234, 236, 250, 282
Change in national alignment, 139
Cities and, 235–241, 243
In the election of 1964, 232, 237
"emerging Democratic majority," 282
Post Civil War, 131
Race and, 233–234
Reform politics and, 449
Union voters' support for, 203, 262
Urban ethnics in, 133, 139
Urban issues, 253–255
Urban machines and, 57, 63, 73, 76, 127, 129, 144, 277
Urban programs and, 139, 204, 232–235, 235–241, 242–243, 250, 251, 253, 255
Urban regions and, 253–255, 282
Urban voters during Great Depression, 134, 139
Demonstration Cities and Metropolitan Development Act (1966), 240
Denver, Colorado
As boutique city, 478
Election reform in, 110
End of machine politics in, 110
Mass transit systems in, 224–225
Metropolitan Stadium District, 389–390
Minority incorporation in, 280, 448, 451
Minority officeholders in, 280–281, 448
Under Peña, Federico, 448, 451
Population of, 270, 272, 406
Professional sports franchises in, 420
Railroads and, 27
Spending by, 389–390
Under Webb, Wellington, 281, 451
Depression of 1873, 28, 34
Derivatives, 384, 385
Des Moines, Iowa, commission government in, 107
Des Moines-Polk County merger, 338
Detroit, Michigan
African American population of, 158, 164, 165, 166, 167
Arrest rate for blacks, 164
Attempts to block blacks from neighborhoods, 165–166
Bankruptcy in, 6, 141, 381, 387
Decline of downtown, 402
Election of Frank Murphy in, 141
Loss of jobs, 5
Manufacturing decline in, 5, 271
Migration to, 158, 165
Municipal bankruptcy, Depression-era, 141
Under Pingree, Hazen, 72–76
Population of, 179, 191–192, 254, 270, 271, 377, 406
Property value of, 377
Proportion of blacks in, 166–167
Reformers in, 75, 110
Renaissance Center in, 426–427
Riots in, 441

Developers, incentives for, 11, 315, 380, 466
Developmental policy, 2, 28, 213, 215, 226, 240, 281, 296, 327, 348
Dinkins David, 448, 449, 450, 463, 464
Dinks, 410
Disney theme parks, 274, 354, 413, 417, 424, 426
Downtown. *See also* Central cities
  Casino gaming, 427–430
  Convention centers and, 416–418
  Decline of, 402–404
  Difference between old and new downtowns, 431–434
  Disagreement over policies, 6, 391
  Gentrification and the new urban culture, 410–412
  Globalization and, 399, 404–410, 432, 476
  Highway development in, 222
  Reform governments and, 86, 110–111, 449
  Revival of, 399, 400, 412, 431, 432, 433, 476, 480,
  Slum clearance from, 203–205, 206, 222, 419
  Sports stadiums and, 418–423
  Tourism and, 412–415, 424–427, 430–431
  Transit and commuting, 224, 353, 403, 412, 460
Dreiser, Theodore, 88
Drug epidemics, inner-city, 170
Dudley Street Neighborhood Initiative (DSNI), 462
DuPage County, Illinois, parks system, 339–340

East St. Louis, Illinois
  African American migration to, 161
  Casino gambling in, 428
  Manufacturer tax avoidance, 306
  Riots in, 164, 441
Economic inequality, politics of, 341, 455, 478, 479
Economic Opportunity, Office of (OEO), 240, 241
Economic Opportunity Act (1964) (EOA), 237, 240
Economic prosperity, xiii, 2, 4, 276
Economic Recovery Tax Act (1981), 247
Education
  Elementary and Secondary Education Act, 238
  English only, 18
  No Child Left Behind, 373
  State spending during Depression, 142
Efficiency principles, 101, 102, 133
Eighteenth Amendment, 129
Eisenhower, Dwight D., 149, 203, 221, 235, 236
Election ballots, efforts to remove party label from, 89, 93, 94, 96
Elections
  Of 1860, 131
  Of 1924, 133
  Of 1928, 128, 131, 133, 264
  Of 1932, 71, 126, 133, 136
  Of 1936, 138, 139
  Of 1940, 233
  Of 1944, 233, 253, 278
  Of 1948, 134, 233

Of 1956, 236
Of 1960, 134, 149, 233, 234, 235
Of 1968, 232, 233, 234, 253, 265
Of 1976, 243
Of 1980, 126, 235, 245
Of 1984, 245, 254
Of 1988, 249, 253
Of 1992, 249, 250, 253, 255
Of 1996, 253, 255
Of 2000, 116–117, 234, 253, 255, 264, 282
Of 2004, 264
Of 2008, 78, 98, 117, 253, 264, 268, 282, 443
Of 2012, 98, 118
Of 2016, 9, 119, 257, 265, 282, 457
At-large, 86, 89, 94–95, 96, 98, 99, 106, 107, 110, 112, 113, 114, 278, 458, 469
Efforts to reduce fraud, 91, 93, 117
Fraud by machines, 57, 62, 92
Nonpartisan, 93, 94, 96, 98, 107, 110, 111, 458
Race and, 232, 468–469
Voter ID laws, 117, 118
Electoral College, Sunbelt, 234, 263–264
Electric streetcar system, 33, 73, 173, 174
Elementary and Secondary Education Act (1965), 238
Ellis Island, 35
Emergency Housing Corporation, 145–146
Emergency Relief and Construction Act, 136
The Emerging Republican Majority (Phillips), 265
Eminent Domain, 405, 421, 462
Blighted property and, 207
Slum property and, 146
Use of, by local government, 2, 6, 7, 11, 146, 405
Empowerment Zones/Enterprise Communities (EZ/EC), 251, 252
Enclave politics, 316–318
Gated communities and, 293–294, 303, 304, 318, 346, 355, 410, 477, 480
Environmental mandates, cost of, 373
Epidemics, 39, 41, 42
Equal Credit Opportunity Act (1974), 220
Equal protection clause of the Fourteenth Amendment, 48, 112, 301, 313, 314, 452
Erie Canal, building of, 20, 24
Ethnic minorities. *See also* specific minority groups
Effects of at-large elections on, 112, 114, 278
Lure to global cities, 192, 476
Ethnic politics, 76–78
Multiethnic politics, 446
Ethnic segregation, development of, 33–34
Euclid, Village of, v. Ambler Reality Co., 310–311
Exclusionary zoning, challenge to, 313–316
Exurbanization, 328

Fair Labor Standards Act, 373
Fair-share housing bill, 342
Families
Concentration of poor in specific locations, 168, 169, 192, 211

Displacement of African American and poor, by urban renewal, 210
Occupancy preferences for, in public housing, 205
Wealth differences between black and white families, 227
White opposition to black families in public housing, 205
Farm Credit Administration, 137, 139
Federal assistance, end of, under the Republicans, 245–250, 252
Federal Emergency Relief Administration (FERA), 138, 144
Federal government, relationships with cities, 46, 139–144, 457
Federal Highway Trust Fund, 221
Federal Home Loan Bank Act, 135–136
Federal Home Loan Corporation, 304
Federal Housing Administration (FHA), 139, 214, 295
Common interest developments and, 303
Creation of, 214
Loans from, 214, 215–221
Mortgage insurance programs from, 214–219
Race and, 218–219
Rate of owner-occupied housing and, 217
Suburban bias and, 217
Federal Public Housing Authority, 147
Federal system, cities in, 148, 364–366
Ferguson, Missouri, 98, 443, 444
Fifteenth Amendment, 278
The Financier (Dreiser), 88
Fire protection, 45, 324, 336, 367–368, 372, 378, 466
Fiscal gamesmanship, 391
Fitzgerald, John "Honey Fitz," 66
Fitzwater, Marlin, 249
Flint, Michigan, 179, 430
Florida
2000 election, 116, 117
2008–09 recession and impact on housing values, 377
African American population in, 118, 279
Common interest developments in, 303
Enclave-style suburban development, 317
Fiscal resources, 362
Immigration to, 183, 186
Latino presence in, 183, 279
Minority populations in, 118, 279,
Open space legislation in, 345
Political shift away from Republicans, 282
Population growth in, 266, 269, 271, 277
Tourism in, 5, 274
Voting rules of, 116, 118
Florida, Richard, 411, 433
Flynn, Ray, 462
Food stamps, 238, 248, 253, 317
Ford, Gerald R., administration of, 235, 242, 265
Ford, Henry, 176, 221
Fort Worth, Texas
Commission government in, 107
Ward-based representation in, 279

Forum, 90
Fourteenth Amendment, equal protection clause of, 48, 112, 301, 313, 314
Fragmented metropolis, 10–12
  Immigration, 12
  Jurisdictions and governments, 3, 10, 294, 305, 347
  Local identity and, 12
  Regional governance problems, 335–341
  Rise of, 291–294
  Spatial fragmentation, 12
Freeholders, board of (property owners in Missouri), 337
Freeway revolts, 223
Frostbelt, 266, 271, 272, 274, 275, 276, 279, 281, 282, 370–371, 372
  Comparison with Sunbelt, 267–270, 370–371
Fulton, Robert, 172

Gallatin, Albert, 26
Galveston, Texas
  Commission form of government in, 106–108
  Deepwater Committee of, 106
Gangs, youth, 170
Garcia decision, 373
Garfield Heights, Ohio, zoning and, 311
Gary, Indiana
  African American migration to, 161
  Under Hatcher, Richard, 447
  Population loss in, 191–192
Garza, Alicia, 444
Gated communities, 3, 11–12, 293–294, 303, 304
  As common interest developments, 293–294, 303, 304
  Debate on, 293–294
  Developers' strategy and, 294, 303, 304, 317
  Security in, 293, 304, 317
Gates, Daryl, 453
General obligation bonds, 383, 386, 387, 388
Gentrification, i, 6, 12, 192, 372, 399, 410, 411, 413, 432, 433, 478, 479
The Geography of Nowehere (Kunstler), 351
Germans, 34–35, 37, 38, 56, 69, 76, 218, 300
Gerrymandering, 112
Ghiradelli Square in San Francisco, 223, 413, 427
Gibson, Kenneth A., 245
Giuliani, Rudolph, 449, 450–451, 454, 463–465, 466, 467
Glendale, California, zoning and, 311
Global cities, 192, 407, 433
Global era, 8, 10, 12–13, 476–477
  Business concentration in downtowns during, 12, 477
  Immigration during, 12
  Multiethnic metropolis of, 10, 12
  Politics of governance related to, 10
  Two streams of movement, 476
Globalization, 404, 407, 476, 479
  Downtown renaissance and, 404–410
Goldschmidt, Neil, 458
Goldsmith, Stephen, 463, 467

Goldwater, Barry, 232, 234, 237
Goode, Wilson, 448, 463
Good Government League in San Antonio, Texas, 278
Gore, Albert, Jr., 251, 253, 255
  Central city vote for, 253, 255
  In election of 2000, 253, 255, 264, 282
  And the Sunbelt, 264, 282
  On urban sprawl, 253, 331–332, 333
Governance, 7, 90
  As balancing act, 441–446
  Immigrant tide and the politics of, 90
  Merchant cities, 30
  In old downtowns, 432
  Problem of regional, 324, 340–341
  Reformists' theory of, 100
  Regional, and sprawl, 1, 324–326, 334–335, 355
  State involvement in local, 355
The Government of American Cities (Munro), 47
Grand Rapids, Michigan, end of machine politics, 110
Grant, Madison, 130
The Grapes of Wrath (Steinbeck), 143
Gray, Freddie, 443
Great Depression (1929–1941). *See also* New Deal
  Cities and, 134–139
  Fall in national income, 135
  Federal government intervention in housing market, 213–214
  Impact on suburban development, 177, 213
  Military spending and the end of, 274
  Origins of convention centers and, 416
  Parallel with 2000-era state and local budget crises, 363–364
  Parallel with 2002-era state and local budget crises, 365–366
  Suburban tide slowed, 177
  Turning point in American politics, 139
  Unemployment in, 134, 135
  Voices of cities, 139–144
Greater St. Louis City-County District proposal (1959), 336
Great Migration, 160–161, 165
Great Recession
  Casino inroads during, 429
  Impact on minorities, 479
  Impact on Sunbelt, 377
  Municipal bonds during, 384–385, 387
  Sales tax revenues during, 380
  Size of new homes before, 325, 330
Great Society program, under Lyndon Johnson, 126–127, 232–233, 237, 239, 240–241
Greenbelts, 346
Green Valley, Nevada, 304
Greenwich Village, 431
Growth-control movement, 327, 333–335, 344, 347
Growth politics, new (but actually old), 477–478

Hague, Frank, 59, 63
Harborplace in Baltimore, 244, 400–401, 425

Harlem
Death rates in, 164
Housing projects in, 212
Infant mortality in, 164, 170
Murder rate in, 170
Hartford, Connecticut, Neighborhood movement in, 458
Hatcher, Richard, 447
Hayden, Dolores, 354
Head Start, 233
Highways
2009 stimulus package
funding of, 226
Abuse of urban renewal powers and, 390
Advantage of sunbelt for funding, 272
Decline of cities and, 202–203, 324, 432
Interstate, 148, 203, 222, 223, 272, 403
Legislation expanding
spending on, 148, 203
Local spending on, 367, 382
Overcrowding of, 331
Per capita spending during depression, 142
Sprawl and, 324, 331, 348
Suburbs and, 221–226, 324, 331
Hills, Carla, 243
Hispanics. *See also* Latinos; Mexicans
Anti-immigrant hostility against, 156–157, 283
In coalition of voters supporting Harold Washington, 68
Complexity of, 182–183
Geographic distribution of, 183, 185, 186–187
Median income for families, 193
Racial issues, 191, 193, 442, 451
Share of immigrant population, 182–183
Share of population growth, 281–283
Unemployment rate for, 193
Homeless population, 367, 369, 372, 391
Home Owners Loan Corporation, 137
Home rule (municipal), 90, 105–106, 143, 315–316, 371
Honolulu, Hawaii, 279–280, 331, 381
Hoover, Herbert
Creation of Reconstruction Finance Corporation, 145
"Little Hoovers," 363–364
Local spending on welfare, 140
Response to Great Depression, 135–136, 145
Horse-drawn streetcars, 32, 33, 173
Housing
Bias toward suburban development, 217, 294
Demolition of, 212, 372
Federal intervention into, 145, 201–210, 295–296
Lobbying for building codes, 88–89
Racial segregation in, 299, 302, 305
Housing Act (1968), 213, 219, 301, 305
Housing and Urban Development, U.S. Department of (HUD), 210, 220, 238

Call for elimination of, 252
Community Development Block Grants and, 243
Creation of 238
Enterprise zones and, 248–249, 251–252
Reinvention Blueprint, 252
Housing industry
Crash, during Depression, 214
Growth of, 178, 329
Slum clearance and, 201, 203–205
Ties to local housing authorities, 146
Housing legislation
Housing Act (1949), 148, 204, 206, 210
Housing Act (1968), 219, 301, 305
National Housing Act (1934), 137, 213, 214
Public Housing Act (Wagner-Steagall Public Housing Act) (1937), 144, 146, 147
Houston, Texas
Commission government in, 107
Downtown development and neighborhood groups in, 461–462
Gasoline consumption in, 325
Immigrants, source countries of, 184, 187
Immigration flow to, 184
Minorities, share of population, 185, 279
Political reforms in, 277
Population of, 270, 406
Poverty decline during 1990s in, 190
Rejection of public housing in, 206
Transportation costs in, 331
Hoyt, Homer, 218
Humboldt Park (Chicago), 479
Hurricane Katrina, 9, 477, 480

Illegal (undocumented) immigrants, 9, 10, 18, 156–157, 182, 188, 189, 257, 283, 316, 455–457
Illinois
African American vote in, 113, 236
Funding for McCormick Place convention center in, 389
Impacts of Depression on, 136, 142, 160
Migration to, 159, 160, 161
Open space acquisition in, 345
Right to Life Committee in, 62
Riverboats operating in, 428–429
Share of urban votes, 253
West Nile disease outbreak in, 369
Immigrants
Anti-immigrant sentiment, early, 3
Anti-immigrant sentiment, recent, 156–157, 188–189, 283
Backlash against, 9, 42, 85, 90, 129, 155, 156–157, 283
Changes in ethnic composition of, 8, 182
Crime ridden image of inner city, with suburban residents, 158
Early waves of, and ethnic violence, 8, 42
Effect of reducing voting participation by, 93, 117
Efforts to reform laws, 183, 188
Efforts to restrict, 156–157
Impact on local elite control, 8

Increase in, 183
Living in suburbs, 181, 185–186, 279–280, 292, 316–317, 477, 478
Machine policy in assimilation of, 54, 62, 69–72
Migration of, 158–160
Municipal reforms and attitudes toward, 86
By place of origin, 181, 182–183
Prohibition and, 129–131
Riots, 38, 441, 442, 461
Voter registrations rising, 131
Voting by, 91, 93, 111, 129, 131
Immigration
Anxiety about, long-term, 3, 18, 188
Dimensions in 1990s, 7
Fragmented metropolis, 10, 12, 194, 477
Increase in, 181–183
Industrial workforce and, 17
Legislation, 182, 183, 189, 283
And the politics of governance, 69, 85
To Sunbelt cities and suburbs, 279, 282
Indianapolis, Indiana
Budget and administrative authority granted by state, 99
Consolidation with Marion County, 336, 338
Convention center, 418
Under Goldsmith, Stephen, 463, 467
Minority population in, 280
Sports stadiums in, 421, 422
Industrial belt (Midwest and northeast), 5, 98, 126, 160, 178, 244, 262, 268, 271, 279, 370, 372
Industrialization, 29–34
Inequality, 12, 29–30, 191–193, 305, 341, 411, 443, 445, 455, 478–480
Inner-ring suburbs, 219, 478
Intergovernmental system, weaknesses in U.S., 340, 363–364, 367
In response to major disasters, 480
Intergovernmental transfers, 238, 337, 366, 374
Interlocal agreements, 335, 338, 340
Intermodal Surface Transportation Efficiency Act (ISTEA), 223–224
Interstate Highway Act (1956), 148
Interstate highways
Administration of, 222
Impact on location of industry, 291, 403
Impact on national economy, 221, 272
Impact on neighborhoods, 208, 222, 223, 324, 353
Irish
Anti-immigrant sentiment against, 3, 38
Competition for jobs, 38
Decline in immigration during the twentieth century, 111, 130
Early immigration of, 34–35
Job discrimination against, 69
Lack of skills, 38
Machine politics and, 66–69, 70, 71, 111
Positive effect on land values in 1930s, 218
Settlement in cities, 38, 42, 56
Urban riots against, 42

Irsay, Robert, 421
Italians
  And anti-machine LaGuardia coalition (1933), 67, 111
  Competition for low-skill jobs, 38
  Distinction in perception of northern and southern Italians, 218
  Machine politics and, 67, 70, 111
  Onset of immigration, 35
  Reduction of immigrants, 130, 182
  Settlement in cities, 38
  And urban renewal in Boston, 206, 208

Jackson, Andrew, 26
Jackson, Jesse, 450
Jackson, Maynard, 280, 452, 460
Jackson, Michigan, municipal elections in, 86
Jacksonville, Florida
  Consolidation with Duval County (1967), 336
  Efforts to discourage African American migration, 163
  NFL expansion team (1993), 422
Jacobs, Jane, 349, 431, 433
Jamestown, Virginia, 4
Jefferson, Thomas, 8, 172, 291
Jersey City, New Jersey
  Growth of, 177
  Machine politics in, 63, 67, 72
  Minority share of population, 280
  Reform-oriented mayor, 72
  Under Schundler, Bret, 463
Jews
  Covenants against, in housing, 218, 300
  Immigration by, 35, 69, 182
  In machine politics, 67, 69, 70, 111
  Perception of, in housing, 218, 300
  Settlement in cities, 35, 38
  Support of Ed Koch, 449–450
  Support of reformist city governments, 449
Jim Crow laws, 236, 301
Job growth,
  Atlanta, 460
  Defense plants, 274–275
  Public employment as resource, 460
  Recent, 272
  Regional comparisons, 273, 276
Johnson, Lyndon Baines, 126, 232, 233, 236–237, 240
  Antipoverty programs under, 233, 237, 240–241
  Civil rights legislation under, 236–237, 239
  In election of 1964, 232, 233, 237
  In election of 1968, 232, 233
  Great Society program under, 126, 232, 233, 237, 239, 240, 241
  War on Poverty Program under, 233, 237, 240, 241
Johnson, Tom L., 72
Jones, E. Terrence, 341
Jones, Samuel “Golden Rule,” 72

The Jungle (Sinclair), 88
Kansas City, Kansas
  Country Club District, and Jesse Clyde Nichols, 296–297
  Railroads and, 27
Kansas City, Missouri
  Casino gambling in, 428
  Downtown redevelopment of, 425
  Local income tax in, 378, 428
  Pendergast machine in, 56–57
  Population loss during Depression, 177
  State control over police department, 100
  Variances for politically connected developers, 56–57
Kelo v. New London, 7
Kenna, "Hinky Dink," 92
Kennedy, John F., 66
  Administration of, 235–237
  Civil rights legislation under, 233–234, 235–236, 239
  In election of 1960, 134, 149, 233, 234, 235
  Investment tax credits and, 276
  New Frontier program under, 239
  Urban agenda of, 149, 235
Kerner Commission, 166
King, Colbert I., 468
King, Martin Luther, Jr., civil rights movement and, 235, 445
King, Rodney, 453
Koch, Edward, 449, 450, 454, 466, 468
Ku Klux Klan (KKK), 130, 132

Labor organizations, Sunbelt, 262, 271
Lackawanna, New York, 313
Lake Havasu, Arizona, demographics and lifestyle in, 274
Lakewood Plan, 305
Lampard, Eric, 20
Large-lot zoning, 312, 314
Las Vegas, Nevada
  Demographics and lifestyle in, 274
  Housing values during 2008
  recession, 283
  Minority population in, 279
  Population in, 271, 279, 333
  Tourist facilities, 274, 417
  Urban sprawl, 333
Latinos. *See also* Hispanics; Mexicans
  Discrimination against, in voting, 116, 469
  Ethnic tensions with African Americans, 442, 449, 450, 454
  Incorporation into city politics, 446, 451–452, 454, 455
  Lack of educational qualifications, 188
  Median income of, 193
  Migration, 160, 182–184
  Political incorporation of, 445, 455
  Population growth of, 187, 264
  Suburbanization of, 156–157, 158, 185, 264, 280, 329
  Voting patterns in Los Angeles, 454, 464

Winning of public office by, 281
Lawrence, Massachusetts, attack on labor organizations, 71
Lawton, Oklahoma, zoning ordinance of, 313
Levittown, 298, 301–302, 305, 316
Levitt & Sons, 297, 305
Limited-risk corporations, 31
Lindsay, John V., 291, 450
Linkage fees, 332, 461, 462
Lithuanians, 35, 88, 95, 218
"Little City Halls," 457
Little Rock, Arkansas, block grants for, 243
Llewellyn Park, 172
Local governments
Early leadership, 8
Fragmentation of, 193–194, 323–324, 340, 341, 355–356
Responsibilities of, 340, 365, 367–369
Special-purpose, 10, 323, 388–390
And taxes, 338, 342, 355–356, 362
Use of eminent domain by, 6–7, 11, 146, 207, 405
London, 4, 20, 407, 409
Londonderry, New Hampshire, 381
Los Angeles
1993 mayoral race, 464
African Americans in, 279, 442, 448–450, 464
Arizona boycott, 9, 283
Asians in, 183, 185, 442, 452, 481
Blended suburbs in, 481
Bradley, Tom and, 333, 448, 449, 453, 460, 463, 464
Corporate headquarters in, 407
Downtown of, 399, 402, 405–406, 420, 461, 464
End of machine politics in, 63, 110
Gated communities in suburbs, 318
Growth of, 177, 270
Immigrants, source countries of, 184
Migration flow to, 184, 283
Minority officeholders in, 279, 452
Minority population in, 187, 279–280, 452, 469
Policing in, 453–454
Political reforms in, 110, 278–279
Population of, 175, 179, 262, 270, 405–406
Poverty rate in South Central, 461
Public transit in, 225
Rejection of public housing in, 206
Riordan, Richard and, 454, 463, 464, 466
Riots in, 249, 442, 453–454, 461, 480
Sports teams in, 419, 420, 421, 422
Suburbs of, 167, 174, 279, 305, 311, 318, 481
Tax increment finance (TIF) district, 460
Traffic congestion in, 330, 331, 461
Urban sprawl in, 179, 267, 330, 331, 347
Use of water rights to force suburban consolidation, 305
A vision of America's future, 267

Loudoun County, Virginia, Smart Group movement in, 345–346
Louisiana. *See also* New Orleans
African American migration from, 165
Lynchings in, 162
Oil-producing economy, 265
Oil spill impact on, 5
Overrepresentation of rural areas in legislature, 142
Overturning of judicial elections by Supreme Court, 114
Population of, 47
Riverboat gaming in, 428
State-mandated under representation in New Orleans, 47
Subsidy to New Orleans Saints, 477

Machine politics, 54–58
Ability to get job done, 62–66
Assimilation of immigrants, 69–72
Under Bloomberg, Michael, 77–78
Campaigns against, 90–98
Control over police, 67
Corruption in, 62, 63–65, 87
Distinction between centralized machines and, 79n
Exclusion of blacks from, 67–68
Operating principles and structures of, 59–60, 71
Organization of, 59–60
Origins of, 58–62
Precinct captains, 59, 60, 61, 128
Social reform alternative to, 72–76
Stereotypes from the media, 54
Support for reforms, 71
In today's cities, 76–78
Typical organization, 60
Ward elections and, 95
Macon, Georgia, efforts to discourage African American migration, 163
Malls and entertainment complexes in urban centers, 388, 390, 424–427, 480
Mandates, 367, 372
Unfunded, 365, 372, 373, 374
The Man in the Gray Flannel Suit (Wilson), 180
Manufacturing
In Chicago, 27
Decline of, after 1970s, 169, 177, 245, 404
Deindustrialization of traditional manufacturing regions, 398, 404
Growth of, 21
Migration to Sunbelt, 271–272, 327
Postindustrial era, 272
Regional concentration in northeast and Midwest, 272
Suburbanization of, 176, 327
Mara, Patrick, 469
Maryland. *See also* Baltimore canal projects through Appalachians, 25
Depression-era cuts in education spending, 142
Indentured servitude in colonial era, 30
Migration from Cumberland Plateau of Appalachia, 160
Montgomery County, land use policy, 347
"Smart Growth," 344–349

Stadium Authority in, 389
State Lottery in, 389
Massachusetts, share of urban votes, 253
Mass transit, 221, 223–226, 256, 276, 324, 325, 334, 336, 340, 353, 354, 355, 403, 412
Mayors
Election of African Americans as, 116, 281, 447, 448, 460, 464
Election of Latinos as, 281, 447, 448
Minority, 446, 448, 452, 454, 455
Reform-oriented, 72–76
"strong mayor" system, 90, 105, 108, 111
"weak mayor" system, 104
Memphis, Tennessee
Commercial Appeal against African American migration, 163
Election reform in, 110
Machine politics in, 92
Population of, 406
Urban sprawl in, 331
Merchant cities, 29–30, 34
Metro Atlanta Rapid Transit Authority (MARTA) system, 460
Metropolitan Council (1967), 341, 342
Metropolitan Dade County (Miami), creation of, 336
Metropolitan governance, urban growth boundary and, 344
The Metropolitan Organization (TMO), 461
Metropolitan Planning Organizations (MPOs), 224
Metropolitan Reorganization Act (1994), 342
Metropolitan Service District, 343
Metropolitan statistical areas (MSAs), 167, 190
Mexicans. *See also* Hispanics; Latinos
Increase in immigration of, 8, 158–160, 187, 455
Migration to Southwest, 155, 158, 160
Perceptions of, in housing in 1930s, 218
Rural to urban migration of, 155, 158, 159
Undocumented population, 455
Miami, Florida
Corporate headquarters in, 407
Creation of metropolitan governance, 336
Housing for black families in, 219
Immigration flow to, 184, 185
Minority officeholders in, 280, 281, 448
Minority populations in, 184, 185
Riots threatened in, 441, 442
Urban sprawl in, 331
Michigan, 253
Migration
Of African Americans, 8–9, 155, 158, 160, 161
Of Appalachian whites, 20, 143, 155, 159, 160
Of Arkies, 160
Great Migration, 160, 161, 165,
Of Hoosiers, 160
Of Okies, 160
Reverse, back to the South, 180
Rural to urban, 8–9

Streams (domestic migration of twentieth century), 158–165
Military spending in Sunbelt, 274, 275
Milwaukee
Attempt by mayor to organize for Depression relief, 136, 142
Clinton victories in, 255
End of machine politics in, 110
Grand Avenue mall, 425
Minority population in suburbs, 280
Population of, 406
Pub owners on city council, 59
Volunteer fire department, 44
Votes for Clinton in, 255
Minimum wage, 12, 188, 373, 401, 433
Minneapolis
End of machine politics, 110
Finances of Metrodome, 422
Growing downtown mall, 425
Southdale Mall in Edina, 403
Minnesota
Immigration to, of Scandinavians, 38
Nonpartisan elections in, 96
Regional tax sharing and "Minnesota Miracle," 341–343
Minorities. *See also* specific minorities
Electoral reform, 112, 116, 278
Ethnic, 48, 112, 476–477, 478
Minority business enterprises (MBEs), 452
Mississippi
Anti-poverty programs in, 241
Failed attempt to market bond issues during Depression, 140
Lynchings in, 162
Riverboat gaming, 428
Vote in 1964 election, 233
Missouri
1960 election, 236
Attitudes to urban sprawl in, 332
Black Jack court decision on exclusionary zoning, 313
Growth in immigrant numbers, 181
Home rule and, 105
Riverboat gaming, 428, 429
Model Cities program, 238, 240, 241, 248
Montreal 407, 425, 428
Mount Laurel, New Jersey, zoning and, 314–316
Multiethnic metropolis, 10, 12, 180–189
Multiethnic suburbs, 292
Municipal bonds, 382–387
Municipal reform/reformers, 63, 86, 89, 90, 94, 99, 101, 109, 111, 119, 278, 335
Aims, 84–87
Anti-immigrant stance of, 56, 86, 90
On mayoral power, 99
Municipal services
Competition for contracts for, 64
Development of, 40–45

Early expansion summarized, 44
Impact of corruption on, 63–64
Outsourcing under Lakewood Plan, 305
Weakness of, in poor suburbs, 317
Myrna, Tennessee, corporate headquarters in, 407

Naples, Florida, retiree population, 271
Nashville-Davidson County, Tennessee, 186, 336
National Association of Real Estate Boards (NAREB), 204, 206, 296, 300
Opposition to public housing, 204, 206
Role in segregation, 300
National City, Illinois, 306
National Commission on Urban Problems, 232
National Conference of State Legislatures, 143
National Housing Act (1934), 137, 213, 214
Section, 214
Title I, 214
National Housing Association, 88
National Industrial Recovery Act, 127, 137, 145
National League of Cities, 204, 256
National Municipal League, 89, 90, 105, 106, 108, 148
Neighborhoods
African American, 9, 111, 155, 160, 161, 168, 169
Attacks on Irish, during riots, 38
Common interest developments (CIDs) and, 294, 302
Enterprise zones and, 248, 251
Gentrification of, 6, 12, 192, 372, 399, 410, 411, 432, 433, 478, 479
Impact of Hurricane Katrina on poor, 9
Impact of urban highway construction on, 208, 222
Impact of urban renewal, 12, 208, 210, 222, 390, 412, 432, 478
Minority, political representation of, 113, 278
In new downtowns, 404–410
New Urbanism and, 349–350, 352–353
Peoples of all classes and races in the same, in early America, 33–34
Population of, of concentrated poverty, 161, 168, 190, 477
Redlining of, 220
Reform and links of, with machine politics, 94, 95, 109, 111
Revival of, in inner city, 399, 400, 433
Role of, in evolution of machine politics, 94, 95, 111
Segregation of, during African American migration, 165, 171, 210
Social and ethnic segregation of, during industrialization, 30, 33, 85–86
Sprawl and, 324–326
White flight from African American, 166, 171
Newark, New Jersey. *See also* New Jersey
Minorities, share of population, 185
New Jersey Center, 430–431
Population of, 177, 185
Property value in, 377
New Bedford, Massachusetts, population of, 177
New Deal, 126–128. *See also* Great Depression (1929–1941) legacy, 148–149
New Federalism, Republicans and, 241–243
New Haven, Connecticut
Bureaucratic rules in, 110

Urban renewal in, 206–207, 432
New Jersey. *See also* Newark, New Jersey
Anti-sprawl legislation, 332, 333, 345, 355
Election fraud in, 91
Foreign-born population in, 183
Impact on, of federal taxes, 276
Mount Laurel zoning case law, 314–316
Population decline in, 177
Reagan Democrats in, 251
Welfare spending in, during Depression, 142
New Mexico, classifying
Hispanic residents in, 183
New Orleans. *See also* Louisiana
Casino gambling in, 428
City charter, 100
Election reform in, 110
Hurricane Katrina and, 9, 477, 480
Race in city politics of, 9
Recreational and tourist facilities in, 274
Regular Democratic organization (machine) in, 277
Representation in state legislature, 47
Spending by, 371
Sports facilities/teams in, 422, 477
Steamboats and, 25
As trading center, 22
Water supply in, 41, 42
Newport Beach, California, electoral defeat of development, 333
New regionalism movement, 326, 334, 341–344, 355
New Town, Missouri, 354
New urban form, the, 327–329
New Urbanism movement, 326, 334, 349–355
New York City
1924 Democratic National Convention in, 132, 133
Affirmative action in the city workforce, 450, 463, 464
African American electoral influence in, 250, 448, 454
African Americans in, 158, 161, 441, 448, 450, 451, 454, 463, 464
Asians in, 183, 185, 448
Attacks on, by Dan Quayle, 249
Under Bloomberg, Michael, 78, 381, 451
Budget, 367, 370
Building Heights Commission in, 310
Bureau of Municipal Research, 87, 102
Clinton, voting for, 250, 255
Corporate headquarters in, 407
Costs of governing, 25
Crime rate, impact of decline on, 465
Cross-Bronx Expressway in, 222
Croton aqueduct system in, 45
Death rates in, 42, 45, 164
Decentralization in, and community planning boards, 459
Under Dinkins, David, 448, 450, 463, 464
Election fraud in, 91

Fiscal crisis in, 465
Foreign trade, share of, 25
Under Giuliani, Rudolph, 450, 451, 454, 463, 464, 465, 466
Governments in area, growth in numbers, 307
Growth of, 174, 175, 270, 309, 329
Highway projects in, and impact on neighborhoods, 222
Homeless, emergency shelter of, 372
Homicide in, 170, 191
Housing values in, during 2008 recession, 325
Immigrants in, 35, 37, 183, 184, 456
Impact on, of federal taxes, 257, 276
Income taxes in, 381
Inequality of wealth in, 192
Interethnic coalitions, 446, 448
Jewish electoral influence in, and relations with African Americans, 448
Knickerbocker Village housing project (1932), 145
Under Koch, Ed, 450, 454, 466, 468
Under Lindsay, John, 291, 450
Machines in, 63, 67, 69
Mass transit systems in, 223, 225, 325
Migration to, 158, 161
Minorities, share of population, 185
Under Mitchell, John Purroy, 102
Murders in, 170, 465
Per capita gasoline consumption in, 325
Plea for federal assistance during Depression, 141
Policing in, 43, 67, 71, 100, 441, 465
Population of, 22, 35, 39, 42, 164, 174–176, 270, 309
Potential bankruptcy in, 265
Poverty in, 170
Public health conditions in, 45
Racial politics in, 441, 448, 450, 464
Reformers in, 90, 100, 103
Riots in, 441
Saloons in, 58
School district control in, 450
Share of urban votes, 253
Spending by, 30, 40, 367, 465–466
Sports stadiums in, 422–423
Staten Island attempt at secession from, 464
Suburban growth in, 172, 174, 177
Supremacy of in finance and trade, 20, 21, 25
Tammany Hall organization in, 59, 67, 84, 102, 111, 128, 132
Tax-exempt property in, and controversy, 378
Tenement districts in, 39
Tourism in, 414, 415, 430
Tweed machine in, 63, 81n, 90
Urban life in Greenwich Village, 431
Urban sprawl in, 329, 331
User and special-services fees, 381
Votes for Clinton, 250, 255
Voting patterns, 250, 253, 254, 255, 448, 450, 451, 464

Water supply in, 41, 42
Zoning law in, 308–309, 310, 415
New York State
Constitutional convention of 1894 of, 47
Election reform, 90
Ethnic politics, 128
Funding of Erie Canal by, 24
Governmental aid to railroads, 28
Highway funds use for mass transit under ISTEA, 224
Welfare spending during Depression, 142
Nixon, Richard M.
Administration of, 213, 241, 242, 257n
Commission on Population
Growth and the American Future, 232
In election of 1960, 234, 235
In election of 1968, 233, 234
Non-Hispanic white population, drop of, 264
Nonpartisan elections, 93, 94, 96, 98, 107, 110, 111, 458
Nonreal (personal) property, taxation of, 376
Norfolk, Virginia, 41, 297, 406

Oakland, California, 167, 185, 279, 280
Oakland County, Michigan, 340
Oak Park, Illinois
Development of, 174
Incorporation, in response to immigration, 306
Residential patterns in, 481
Zoning and, 311
Obama, Barack
Arizona and anti-immigrant legislation, 9, 157
Obama Administration, urban czar of, 255
Ocala, Florida, retiree population in, 271
O'Connor, Sandra Day, 115
Oil spill, 5
Oklahoma City
Annexation by, 272
Political reforms in, 277
Omnibus Budget Reconciliation Act (1993), Title XIII of, 251
Orange County, California, 333
Bankruptcy of, 384
Immigrants in, 184, 481
Minority populations in, 185, 279
Orlando, Florida, convention facilities in, 417
Orr, Kevyn, 381
Ortis, Frank C., 362
Our Country (Strong), 85

Paris, 19, 20, 407, 414
Park Ridge, Illinois, zoning and, 311
Parks Movement, 45
The Passing of the Great Race (Grant), 130
Paterson, New Jersey, population of, 177
Peña, Federico, 281, 448, 451

Pennsylvania
African American voters' influence in, 118, 236
Election fraud in, 91
Indentured servants in, 30
Lawsuit against, 118
Local income taxes in, 374, 378–379
Migration to, 159
Reformers and lobbying for commission government, 107
Share of urban votes, 253–254
Subsidies for canal projects by, 25
Welfare spending during Depression, 142
Philadelphia
African American migration to, 158, 161
African American share of population in, 161, 167
Election reform, 110
Ethnic conflict and riots in, 42
Failure of bond issues in Depression, 140
Festival mall in, 425
Founding of National Municipal League, 89
Under Goode, Wilson, 448, 463
Immigrants in, 37
Loss of industry to suburbs, 176
Machine politics in, 91
Nonpartisan elections in, 110
Policing, 43
Population of, 17, 19, 22, 162, 177, 405–406,
Reform-oriented mayor in, 72
Rendell, Edward, 463
Residential revival of downtown, 433
Segregation of occupational groups, 30
Street railways in, 66
Suburbs of, 176
Water supply in, 41–42, 44
Phoenix, Arizona
Annexation of, 272
Budget of, 370, 371, 372
Charter Government Committee in, 277–278
City charter of, 91
Housing values during 2008 recession, 283
Immigration, against undocumented, 283
Minority share of population, 185
Political reforms in, 277
Population of, 269, 270
Spending by, 370, 372
Taxable property, rise in value of, 377
Pilgrim's Progress (Bunyan), 88
Pingree, Hazen S., 72–76
Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania
1919 steel strike, 71
African American migration to, 158
African American share of population in, 167
At-large elections in, 96, 110

Commission government in, 107
Deindustrialization, 5
Election reform in, 96, 110
Immigrant population in, 37
Machine politics in, 92–93
Nonpartisan elections in, 110
Population in, 191–192, 270
Railroads in, 25
State and city elections of, 92–93
Steamboats in, 25
Street railways in, 66
Suburban growth in, 167, 307
Pittsburgh Chamber of Commerce, lobbying for commission government, 107
Plunkitt, George Washington, 59, 84
Police power of local government, 336, 365
Policing
In Albany, 67
In Boston, 43
In Buffalo, removal of unemployed blacks, 164
In Chicago, 205, 442
In consolidated city-county government, 336
In Los Angeles, 453, 454
In machine government, 54, 57, 60, 67, 70
In New York City, 43, 67, 465
Nineteenth century, 40, 43
Organization of departments in suburbs, 310–311
In Philadelphia, 43
Police brutality issue in Sunbelt, 281
Reductions in funding, due to 2009 recession, 256
Reforms, 100, 105, 336, 453, 454
Spending on, by mayor cities, 465
Tensions regarding police conduct, 441–442
Polish, 35, 73, 442, 479
Political incorporation, 452, 453, 455
Benefits of, 446, 453
Minorities and, 280, 445, 452, 454
Neighborhood organizations and, 446, 452
Politics. *See also* Democratic Party; Republican Party
City politics as culture consensus, 28
Of defended space, 425
Fiscal politics and federalism, 365, 375
Of governance, 1, 7–10, 447–451, 478–480
Of growth, 1, 4–7, 19, 24–29, 272, 273
Of immigrants and governance, 39–45
Of interurban rivalry and growth, 22–29
Of metropolitan fragmentation, 1, 3, 11, 293–194, 323–324, 341
Of privatization and enclosure of urban space, 482
Racial and ethnic issues in, 446, 468–469
Of tourism, 412–415
Urban policy and, of race, 232–235
Of urban redevelopment, 205–213
The Politics of Poverty (Donovan), 236

Pontiac, Michigan, Silverdome in, 422
Portland, Oregon
  Authority to countermand land use regulations, 343–344
  Downtown population, 406
  End of machine politics in, 110
  Under Goldschmidt, Neil, 458
  Tourism in, 413, 427
  Urban growth boundary, 344
Potemkin cities, 478
Poverty
  Change in (geographic)
  patterns, 190
  Comparison between central cities and suburbs, 168–171, 477
  Connections with racial segregation, 168–171
  Connections with underclass social ills, 168–169
  Public spending and, 372
  Recent rates of, 190–191
  Rising levels of inequalities, 445
  In South Central Los Angeles, 461
  In suburbs, 192, 292, 317, 443, 477
  War on Poverty Program, 233, 237, 240, 241, 242, 445
Power Shift (Sale), 266
Privatism, culture of, 4, 40
Privatization, 482
  And Indianapolis Mayor Stephen Goldsmith, 467
  Partial, 466
  Popularity with mayors, 466
  Of residential developments (common interest developments), 293
Progressive Era, 72, 86, 87–90, 101, 112, 116, 335
Prohibition, 65, 67, 129, 131, 132, 133
Property tax, 376–379
  Burden on homeowners in taxpoor suburbs, 308
  City rights to levy, 376, 378
  Decline in importance, 276–377
  Limits on, 378
  Politics of common interest developments (CIDs) and, 293–294
  Proposition 13 (California) and, 245, 278
  As revenue base for city budgets, 140
  Tax breaks to support downtown development, 405, 424
  Weaknesses of, 367–377
Protestants, 70, 129, 133, 306
Provo, Utah, population in, 271
Public health services, 45, 367, 368, 369
Public housing
  Depression-era support for, 139
  As designed to fail, 211–212
  Legislation for, 137, 146, 147, 148, 204, 205
  Segregation of, 202, 210–213, 220, 226
  Urban renewal and, 201, 204, 205, 206, 209, 210, 211, 213, 226, 238
Public Works Administration (PWA), 138, 144, 145, 146, 416

Race (issues of)
  In city politics, 9

Comparison of attitudes of business elites and machines, 278
Democratic Party in South and, 278
Effects of at-large elections, 96–98
Future of, 468–469
Politics of, 232–235
Racial segregation
In impoverished areas, 165–168, 180, 190, 202
Local jurisdictions and, 10, 11
Strategies of exclusion and, 11
"The Projects" and, 210–213
In urban areas, 190, 191
Railroads
Booster efforts on behalf of, 25
Commuter, 32, 172, 176
Governmental aid to, 2, 18–19, 24, 44, 47
Impact on cities, 18–19, 22–29
Land grants to, 238
Municipal debt and, 44
Municipal defaults, 28–29
Steam railroad lines (commuter), 26, 32
Suburbs and, 171, 172, 176
Reagan, Ronald
Administration of, 112, 213, 242, 245–249, 250, 251, 252, 254, 276
In election of 1980, 126, 235, 245, 276
In election of 1984, 245, 254
End of federal assistance to cities, 238, 245–250, 252, 463
Grant programs cut by, 247, 248, 276
Housing and Urban Development under, 220, 252, 467
Redlining, 220, 221
Reform
Business model and, 103–105
Campaigns against machine rule, 90–98
Commission and manager government, 106–110
Efficiency and economy as code words in, 99–103
Environment for, 87–90
Immigrants and, 86
Legacy of, 111–116
Machine politics and, 110–111
Motive for, 90
Two-sided nature of, 89
Reinvention Blueprint, 252
Reno, Nevada, urban sprawl and, 333
Republican Party
African American voters and, 127, 139, 233–234
Ascendancy of, 131
Black support for, 127
End of federal assistance and, 245–250
Gallup poll ratings of, 139
New Federalism and, 241–243
Post-Civil War, 127, 131, 233, 267
Rise of, in Deep South, 232–233, 245
Suburban support for, 233–234, 250, 254

Suburbs of the South, 234, 263, 265
Suburbs of the West, 263, 265
Support of upper income voters for, 139
Restrictive covenants, 165, 213, 218, 219, 298, 300, 301, 302
Restrictive zoning, 311
Reverse commuting, 331
Reynolds v. Sims, 48
Rhode Island, urban under-representation in, 143
Richmond, Virginia, 33, 279, 452
Riverside, California, 185, 280
Roosevelt, Franklin Delano, 126, 267
In 1932 election, 71, 126, 136
Appointments of blacks to federal posts, 127
Change of heart in favor of spending, 138
Cities gain a voice, 139–144
First 100 days legislative program, 137
First Hundred Days of, 238
First two years of, 143
Inauguration of, 136
Landslide victory of, 71, 126, 134
Machine politics during administration of, 55, 71
New Deal under, 126–127, 137, 139
Public works programs, 143
As two-term Democrat, 250
Urban programs under, 134–139
Roosevelt, Theodore (Teddy), 88, 99
Russians, settlements of, in cities, 35, 38, 128, 182, 183, 218

Sales taxes, 308, 333, 379, 390
Competition among cities for revenue, 308
Defeat of, in Virginia referendum of transportation spending, 333
Recruitment of retailers to boost revenue, 379
Use of, for tax increment financing, 390
Use of, to fund Denver Sports Stadium, 389–390
Salisbury, Robert, 206
San Antonio, Texas, 338, 399
In *Garcia* court decisions on pay provisions for city employees, 373
Good Government League, 278
Latino mayors in, 280, 448
Minority populations in, 187, 279
Political reform in, 277–278
Ward-based representation, 279
San Diego, California, 399
Festival mall in, 425
Growth of, 262, 270
Minority share of population, 185
Population of, 270, 274, 406
San Francisco, California, 7, 26
African American population in, 167
Asians in, 183, 185
Community-based housing developers in, 462
Downtown renewal in, 209, 413, 427, 431
Embarcadero Freeway project in, 223

Ghirardelli Square festival mall in, 413
During Gold Rush years, 42
Hyatt at Embarcadero Center, 427
Machine decline in, 110
Mass transit systems in, 64, 223, 225
Minorities, share of population, 185
Nonprofit housing developments in, 462
Population of, 177
Privatization of garbage collection, 466
Protests against unfair funding of city programs, 223
Reuf, Abraham's machine of, in, 64–65
School district administration in, 241, 368
Tourism in, 414–415, 427
Transients in, 42
Urban sprawl in, 331
Ward-based representation in, 279
Yerba Buena Center project in, 209–210, 427
San Jose, California Convention center losses in, 418
Corporate headquarters in, 407
High-tech driven growth, 271
Minority populations in, 279
Political reforms in, 277
Spending by, 372
Sanctuary Cities, 10, 257, 283, 455–457
Sarasota, Florida, population of, 271
Sauget, Illinois, 306
Scandinavians, 8, 27, 36, 37, 38, 69
Schaffer, Adam, 417
Schenectady, New York, population of, 177
Scott, Rick, 118
Scottsdale, Arizona, privatizing fire protection, 466
Seattle, Washington, 364
African American elected to office in, 448
As boutique city, 478
Convention center losses in, 418
End of machine politics in, 110
Pike Street Market festival mall in, 425
Population of, 406
September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks, 380
Service sector
African American employment in, 169, 454, 455, 463
Employment, 404, 405, 455
Move to suburbs, 328
Sewage services, 41, 42
Shaker Heights, Ohio, zoning and, 311
Shopping centers, rise of, 403, 411
Simon, Howard, 118
Single-family housing, growth of starts, 178
Skyscrapers, 407, 432, 477
Slum clearance, 211, 226, 419
Highway building as, 222
Impact on housing supply, 145, 201, 211

Politics and, 203–205
Smart Growth movement, 326, 334–335, 344–349
Snyder, Rick, 381
South, suburbs and Republican Party, 233, 265, 267, 282
South Carolina, 275
1964 elections, 233, 236
Canal projects, 25
Depression era budget cuts, 142
Executions of African Americans, 162
Southwest, recent growth, 264
Special authorities, 340, 383, 386, 387–390, 405, 456
Special districts, 98, 113, 323–324, 340, 366, 368, 386
Sports stadiums, 282, 363, 383, 388, 390, 414, 418–423, 459
Springfield, Illinois, election reform in, 113
Statue of Liberty, 35
St. Charles, Missouri
New Urbanist development in, 354
Objections to criticism of sprawl, 347
Sprawl, 330
St. Louis, Missouri, 271
African Americans in, 161, 164, 165, 166, 174, 443, 448
Budget in, 105, 225, 370
Casino gambling in, 428
Clinton victories in, 255
Conventions in, 416, 418
Downtown condominium development in, 433
Electoral systems in, 58, 96–98, 114
Failed reform attempts in, 336–337
Governance of, 341
Growth of downtown in, 433
Immigrant population in, 37
Income taxes in, 378–379
Interstate 70 in, and impact of downtown revival, 222
Police department in, 100, 443
Population of, 22, 162, 177, 178, 179, 271, 329
Pruitt-Igoe housing project, 212
As regional corporate hub, 407
Segregation of housing in, 220
Spending by, 370
Sports facilities in, 423
Sprawl around, 329–330, 347
Suburbs of, 307, 443
Transient population in, 42
Transportation and, 27, 225
Union Station festival mall, 244, 425
Urban renewal in, 206, 222
St. Louis County, Missouri Charter reform in, 339
Failed reform attempts in, 336–337
Population loss to St. Charles County, 330
Zoning in, 312
St. Paul, Minnesota, neighborhood control in, 459
Streetcars, 32, 33, 74, 173, 174, 291, 402

Subdivision regulations, 296, 312
Suburbanization
  Impact summarized, 3
  Racial issues related, 8–9
Suburban office parks, 328–329, 351, 353, 407, 480
Suburbs
  African American movement to, 219
  Attitudes toward central cities, 18
  Blended, 481
  Cities' fall from grace, 253–255
  Current Democratic Party emphasis on, 250–251
  Current trends for, 477, 481
  Ethnic and racial diversity in, 12–13
  Ethnic diversity in, 12
  European model compared, 292
  FHA/VA loan housing in, 215–217
  Great Depression impact on development of, 177
  Highways, the automobile and, 221–226
  As icon of the American dream, 296, 317, 352
  Immigrant movement to, 156, 158
  Immigrants in, 481
  Impact summarized, 3
  Jurisdictions, 10–11
  Lack of public housing in, 202
  Minority populations in, 279, 280
  National policy, 201–210
  Racial segregation and, 156, 165, 166, 180, 202, 219–220, 221, 292, 305
  Railroad, 171, 172, 176
  Rising price of land in, 303
  Romantic Movement influences on, 172
  Strategies of exclusion, 11
  Suburban exodus, 171–180
  Tensions shared with central cities, 171
  Walling off, 305–313
  White flight to, 166, 180–181, 202, 441
Sunbelt, 262
  Anti-immigration law, 283
  Boom of, 274
  City spending increases in, 370
  Common interest development housing in, 303
  Community block grant funding in, 244
  Concept of, 265–268
  Conservative shift, 262, 263, 264, 282
  Convergence of, with Frostbelt, 281–282
  Definition of, 266
  Economic success of, 272–276
  Electoral College, 263–264
  Federal tax code and, 276, 327
  Geographic boundaries of, 263
  A historic shift, 262–265
  Latino prevalence in, 185, 279
  Military spending in, 274–275

Minorities in Sunbelt cities, 185, 279
Mobilization of neighborhood/civic groups in cities, 98
Political ascendancy, 263–264
Politics of cities in, 244, 277–281, 461
Population growth, 262
Population migration to, 264, 268
Property tax in, 377
Republican support in, 263, 265, 282
Rise of, 262–265
Why it boomed, 262–265
Sydney, Australia, 407, 428
Syracuse, New York, protests over unfair spending patterns in, 241

Tammany Hall, 59, 67, 84, 102, 110, 111, 128, 132, 278
Taxpayer revolts, 376, 378, 380
Tax Reform Act (1986), 247, 384
Taylorism, 101–103
Teterboro, New Jersey, 320n
Texas. *See also* specific cities
1968 election in, 234
1973 oil crisis and boost in Texas economy, 265
Anti-immigrant legislation, 283
Boll weevil infestation and migration, 161
Common interest developments in, 303
Depression-era budget cuts in, 142
Latino population in, 187, 279
Migration to and from, 158, 159, 165, 186, 279
Municipal bankruptcies in, 387
Population growth in, 266
"sex-offender free" gated community, 317
Violations of Voting Rights Act (1982) in, 114
Thomas, Harry, Jr., 468
Tokyo, corporate headquarters in, 407
Toledo, Ohio
Failure of bond issues in Depression in, 140
Fight against reform in, 72
Under Jones, Samuel "Golden Rule," 72
Minorities in, 279, 280
Under Whitlock, Brand, 72, 94
Tometi, Opal, 444
Tourism, 412–416
Casino gaming, 414, 427–430
Convention centers and, 416–418
And "creative class," 411
Gulf Coast, 5
Malls and entertainment complexes, 424–427
Politics of, 430–431
Sports stadiums, 418–423
Traffic congestion, 48, 143, 221, 327, 330, 331–332, 346, 461
Transportation. *See also* specific mode.
Cost of, for residents of "sprawled" cities, 331
Decline of community and, 31–34
Development of new forms, 291

Direct investments in, 26
Funding bias of, toward highways, 223
Funding for, in 2009 stimulus, 256
Links to network, 24
As local government responsibility, 26
National/state policies in, and suburban growth, 344
New Urbanists on, 350, 354
Share of employment in, 404
As Smart Growth, 344
Troy, New York, population of, 177
Truman, Harry S., 134, 235
Trump, Donald John
Cities under, 10, 256–25, 475, 468
Immigration under, 9, 283, 457
Tax reforms under, 257, 468, 479
Tulsa, Oklahoma, riots in, 164, 441
Tweed, William Marcy "Boss." *See also* Tammany Hall, 63, 64, 90

Underclass, 168–169, 190
Undocumented immigrants, 10, 156–157, 182, 188–189, 257, 456, 457
Unfunded mandates, 356, 372, 373, 374
Upward mobility
Link between, and home ownership, 156
Machine politics and, 62, 66–69, 70
Real-world symbols of, 70
"Urban," meaning of, 3
Urban condition, 465
Urban crisis, 156–158
As city-suburb and racial divide, 180, 191
Disappearance of, 171, 189–193
As divide between cities and suburbs, 158
As electoral issue, 257
Evolution of, 168–171
And federal aid, 374
Urban Development Action Grants (UDAG) program, 244, 252
Urbanization, 22, 23
Apartment living and, 311–312
Overview, 22, 23
Pace and scale of, 19–22
And political underrepresentation of cities, 48
Of south, 274
Urban Land Institute (ULI), 296, 303–304, 354, 415
Urban policy, Damaging effects of, 226–227
Federal abandonment of, 255–256
Lack of national, in United States, 202–203, 245, 251
Political reality and, 250–253
Race and, 232–233
Urban politics, 476
Connection of, to class and ethnicity, 29
Impact on, by immigrants, 171–172
Imperatives of, 3
As morality play, 80n
In time of change, 476–477

Urban poverty, research on, 169, 292
Urban programs
  Evaluation of, 226–227
  Of New Deal, 144–148
Urban renewal, 204, 222, 412, 432,
  Abuse of, 390
  Black family displacement by, 211–212
  Criticisms of, 209
  Damaging effects of, 226–227
  Expansion of, in 1960s, 238
  As "good politics," 205–210
  Inequalities and, 478
  Merger into Community
  Development Block Grant program, 213
  Neighborhood opposition to, 210, 457–458
  In new downtowns, 431–432
  Politics of, 201–202
  Racial segregation and, 210–213, 221
  San Antonio Good
  Government League and, 278
  Shortening of grant application forms, 242–243
  Unintended consequences of, 201–203, 213
Urban sprawl
  Concerns about, 327, 329–335
  Costs of, 324–326
  Defined, 329
  Government fragmentation and, 324
  Metropolitan governance and, 324, 327
  Negative effects of, 324
  New Regionalism and, 334
  New Urbanism and, 334, 354–355
  Smart Growth and, 334, 344–345, 347, 355
Urban voters, influence of, 47–49
  Declining importance of, 253–255
  Dependence on, by Democratic Party, 250–251, 253
  And reshaping of national politics, 126–127, 139
  Support for railroad subsidies, 28
User fees, 374, 379, 381, 383, 388, 405

Ventura, California, 280, 308
Ventura, Jesse "The Body," 343
Ventura County, 333
Vermont, Depression-era cuts in spending, 142
Veterans Administration (VA) housing loans, 216–217, 295
Virginia, ID laws in, 118
Voter registration, 93, 110, 116–119
Voting
  Bloc, 94, 113, 262
  Central-city patterns in, 282
  Discouraging groups from, 117, 278
  Fraud in, 91
  Identification requirements for, 117, 118
  Influence of, for blacks, 112, 236–237

Participation in, by immigrants, 91, 93, 111
Property qualifications for, 58, 91
Regional differences in, 282
Restrictions for students in, 117–118
By students, 117
Voting Rights Act (1965), and subsequent amendments, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 236–237, 278–279

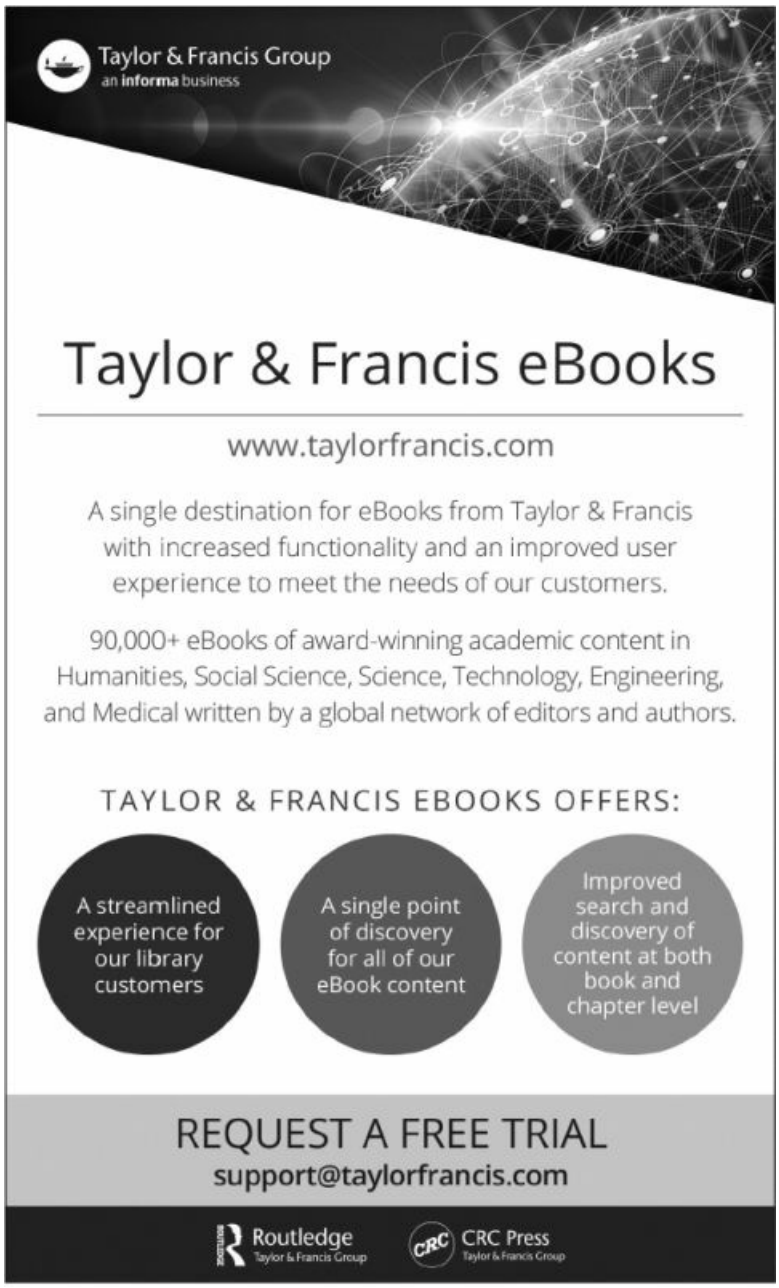
Wagner Labor Act, 127
Wagner-Steagall Public Housing Act, 144
Warner, Sam Bass, 4, 30
War on Poverty program, 233, 237, 240, 241, 242, 445
Washington, D.C., 399
Immigrants, sources of countries of, 184
Migration flow to, 165, 184
Minorities, share of population, 166, 185
National Building Museum in, 431
Riots in, 249, 442
Smart growth policies around, 346
Urban sprawl in, 331, 333
Washington, Harold, 68, 448
Washington Post, 468–469
Weed and seed programs, 249–250
Welfare programs, 212, 256, 336
Chronic dependence on, 168
Chronic poverty related, 190
Connection with urban programs, 233
Importance in local politics, 78
Municipal spending on, 140, 141, 336, 367, 372
Political connection of, with race, 233, 249
Public housing and, 211–212
Reform under Clinton, 253
Republican criticism of, 237, 249, 253
Republican cuts in, 247–248, 276, 450
State spending on, 140, 142
"welfare for the wealthy," 423
Westport, Connecticut, 312
West Virginia, migration from, 159–160
West Virginia Turnpike Commission, 386
White, Kevin, 424, 457
White-collar professionals, 277, 282, 461, 476
Downtown revival and, 461
In new downtowns, 476
As voters, 277
White primary, 278
Wichita, Kansas, growth of, 27
Wilson, Darren, 443, 444
Wilson, William Julius, 168, 251
Wilson, Woodrow, 103
Winnipeg, Manitoba, Canada, 421, 428
Hockey teams in, 421
Sports arena in, 420
Winter Haven, Florida, 381
Women

Driving retail exodus from downtown due to fear of crime, 403
As heads of single-parent families, 169
Laws regulating hours and wages, 71
Muckraking exposés of employer abuses of, 88
Working class candidates, 86, 94, 96, 99
World War I (1914–1918) boll weevil and migration, 161
Entry of United States into, and intervention in urban housing, 144
Growth of suburbs, 149n
Postwar auto production, 176
World War II (1939–1945), 110
Mass migration of African Americans into cities, 8, 18
Post-war housing shortage, 203, 212
Post-war urban programs, 226
Rural-to-urban migration and, 155, 158, 160, 165
Suburban movement after, 111, 171, 213, 305, 403
Sunbelt expansion after, 269, 274, 277
And wartime production, 147, 177
Wyoming, Depression era spending cuts in, 142

Xenophobia, 130

Yerba Buena Center project, 209–210, 427
Young, Andrew, 460
Youngstown, Ohio, 177, 279–280
Yuppies, 410, 411, 479

Zimmerman, George, 444
Zoning, 45, 55, 291, 292, 296, 308–316, 325, 337, 342, 346, 352, 415, 459
Exclusionary, 312–316
Large lot, 312
Neighborhood control over, 308, 459
In New York City, 308–309
Restrictive, 310–311
Role of, in preserving land values, 292, 309
Sprawl and, 325, 346
Urban sprawl related, 352
Variances of, for politically connected developers, 55


Taylor & Francis Group
an informa business
Taylor & Francis eBooks
www.taylorfrancis.com
A single destination for eBooks from Taylor & Francis with increased functionality and an improved user experience to meet the needs of our customers.
90,000+ eBooks of award-winning academic content in Humanities, Social Science, Science, Technology, Engineering, and Medical written by a global network of editors and authors.
TAYLOR & FRANCIS EBOOKS OFFERS:
A streamlined experience for our library customers
A single point of discovery for all of our eBook content
Improved search and discovery of content at both book and chapter level
REQUEST A FREE TRIAL
support@taylorfrancis.com
Routledge
Taylor & Francis Group
CRC Press
Taylor & Francis Group